

a ***Grace Notes*** study

---

## **The Life and Epistles of St. Paul**

a historical study

by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson

---

## Contents

<b>Introduction</b> .....	<b>1</b>
<b>Chapter 1</b> .....	<b>8</b>
Great Men of Great Periods.....	8
Period of Christ's Apostles.....	8
Jews, Greeks, and Romans.....	9
Religious Civilization of the Jews.....	10
Character and Language of the Greeks .....	12
Growth of the Roman Empire .....	14
Misery of Italy and the Provinces.....	15
Preparation in the Empire for Christianity.....	17
The Dispersion of the Jews .....	17
Tarsus .....	21
Cicero.....	22
Political Changes in Judea .....	23
Herod and His Family .....	24
<b>Chapter 2</b> .....	<b>26</b>
Jewish Origin of the Church.....	26
Sects and Parties of the Jews .....	27
Hellenists and Arameans.....	29
St. Paul's Infancy at Tarsus .....	32
The Tribe of Benjamin .....	34
Social Position of St. Paul's Family .....	35
St. Paul's Boyhood.....	37
Paul is Sent to Jerusalem .....	39
Gamaliel.....	42
Rabbinical Schools .....	43
Mode of Teaching .....	45
Student Life and Early Manhood .....	46
First Aspect of the Church .....	48
The Sanhedrin .....	50
St. Stephen the Forerunner of St. Paul.....	51
<b>Chapter 3</b> .....	<b>54</b>
Funeral of St. Stephen.....	54
Philip and the Samaritans.....	56
Aretas, King of Petra.....	57
Roads from Jerusalem to Damascus .....	58
Damascus .....	60
The Narratives of the Miracle.....	62

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>iii</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

The Real Vision of Jesus Christ.....	63
Ananias .....	65
Baptism and First Preaching of Saul .....	66
Reflections on St. Paul's Conversion.....	68
Conspiracy of Damascus.....	69
St. Paul's Visit to Jerusalem .....	70
Saul in Syria and Cilicia .....	72
<b>Chapter 4 .....</b>	<b>74</b>
Wider Diffusion of Christianity.....	74
Chronology of the Acts .....	75
Claudius and Herod Agrippa I.....	76
Conversion of the Gentiles .....	77
Mission of Barnabas .....	79
The Name "Christian" .....	80
Description of Antioch.....	81
Character of the Inhabitants of Antioch .....	83
Famine. Mission to Jerusalem.....	84
Results of the Mission to Jerusalem.....	86
<b>Chapter 5 .....</b>	<b>87</b>
Second Part of the Acts of the Apostles .....	87
Revelation at Antioch .....	88
Departure of Barnabas and Saul .....	88
Salamis .....	91
Roman Provincial System.....	92
Sergius Paulus.....	94
Elymas Barjesus .....	94
History of Jewish Names .....	96
<b>Chapter 6 .....</b>	<b>97</b>
Old and New Paphos.....	97
The Coast of Pamphylia .....	99
Mark's Return to Jerusalem.....	100
Mountain Scenery of Pisidia .....	101
Situation of Antioch.....	104
The Synagogue.....	105
Address to the Jews .....	107
Preaching to the Gentiles .....	109
Persecution by the Jews.....	110
Iconium .....	111
Lycaonia.....	113

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>iv</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

St. Paul at Lystra.....	114
Address to the Gentiles .....	116
<b>Chapter 7 .....</b>	<b>120</b>
Controversy in the Church .....	120
Difficulty in the Narrative .....	122
Discontent at Jerusalem .....	123
Journey from Antioch to Jerusalem .....	125
Views of the Pharisaic Christians .....	126
The Meeting at Jerusalem .....	127
Return of Paul to Antioch.....	130
St. Peter Rebuked by St. Paul.....	131
Appearance of the two Apostles.....	132
<b>Chapter 8 .....</b>	<b>133</b>
Political Divisions of Asia Minor.....	133
ASIA.....	134
Bithynia .....	135
Pamphylia .....	136
Galatia.....	137
Pontus.....	138
Cappadocia.....	139
Cilicia .....	139
Planning for the 2 <sup>nd</sup> Missionary Journey.....	139
Separation of Paul and Barnabas.....	140
Paul and Silas in Cilicia .....	142
Across the Taurus.....	143
Lystra .....	145
Timothy .....	146
Journey through Phrygia.....	149
Churches of Galatia .....	150
Journey to the Aegean.....	152
Alexandria Troas.....	153
Paul's Vision .....	154
<b>Chapter 9 .....</b>	<b>155</b>
Voyage by Samothrace to Neapolis .....	155
Philippi .....	157
Lydia.....	160
The Demoniac Slave .....	161
Paul and Silas Arrested .....	164
Departure from Philippi .....	168

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>v</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

Luke .....	169
Macedonia Described .....	169
Paul's Journey Through Amphipolis and Apollonia .....	171
Thessalonica .....	172
The Jews at Berea .....	180
<b>Chapter 10 .....</b>	<b>182</b>
Arrival on the Coast of Attica .....	182
Scenery Around Athens .....	183
The Agora .....	186
The Acropolis .....	187
Greek Religion .....	191
The Stoics and Epicureans .....	192
Paul in the Agora .....	195
The Areopagus .....	196
Paul's Speech .....	198
<b>Chapter 11 .....</b>	<b>201</b>
First Epistle to the Thessalonians. ....	207
I Thess. 1 .....	207
I Thess 2 .....	208
I Thess 3 .....	208
I Thess 4 .....	209
I Thess 5 .....	210
Second Epistle to the Thessalonians. ....	213
2 Thess 1 .....	213
1 Thess 2 .....	214
2 Thess 3 .....	215
<b>Chapter 12 .....</b>	<b>216</b>
The Isthmus and Acrocorinthus .....	216
Early History of Corinth .....	218
Province of Achaia.....	220
Gallio .....	220
Voyage by Ephesus to Caesarea.....	222
Antioch.....	224
<b>Chapter 13 .....</b>	<b>225</b>
The Spiritual Gifts .....	225
Constitution and Ordinances .....	228
Divisions and Heresies in the Church During the Lifetime of St. Paul .....	234
<b>Chapter 14 .....</b>	<b>245</b>
Departure from Antioch.....	245
St. Paul's Companions.....	245

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>vi</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

Journey through Phrygia and Galatia .....	246
Apollos at Ephesus and Corinth .....	247
Disciples of John the Baptist.....	247
APOLLOS in Ephesus .....	248
Arrival of St. Paul at Ephesus .....	249
The School of Tyrannus.....	251
Ephesian Magic .....	252
Miracles.....	252
The Exorcists .....	253
Burning of the Books .....	254
<b>Chapter 15 .....</b>	<b>254</b>
St. Paul pays a short Visit to Corinth .....	254
First Epistle to the Corinthians .....	259
1 Corinthians 1.....	259
1 Corinthians 2.....	260
1 Corinthians 3.....	261
1 Corinthians 4.....	262
1 Corinthians 5.....	263
1 Corinthians 6.....	264
1 Corinthians 7.....	265
1 Corinthians 8.....	267
1 Corinthians 9.....	268
1 Corinthians 10.....	269
1 Corinthians 11.....	270
1 Corinthians 12.....	271
1 Corinthians 13.....	272
1 Corinthians 14.....	273
1 Corinthians 15.....	275
1 Corinthians 16.....	277
<b>Chapter 16 .....</b>	<b>279</b>
Description of Ephesus.....	279
Temple of Diana. Her Image and Worship .....	280
Political Constitution of Ephesus .....	283
The Asiarchs .....	285
Demetrius and the Silversmiths.....	285
<b>Chapter 17 .....</b>	<b>288</b>
St. Paul at Troas .....	288
He passes over to Macedonia .....	289
Causes of his Dejection .....	290

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>vii</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

He meets Titus at Philippi .....	291
<b>Second Epistle to the Corinthians. ....</b>	<b>293</b>
2 Corinthians 1.....	293
2 Corinthians 2.....	294
2 Corinthians 3.....	295
2 Corinthians 4.....	296
2 Corinthians 5.....	297
2 Corinthians 6.....	297
2 Corinthians 7.....	298
2 Corinthians 8.....	299
2 Corinthians 9.....	300
2 Corinthians 10.....	301
2 Corinthians 11.....	301
2 Corinthians 12.....	303
2 Corinthians 13.....	304
<b>Chapter 18 .....</b>	<b>309</b>
<b>Epistle to the Galatians .....</b>	<b>313</b>
Galatians 1 .....	313
Galatians 2.....	313
Galatians 3.....	314
Galatians 4.....	315
Galatians 5.....	317
Galatians 6.....	317
<b>Chapter 19 .....</b>	<b>318</b>
Paul at Corinth .....	318
Purification of the Corinthian Church.....	319
Phoebe's Journey to Rome .....	320
<b>Epistle to the Romans .....</b>	<b>322</b>
Romans 1.....	322
Romans 2.....	323
Romans 3.....	324
Romans 4.....	325
Romans 5.....	326
Romans 6.....	327
Romans 7.....	328
Romans 8.....	328
Romans 9.....	330
Romans 10.....	331
Romans 11.....	333

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>viii</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

Romans 12.....	334
Romans 13.....	335
Romans 14.....	335
Romans 15.....	336
Romans 16.....	337
<b>Chapter 20 .....</b>	<b>338</b>
Isthmian Games .....	338
In Perils from the Jews .....	340
Time Occupied on the Route.....	342
Sunday at Troas .....	343
Assos.....	344
Mitylene, Chios, Samos.....	345
Trogyllium, Miletus.....	346
The Speech to the Ephesian Presbyters.....	346
ACTS 20:18 35 .....	347
Cos .....	347
Rhodes .....	348
Patara .....	350
Tyre.....	351
Ptolemais, Caesarea .....	352
The Journey to Jerusalem.....	354
<b>Chapter 21 .....</b>	<b>355</b>
The Reception at Jerusalem .....	355
Assembling of the Elders.....	356
The Nature of the Nazarite Vow .....	358
Paul Seized at the Festival.....	359
The Temple and the Garrison .....	360
The Temple Area.....	360
The Fortress of Antonia .....	362
Acts 22:1 21.....	365
Escape from Torture.....	366
Paul Before the Sanhedrin .....	366
Conspiracy.....	368
The Journey to Caesarea.....	369
Felix .....	370
<b>Chapter 22 .....</b>	<b>371</b>
Agrippa II .....	371
The Roman Army .....	372
Troops Quartered in Palestine .....	373
Caesarea .....	374
Acts 24:10 21.....	375
Paul Before Festus.....	378
Acts 25:10, 11.....	379
Paul Before Herod Agrippa II .....	380

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>ix</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

Acts 26:2 18.....	380
Acts 25 27.....	381
<b>Chapter 23 .....</b>	<b>382</b>
Ships and Navigation of the Ancients .....	382
Roman Commerce .....	385
Departure from Caesarea.....	387
Sidon .....	388
Sidon to Myra .....	389
Myra to Cnidus .....	390
Cnidus .....	391
Phoenix.....	393
The Storm.....	394
Seamanship During the Gale .....	395
Sufferings During the Gale .....	396
St. Paul's Vision.....	397
Anchoring in the Night .....	397
Waiting for the Day.....	399
The Shipwreck.....	400
The Inhabitants Receive them Kindly.....	401
Objections Considered .....	402
Syracuse - Rhegium .....	403
Puteoli.....	404
<b>Chapter 24 .....</b>	<b>405</b>
The Appian Way .....	405
Appii Forum and the Three Taverns .....	408
Entrance into Rome.....	409
Description of Rome.....	410
Population of Rome .....	411
The Roman Church .....	412
Interview with the Jews .....	413
<b>Chapter 25 .....</b>	<b>415</b>
Delay of St. Paul's Trial .....	415
His Companions During Imprisonment .....	416
THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON.....	418
St. Paul Writes to the Colossians .....	418
THE EPISTLE TO THE COLOSSIANS .....	420
Colossians 1 .....	420
Colossians 2 .....	421
Colossians 3 .....	422
Colossians 4 .....	423
Epistle to the Ephesians.....	423
THE EPISTLE TO THE EPHESIANS.....	426
Ephesians 1 .....	426
Ephesians 2 .....	427

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>x</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

Ephesians 3 .....	427
Ephesians 4 .....	428
Ephesians 5 .....	429
Ephesians 6 .....	429
<b>Chapter 26 .....</b>	<b>430</b>
The Praetorium.....	430
The Palatine .....	431
Political Events at Rome .....	433
Epistle to the Philippians .....	434
THE EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS .....	434
Philippians 1.....	434
Philippians 2.....	435
Philippians 3.....	436
Philippians 4 .....	436
Converts in the Imperial Household.....	437
<b>Chapter 27 .....</b>	<b>438</b>
Authorities for St. Paul's Subsequent History .....	438
Evidence for St. Paul's Liberation .....	439
Hearing of the Appeal.....	441
His Trial .....	441
His Acquittal.....	443
He Visits Various Churches in Asia.....	444
THE FIRST EPISTLE TO TIMOTHY .....	445
I Timothy 1 .....	445
1 Timothy 2 .....	446
1 Timothy 3 .....	446
1 Timothy 4 .....	446
1 Timothy 5 .....	447
1 Timothy 6 .....	448
St. Paul Visits Crete.....	448
THE EPISTLE TO TITUS .....	449
Titus 1 .....	449
Titus 2 .....	450
Titus 3 .....	450
Winter at Nicopolis .....	451
Second Roman Imprisonment.....	451
First Stage of his Final Trial.....	453
He is Remanded to Prison .....	454
SECOND EPISTLE TO TIMOTHY .....	455
2 Timothy 1 .....	455
2 Timothy 2 .....	456
2 Timothy 3 .....	456

---

<b>The Life and Epistles of St. Paul</b>	Page <b>xi</b>
by W. J. Conybeare and J. S. Howson	a Grace Notes study

2 Timothy 4 .....	457
Condemnation of St. Paul .....	458
Death of St. Paul .....	458
<b>Chapter 28 .....</b>	<b>459</b>
Readers of the Epistle to the Hebrews.....	459
Writer of the Epistle to the Hebrews.....	462
THE EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS .....	463
Hebrews 1 .....	463
Hebrews 2.....	464
Hebrews 3.....	464
Hebrews 4.....	465
Hebrews 5.....	465
Hebrews 6.....	465
Hebrews 7 .....	466
Hebrews 8.....	467
Hebrews 9.....	467
Hebrews 10.....	468
Hebrews 11.....	469
Hebrews 12.....	471
Hebrews 13.....	472

---



## Introduction

The purpose of this work is to give a living picture of St. Paul himself, and of the circumstances by which he was surrounded.

The biography of the Apostle must be compiled from two sources; first, his own letters, and secondly, the narrative in the Acts of the Apostles. The latter, after a slight sketch of his early history, supplies us with fuller details of his middle life; and his Epistles afford much subsidiary information concerning his missionary labors during the same period. The light concentrated upon this portion of his course, makes darker by contrast the obscurity which rests upon the remainder; for we are left to gain what knowledge we can of his later years, from scattered hints in a few short letters of his own, and from a single sentence of his disciple Clement.

But in order to present anything like a living picture of St. Paul's career, much more is necessary than a mere transcript of the Scriptural narrative, even where it is fullest. Every step of his course brings us into contact with some new phase of ancient life, unfamiliar to our modern experience, and upon which we must throw light from other sources, if we wish it to form a distinct image in the mind.

For example, to comprehend the influences under which he grew to manhood, we must realize the position of a Jewish family in Tarsus; we must understand the kind of education which the son of such a family would receive as a boy in his Hebrew home, or in the schools of his native city, and in his riper youth "at the feet of Gamaliel" in Jerusalem; we must be acquainted with the profession for which he was to be prepared by this training, and appreciate the station and duties of an expounder of the Law. And that we may be fully qualified to do all this, we should have a clear view of the state of the Roman Empire at the time, and especially of its system in the provinces; we should also understand the political position of the Jews of the dispersion: we should be (so to speak) hearers in their

synagogues, we should be students of their Rabbinical theology.

And in like manner, as we follow the Apostle in the different stages of his varied and adventurous career, we must strive continually to bring out in their true brightness the half-effaced forms and coloring of the scene in which he acts; and while he "becomes all things to all men, that he might by all means save some," we must form to ourselves a living likeness of the things and of the men among which he moved, if we would rightly estimate his work.

Thus we must study Christianity rising in the midst of Judaism; we must realize the position of its early churches with their mixed society, to which Jews, proselytes, and heathens had each contributed a characteristic element; we must qualify ourselves to be umpires in their violent internal divisions; we must listen to the strife of their schismatic parties, when one said, "I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollos;" we must study the true character of those early heresies which even denied the resurrection and advocated impurity and lawlessness, claiming the right "to sin that grace might abound" (Rom. 6:1), "defiling the mind and conscience" (Tit. 1:15) of their followers, and making them "abominable and disobedient, and to every good work reprobate;" we must trace the extent to which Greek philosophy, Judaizing formalism, and Eastern superstition blended their tainting influence with the pure fermentation of that new leaven which was at last to leaven the whole mass of civilized society.

Again, to understand St. Paul's personal history as a missionary to the heathen, we must know:

- the state of the different populations which he visited;
- the character of the Greek and Roman civilization at the epoch;
- the points of intersection between the political history of the world and the scriptural narrative;
- the social organization and gradation of ranks for which he enjoins respect, the

position of women, to which he specially refers in many of his letters;

- the relations between parents and children, slaves and masters, which he not vainly sought to imbue with the loving spirit of the gospel;
- the quality and influence, under the early Empire, of the Greek and Roman religions, whose effete corruptness he denounces with such indignant scorn;
- the public amusements of the people, whence he draws topics of warning or illustration;
- the operation of the roman law, under which he was so frequently arraigned;
- the courts in which he was tried, and the magistrates by whose sentence he suffered;
- the legionary soldiers who acted as his guards;
- the roads by which he traveled, whether through the mountains of Lycaonia or the marshes of Latium;
- the course of commerce by which his journeys were so often regulated; and
- the character of that imperfect navigation by which his life was many times endangered.<sup>1</sup>

While thus trying to live in the life of a bygone age, and to call up the figure of the past from its tomb, duly robed in all its former raiment, every help is welcome which enables us to fill up the dim outline in any part of its reality. Especially we delight to look upon the only one of the manifold features of that past existence which still is living. We remember with pleasure that the earth, the sea, and the sky still combine for us in the same landscapes which passed before the eyes of the wayfaring Apostle. The plain of Cilicia, the snowy distances of Taurus, the cold and rapid stream of the

Cydnus, the broad Orontes under the shadow of its steep banks with their thickets of jasmine and oleander; the hills which “stand about Jerusalem,”<sup>2</sup> the arched fountains cold in the ravines below, and those flowery banks beneath that wash their hallowed feet; the capes and islands of the Grecian sea, the craggy summit of Areopagus, the land locked harbor of Syracuse, the towering cone of Etna, the voluptuous loveliness of the Campanian shore; all these remain to us, the imperishable handiwork of nature.

We can still look upon the same trees and flowers which he saw clothing the mountains, giving color to the plains, or reflected in the rivers. We may think of him among the palms of Syria, the cedars of Lebanon, the olives of Attica, the green Isthmian pines of Corinth, whose leaves wove those “fading garlands” which he contrasts with the “incorruptible crown,” the prize for which he fought. (1 Cor. 9:25) We can still look upon some of the works of man which filled him with wonder or moved him to indignation. The “temples made with hands” (Acts 17:24) which rose before him – the very apotheosis of idolatry – on the Acropolis, still stand in almost undiminished majesty and beauty.

The mole on which he landed at Puteoli still stretches its ruins into the blue waters of the bay. The remains of the Baian Villas whose marble porticoes he then beheld glittering in the sunset – his first specimen of Italian luxury – still are seen along the shore. We may still enter Rome as he did by the same Appian Road, through the same Capernian Gate, and wander among the ruins of “Caesar’s palace” on the Palatine, while our eye rests upon the same aqueducts radiating of the Campagna to the unchanging hills.

Those who have visited these spots must often have felt a thrill of recollection as they trod in the footsteps of the Apostle; they must have

<sup>1</sup> ‘Thrice have I suffered shipwreck,’ 2 Cor. 11:25; and this was before he was wrecked upon Malta.

<sup>2</sup> ‘The hills stand about Jerusalem;’ even so ‘stands the Lord round about his people.’ Psalm 125:2.

been conscious how much the identity of the outward scene brought them into communion with him, while they tried to image to themselves the feelings with which he must have looked upon the objects before them. They who have experienced this will feel how imperfect a biography of St. Paul must be without faithful representations of the places which he visited.

It is hoped that the views which are contained in the present work, which have been diligently collected from various sources, will supply this lack. And it is evident that, for the purposes of such a biography, nothing but true and faithful representations of the real scenes will be valuable. These are what is wanted, and not ideal representations, even though copied from the works of the great masters; for, as it has been well said, "nature and reality painted at the same time, and on the spot, a nobler cartoon of St. Paul's preaching at Athens than the immortal Rafael afterwards has done."<sup>3</sup>

For a similar reason Maps have been given (in addition to careful geographical descriptions), exhibiting with as much accuracy as can at present be attained the physical features of the countries visited, and some of the ancient routes through them, together with plans of the most important cities, and maritime charts of the coasts and harbors where they were required.

While thus endeavoring to represent faithfully the natural objects and architectural remains connected with the narrative, it has likewise been attempted to give such illustrations as were needful of the minor productions of human art as they existed in the first century. For this purpose engravings of coins have been given in all cases where they seemed to throw light on the circumstances mentioned in the history; and recourse has been had to the stores of Pompeii and Herculaneum, to the columns of Trajan and Antoninus, and to the collections of the Vatican, the Louvre, and especially the British Museum.

<sup>3</sup> Wordsworth's *Athens and Attica*, p. 76.

But after all this is done – after we have endeavored, with every help we can command, to reproduce the picture of St. Paul's deeds and times, how small would our knowledge of himself remain, if we had no other record of him left us but the story of his adventures. If his letters had never come down to us, we should have known indeed what he did and suffered, but we should have had very little idea of what he was.<sup>4</sup>

Even if we could perfectly succeed in restoring the image of the scenes and circumstances in which he moved, even if we could, as in a magic mirror, behold him speaking in the school of Tyrannus, with his Ephesian hearers in their national costume about him, we should still see very little of Paul of Tarsus. We must listen to his words, if we would learn to know him. If fancy did her utmost, she could give us only his outward, not his inward life. "His bodily presence" (so his enemies declared) "was weak and contemptible;" but "his letters" (even they allowed) "were weighty and powerful." (2 Cor. 10:10).

Moreover, an effort of imagination and memory is needed to recall the past, but in his Epistles St. Paul is present with us. "His words are not dead words, they are living creatures with hands and feet,"<sup>5</sup> touching in a thousand hearts at this very hour the same chord of feeling which vibrated to their first utterance.

We, the Christians of the nineteenth century, can bear witness now, as fully as could a Byzantine audience fourteen hundred years ago, to the saying of Chrysostom, that "Paul by his letters still lives in the mouths of men throughout the whole world; by them not only his own converts but all the faithful even unto

<sup>4</sup> For his speeches recorded in the Acts, characteristic as they are, would by themselves have been too few and too short to add much to our knowledge of St. Paul; but illustrated as they now are by his Epistles, they become an important part of his personal biography.

<sup>5</sup> Luther, as quoted in Archdeacon Hare's *Mission of the Comforter*, p. 449.

this day, yea, and all the saints who are yet to be born, until Christ's coming again, both have been and shall be blessed." His Epistles are to his inward life what the mountains and rivers of Asia and Greece and Italy are to his outward life, the imperishable part which still remains to us, when all that time can ruin has passed away.

It is in these letters then that we must study the true life of St. Paul, from its inmost depths and springs of action, which were "hidden with Christ in God," down to its most minute developments and peculiar individual manifestations. In them we learn (to use the language of Gregory Nazianzus) "what is told of Paul by Paul himself." Their most sacred contents indeed rise above all that is peculiar to the individual writer; for they are the communications of God to man concerning the faith and life of Christians; which St. Paul declared (as he often asserts) by the immediate revelation of Christ Himself. But his manner of teaching these eternal truths is colored by his human character, and peculiar to himself.

And such individual features are naturally impressed much more upon epistles than upon any other kind of composition. For here we have not treatises or sermons, which may dwell in the general and abstract, but genuine letters, written to meet the actual wants of living men; giving immediate answers to real questions, and warnings against pressing dangers; full of the interests of the passing hour. And this, which must be more or less the case with all epistles addressed to particular churches, is especially so with those of St. Paul. In his case it is not too much to say that his letters are himself – a portrait painted by his own hand, of which every feature may be "known and read of all men."

It is not merely that in them we see the proof of his powerful intellect, his insight into the foundations of natural theology (Rom. 1:20) and of moral philosophy (Rom 2:14,15); for in such points, though the philosophical expression might belong to himself, the truths expressed were taught him of God. It is not only that we there find models of the sublimest

eloquence, when he is kindled by the vision of the glories to come, the perfect triumph of good over evil, the manifestation of the sons of God, and their transformation into God's likeness, when they shall see Him no longer (1 Cor. 13:12) "in a glass darkly, but face to face," – for in such strains as these it was not so much he that spoke, as the Spirit of God speaking in Him (Matt. 10:20); but in his letters, besides all this which is divine, we trace every shade, even to the faintest, of his human character also.

Here we see that fearless independence with which he "withstood Peter to the face;" (Gal. 2:11)

- that impetuosity which breaks out in his apostrophe to the "foolish Galatians;"
- that earnest indignation which bids his converts "beware of dogs, beware of the concision," (Phil. 3:2) and pours itself forth in the emphatic "God forbid" which meets every Antinomian suggestion;
- that fervid patriotism which makes him "wish that he were himself accursed from Christ for his brethren, his kinsmen according to the flesh, who are Israelites;" (Rom 9:3)
- that generosity which looked for no other reward that "to preach the glad tidings of Christ without charge," (1 Cor. 9:15,18) and made him feel that he would rather "die than that any man should make this glorying void;"
- that dread of officious interference which led him to shrink from "building on another man's foundation;" (Rom. 15:20)
- that delicacy which shows itself in his appeal to Philemon, whom he might have commanded "yet for love's sake rather beseeching him, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ," and which is even more striking in some of his farewell greetings, as (for instance) when he bids the Romans salute Rufus, and *his mother, who is also mine* (Rom. 16:13);

- that scrupulous fear of evil appearance which "would not eat any man's bread for naught, but wrought with labor and travail night and day, that he might not be chargeable to any of them" (1 Thess. 2:9);
- that refined courtesy which cannot bring itself to blame till it has first praised, and which makes him deem it needful almost to apologize for the freedom of giving advice to those who were not personally known to him (Rom 15:14,15);
- that self denying love which "will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest he make his brother to offend" (1 Cor. 8:13);
- that impatience of exclusive formalism with which he overwhelms the Judaizers of Galatia, joined with a forbearance so gentle for the innocent weakness of scrupulous consciences (1 Cor. 8:12; Rom. 14:21);
- that grief for the sins of others, which moved him to tears when he spoke of the enemies of the cross of Christ, "of whom I tell you even weeping (Phil. 3:18);
- that noble freedom from jealousy with which he speaks of those who, out of rivalry to himself, preach Christ even of envy and strife, supposing to add affliction to his bonds; "what then? notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretence or in truth, Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice (Phil. 1:15)
- that tender friendship which watches over the health of Timothy, even with a mother's care;
- that intense sympathy in the joys and sorrows of his converts, which could say, even to the rebellious Corinthians, "ye are in our hearts, to die and live with you" (2 Cor. 7:3)
- that longing desire for the intercourse of affection, and that sense of loneliness when it was withheld, which perhaps is the most touching feature of all, because it approaches most nearly to a weakness, "When I had come to Troas to preach the

glad tidings of Christ, and a door was opened to me in the Lord, I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother; but I parted from them, and came from thence into Macedonia." And "when I was come into Macedonia, my flesh had no rest, but I was troubled on every side; without were fightings, within were fears. But God, who comforts them that are cast down, comforted me by the coming of Titus." (2 Cor. 2:13; 7:5)

Nor is it only in the substance, but even in the style of these writings that we recognize the man Paul of Tarsus. In the parenthetical constructions and broken sentences, we see the rapidity with which the thoughts crowded upon him, almost too fast for utterance; we see him animated rather than weighed down by "the crowd that presses on him daily, and the care of all the churches," (2 Cor. 11:28) as he pours forth his warnings or his arguments in a stream of eager and impetuous dictation, with which the pen of the faithful Tertius can hardly keep pace. (Rom. 16:22) And above all, we trace his presence in the postscript to every letter, which he adds as an authentication, in his own characteristic handwriting, (Gal. 6:11) "which is a token in every epistle: Thus I write." (2 Thess. 3:17)

Sometimes, as he takes up the pen he is moved with indignation when he thinks of the false brethren among those whom he addresses; "the salutation of me Paul with my own hand, if any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be accursed." (1 Cor. 16:22) Sometimes, as he raises his hand to write, he feels it cramped by the fetters which bind him to the soldier who guards him, (Col. 4:18) "I, Paul salute you with my own hand - remember my chains." Yet he always ends with the same blessing, "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you," to which he sometimes adds still further a few last words of affectionate remembrance, "My love be with you all in Christ Jesus." (1 Cor. 16:24)

But although the letters of St. Paul are so essentially a part of his personal biography, it is a difficult question to decide upon the form in

which they should be given in a work like this. The object to be sought is, that they may really represent in English what they were to their Greek readers when first written. Now this object would not be attained if the Authorized Version were adhered to: and yet a departure from that whereof so much is interwoven with the memory and deepest feelings of every religious mind should be grounded on strong and sufficient cause. It is hoped that the following reasons may be held such.

First. The Authorized Version was meant to be a standard of authority and ultimate appeal in controversy; hence it could not venture to depart, as an ordinary translation would do, from the exact words of the original, even where some amplification was absolutely required to complete the sense. It was to be the version unanimously accepted by all parties, and therefore must simply represent the Greek text word for word. This it does most faithfully so far as the critical knowledge of the 16<sup>th</sup> Century permitted. But the result of this method is sometimes to produce a translation unintelligible to the English reader.<sup>6</sup> Also if the text admit of two interpretations, our version endeavors, if possible, to preserve the same ambiguity, and effects this often with admirable skill; but such indecision, although a merit in an authoritative version, would be a fault in a translation which had a different object.

Second. The imperfect knowledge existing at the time when our Bible was translated made it inevitable that the translators should occasionally render the original incorrectly; and the same cause has made their version of many of the argumentative portions of the Epistles perplexed and obscure.

Third. Such passages as are affected by the above mentioned objections might, it is true, have been recast, and the authorized

---

<sup>6</sup> Yet had any other course been adopted, every sect would have had its own Bible; as it is, this one translation has been all but unanimously received for three centuries.

translation retained in all cases where it is correct and clear; but if this had been done, a patch work effect would have been produced like that of new cloth upon old garments. Moreover the devotional associations of the reader would have been offended, and it would have been a rash experiment to provoke such a contrast between the matchless style of the Authorized Version and that of the modern translator, thus placed side by side.

Fourth. The style adopted for the present purpose should not be antiquated; for St. Paul was writing in the language used by his Hellenistic readers in everyday life.

Fifth. In order to give the true meaning of the original, something more than a mere verbal rendering is often absolutely required. St. Paul's style is extremely elliptical, and the gaps must be filled up. And moreover the great difficulty in understanding his argument is to trace clearly the transitions<sup>7</sup> by which he passes from one step to another. For this purpose something must occasionally be supplied beyond the mere literal rendering of the words.

In fact, the meaning of an ancient writer may be rendered into a modern language in three ways: either, first, by a *literal version*; or, secondly, by a *free translation*; or, thirdly, by a *paraphrase*.

A recent specimen of the first method may be found in the corrected edition of the Authorized Version of the Corinthians by Prof. Stanley, of the Galatians and Ephesians by Prof. Ellicott, and of the Thessalonians, Galatians, and Romans, by Prof. Jowett, all of which have appeared since the first edition of the present

---

<sup>7</sup> In the translation of the Epistles given in the present work, it has been the special aim of the translator to represent these transitions correctly. They very often depend upon a word which suggests a new thought, and are quite lost by a want of attention to the verbal coincidence. Thus, for instance, in Rom. 10:16,17. "Who hath given faith to our *teaching*? So then faith cometh by *teaching*." How completely is the connection destroyed by such inattention in the Authorized Version: "Who hath believed our *report*? So then faith cometh by *hearing*."

work. The experiment of these translations (ably executed as they are) has confirmed the view above expressed of the unsatisfactory nature of such a literal rendering; for it cannot be doubted that though they correct the mistakes of the Authorized Version, yet they leave an English reader in more hopeless bewilderment as to St. Paul's meaning than that version itself.

Of the third course (that of paraphrase) an excellent specimen is to be found in Prof. Stanley's paraphrases of the Corinthian Epistles. There is perhaps no better way than this of conveying the general meaning of the Epistles to an English reader; but it would not be suitable for the biography of St. Paul, in which not only his general meaning but his every sentence and every clause should, so far as possible, be given.

There remains the intermediate course of a free translation, which is that adopted in the present work; nor does there seem any reason why a translation of St. Paul should be rendered inaccurate by a method which would generally be adopted in a translation of Thucydides.

It has not been thought necessary to interrupt the reader by a note in every instance where the translation varies from the Authorized Version. It has been assumed that the readers of the notes will have sufficient knowledge to understand the reason of such variations in the more obvious cases. But it is hoped that no variation which presents any difficulty has been passed over without explanation.

It should further be observed that the translation given in this work does not adhere to the Textus Receptus, but follows the text authorized by the best manuscripts. Yet, though the Textus Receptus has no authority in itself, it seems desirable to depart from it without necessity, because it is the text familiar to English readers. Hence the translator has adhered to it in passages where the manuscripts of highest authority are equally divided between its reading and some other;

and also in some cases where the difference between it and the true text is merely verbal.

The authorities consulted upon the chronology of St. Paul's life, the reasons for the views taken of disputed points in it, and for the dates of the Epistles, are stated (so far as seems needful) in the body of the work or in the Appendices, and need not be further referred to here.

In conclusion, the authors would express their hope that this biography may, in its measure, be useful in strengthening the hearts of some against the peculiar form of unbelief most current at the present day. The more faithfully we can represent to ourselves the life, outward and inward, of St. Paul, in all its fullness, the more unreasonable must appear the theory that Christianity had a mythical origin; and the stronger must be our ground for believing his testimony to the divine nature and miraculous history of our Redeemer. No reasonable man can learn to know and love the Apostle of the Gentiles without asking himself the question, "What was the principle by which through such a life he was animated? What was the strength in which he labored with such immense results? Nor can the most skeptical inquirer doubt for one moment the full sincerity of St. Paul's belief that "the life which he lived in the flesh he lived by the faith of the Son of God, who dies and gave Himself for him." (Gal. 8:20)

To believe in Christ crucified and risen, to serve Him on earth, to be with Him hereafter – these, if we may trust the account of his own motives by any human writer whatever, were the chief if not the only thoughts which sustained Paul of Tarsus through all the troubles and sorrows of his twenty years of conflict. His sagacity, his cheerfulness, his forethought, his impartial and clear judging reason, all the natural elements of his strong character are not indeed to be overlooked; but the more highly we exalt these in our estimate of his work, the larger share we attribute to them in the performance of his mission, the more we are compelled to believe that he spoke the words of truth and soberness when he told the Corinthians that "last of all Christ was seen of him also (1 Cor. 15:8) that by

the “grace of God he was what he was, that while he labored more abundantly than all, it was not he, but the grace of God that was in him.”<sup>8</sup>

## Chapter 1

### Great Men of Great Periods

The life of a great man, in a great period of the world's history, is a subject to command the attention of every thoughtful mind. Alexander on his eastern expedition, spreading the civilization of Greece over the Asiatic and African shores of the Mediterranean Sea – Julius Caesar contending against the Gauls and subduing the barbarism of Western Europe to the order and discipline of Roman government – Charlemagne compressing the separating atoms of the feudal world and reviving for a time the image of imperial unity Columbus sailing westward over the Atlantic to discover a new world which might receive the arts and religion of the old – Napoleon on his rapid campaigns, shattering the ancient system of European states and leaving a chasm between our present and the past: these are the colossal figures of history which stamp with the impress of their personal greatness the centuries in which they lived.

The interest with which we look upon such men is natural and inevitable, even when we are deeply conscious that, in their character and their work, evil was mixed up in large proportions with the good, and when we find it difficult to discover the providential design which drew the features of their respective epochs. But this natural feeling rises into something higher if we can be assured that the period we contemplate was designedly prepared for great results, that the work we admire was a work of unmixed good, and the man whose actions we follow was an instrument specially prepared by the hands of God. Such a period was that in which the civilized world was united under the first

<sup>8</sup> Stanley's *Sermons on the Apostolic Age*, p. 186.

Roman emperors, such a work was the first preaching of the gospel, and such a man was Paul of Tarsus.

### Period of Christ's Apostles

Casting this general view on the age of the first Roman emperors, which was also the age of Jesus Christ and His apostles, we find our attention arrested by three great varieties of national life. The Jew, the Greek, and the Roman appear to divide the world between them. The outward condition of Jerusalem itself, at this epoch, might be taken as a type of the civilized world. Herod the Great, who rebuilt the Temple, had erected, for Greek and Roman entertainments, a theatre within the same walls, and an amphitheater in the neighboring plain.<sup>9</sup>

His coins, and those of his grandson Agrippa, bore Greek inscriptions: that piece of money, which was brought to our Savior (Matt. 22; Mark 12: Luke 20), was the silver denarius, the “image” was that of the emperor, the “superscription” was in Latin; and at the same time when the common currency consisted of such pieces as these, since coins with the images of men or with heathen symbols would have been a profanation to the Treasury, there might be found on the tables of the money changers in the Temple, shekels and half shekels with Samaritan letters, minted under the Maccabees.

Greek and Roman names were borne by multitudes of those Jews who came up to worship at the festivals. Greek and Latin words were current in the popular Hebrew of the day/ and while this Syro Chaldaic dialect was spoken by the mass of the people with the tenacious affection of old custom, Greek had long been well known among the upper classes in the larger towns, and Latin was used in the courts

<sup>9</sup> Josephus, *Antiquities* xv.8,1. *War*, i.21.8. Our reference to the two great works of Josephus, the *Jewish Antiquities* and the *Jewish War*, will be very frequent. Occasionally also we shall refer to his *Life* and his discourse *against Apion*.

of law, and in the official correspondence of magistrates.

On a critical occasion in St. Paul's life, (Acts 21, 22) when he was standing on the stair between the Temple and the fortress, he first spoke to the commander of the garrison in Greek, and then turned round and addressed his countrymen in Hebrew; while the letter <sup>10</sup> of Claudius Lysias was written, and the oration of Tertullus spoken, in Latin. We are told by the historian Josephus, that on a parapet of stone in the Temple area, where a flight of fourteen steps led up from the outer to the inner court, pillars were placed at equal distances, with notices, some in Greek and some in Latin, that no alien should enter the sacred enclosure of the Hebrews. And we are told by two of the Evangelists, that when our blessed Savior was crucified, "the superscription of His accusation" was written above His cross" in letters of Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin"

### Jews, Greeks, and Romans

The condition of the world in general at that period wears a similar appearance to a Christian's eye. He sees the Greek and Roman elements brought into remarkable union with the older and more sacred elements of Judaism. He sees in the Hebrew people a divinely laid foundation for the superstructure of the Church, and in the dispersion of the Jews a soil made ready in fitting places for the seed of the Gospel. He sees in the spread of the language and commerce of the Greeks, and in the high perfection of their poetry and philosophy, appropriate means for the rapid communication of Christian ideas, and for bringing them into close connection with the best thoughts of unassisted humanity. And he sees in the union of so many incoherent provinces under the law and government of Rome, a strong framework which might –keep together for a sufficient period those masses of

<sup>10</sup> Acts 23. A document of this kind, sent with a prisoner by a subordinate to a superior officer, would almost certainly be in Latin.

social life which the Gospel was intended to pervade.

The City of God is built at the confluence of three civilizations. We recognize with gratitude the hand of God in the history of His world; and we turn with devout feelings to trace the course of these three streams of civilized life from their early source to the time of their meeting in the Apostolic age.

We need not linger about the fountains of the national life of the Jews. We know that they gushed forth at first, and flowed in their appointed channels, at the command of God. The call of Abraham, when one family was chosen to keep and hand down the deposit of divine truth – the series of providences which brought the ancestors of the Jews into Egypt – the long captivity on the banks of the Nile – the works of Moses, whereby the bondsmen were made into a nation – all these things are represented in the Old Testament as occurring under the immediate direction of Almighty power.

The people of Israel were taken out of the midst of an idolatrous world to become the depositories of a purer knowledge of the one true God than was given to any other people. At a time when (humanly speaking) the world could hardly have preserved a spiritual religion in its highest purity, they received a divine revelation enshrined in symbols and ceremonies, whereby it might be safely kept till the time of its development in a purer and more heavenly form.

The peculiarity of the Hebrew civilization did not consist in the culture of the imagination and intellect, like that of the Greeks, nor in the organization of government, like that of Rome – but its distinguishing feature was Religion. To say nothing of the Scriptures, the prophets, the miracles of the Jews – their frequent festivals, their constant sacrifices – everything in their collective and private life was connected with a revealed religion; their wars, their heroes, their poetry, had a sacred character – their national code was full of the details of public worship –

their ordinary employments were touched at every point by divinely appointed and significant ceremonies.

Nor was this religion, as were the religions of the heathen world, a creed which could not be the common property of the instructed and the ignorant. It was neither a recondite philosophy which might not be communicated to the masses of the people, nor a weak superstition, controlling the conduct of the lower classes, and ridiculed by the higher. The religion of Moses was for the use of all and the benefit of all. The poorest peasant of Galilee had the same part in it as the wisest rabbi of Jerusalem. The children of all families were taught to claim their share in the privileges of the chosen people.

And how different was the nature of this religion from that of the contemporary Gentiles! The pious feelings of the Jew were not dissipated and distracted by a fantastic mythology, where a thousand different objects of worship, with contradictory attributes, might claim the attention of the devout mind." One God," the Creator and Judge of the world, and the Author of all good, was the only object of adoration. And there was nothing of that wide separation between religion and morality, which among other nations was the road to all impurity. The will and approbation of Jehovah was the motive and support of all holiness; faith in His word was the power which raised men above their natural weakness; while even the divinities of Greece and Rome were often the personifications of human passions, and the example and sanction of vice.

And still farther; the devotional scriptures of the Jews express that heartfelt sense of infirmity and sin, that peculiar spirit of prayer, that real communion with God, with which the Christian, in his best moments, has the truest sympathy. <sup>11</sup> So that, while the best hymns of

<sup>11</sup> Neander observes that it has been justly remarked that the distinctive peculiarity of the Hebrew nation

Greece <sup>12</sup> are only mythological pictures, and the literature of heathen Rome hardly produces anything which can be called a prayer, the Hebrew psalms have passed into the devotions of the Christian church.

There is a light on all the mountains of Judea which never shone on Olympus or Parnassus; and the " Hill of Zion," in which " it pleased God to dwell," is the type of " the joy of the whole earth," (Psalm 48:2,16) while the seven hills of Rome are the symbol of tyranny and idolatry." He showed His word unto Jacob, His statutes and ordinances unto Israel. He dealt not so with any nation; neither had the heathen knowledge of His laws." (Psalm 147:19,20)

### Religious Civilization of the Jews

But not only was a holy religion the characteristic of the civilization of the Jews, but their religious feelings were directed to something in the future, and all the circumstances of their national life tended to fix their thoughts on One that was to come. By types and by promises, their eyes were continually turned towards a Messiah.

Their history was a continued prophecy. All the great stages of their national existence were accompanied by effusions of prophetic light. Abraham was called from his father's house, and it was revealed that in him " all families of the earth should be blessed." Moses formed Abraham's descendants into a people by giving them a law and national institutions; but while so doing he spoke before of Him who was hereafter to be raised up a " Prophet like unto himself." David reigned, and during that reign, which made so deep and lasting an impression on the Jewish mind, psalms were written which

---

from the very first was that *conscience* was more alive among them than any other people.

<sup>12</sup> There are some exceptions, as in the hymn of the Stoic Cleanthes, who was born at Assos 350 years before St. Paul was there; yet it breathes the sentiment rather of acquiescence in the determinations of Fate, than of resignation to the goodness of Providence. See on Acts 27:28.

spoke of the future King. And with the approach of that captivity, the pathetic recollection of which became perpetual, the prophecies took a bolder range and embraced within their widening circle the redemption both of Jews and Gentiles.

Thus the pious Hebrew was always, as it were, in the attitude of *expectation*, and it has been well remarked that, while the golden age of the Greeks and Romans was the past, that of the Jews was the future. While other nations were growing weary of their gods, without anything in their mythology or philosophy to satisfy the deep cravings of their nature, which religion operating rather as a barrier than a link between the educated and the ignorant – with morality divorced from theology – the whole Jewish people were united in a feeling of attachment to their sacred institutions, and found in the facts of their past history a pledge of the fulfillment of their national hopes.

It is true that the Jewish nation, again and again, during several centuries, fell into idolatry. It is true that their superiority to other nations consisted in the light which they possessed, and not in the use which they made of it, and that a carnal life continually dragged them down from the spiritual eminence on which they might have stood. But the Divine purposes were not frustrated. The chosen people were subject to the chastisement and discipline of severe sufferings, and they were fitted by a long training for the accomplishment of that work, to the conscious performance of which they did not willingly rise.

They were hard pressed in their own country by the incursions of their idolatrous neighbors, and in the end they were carried into a distant captivity. From the time of their return from Babylon they were no long idolaters. They presented to the world the example of a pure monotheism. And in the active times which preceded and followed the birth of Christ, those Greeks or Romans who visited the Jews in their own land where they still lingered at the portals of the East, and those vast numbers of proselytes whom the dispersed Jews had

gathered round them in various countries, were made familiar with the worship of one God and Father of all.<sup>13</sup>

The influence of the Jews upon the Heathen world was exercised mainly through their dispersion, but this subject must be deferred for a few pages, till we have examined some of the developments of the Greek and Roman nationalities. A few words, however may be allowed in passing, upon the consequences of the *geographical position* of Judea.

The situation of this little but eventful country is such that its inhabitants were brought into contact successively with all the civilized nations of antiquity. Not to dwell upon its proximity to Egypt on the one hand, and to Assyria on the other, and the influences which those ancient kingdoms may thereby have exercised or received, Palestine lay in the road of Alexander's Eastern expedition. The Greek conqueror was there before he founded his mercantile metropolis in Egypt, and thence went to India, to return and die at Babylon. And again, when his empire was divided, and Greek kingdoms were erected in Europe, Asia, and Africa, Palestine lay between the rival monarchies of the Ptolemies at Alexandria and the Seleucids at Antioch, too near to both to be safe from the invasion of their arms or the influence of their customs and their language.

And finally, when the time came for the Romans to embrace the whole of the Mediterranean within the circle of their power, the coast line of Judea was the last remote portion which was needed to complete the fated circumference.

The full effect of this geographical position of Judea can only be seen by following the course of Greek and Roman life, till they were brought so remarkably into contact with each other and

---

<sup>13</sup> Humboldt has remarked, in the chapter on Poetic Descriptions of Nature (*Kosmos*, Sabine's Engl. Translation, vol ii, p. 44), that the descriptive poetry of the Hebrews is a reflex of Monotheism, and portrays nature, not as self-subsisting, but ever in relation of a Higher Power.

with that of the Jews; and we turn to those other two nations of antiquity, the steps of whose progress were successive stages in what is called in the Epistle to the Ephesians (1:10) "the dispensation of the fullness of time"

### Character and Language of the Greeks

If we think of the civilization of the Greeks, we have no difficulty in fixing on its chief characteristics. High perfection of the intellect and imagination, displaying itself in all the various forms of art, poetry, literature, and philosophy – restless activity of mind and body, finding its exercise in athletic games or in subtle disputations – love of the beautiful, quick perception, indefatigable inquiry, all these enter into the very idea of the Greek race.

This is not the place to inquire how far these qualities were due to an innate peculiarity, or how far they grew up, by gradual development, amidst the natural influences of their native country – the variety of their hills and plains, the clear lights and warm shadows of their climate, the mingled land and water of their oceans. We have only to do with this national character so far as, under divine Providence, it was made subservient to the spread of the gospel.

We shall see how remarkably it served this purpose if we consider the tendency of the Greeks to trade and colonization. Their mental activity was accompanied with a great physical restlessness. This clever people always exhibited a disposition to spread themselves. Without aiming at universal conquest, they displayed a remarkable catholicity of character, and a singular power of adaptation to those whom they called Barbarians.<sup>14</sup> In this respect they were strongly contrasted with the Egyptians, whose immemorial civilization was confined to the long valley which extends from the cataracts to the mouth of the Nile.

<sup>14</sup> In the NT the word 'barbarian' is used in its strict classical sense, i.e., for a person who does not speak Greek. See Acts 27:2,4; Rom. 1:14; 1 Cor. 14:11, Col. 3:11.

The Hellenic<sup>15</sup> tribes, on the other hand, though they despised foreigners, were never unwilling to visit them and to cultivate their acquaintance. At the earliest period at which history enables us to discover them, we see them moving about in their ships on the shores and among the island of their native seas; and, three or four centuries before the Christian era, Asia Minor, beyond which the Persians had not been permitted to advance, was bordered by a fringe of Greek colonies; and lower Italy, when the Roman republic was just beginning to be conscious of its strength, had received the name of Greece itself.<sup>16</sup>

To all these places they carried their arts and literature, their philosophy, their mythology, and their amusements. They carried also their arms and their trade. The heroic age had passed away, and fabulous voyages has given place to real expeditions against Sicily and constant traffic with the Black Sea. They were gradually taking the place of the Phoenicians in the empire of the Mediterranean. They were, indeed, less mercantile than those old discoverers. Their voyages were not so long. But their influence on general civilization was greater and more permanent.

The earliest ideas of scientific navigation and geography are due to the Greeks. The later Greek travelers, Strabo and Pausanias, will be our best sources of information on the topography of St. Paul's journeys.

With this view of the Hellenic character before us, we are prepared to appreciate the vast results of Alexander's conquests. He took up the meshes of the net of Greek civilization, which were lying in disorder on the edges of the Asiatic shore, and spread them over all the countries which he traversed in his wonderful campaigns. The East and the West were

<sup>15</sup> 'Hellenic' and 'Hellenistic,' corresponding respectively to the 'Greek' and 'Grecian' of the Authorized Version, are words which we must often use.

<sup>16</sup> Magna Graecia

suddenly brought together. Separated tribes were united under a common government. New cities were built as the centers of political life. New lines of communication were opened as the channels of commercial activity.

The new culture penetrated the mountain ranges of Pisidia and Lycaonia. The Tigris and Euphrates became Greek rivers. The language of Athens was heard among the Jewish colonies of Babylonia, and a Grecian Babylon <sup>17</sup> was built by the conqueror in Egypt, and called by his name.

The empire of Alexander was divided, but the effects of his campaigns and policies did not cease. The influence of the fresh elements of social life was rather increased by being brought into independent action within the spheres of distinct kingdoms. Our attention is particularly called to two of the monarchical lines which descended from Alexander's generals: the Ptolemies, or the Greek kings of Egypt, and the Seleucids, or the Greek kings of Syria. Their respective capitals, Alexandria and Antioch, because the metropolitan centers of commercial and civilized life in the East. They rose suddenly, and their very appearance marked them as the cities of a new epoch.

Like Berlin and St. Petersburg they were modern cities built by great kings at a definite time and for a definite purpose. Their histories are no unimportant chapters in the history of the world. Both of them were connected with St. Paul: one indirectly, as the birthplace of Apollos, the other directly, as the scene of some of the most important passages of the Apostle's own life. Both abounded in Jews from their first foundation. Both became the residences of Roman governors, and both afterwards were patriarchates of the primitive church. But before they had received either the Roman discipline or the Christian doctrine, they had served their appointed purpose of spreading the Greek language and habits, of creating new lines of commercial intercourse by land and sea,

<sup>17</sup> Alexandria

and of centralizing in themselves the mercantile life of the Levant. Even the Acts of the Apostles remind us of the traffic of Antioch with Cyprus and the neighboring coasts, and of the sailing of Alexandrian corn ships to the more distant harbors of Malta and Puteoli.

Of all the Greek elements which the cities of Antioch and Alexandria were the means of circulating, the spread of the language is the most important. Its connection with the whole system of Christian doctrine, with many of the controversies and divisions of the Church, is very momentous. That language, which is the richest and most delicate that the world has seen, became the language of theology. The Greek tongue became to the Christian more than it had been to the Roman or the Jew. The mother tongue of Ignatius at Antioch, was that in which Philo <sup>18</sup> composed his treatises at Alexandria, and which Cicero spoke at Athens.

It is difficult to state in a few words the important relation which Alexandria more especially was destined to bear to the whole Christian church. In that city, the representative of the Greeks of the East, where the most remarkable fusion took place of the peculiarities of Greek, Jewish, and Oriental life, and at the time when all these had been brought in contact with the mind of educated Romans – a *theological language* was formed, rich in the phrases of various schools, and suited to convey Christian ideas to all the world.

It was not an accident that the New Testament was written in Greek, the language which can best express the highest thoughts and worthiest feelings of the intellect and heart, and which is adapted to be the instrument of education for all nations. Nor was it an accident that the composition of these books and the promulgation of the Gospel were delayed until the instruction of our Lord and the writings of His Apostles could be expressed in the dialect of

<sup>18</sup> We shall frequently have occasion to mention this learned Alexandrian Jew. He was a contemporary of St. Paul.

Alexandria. This must also be ascribed to the foreknowledge of Him, who” winked at the times of ignorance,” but who” made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation.” (Acts 27:26,30)

We do not forget that the social conditions of the Greeks had been falling during this period into the lowest corruption. The disastrous quarrels of Alexander’s generals had been continued among their successors. Political integrity had been lost. The Greeks spent their life in worthless and frivolous amusements. Their religion, though beautiful beyond expression as giving subjects for art and poetry, was utterly powerless, and worse than powerless, in checking their bad propensities. Their philosophers were sophists. Their women might be briefly divided into two classes, those who were highly educated and openly profligate on the one side, and those who lived in domestic and ignorant seclusion on the other.

And it cannot be denied that all these causes of degradation spread with the diffusion of the race and the language. Like Sybaris and Syracuse, Antioch and Alexandria became almost worse than Athens and Corinth. But the very diffusion and development of this corruption was preparing the way, because it showed the necessity, for the interposition of a Gospel.

The disease itself seemed to call for a Healer. And if the prevailing evils of the Greek population presented obstacles, on a large scale, to the progress of Christianity, yet they showed to all future time the weakness of man’s highest powers, if unassisted from above. There must have been many who groaned under the burden of a corruption which they could not shake off and who were ready to welcome the voice of Him who” took our infirmities and bare our sicknesses.” (Matt. 8:17). The” Greeks,” who are mentioned by St. John as coming to see Jesus at the feast, were, we trust, the types of a large class; and we may conceive His answer to

Andrew and Philip as expressing the fulfillment of the appointed times in the widest sense –” The house is come, that the Son of Man should be glorified”

### **Growth of the Roman Empire**

Such was the civilization and corruption connected with the spread of the Greek language when the Roman power approached to the eastern parts of the Mediterranean Sea. For some centuries this irresistible force had been gathering strength on the western side of the Apennines. Gradually, but surely, and with ever increasing rapidity, it made to itself a wider space – northward into Etruria, southward into Campania. It passed beyond its Italian boundaries. And six hundred years after the building of the City, the Roman eagle had seized on Africa at the point of Carthage, and Greece at the Isthmus of Corinth, and had turned its eye towards the East. The defenseless prey was made secure, by craft or by war; and before the birth of our Savior, all those coasts, from Ephesus to Tarsus and Antioch, and round by the Holy Land to Alexandria and Cyrene, were tributary to the city of the Tiber. We have to describe in a few words the characteristics of this new dominion, and to point out its providential connection with the spread and consolidation of the Church.

In the first place, this dominion was not a pervading influence exerted by a restless and intellectual people, but it was the grasping power of an external government. The idea of law had grown up with the growth of the Romans; and wherever they went they carried it with them. Wherever their armies were marching or encamping, there always attended them, like a mysterious presence, the spirit of the City of Rome. Universal conquest and permanent occupation were the ends at which they aimed. Strength and organization were the characteristics of their sway. We have seen how the Greek science and commerce were wafted, by irregular winds, from coast to coast; and now we follow the advance of legions, governors, and judges along the Roman roads, which pursued their undeviating course over

plains and mountains, and bound the City to the furthest extremities of the provinces.

There is no better way of obtaining a clear view of the features and a correct idea of the spirit of the Roman age, than by considering the material works which still remain as its imperishable monuments. Whether undertaken by the hands of the government, or for the ostentation of private luxury, there were marked by vast extent and accomplished at an enormous expenditure. The gigantic roads of the Empire have been unrivalled till the present century. Solid structures of all kinds, for utility, amusement, and worship, were erected in Italy and the provinces – amphitheatres of stone, magnificent harbors, bridges, sepulchers, and temples.

The decoration of wealthy houses was celebrated by the poets of the day. The pomp of buildings in the cities was rivaled by astonishing villas in the country. The enormous baths, by which travelers are surprised, belong to a period somewhat later than that of St. Paul; but the aqueducts, which still remain in the Campagna, were some of them new when he visited Rome. Of the metropolis itself it may be enough to say that his life is exactly embraced between its two great times of renovation, that of Augustus on one hand, who (to use his own expression) having found it a city of brick left it a city of marble, and that of Nero on the other, when the great conflagration afforded an opportunity for a new arrangement of its streets and buildings.

### **Misery of Italy and the Provinces**

These great works may be safely taken as emblems of the magnitude, strength, grandeur, and solidity of the Empire; but they are emblems, no less, of the tyranny and cruelty which had presided over its formation, and of the general suffering which pervaded it. The statues, with which the metropolis and the Roman houses were profusely decorated, had been brought from plundered provinces, and many of them had swelled the triumphs of conquerors on the Capitol. The amphitheatres

were built for shows of gladiators and were the scenes of a bloody cruelty which had been quite unknown in the licentious exhibitions of the Greek theater. The roads, baths, harbors, aqueducts, had been constructed by slave labor. And the country villas, which the Italian traveler lingered to admire, were themselves vast establishments of slaves.

It is easy to see how much misery followed in the train of Rome's advancing greatness. Cruel suffering was a characteristic feature of the close of the Republic. Slave wars, civil wars, wars of conquest, had left their disastrous results behind them. No country recovers rapidly from the effects of a war which has been conducted within its frontier; and there was no district of the Empire which had not been the scene of some recent campaign.

None had suffered more than Italy itself. Its old stock of freemen, who had cultivated its fair plains and terraced vineyards, was utterly worn out. The general depopulation was badly compensated by the establishment of military colonies. Inordinate wealth and slave factories were the prominent features of the desolate prospect. The words of the great historian may fill up the picture:

“As regards the manners and mode of life of the Romans, their great object at this time was the acquisition and possession of money. Their moral conduct, which had been corrupt enough before the social war, became still more so by the systematic plunder and rapine. Immense riches were accumulated and squandered upon brutal pleasures. The simplicity of the old manners and mode of living had been abandoned for Greek luxuries and frivolities, and the whole household arrangements had become altered. The Roman houses had formerly been quite simple, and were built either of bricks or peperino, but in most cases of the former material; now, on the other hand, everyone one would live in a splendid house and be surrounded by luxuries. The condition of Italy after the Social and Civil wars was indescribably wretched. Samnium had become almost a desert; and as late as the time of

Strabo there was scarcely any town in that country which was not in ruins. But worse things were yet to come.”<sup>19</sup>

This disastrous condition was not confined to Italy. In some respects the provinces had their own peculiar sufferings. To take the case of Asia Minor: it had been plundered and ravaged by successive generals – by Scipio in the war against Antiochus of Syria – by Manlius in his Galatian campaign – by Pompey in the struggle with Mithridates. The rapacity of governors and their officials followed that of generals and their armies. We know that Cilicia suffered under Dolabella and his agent Verres; and Cicero reveals to us the oppression of his predecessor Appius in the same province, contrasted with his own boasted clemency. Some portions of this beautify and inexhaustible country revived under the emperors.<sup>20</sup>

But it was only an outward prosperity. whatever may have been the improvement in the external details of provincial government, we cannot believe that governors were gentle and forbearing, when Caligula was on the throne, and when Nero was seeking statues for his golden house. The contempt in which the Greek provincials themselves were held by the Romans may be learned from the later correspondence of the Emperor Trajan with Pliny the governor of Bithynia. We need not hesitate to take it for granted that those who were sent from Rome to dispense justice at Ephesus or Tarsus were more frequently like Appius and Verres than like Cicero and Flaccus – more like Pilate and Felix than Gallio and Sergius Paulus.<sup>21</sup>

<sup>19</sup> Niebuhr’s *Lectures on the History of Rome*, vol. I pp 421,422.

<sup>20</sup> *ibid*, p. 406.

<sup>21</sup> Much of our best information concerning the state of the provinces is derived from Cicero’s celebrated *Speeches Against Verres* and his own Cilician correspondence, to which we shall again have occasion to refer. His *Speech in Defense of Flaccus* throws much light on the condition of the Jews under the Romans.

It would be a delusion to imagine that, when the world was reduced under one scepter, any real principle of unity held its different parts together. The emperor was deified<sup>22</sup> because men were enslaved. There was no true peace when Augustus closed the Temple of Janus. The Empire was only the order of external government, with a chaos of opinions and morals within. The writings of Tacitus and Juvenal remain to attest the corruption which festered in all ranks, alike in the senate and the family. The old severity of manners, and the old faith in the better part of the Roman religion, were gone. The licentious creeds and practices of Greece and the East had inundated Italy and the West; and the Pantheon was only the monument of a compromise among a multitude of effete superstitions. It is true that a remarkable religious toleration was produced by this state of things; and it is probable that for some short time Christianity itself shared the advantage of it. But still the temper of the times was essentially both cruel and profane; and the Apostles were soon exposed to its bitter persecution. The Roman Empire was destitute of that unity which the Gospel gives to mankind. It was a kingdom of this world, and the human race was groaning for the better peace of “a kingdom not of this world.”

Thus, in the very condition of the Roman Empire, and the miserable state of its mixed population, we can recognize a negative preparation for the Gospel of Christ. This tyranny and oppression called for a *Consoler*, as much as the moral sickness of the Greeks called for a Healer. A Messiah was needed by the whole Empire as much as by the Jews, though

We must not place too much confidence in the picture there given of this Ephesian governor.

<sup>22</sup> The image of the emperor was at that time the object of religious reverence; he was a deity on earth, and the worship paid to him was a real worship. It is a striking thought that in those times (setting aside effete forms of religion) the only two worships in the civilized world were either the worship of a Tiberius or a Nero or the worship of Christ.

not looked for with the same conscious expectation. But we have no difficulty in going much farther than this, and we cannot hesitate to discover in the circumstances of the world at this period, significant traces of a positive preparation for the gospel.

### Preparation in the Empire for Christianity

It should be remembered in the first place that the Romans had already become Greek to some considerable extent, before they were the political masters of those eastern countries, where the language, mythology, and literature of Greece had become more or less familiar. How early, how widely, and how permanently this Greek influence prevailed, and how deeply it entered into the mind of educated Romans, we know from their surviving writings and from the biography of eminent men. Cicero, who was governor of Cilicia about half a century before the birth of St. Paul, speaks in strong terms of the universal spread of the Greek tongue among the instructed classes; and about the time of the Apostle's martyrdom, Agricola, the conqueror of Britain, was receiving a Greek education at Marseilles. Is it too much to say, that the general Latin conquest was providentially delayed until the Romans had been sufficiently imbued with the language and ideas of their predecessors, and had incorporated many parts of that civilization with the own?

And if the wisdom of the divine pre arrangement is illustrated by the period of the spread of the Greek language, it is illustrated no less by that of the completion and maturity of the Roman government. When all parts of the civilized world were bound together in one empire – when one common organization pervaded the whole – when channels of communication were everywhere opened – when new facilities of traveling were provided – then was the “fullness of times” (Gal. 4:4), then the Messiah came.

The Greek language had already been prepared as a medium for preserving and transmitting the doctrine; the Roman government was now

prepared to help the progress even of that religion which it persecuted. The manner in which it spread through the provinces is well exemplified in the life of St. Paul; his right of citizenship rescued him in Macedonia (Acts 16:37 39) and in Judea; (Acts 18:14 17) he converted one governor in Cyprus, (Acts 22:25) was protected by another in Achaia, (Acts 18:12) and was sent from Jerusalem to Rome by a third. (Acts 25:12; 27:1)

The time was indeed approaching when all the complicated weight of the central tyranny, and of the provincial governments, was to fall on the new and irresistible religion. But before this took place, it had begun to grow up in close connection with all departments of the Empire. When the supreme government itself became Christian, the ecclesiastical polity was permanently regulated in conformity with the actual constitution of the state. Now was the Empire broken up, till the separate fragments, which have become the nations of modern Europe, were themselves portions of the Catholic church.

But in all that we have said of the condition of the Roman world, one important and widely diffused element of the population has not been mentioned. We have lost sight for some time of the Jews, and we must return to the subject of their dispersion, which was purposely deferred till we had shown how the intellectual civilization of the Greeks, and the organizing civilization of the Romans, had, through a long series of remarkable events, been brought into contact with the religious civilization of the Hebrews. It remains that we point out that one peculiarity of the Jewish people which made this contact almost universal in every part of the Empire.

### The Dispersion of the Jews

Their dispersion begin early; though, early and late, their attachment to Judea has always been the same. Like the Highlanders of Switzerland and Scotland, they seem to have combined a tendency to foreign settlements with the most passionate love of their native land. The first

scattering of the Jews was compulsory and began with the Assyrian exile, when, about the time of the building of Rome, natives of Galilee and Samaria were carried away by the Eastern monarchs. This was followed by the Babylonian exile, when the tribes of Judah and Benjamin were removed at different epochs – when Daniel was brought to Babylon and Ezekiel to the river Chebar.

That this earliest dispersion was not without influential results may be inferred from these facts – that about the time of the battles of Salamis and Marathon, a Jew was the minister, another Jew the cupbearer, and Jewess the consort, of a Persian monarch. That they enjoyed many privileges in this foreign country, and that their condition was not always oppressive, may be gathered from this – that when Cyrus gave them permission to return, the majority remained in their new home, in preference to their native land. Thus that great Jewish colony began in Babylonia, the existence of which may be traced in Apostolic times;<sup>23</sup> and which retained its influence long after in the Talmudic schools.

These Hebrew settlements may be followed through various parts of the continental East, to the borders of the Caspian, and even to China. We, however, are more concerned with the coasts and islands of western Asia. Jews had settled in Syria and Phoenicia before the time of Alexander the Great. But in treating of this subject, the great stress is to be laid on the policy of Seleucus, who, in founding Antioch, raised them to the same political position with the other citizens. One of his successors on the throne, Antiochus the Great, established two thousand Jewish families in Lydia and Phrygia. From hence they would spread into Pamphylia and Galatia and along the western coasts from Ephesus to Troas. And the ordinary channels of communication, in conjunction with that tendency to trade which already began to characterize this wonderful people, would

<sup>23</sup> See 1 Pet. 5:13

easily bring them to the islands, such as Cyprus and Rhodes.<sup>24</sup>

Their oldest settlement in Africa was that which took place after the murder of the Babylonian governor of Judea, and which is connected with the name of the prophet Jeremiah.<sup>25</sup> But, as in the case of Antioch, our chief attention is called to the great metropolis of the period of the Greek kings. The Jewish quarter of Alexandria is well known in history; and the colony of Hellenistic Jews in Lower Egypt is of greater importance than that of their Aramaic brethren in Babylonia. Alexander himself brought Jews and Samaritans to his famous city; the first Ptolemy brought many more; and many betook themselves there of their free will, that they might escape from the incessant troubles which disturbed the peace of their fatherland. Nor was their influence confined to Egypt, but they became known on one side of Ethiopia, the country of Queen Candace,<sup>26</sup> and spread on the other in great numbers to the “parts of Libya and Cyrene.”<sup>27</sup>

Under what circumstances the Jews made their first appearance in Europe is unknown; but it is natural to suppose that those islands of the Archipelago which were like a bridge for the passage of civilization, became the means of the advance of Judaism. The journey of the proselyte Lydia from Thyatira to Philippi (Acts 26:14) and the voyage of Aquila and Priscilla from Corinth to Ephesus (Acts 18:18) are only specimens of mercantile excursions which must have begun at a far earlier period.

<sup>24</sup> The farming of the copper mines in Cyprus by Herod (Josephus, *Antiquities*, 16:4,5) may have attracted many Jews. There is a Cyprian inscription which seems to refer to one of the Herods.

<sup>25</sup> See 2 Kings 25:22-26; Jer. 54 and 54.

<sup>26</sup> Acts 8:27

<sup>27</sup> Acts 2:10. The second book of Maccabees is the abridgment of a work written by a Hellenistic Jew of Cyrene. A Jew or proselyte of Cyrene bore our Savior's cross. And the mention of this city occurs more than once in the Acts of the Apostles.

Philo mentions Jews in Thessaly, Boeotia, Macedonia, Aetolia, and Attica, in Argos and Corinth, in the other parts of Peloponnesus, and in the islands of Euboea and Crete. St. Luke, in the Acts of the Apostles, speaks of them in Philippi, Thessalonica, and Berea, in Athens, in Corinth, and in Rome. The first Jews came to Rome to decorate a triumph; but they were soon set free from captivity, and gave the name to the Synagogue of the Libertines<sup>28</sup> in Jerusalem. They owed to Julius Caesar those privileges in the Western Capital which they had obtained from Alexander in the Eastern. They became influential, and made proselytes. They spread into other towns of Italy; and in the time of St. Paul's boyhood we find them in large numbers in the island of Sardinia, just as we have previously seen them established in that of Cyprus.<sup>29</sup> With regard to Gaul, we know at least that two sons of Herod were banished, about this same period, to the banks of the Rhone; and if St. Paul accomplished that journey to Spain of which he speaks in his letters, there is little doubt that he found there some of the scattered children of his own people. We do not seek to pursue them further; but, after a few words on the proselytes, we must return to the earliest scenes of the Apostle's career.

The subject of the proselytes is sufficiently important to demand a separate notice. Under this term we include at present all who were attracted in various degrees of intensity toward Judaism – from those who by circumcision had obtained full access to all the privileges of the temple worship, to those who only professed a general respect for the religion of Moses, and attended as hearers in the synagogues. Many proselytes were attached to the Jewish communities wherever they were dispersed.

<sup>28</sup> This body doubtless consisted of manumitted Jewish slaves. The synagogues mentioned in Acts 6:9 are discussed in the next chapter.

<sup>29</sup> In the case of Sardinia, however, they were forcibly sent to the island, to die of the bad climate.

Even in their own country and its vicinity the number, both in early and later times, was not inconsiderable. The Queen of Sheba, Candace, Queen of Ethiopia, and King Izates, with his mother Helena, mentioned by Josephus, are only royal representatives of a large class. During the time of the Maccabees some alien tribes were forcibly incorporated with the Jews. This was the case with the Itureans, and probably with the Moabites, and, above all, with the Edomites, with whose name that of the Herodian family is historically connected. How far Judaism extended among the vague collection of tribes called Arabians, we can only conjecture from the curious history of the Homerites, and from the actions of such chieftains as Aretas (2 Cor. 11:32).

But as we travel towards the West and North, into countries better known, we find no lack of evidence of the moral effect of the synagogues, with their worship of Jehovah, and their prophecies of the Messiah. Nicolas of Antioch (Acts 6:5) is the only one of that "vast multitude of Greeks" who, according to Josephus were attracted in that city to the Jewish doctrine and ritual. In Damascus, we are even told by the same authority that the great majority of the women were proselytes; a fact which receives a remarkable illustration from what happened to Paul at Iconium (Acts 13:50). But all further details may be postponed until we follow Paul himself into the synagogues, where he so often addressed a mingled audience of "Jews of the dispersion" and "devout strangers."

This chapter may be suitably concluded by some notice of the provinces of Cilicia and Judea. This will serve as an illustration of what has been said above concerning the state of the Roman provinces generally; it will exemplify the mixture of Jews, Greeks, and Romans in the east of the Mediterranean, and it will be a fit introduction to what must immediately succeed. For these are the two provinces which require our attention in the early life of the Apostle Paul.

Both these provinces were once under the scepter of the line of the Seleucids, or Greek

kings of Syria; and both of them, though originally inhabited by a “barbarous” population, received more or less of the influence of Greek civilization. If the map is consulted, it will be seen that Antioch, the capital of the Greco Syrian kings, is situated nearly in the angle where the coast line of Cilicia, running eastwards, and that of Judea, extended northwards, are brought to an abrupt meeting.

It will be seen also that, more or less parallel to each of these coasts, there is a line of mountains, not far from the sea, which are brought into contact with each other in heavy and confused forms, near the same angle., the principal break in the continuity of either of them being the valley of the Orontes, which passes by Antioch. One of these mountain lines is the range of Mount Taurus, which is so often mentioned as a great geographical boundary by the writers of Greece and Rome; and Cilicia extends partly over the Taurus itself, and partly between it and the sea. The other range is that of Lebanon – a name made sacred by the scriptures and poetry of the Jews; and where its towering eminences subside towards the south into a land of hills and valleys and level plains, there is Judea, once the country of promise and possession to the chose people, but a Roman province in the time of the Apostles.

Cilicia, in the sense in which the word was used under the early Roman emperors, comprehended two districts of nearly equal extent but of very different character. The western portion, or Rough Cilicia, as it was called, was a collection of the branches of Mount Taurus, which come down in large masses to the sea, and form that projection of the coast which divides the Bay of Issus from that Pamphylia. The inhabitants of the whole of this district were notorious for their robberies, the northern portion, under the name is Isauria, providing innumerable strongholds for marauders by land; and the southern, with its excellent timber, its cliffs, and small harbors, being a natural home for pirates.

The Isaurians maintained their independence with such determined obstinacy that in a later period of the Empire the Romans were willing to resign all appearance of subduing them, and were content to surround them with a cordon of forts. The natives of the coast of Rough Cilicia began to extend their piracies as the strength of the kings of Syria and Egypt declined. They found in the progress of the Roman power an encouragement rather than a hindrance, for they were actively engaged in an extensive and abominable slave trade, of which the island of Delos was the great market; and the opulent families of Rome were in need of slaves, and were not more scrupulous than some Christian nations of modern times about the means of obtaining them.

But the expeditions of the buccaneers of the Mediterranean became at last quite intolerable; their fleets seemed innumerable; their connections were extended far beyond their own coasts; all commerce was paralyzed; and they began to arouse that attention at Rome which the more distant pirates of the Eastern Archipelago not long ago excited in England. A vast expedition was fitted out under the command of Pompey the Great; thousands of pirate vessels were burned on the coast of Cilicia, and the inhabitants dispersed. A perpetual service was thus done to the cause of civilization, and the Mediterranean was made safe for the voyages of merchants and apostles. The town of Soli, on the borders of the two divisions of Cilicia, receive the name of Pompeiopolis,<sup>30</sup> in honor of the great conqueror, and the splendid remains of a colonnade which led

<sup>30</sup> A similar case, on a small scale, is that of Philippeville in Algeria; and the progress of the French power, since the accession of Louis Philippe, in Northern Africa, is perhaps the nearest parallel in modern times to the history of a Roman province. As far as regards the pirates, Lord Exmouth, in 1816, really did the work of Pompey the Great. It may be doubted whether Marshall Bugeaud was more lenient to the Arabs than Cicero to the Eleuthero-Cilicians. Chrysippis the Stoic, who father was a native of Tarsus, and Aratus, whom St. Paul quotes, lived at Soli.

from the harbor to the city may be considered a monument of this signal destruction of the enemies of order and peace.

The eastern, or Flat Cilicia, was a rich and extensive plain. Its prolific vegetation in praised both by the earlier and later classical writers, and, even under the neglectful government of the Turks, is still noticed by modern travelers. From this circumstance, and still more from its peculiar configuration, it was a possession of great political importance. Walled off from the neighboring countries by a high barrier of mountains, which sweep irregularly round it from Pompeiopolis and Rough Cilicia to the Syrian coast on the north of Antioch – with one pass leading up into the interior of Asia Minor, and another giving access to the valley of the Orontes – it was naturally the high road both of trading caravans and of military expeditions. Through this country Cyrus marched, to depose his brother from the Persian throne. It was here that the decisive victory was obtained by Alexander over Darius. This plain has since seen the hosts of western Crusaders; and, in our own day, has been the field of operations of hostile Mahomedan armies, Turkish and Egyptian. The Greek kings of Egypt endeavored, long ago, to tear it from the Greek kings of Syria. The Romans left it at first in the possession of Antiochus; but the line of Mount Taurus could not permanently arrest them; and the letters of Cicero remain to us among the most interesting monuments to Roman Cilicia.

### Tarsus

Situated near the western border of the Cilician plain, where the river Cydnus flows in a cold and rapid stream, from the snows of Taurus to the sea, was the city of Tarsus, the capital of the whole province, and “no mean city” (Acts 21:39) in the history of the ancient world. Its coins reveal to us its greatness through a long series of years – alike in the period which intervened between Xerxes and Alexander – and under the Roman sway, when it exulted in the name of Metropolis – and long after Hadrian

had rebuilt it and issued his new coinage with the old mythological types.<sup>31</sup>

In the intermediate period, which is that of St. Paul, we have the testimony of a native of this part of Asia Minor, from which we may infer that Tarsus was in the Eastern basin of the Mediterranean almost what Marseilles was in the Western. Strabo says that in all that relates to philosophy and general education it was even more illustrious than Athens and Alexandria. From his description it is evident that its main character was that of a Greek city, where the Greek language was spoken, and Greek literature studiously cultivated. But we should be wrong in supposing that the general population of the province was of Greek origin or spoke the Greek tongue. When Cyrus came with his army from the western Coast, and still later when Alexander penetrated into Cilicia, he found the inhabitants “Barbarians.” Nor is it likely that the old race would be destroyed, or the old language obliterated, especially in the mountain districts, during the reign of the Seleucid kings. We must rather conceive Tarsus as like Brest, in Brittany, or like Toulon, in Provence – a city where the language of refinement is spoken and written, in the midst of a ruder population who use a different language and possess no literature of their own.

If we turn now to consider the position of this province and city under the Romans, we are led to notice two different systems of policy which they adopted in their subject dominions. The purpose of Rome was to make the world subservient to herself; but this might be accomplished directly or indirectly. A governor might be sent from Rome to take the absolute command of a province; or some native chief might have a kingdom, an ethnarchy, or a tetrarchy assigned to him, in which he was

<sup>31</sup> The coin was struck under Hadrian and are preserved in the British Museum. The word *Metropolis* is conspicuous on it. The same figures of the Lion and the Bull appear in a fine series of silver coins of Tarsus, assigned by the Duc de Luynes to the period between Xerxes and Alexander.

nominally independent, but really subservient, and often tributary. Some provinces were rich and productive, or essentially important in the military sense, and these were committed to Romans under the Senate or the Emperor. Others might be worthless or troublesome, and fit only to reward the services of a useful instrument, or to occupy the energies of a dangerous ally. Both these systems were adopted in the East and in the West. We have examples of both – in Spain and in Gaul – in Cilicia and in Judea.

In Asia Minor they were so irregularly combined, and the territories of the independent sovereigns were so capriciously granted or removed, extended or curtailed, that it is often difficult to ascertain what the actual boundaries of the provinces were at a given epoch. Not to enter into any minute history in the case of Cilicia, it will be enough to say, that its rich and level plain in the east was made a Roman province by Pompey, and so remained, while certain districts in the western portion were assigned, at different periods, to various native chieftains. Thus the territories of Amyntas, King of Galatia, were extended in this direction by Antony, when he was preparing for his great struggle with Augustus; just as a modern Rajah may be strengthened on the banks of the Indus, in connection with wars against Seinde and the Sikhs.

For some time the whole of Cilicia was a consolidated province under the first emperors; but again, in the reign of Claudius, we find a portion of the same Western district assigned to a king called Polemo II. It is needless to pursue the history further. In St. Paul's early life the political state of the inhabitants of Cilicia would be that of subjects of a Roman governor; and Roman officials, if not Roman soldiers, would be a familiar sight to the Jews who were settled in Tarsus.<sup>32</sup>

<sup>32</sup> Tarsus, a "Free City" (*urbs libera*) would have the privilege of being garrisoned by its own soldiers.

### Cicero

We shall have many opportunities of describing the condition of provinces under the dominion of Rome; but it may be interesting here to allude to the information which may be gathered from the writings of that distinguished man who was governor of Cilicia a few years after its first reduction by Pompey. He was entrusted with the civil and military superintendence of a large district in this corner of the Mediterranean, comprehending not only Cilicia, but Pamphylia, Pisidia, Lycaonia, and the island of Cyprus; and he has left a record of all the details of his policy in a long series of letters, which are a curious monument of the Roman procedure in the management of conquered provinces, and which possess a double interest to us, from their frequent allusions to the same places which St. Paul refers to in his Epistles. This correspondence represents to us the governor as surrounded by the adulation of obsequious Asiatic Greeks. He travels with an interpreter, for Latin is the official language; he puts down bandits and is saluted by the title of Imperator; letters are written on various subjects, to the governors of neighboring provinces – for instance, Syria, Asia, and Bithynia; ceremonious communications take place with the independent chieftains.

The friendly relations of Cicero with Deiotarus, King of Galatia, and his son, remind us of the interview of Pilate and Herod in the gospel, or of Festus and Agrippa in the Acts. Cicero's letters are rather too full of a boastful commendation of his own integrity; but from what he says that he did, we may infer by contrast what was done by others who were less scrupulous in the discharge of the same responsibilities. He allowed free access to his person; he refused expensive monuments in his honor; he declined the proffered present of the pauper King of Cappadocia; he abstained from exacting the customary expenses from the states which he traversed on his march; he remitted to the treasury the moneys which were not expended on his province; he would not place in official situations those who were

engaged in trade; he treated the local Greek magistrate with due consideration and contrived at the same time to give satisfaction to the Publicans.

From all this it may be easily inferred with how much corruption, cruelty, and pride, the Romans usually governed; and how miserable must have been the condition of a province under a Verres or an Agrippa, a Pilate or a Felix. So far as we remember, the Jews are not mentioned in any of Cicero's Cilician letters; but if we may draw conclusions from a speech which he made at Rome in defense of a contemporary governor of Asia,<sup>33</sup> he regarded them with much contempt, and would likely to treat them with harshness and injustice.

That Polemo II, who has lately been mentioned as a king in Cilicia, was one of those curious links which the history of those times exhibits between heathenism, Judaism, and Christianity. He became a Jew to marry Berenice,<sup>34</sup> who afterwards forsook him, and whose name, after once appearing in Sacred History (Acts 25; 26), is lastly associated with that of Titus, the destroyer of Jerusalem. The name of Berenice will at once suggest the family of the Herods and transport our thoughts to Judea.

### Political Changes in Judea

The same general features may be traced in this province as in that which we have been attempting to describe. In some respects, indeed, the details of its history are different. When Cilicia was a province, it formed a separate jurisdiction, with a governor of its own, immediately responsible to Rome/ but Judea, in its provincial period, was only an appendage to Syria. It has been said that the position of the ruler resident at Caesarea in

<sup>33</sup> This was I. Valerius Flaccus, who has served in Cilicia and was afterwards made governor of Asia – that district with which, and its capital Ephesus, we are so familiar in the Acts of the Apostles;

<sup>34</sup> He was the last king of Pontus. By Caligula he was made King of Bosphorus; but Claudius gave him part of Cilicia instead of it. *Josephus, Antiquities, XX. 7,3.*

connection with the supreme authority at Antioch may be best understood by comparing it with that of the governor of Madras or Bombay under the governor general who resides at Calcutta. The comparison is in some respects just; and British India might supply a further parallel. We might say that when Judea was not strictly a province, but a monarchy under the protectorate of Rome, it bore the same relation to the contiguous province of Syria which, before the recent war, the territories of the king of Oude bore to the presidency of Bengal. Judea was twice a monarchy; and thus its history furnishes illustrations of the two systems pursued by the Romans, of direct and indirect government.

Another important contrast must be noticed in the histories of these two provinces. In the Greek period of Judea there was a time of noble and vigorous independence. Antiochus Epiphanes, the eighth of the line of the Seleucids, in pursuance of a general system of policy, by which he sought to unite all his different territories through the Greek religion, endeavored to introduce the worship of Jupiter into Jerusalem.<sup>35</sup> Such an attempt might have been very successful in Syria or Cilicia; but in Judea it kindled a flame of religious indignation which did not cease to burn till the yoke of the Seleucids was entirely thrown off; the name of Antiochus Epiphanes was ever afterwards held in abhorrence by the Jews, and a special fast was kept up in memory of the time when the "abomination of desolation" stood in the holy place.

The champions of the independence of the Jewish nation and the purity of the Jewish religion were the family of the Maccabees or Hasmoneans; and hundred years before the

<sup>35</sup> Here we may observe that there are extant coins of Antiochus Epiphanes where the head of Jupiter appears on the obverse, in place of the portrait usual in the Alexandrian, Seleucid, and Macedonian series. Since such emblems on ancient coins have always sacred meanings, it is very probable that this arose from the religious movement alluded to in the text.

birth of Christ the first Hyrcanus was reigning over a prosperous and independent kingdom. But in the time of the second Hyrcanus and his brother, the family of the Maccabees was not what it had been, and Judea was ripening for the dominion of Rome. Pompey the Great, the same conqueror who had already subject Cilicia, appeared in Damascus and there judged the cause of the two brothers. All the country was full of his fame. In the spring of the year 63 he came down by the valley of the Jordan, his Roman soldiers occupied the ford where Joshua had crossed over, and from the Mount of Olives he looked down upon Jerusalem.<sup>36</sup> From that day Judea was virtually under the government of Rome. It is true that after a brief support given to the reigning family, a new native dynasty was raised to the throne. Antipater, a man of Idumean birth, had been minister of the Maccabean kings. In the midst of the confusion of the great civil wars, the Herodian family succeeded to the Hasmonean, as the Carovingian line in France succeeded that of Clovis. As Pepin was followed by Charlemagne, so Antipater prepared a crown for his son Herod.

### Herod and His Family

At first Herod the Great espoused the cause of Antony; but he contrived to remedy his mistake by paying a prompt visit, after the battle of Actium, to Augustus in the island of Rhodes. This singular interview of the Jewish prince with the Roman conqueror in a Greek island was the beginning of an important period for the Hebrew nation. An exotic civilization was systematically introduced and extended. Those Greek influences, which had been begun under the Seleucids, and not discontinued under the Hasmoneans, were now more widely diffused; and the Roman customs,<sup>37</sup> which had hitherto

<sup>36</sup> Pompey heard of the death of Mithridates at Jericho. His army crossed at Scythopolis, by the ford immediately below the lake of Tiberias.

<sup>37</sup> Antiochus Epiphanes (who was called Epimanes from his mad conduct) is said to have made himself

been comparatively unknown, were now made familiar. Herod was indeed too wise, and knew the Jews too well, to attempt, like Antiochus, to introduce foreign institutions without any regard to their religious feelings. He endeavored to ingratiate himself with them by rebuilding and decorating their national temple; and a part of that magnificent bridge which was connected with the great southern colonnade is still believed to exist – remaining, in its vast proportions and Roman form, an appropriate monument of the Herodian period of Judea.

The period when Herod was reigning at Jerusalem under the protectorate of Augustus was chiefly remarkable for great architectural works, for the promotion of commerce, the influx of strangers, and the increased diffusion of the two great languages of the heathen world. The names of places are themselves a monument of the spirit of the times. As Tarsus was called Juliopolis from Julius Caesar, and Soli Pompeiopolis from his great rival, so Samaria was called Sebaste after the Greek name of Augustus, and the new metropolis, which was built by Herod on the seashore, was called Caesarea in honor of the same Latin emperor; while Antipatris, on the road (Acts 23:31) between the old capital and the new, still<sup>38</sup> commemorated the name of the king's Idumean father. We must not suppose that the internal change in the minds of the people was proportional to the magnitude of these outward improvements. They suffered much, and their hatred grew towards Rome and toward the Herods. A parallel might be drawn between the state of Judea under Herod the Great, and that of Egypt under Mahomet Ali,<sup>39</sup> where great

---

ridiculous by adopting Roman fashions and walking about the streets of Antioch in a toga.

<sup>38</sup> The tracing of the road by which St. Paul traveled on this occasion is one of the most interesting geographical questions which will come before us.

<sup>39</sup> There are many points of resemblance between the character and fortunes of Herod and those of Mahomet Ali; the chief differences are those of the times. Herod

works have been successfully accomplished, where the spread of ideas has been promoted, traffic made busy and prosperous, and communication with the civilized works wonderfully increased, but where the mass of the people has continued to be miserable and degraded.

After Herod's death the same influences still continued to operate in Judea. Archelaus persevered in his father's policy, though destitute of his father's energy. The same may be said of the other sons, Antipas and Philip, in their contiguous principalities. All the Herods were great builders and eager partisans of the Roman emperors; and we are familiar in the gospels with that Caesarea Philippi, which one of them built in the upper part of the valley of the Jordan and named in honor of Augustus; and with Tiberias on the banks of the lake of Gennessaret which bore the name of his wicked successor. But while Antipas and Philip still retained their dominions under the protectorate of the emperor, Archelaus had been banished and the weight of the Roman power had descended still more heavily on Judea. It was placed under the direct jurisdiction of a governor, residing at Caesarea by the Sea, and depending, as we have seen above, on the governor of Syria at Antioch.

And now we are made familiar with those features which might be adduced as characterizing any other province at the same epoch – the praetorium (John 28:28), the publicans (Luke 3:12; 19:2), the tribute money (Matt. 22:19), soldiers and centurions recruited in Italy<sup>40</sup>, Caesar the only king (John 19:15), and the ultimate appeal against the injustice of the

---

secured his position by the influence of Augustus; Mahomet Ali secured his by the agreement of the European powers.

<sup>40</sup> Most of the soldiers quartered in Syria were recruited in the province; but the Cohort, to which Cornelius belonged, probably consisted of Italian volunteers. The "Italian Band" (Acts 10:1) will come under our notice in Chapter 4, and the "Augustan Band" (Acts 27:1) in Chapter 22.

governor (Acts 25:11). In this period the ministry, death, and resurrection of Jesus Christ took place, the first preaching of His apostles, and the conversion of St. Paul. But once more change came over the political fortunes of Judea. Herod Agrippa was the friend of Caligula, as Herod the Great had been the friend of Augustus; and when Tiberius died, he received the grant of an independent principality in the north of Palestine.<sup>41</sup> He was able to ingratiate himself with Claudius, the succeeding emperor. Judea was added to his dominion, which now embraced the whole circle of the territory ruled by his grandfather. by this time St. Paul was actively pursuing his apostolic career. We need not, therefore, advance beyond this point in a chapter which is only intended to be a general introduction to the Apostle's history.

Our desire has been to give a picture of the condition of the world at this particular epoch; and we have thought that no grouping would be so successful as that which should consist of Jews, Greeks, and Romans. Nor is this an artificial or unnatural arrangement, for these three nations were the divisions of the civilized world. And in the view of a religious mind they were more than this. They were "the three peoples of God's election; two for things temporal, and one for things eternal. Yet even in the things eternal they were allowed to minister. Greek cultivation and Roman polity prepared men for Christianity."<sup>42</sup>

These three peoples stand in the closest relation to the whole human race. The Christian, when he imagines himself among those spectators who

---

<sup>41</sup> He obtained under Caligula, first, the tetrarchy of his uncle Philip, who died, and then that of his uncle Antipas, who followed his brother Archelaus into banishment.

<sup>42</sup> Dr. Arnold, in the journal of his tour in 1840. The passage continues thus: "As Mahometanism can bear witness; for the East, when it abandoned Greece and Rome, could only reproduce Judaism. Mahometanism, six hundred years after Christ, proving that the Eastern man could bear nothing perfect, justifies the wisdom of God in Judaism."

stood round the cross, and gazes in spirit upon that “superscription” which the Jewish scribe, the Greek proselyte, and Roman soldier could read, each in his own tongue, feels that he is among those who are the representatives of all humanity.<sup>43</sup> In the ages which precede the crucifixion, these three languages were like threads which guided us through the labyrinth of history. And they are still among the best guides of our thought, as we travel through the ages which succeed it. How great has been the honor of the Greek and Latin tongues!

They followed the fortunes of a triumphant church. Instead of heathen languages, they gradually became Christian. As before they had been employed to express the best thoughts of unassisted humanity, so afterwards they became the exponents of Christian doctrine and the channels of Christian devotion. The word of Plato and Cicero fell from the lips and pen of Chrysostom and Augustine. And still those two languages are associated together in the work of Christian education, and made instruments for training the minds of the young in the greatest nations of the earth. And how deep and pathetic is the interest which attaches to the Hebrew! Here the thread seems to be broken. “Jesus, King of the Jews,” in Hebrew characters. It is like the last word of the Jewish Scriptures – the last warning of the chosen people. A cloud henceforth is upon the people and language of Israel. “Blindness in part is happened unto Israel, till the fullness of the Gentiles be come in.” Once again Jesus, after His ascension, spoke openly from Heaven “in the Hebrew tongue” (Acts 26:14); but the words were addressed to that apostle who was called to preach the

<sup>43</sup> This is true in another, perhaps higher, sense. the Roman, powerful but not happy – the Greek, distracted with the inquiries of an unsatisfying philosophy – the Jew, bound hand and foot with the chain of a ceremonial law, all are together round the cross. Christ is crucified in the midst of them, crucified for all. The “superscription of His accusation” speaks to all the same language of peace, pardon, and love.

gospel to the philosophers of Greece, and in the emperor’s palace in Rome.

## Chapter 2

### Jewish Origin of the Church

Christianity has been represented by some of the modern Jews as a mere school of Judaism. Instead of opposing it as a system antagonistic and subversive of the Mosaic religion, the speak of it as a phase or development of that religion itself, as simply one of the outgrowths from the fertile Jewish soil. They point out the causes which combined in the first century to produce this Christian development in Judaism. It has even been hinted that Christianity has done a good work in preparing the world for receiving the pure Mosaic principles which will, at length, be universal.<sup>44</sup>

We are not unwilling to accept some of these phrases as expressing a great and important truth. Christianity is a school of Judaism; but it is the school which absorbs and interprets the teaching of all others. It is a development; but it is that development which was divinely foreknown and predetermined. It is the grain of which mere Judaism is now the worthless husk. It is the image of Truth in its full proportions; and the Jewish remnants are now as the shapeless fragments which remain of the block of marble when the statue is completed. When we look back at the Apostolic age, we see that growth proceeding which separated the husk from the grain. We see the image of Truth coming out in clear expressiveness, and the useless fragments falling off like scales, under the careful work of divinely guided hands.

<sup>44</sup> This action, that the doctrine of Christ will be re-absorbed in that of Moses, is a curious phase of the recent Jewish philosophy. “We are sure,” it has been well said, “that Christianity can never disown its source in Judaism; but a more powerful spell than this philosophy is needed to charm back the stately river into the narrow, rugged, picturesque ravine, out of which centuries ago it found its way.

If we are to realize the earliest appearance of the Church, such as it was when Paul first saw it, we must view it as arising in the midst of Judaism; and if we are to comprehend all the feelings and principles of this apostle we must consider first the Jewish preparation of his own younger days. To these two subjects the present chapter will be devoted.

### Sects and Parties of the Jews

We are very familiar with one division which ran through the Jewish nation in the first century. The Sadducees and Pharisees are frequently mentioned in the New Testament, and we are there informed of the tenets of these two prevailing parties. The belief in a future state may be said to have been an open question among the Jews, when our Lord appeared and "brought life and immortality to light." We find the Sadducees established in the highest office of the priesthood, and possessed of the greatest powers in the Sanhedrin; and yet they did not believe in any future state, nor in any spiritual existence independent of the body. The Sadducees said that there was "no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit." (Acts 23:8; Matt. 22:23,24) They do not appear to have held doctrines which are commonly called licentious or immoral. On the contrary, they adhered strictly to the moral tenets of the Law, as opposed to its more formal technicalities. They did not overload the Sacred books with traditions, or encumber the duties of life with a multitude of minute observances. They were the disciples of reason without enthusiasm – they made few proselytes – their numbers were not great, and they were confined principally to the richer members of their nation.

The Pharisees were the enthusiasts of later Judaism. They "compassed sea and land to make one proselyte." Their power and influence with the mass of the people was immense. The loss of the national independence of the Jews – the gradual extinction of their political life, directly by the Romans, and indirectly by the family of Herod, caused their feelings to rally round the Law and their religion as the only center of unity which now remained to them.

Those, therefore, who gave their energies to the interpretation and exposition of the Law, not curtailing any of the doctrines which were virtually contained in it and which had been revealed with more or less clearness, but rather accumulating articles of faith, and multiplying the requirements of devotion – who themselves practiced a severe and ostentatious religion, being liberal in almsgiving, fasting frequently, making long prayers, and carrying casuistical distinctions into the smallest details of conduct – who consecrated, moreover, their best zeal and exertions to the spread of the fame of Judaism, and to the increase of the nation's power in the only way which was not practicable – could not fail to command the reverence of great numbers of the people.

It was no longer possible to fortify Jerusalem against the heathen; but the Law could be fortified like an impregnable city. The place of the brave is on the walls and in the front of the battle; and the hopes of the nation rested on those who defended the sacred outworks, and made successful inroads on the territories of the Gentiles.

Such were the Pharisees. And now, before proceeding to other features of Judaism and their relation to the church, we can hardly help glancing at St. Paul. He was "a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee," (Acts 23:6), and he was educated by Gamaliel, (Acts 22:3), "a Pharisee". (Acts 5:34) Both his father and his teacher belonged to this sect. And on three distinct occasions he tells us that he himself was a member of it. Once when at his trial, before a mixed assembly of Pharisees and Sadducees, the words just quoted were spoken, and his connection with the Pharisees asserted with such effect that the feelings of this popular party were immediately enlisted on his side. "And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees and the multitude was divided ... And there arose a great cry; and the Scribes that were of the Pharisees" part arose, and strove, saying, We find no evil in this man." (Acts 23) The second time was when, on a calmer occasion, he was pleading before

Agrippa, and said to the king in the presence of Festus: "The Jews knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, that after the most straightest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee." (Acts 26) And once more, when writing from Rome to the Philippians, he gives force to his argument against the Judaizers, by telling them that if any other man thought he had whereof he might trust in the flesh, he himself had more: "circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the Law, a Pharisee." (Phil. 3:4). And not only was he himself a Pharisee, but his father also. He was "a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee." This short sentence sums up nearly all we know of St. Paul's parents. If we think of his earliest life, we are to conceive of him as born in a Pharisaic family, and as brought up from his infancy in the "straightest sect of the Jews" religion."

His childhood was nurtured in the strictest belief. The stories of the Old Testament, the angelic appearances, the prophetic visions, to him were literally true. He needed no Sadducean explanation. The world of spirits was a reality to him. The resurrection of the dead was an article of his faith. And to exhort him to the practices of religion, he had before him the example of his father, praying and walking with broad phylacteries, scrupulous and exact in his legal observances. He had, moreover, as it seems, the memory and tradition of ancestral piety; for he tells us in one of his latest letters (2 Tim. 1:3) that he served God "from his forefathers." All influences combined to make him "more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of his fathers," (Gal. 1:14) and "touching the righteousness which is in the Law, blameless." (Phil. 3:6) Everything tended to prepare him to be an eminent member of that theological party, to which so many of the Jews were looking for the preservation of their national life, and the extension of their national creed.

But in this mention of the Pharisees and Sadducees we are far from exhausting the subject of Jewish divisions, and far less from

enumerating all those phases of opinion which must have had some connection with the growth of rising Christianity and all those elements which may have contributed to form the character of the apostle of the heathen. There was a sect in Judea which is not mentioned in the Scriptures but which must have acquired considerable influence in the time of the apostles, as may be inferred from the space devoted to it by Josephus<sup>45</sup> and Philo. These were the Essenes, who retired from theological and political distractions of Jerusalem and the larger towns, and founded peaceful communities in the desert or in villages, where their life was spent in contemplation and in the practices of ascetic piety. It has been suggested that John the Baptist was one of them. There is no proof that this was the case, but we need not doubt that they did represent religious cravings which Christianity satisfied.

Another party was that of the Zealots,<sup>46</sup> who were as politically fanatical as the Essenes were religiously contemplative, and whose zeal was kindled with the burning desire to throw off the Roman yoke from the neck of Israel. Very different from them were the Herodians, twice mentioned in the Gospels (Mark 3:6; Matt 22:16; see Mark 12:13), who held that the hopes of Judaism rested on the Herods, and who almost looked to that family for the fulfillment of the prophecies of the Messiah. And if we were simply enumerating the divisions and describing the sects of the Jews, it would be necessary to mention the Therapeutae,<sup>47</sup> a widely spread community in Egypt, who lived even in great seclusion that the Essenes in Judea. The Samaritans also would require our attention. But we must turn from these sects and parties to a wider division, which arose from the dispersion of the Hebrew

<sup>45</sup> *War*, II.8

<sup>46</sup> We have the word in the "Simon Zelotes" of the Gospel (Luke 6:15), though the party was hardly then matured.

<sup>47</sup> Described in great detail by Philo.

people, to which some space has been devoted in the preceding chapter.

### Hellenists and Arameans

We have seen that early colonies of the Jews were settled in Babylonia and Mesopotamia. Their connection with their brethren in Judea was continually maintained; and they were bound to them by the link of a common language. The Jews of Palestine and Syria, with those who lived on the Tigris and Euphrates, interpreted the Scriptures through the Targums<sup>48</sup> or Chaldean paraphrases, and spoke kindred dialects of the language of Aram;<sup>49</sup> and hence they were called Aramean Jews.

We have also had occasion to notice that other dispersion of the nation through those countries where Greek was spoken. Their settlements began with Alexander's conquests and were continued under the successors of those who partitioned his empire. Alexandria was their capital. They use the Septuagint translation of the Bible, and they were commonly called Hellenists, or Jews of the Grecian speech.

The mere difference of language would account in some degree for the mutual dislike with which we know that these two sections of the Jewish race regarded one another. We were all aware how closely the use of a hereditary dialect is bound up with the warmest feelings of

<sup>48</sup> It is uncertain when the written Targums came into use, but the practice of paraphrasing orally in Chaldea must have begun soon after the Captivity.

<sup>49</sup> Aram, the "highlands" of the Semitic tribes, comprehended the tract of country which extended from Taurus and Lebanon to Mesopotamia and Arabia. There were two main dialects of the Aramean stock, the eastern or Babylonian, commonly called Chaldean (the "Syrian tongue" of 2 Kings 28:26; Isa. 36:11; Ezra 4:7; Dan. 2:4); and the western, which is the parent of the Syriac, now, like the former, almost a dead language. The first of those dialects began to supplant the older Hebrew of Judea from the time of the captivity, and was the Hebrew of the New Testament (Luke 23:38; John 19:20; Acts 21:40; 22:2: 26:14). Arabic, the most perfect of the Semitic languages, has now generally overspread those regions.

the heart. And in this case the Aramean language was the sacred tongue of Palestine. It is true that the tradition of the language of the Jews had been broken, as the continuity of their political life had been rudely interrupted. The Hebrew of the time of Christ was not the oldest Hebrew of the Israelites; but it was a kindred dialect, and old enough to command a reverent affections. Though not the language of Moses and David, it was that of Ezra and Nehemiah. And it is not unnatural that the Arameans should have revolted from the speech of the Greek idolaters and the tyrant Antiochus, a speech which they associated moreover with innovating doctrines and dangerous speculations.

For the division went deeper than a mere superficial diversity of speech. It was not only a division, like the modern one of German and Spanish Jews, where those who hold substantially the same doctrines have accidentally been led to speak different languages. But there was diversity of religious views and opinions. This is not the place for examining that system of mystic interpretation called the Kabbala, and for determining how far its origin might be due to Alexandria or to Babylon. It is enough to say, generally, that in the Aramean theology, Oriental elements prevailed rather than Greek, and that the subject of Babylonian influences has more connection with the life of St. Peter than that of St. Paul.

The Hellenists, on the other hand, or Jews who spoke Greek, who lived in Greek countries, and were influenced by Greek civilization, are associated in the closest manner with the Apostle of the Gentiles. They are more than once mentioned in the Acts, where our English translation names them "Grecians" to distinguish them from the heather or proselyte "Greeks." Alexandria was the metropolis of their theology. Philo was their great representative. He was an old man when St. Paul was in his maturity; his writings were probably known to the apostles; and they have descended with the inspired Epistles to our

own day. The work of the learned Hellenists may be briefly described as this – to accommodate Jewish doctrines to the mind of the Greeks, and to make the Greek language express the mind of the Jews. The Hebrew principles were “disengaged as much as possible from local and national conditions, and presented in a form adapted to the Hellenic world.”

All this was hateful to the Arameans. The men of the East rose up against those of the West. The Greek learning was not more repugnant to the Roman Cato than it was to the strict Hebrews. They had a saying, “Cursed by he who teacheth his son the learning of the Greeks.”<sup>50</sup> We could imagine them using the words of the prophet Joel (3:6), “The children of Judah and the children of Jerusalem have ye sold unto the Grecians, that ye might remove them from their border,” and we cannot be surprised that even in the deep peace and charity of the Church’s earliest days, this inveterate division reappeared, and that “when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews.” (Acts 6:1)

It would be an interesting subject of inquiry to ascertain in what proportions these two parties were distributed in the different countries where the Jews were dispersed, in what places they can into the strongest collision, and how

---

<sup>50</sup> This repugnance is illustrated by many passages in the Talmudic writings. Rabbi Levi Ben Chajathab, going down to Caesarea, heard then reciting their phylacteries in Greek and would have forbidden them; which when Rabbi Jose heard, he was very angry, and said, “If a man doth not know how to recite in the holy tongue, must he not recite them at all? Let him perform his duty in what language he can.” The following saying is attributed to Rabban Simeon, the son of Gamaliel, “There were a thousand boys in my father’s school, of whom five hundred learned the law, and five hundred the wisdom of the Greeks; and there is not one of the latter now alive, excepting myself here, and my uncle’s son of Asia.” We learn also from Josephus that a knowledge of Greek was lightly regarded by the Jews of Palestine.

far they were fused and united together. In the city of Alexandria, the emporium of Greek commerce from the time of its foundation, where, since the earliest Ptolemies, literature, philosophy, and criticism had never ceased to excite the utmost intellectual activity, where the Septuagint translation of the Scripture had been made,<sup>51</sup> and where a Jewish temple and ceremonial worship had been established in rivalry to that in Jerusalem,<sup>52</sup> there is no doubt that the Hellenistic element largely prevailed. But although (strictly speaking) the –Alexandrian Jews were nearly all Hellenites, it does not follow that they were all Hellenizers. In other words, although their speech and the Scriptures were Greek, the theological views of many among them undoubtedly remained Hebrew.

There must have been many who were attached to the traditions of Palestine, and who looked suspiciously on their more speculative brethren; and we have no difficulty in recognizing the picture presented in a pleasing German fiction, which describes the debates and struggles of the two tendencies in this city, to be very correct. In Palestine itself, we have every reason to believe that the native population was entirely Aramean, though there was no lack of Hellenistic synagogues (see Acts 6:9) in Jerusalem, which at the seasons of the festivals would be crowded with foreign pilgrims, and become the scene of animated discussions. Syria was connected by the link of language with Palestine and Babylonia; but

---

<sup>51</sup> It is useless here to enter into any of the legends connected with the number 70. This translation came into existence from 300 to 150 BC. Its theological importance cannot be exaggerated. The quotations in the New Testament from the Old Testament are generally made from it.

<sup>52</sup> This temple was not in the city of Alexandria but at Leontopolis. It was built (or rather it was an old heathen temple repaired) by Onias, from whose family the high-priesthood had been transferred to the family of the Maccabees, and who had fled into Egypt in the time of Ptolemy Philopator. It remained in existence until destroyed by Vespasian. See Josephus, *War* I.1,1; VII.10,3; *Antiquities* XII:3.

Antioch, its metropolis, commercially and politically, resembled Alexandria; and it is probable that, when Barnabas and Saul were establishing the great Christian community in that city, the majority of the Jews were "Grecians" rather than "Hebrews." In Asia Minor we should at first sight be tempted to imagine that the Grecian tendency would predominate; but when we find that Antiochus brought Babylonian Jews into Lydia and Phrygia, we must not make too confident a conclusion in this direction. We have ground for imagining that many Israelitish families in the remote districts (possibly that of Timothy at Lystra) may have cherished the forms of the traditional faith of the eastern Jews, and lived uninfluenced by Hellenistic novelties.

The residents in maritime and commercial towns would not be strangers to the western developments of religious doctrines; and when Apollos came from Alexandria to Ephesus (Acts 18:24), he would find himself in a theological atmosphere not very different from that of his native city. Tarsus in Cilicia will naturally be included under the same class of cities of the West, by those who remember Strabo's assertion that in literature and philosophy its fame exceeded that of Athens and Alexandria. At the same time, we cannot be sure that the very celebrity of its heathen schools might not induce the families of Jewish residents to retire all the more strictly into a religious Hebrew seclusion.

That such a seclusion of their family from Gentile influences was maintained by the parents of St. Paul is highly probable. We have no means of knowing how long they themselves, or their ancestors, had been Jews of the dispersion. A tradition is mentioned by Jerome that they came originally from Giscala, a town in Galilee, when it was stormed by the Romans. The story involves an anachronism and contradicts the Acts of the Apostles (Acts 22:3). Yet it need not be entirely disregarded, especially when we find St. Paul speaking of himself as "a Hebrew of the Hebrews" and when we remember that the word "Hebrew" is used

for an Aramaic Jew, as opposed to a "Grecian" or "Hellenist." Nor is it unlikely in itself that before they settled in Tarsus, the family had belonged to the Eastern dispersion, or to the Jews of Palestine. But, however this may be, St. Paul himself must be called a Hellenist; because the language of his infancy was that idiom of the Grecian Jews in which all his letters were written. Though, in conformity with the strong feeling of the Jews of all times, he might learn his earliest sentences from the Scripture in Hebrew, yet he was familiar with the Septuagint translation at an early age.

It is observed that when he quotes from the Old Testament, his quotations are from that version/ and that, not only when he cites its very words, but when (as if often the case) he quotes it from memory.<sup>53</sup> Considering the accurate knowledge of the original Hebrew which he must have acquired under Gamaliel at Jerusalem, it has been inferred that this can only arise from his having been thoroughly imbued at an earlier period with the Hellenistic scriptures. The readiness, too, with which he expressed himself in Greek, even before such an audience as that upon the Areopagus at Athens, shows a command of the language which a Jew would not, in all probability, have attained, had not Greek been the familiar speech of his childhood.<sup>54</sup>

<sup>53</sup> Out of eighty-eight quotations from the Old Testament, Koppe gives grounds for thinking that forty-nine were cited from memory. And Bleck thinks that every one of his citations without exception is from memory. He adds, however, that the Apostle's memory reverts occasionally to the Hebrew text as well as to that of the Septuagint.

<sup>54</sup> We must not, however, press these considerations too far, especially when we take Phil. 3:5 into consideration. Dr. Schaff presents the subject under a different view, as follows: "Certain it is that the groundwork of Paul's intellectual and moral training was Jewish; yet he had at least some knowledge of Greek literature, whether he acquired it in Tarsus, or in Jerusalem under Gamaliel, who himself was not altogether averse to the Hellenistic philosophy, or afterwards in his missionary journeyings and his

But still the vernacular Hebrew of Palestine would not have been a foreign tongue to the infant Saul; on the contrary, he may have heard it spoken almost as often as the Greek. For no doubt his parents, proud of their Jewish origin, and living comparatively near to Palestine, would retain the power of conversing with their friends from there in the ancient speech.. Mercantile connections from the Syrian coast would be frequently arriving, whose discourse would be in Aramaic; and in all probability there were kinsfolk still settled in Judea, as we afterwards find the nephew of St. Paul in Jerusalem (Acts 23:16).

We may compare the situation of such a family (so far as concerns their language) to that of the French Huguenots who settled in London after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. These French families, though they soon learned to use the English as the medium of the common intercourse and the language of their household, yet, for several generations, spoke French with equal familiarity and greater affection.<sup>55</sup>

Moreover, it may be considered as certain that the family of St. Paul, though Hellenistic in speech, were no *Hellenizers* in theology; they were not at all inclined to adopt Greek habits or Greek opinions. The manner in which St. Paul speaks of himself, his father, and his ancestors, implies the most uncontaminated hereditary Judaism. "Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they the seed of Abraham? So am I." (2 Cor. 11:22) "A Pharisee" and "the son of a Pharisee." "Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews."

---

continual intercourse with Hellenists, from *History of the Christian Church*.

<sup>55</sup> St. Paul's ready use of the spoken Aramaic appears in his speech upon the stairs of the Castle of Antonia at Jerusalem, "in the Hebrew tongue." This familiarity, however, he would necessarily have acquired during his student life at Jerusalem, if he had not possessed it before.

### St. Paul's Infancy at Tarsus

There is therefore little doubt that, though the native of a city filled with a Greek population and incorporated with the Roman Empire, yet Saul was born and spent his earliest days in the shelter of a home which was Hebrew, not in name only but in spirit. The Roman power did not press upon his infancy; the Greek ideas did not haunt his childhood; but he grew up an Israelitish boy, nurtured in those histories of the chosen people which he was destined so often to repeat in the synagogues, with the new and wonderful commentary supplied by the life and resurrection of a crucified Messiah. "From a child he knew the Scriptures," which ultimately made him "wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus," as he says of Timothy (2 Tim. 3:15). And the groups around his childhood were such as that which he beautifully describes in another part of the same letter to that disciple, where he speaks of "his grandmother Lois, and his mother Eunice." (1:5)

We should be glad to know something of the mother of St. Paul. But though he alludes to his father, he does not mention her. He speaks of himself as set apart by God "from his mother's womb," that the Son of God should in due time be revealed in him, and him preached to the heathen. But this is all. We find notices of his sister and his sister's son (Acts 23:16), and of some more distant relatives (Rom. 16:7, 11, 21); but we know nothing of her who was nearer to him than all of them. He tells us of his instructor Gamaliel; but of her, who, if she lived, was his earliest and best teacher, he tells us nothing. Did she die like Rachel, the mother of Benjamin, the great ancestor of his tribe; leaving his father to mourn and set a monument on her grave, like Jacob, by the way of Bethlehem (Gen. 35:16 20; 48:7)? Or did she live to grieve over her son's apostasy from the faith of the Pharisees, and die herself unreconciled to the obedience of Christ? Or did she believe and obey the Savior on her own? These are questions which we cannot answer. If we wish to realize the earliest infancy of the

apostle, we must be content with a simple picture of a Jewish mother and her child. Such a picture is presented to us in the short history of Elizabeth and John the Baptist, and what is wanting in one of the inspired books of St. Luke may be supplied, in some degree, by the other.

The same feelings which welcomed the birth and celebrated the naming of a son in the "hill country" of Judea (Luke 1:39), prevailed also among the Jews of the dispersion. As the "neighbors and cousins" of Elizabeth "heard how the Lord had showed great mercy upon her, and rejoiced with her," so it would be in the household at Tarsus when Saul was born. In a nation to which the birth of a Messiah was promised, and at a period when the aspirations after the fulfillment of the promise were continually becoming more conscious and more urgent, the birth of a son was the fulfillment of a mother's highest happiness; and to the father also (if we may thus invert the words of Jeremiah) "blessed was the man who brought tidings, saying, A man child is born unto thee, making him glad." (Jer. 20:15)

On the eighth day the child was circumcised and named. In the case of John the Baptist, "they sought to call him Zacharias, after the name of his father. But his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John." And when the appeal was made to his father, he signified his assent in obedience to the vision. It was not unusual to call a Jewish child after the name of his father; but it was a common practice, in all ages of Jewish History, even without a prophetic intimation, to adopt a name expressive of religious feelings. When the infant at Tarsus receive the name of Saul, it might be "after the name of his father;" and it was a name of traditional celebrity in the tribe of Benjamin, for it was that of the first king anointed by Samuel. Or, when his father said "his name is Saul," it may have been intended to denote (in conformity with the Hebrew derivation of the word) that he was a son who had long been desired, the first born of his parents, the child of prayer, who was thenceforth, like Samuel, to be consecrated to God. "For this child I prayed,"

said the wife of Elkanah, "and the Lord hath given me my petition which I asked of Him; therefore also I have lent him to the Lord; as long as he lives he shall be lent to the Lord." (1 Sam. 1:27,28)

Admitted into covenant with God by circumcision, the Jewish child had thenceforward a full claim to all the privileges of the chosen people. His was the benediction of the 128<sup>th</sup> Psalm, "The Lord shall bless thee out of Zion; thou shalt see the good of Jerusalem all the days of thy life," From that time, whoever it might be who had watched over Saul's infancy, whether, like king Lemuel,<sup>56</sup> he learned "the prophecy that his mother taught him," or whether he was under the care of others, like those who were with the sons of king David and king Ahab (1 Chron. 27:32; 2 Kings 10:1,5), we are at no loss to learn what the first ideas were with which his early thought was made familiar. The rules respecting the diligent education of children, which were laid down by Moses in the 6<sup>th</sup> and 11<sup>th</sup> chapters of Deuteronomy, were doubtless carefully observed; and he was trained in that peculiarly historical instruction, spoken of in the 78<sup>th</sup> Psalm, which implies the continuance of a chosen people, with glorious recollections of the past, and great anticipations for the future; "The Lord made a covenant with Jacob, and gave Israel a law, which He commanded our forefathers to teach their children; that their posterity might know it, and the children which were yet unborn, to the intent that when they came up, they might show their children the same; that they might put their trust in God, and not to forget the works of the Lord, but to keep his commandments (W. 5 7).

The histories of Abraham and Isaac, of Jacob and Samuel, Elijah, Daniel, and the Maccabees, were the stories of his childhood. The destruction of Pharaoh in the Red Sea, the thunders of Mount Sinai, the dreary journeys in the wilderness, the land that flowed with milk

<sup>56</sup> Prov. 31:1; cf. 2 Tim. 3:15 with 1 Tim. 1:5.

and honey, this was the earliest imagery presented to his opening mind. The triumphant hymns of Zion, the lamentations by the waters of Babylon, the prophetic praises of the Messiah, were the songs around his cradle.

### The Tribe of Benjamin

Above all, he would be familiar with the destinies of his own illustrious tribe.<sup>57</sup> The life of the timid Patriarch, the father of the Twelve; the sad death of Rachel near the city where the Messiah was to be born; the loneliness of Jacob, who sought to comfort himself in Benoni “the son of her sorrow,” by calling him Benjamin<sup>58</sup> “the son of his right hand;” and then the youthful days of this youngest of the twelve brethren, the famine, and the journeys into Egypt, the severity of Joseph, and the wonderful story of the silver cup in the mouth of the sack; these are the narratives to which he listened with intense and eager interest. How little was it imagined that, as Benjamin was the youngest and most honored of the Patriarchs, so this listening child of Benjamin should be associated with the twelve servants of the Messiah of God, the last and most illustrious of the apostles!

But many years of ignorance were yet to pass away before the mysterious Providence, which brought Benjamin to Joseph in Egypt, should bring his descendant to the knowledge and love of Jesus, the Son of Mary. Some of the early

<sup>57</sup> It may be thought that here too much prominence has been given to the attachment of a Jew in the Apostolic Age to his own particular tribe. It is difficult to ascertain how far the tribe-feeling of early times lingered on in combination with the national feeling which grew up after the Captivity. But when we consider the care with which the genealogies were kept, and when we find the tribe of Barnabas specified (Acts 4:36), and also of Anna the prophetess (Luke 2:36), and when we find St. Paul alluding in a pointed manner to his tribe (Rom. 11:1; Phil. 3:5; and compare Acts 13:21 and 26:7), it does not seem unnatural to believe that pious families of so famous a stock as that of Benjamin should retain the hereditary enthusiasm of their sacred clanship. See, moreover, Matt. 19:28; Rev. 5:5; 7:4-8.

<sup>58</sup>

Christian writers see in the dying benediction of Jacob, when he said that “Benjamin should ravin as a wolf, in the morning devour the prey, and at night divide the spoil,” a prophetic intimation of him who, in the morning of his life, should tear the sheep of God, and in its evening feed them, as the teacher of the nations. When St. Paul was a child and learned the words of this saying, no Christian thoughts were associated with it, or with that other more peaceful prophecy of Moses, when he said of Benjamin, “The beloved of the Lord shall dwell in safety by Him; and the Lord shall cover him all the day long, and he shall dwell between His shoulders.” (Deut. 33:12)

But he was familiar with the prophetic words and could follow in the imagination the fortunes of the sons of Benjamin, and knew how they went through the wilderness with Rachel’s other children, the tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, forming with them the third of the four companies on the march, and reposing with them at night on the west of the encampment. (Num. 2:18 24; 10:22 24) He heard how their lands were assigned to them in the promised country along the borders of Judah (Josh. 18:11); and how Saul, whose name he bore, was chosen from the tribe which was the smallest (1 Sam. 9:21), when “little Benjamin” (Psalm 68:27) became the “ruler” of Israel. He knew that when the ten tribes revolted, Benjamin was faithful (2 Chron. 11; see 1 Kings 12); and he learned to follow its honorable history even into the dismal years of the Babylonian Captivity, when Mordecai, “a Benjamite who had been carried away” (Esther 2:5,6), saved the nation; and when, instead of destruction, “the Jews,” through him, “had light, and gladness, and joy, and honor;” and in every province, and in every city, wherever the king’s commandment and his decree came, the Jews had a joy and gladness, a feast and a good day. And many of the people of the land become Jews, for the fear of the Jews fell upon them.” (Esther 8:16,17)

Such were the influences which cradled the infancy of St. Paul; and such was the early

teaching under which his mind gradually rose to the realization of his position as a Hebrew child in a city of Gentiles. Of the exact period of his birth we possess no authentic information.

<sup>59</sup> From a passage in a sermon attributed to St. Chrysostom, it has been inferred (on the supposition that he died AD 66, at the age of 68) that he was born in the year 2 BC of our era. The date is not improbable; but the genuineness of the sermon is suspected; and if it was the undoubted work of the eloquent Father, we have no reason to believe that he possessed any certain means of ascertaining the fact. Nor need we be anxious to possess the information. We have a better chronology that that which reckons by years and months. We know that St. Paul was a young man at the time of St. Stephen's martyrdom (Acts 7:58), and therefore we know what were the features of the period, and what the circumstances of the world, at the beginning of his eventful life.

He must have been born in the later years of Herod, or the earlier years of his son Archelaus. It was the strongest and most flourishing time of the reign of Augustus. The world was at peace; the pirates of the Levant were dispersed; and Cilicia was lying at rest, or in stupor, with other provinces, under the wide shadow of the Roman power. Many governors had ruled there since the days of Cicero. Athenodorus, the emperor's tutor, had been one of them. It was about the time when Horace and Maecenas died, with others whose names will never be forgotten; and it was about the time when Caligula was born, with others who were destined to make the world miserable. This is the epoch fixed in the manner in which the imagination most easily apprehends it. During this pause in the world's history St. Paul was born.

---

<sup>59</sup> As regards the chronology of St. Paul's life, it is enough to refer to Chapter 4 and the chronology in the Appendix to this work.

### Social Position of St. Paul's Family

It was a pause, too, in the history of the sufferings of the Jews. That lenient treatment which had been begun by Julius Caesar was continued by Augustus; <sup>60</sup> and the days of severity were not yet come, when Tiberius and Claudius drove them into banishment, and Caligula oppressed them with every mark of contumely and scorn. We have good reason to believe that at the period of the apostle's birth the Jews were unmolested at Tarsus, where his father lived and enjoyed the rights of a Roman citizen. It is a mistake to suppose that this citizenship was a privilege which belonged to the members of the family, as being natives of this city. Tarsus was not a *municipium*, nor was it a *colonia*, like Philippi in Macedonia, or Antioch in Pisidia; but it was a "free city," <sup>61</sup> like the Syrian Antioch and its neighbor city Seleucia on the sea. Such a city had the privilege of being governed by its own magistrates, and was exempted from the occupation of a Roman garrison, but its citizens did not necessarily possess the *civitas* of Rome.

Tarsus had received great benefits from both Julius Caesar and Augustus, but the father of St. Paul was not on that account a Roman citizen. This privilege had been granted to him, or had descended to him, as an individual right; he might have purchased it for a "large sum of money" (Acts 22:28); but it is more probable that it came to him as a reward for services rendered, during the civil wars, by some influential Roman. <sup>62</sup> We should not be in serious

---

<sup>60</sup> Caesar, like Alexander, treated the Jews with much consideration. Suetonius speaks in strong terms of their grief at his death. Augustus permitted he largess, when it fell on a Sabbath, to be put off until the next day.

<sup>61</sup> It appears that Antony gave Tarsus the privilege of an *urbs libera*, though it had previously taken the side of Augustus and been named Juliopolis.

<sup>62</sup> Great numbers of Jews were made slaves in the Civil Wars and then manumitted. A slave manumitted with due formalities became a Roman citizen. Thus it is natural to suppose that the apostle, with other Cilician

error if we were to say, in language suggested by the narrative of St. Stephen's martyrdom (Acts 6:9), that St. Paul's father was a Cilician *Libertinus*.<sup>63</sup> That Jews were not infrequently Roman citizens we learn from Josephus, who mentions in the *Wars of the Jews* (II:14.9) some even of the equestrian order who were illegally scourged and crucified by Florus at Jerusalem; and (what is more to our present point) enumerates certain of his countrymen who possessed the Roman franchise at Ephesus, in that important series of decrees relating to the Jews, which were issued in the time of Julius Caesar, and are preserved in the 14<sup>th</sup> book of the *Antiquities* [Joseph].

The family of St. Paul were in the same position at tarsus as those who were Jews of Asia Minor and yet citizens of Rome at Ephesus; and thus it came to pass that, while many of his contemporaries were willing to expend a "large sum" in the purchase of "this freedom," the Apostle himself was "free born."

The question of the double name of "Saul" and "Paul" will require our attention hereafter, when we come in the course of our narrative to that interview with Sergius Paulus in Cyprus, coincidentally with which the appellation in the Acts of the Apostles is suddenly changed. Many opinions have been held on this subject, both the ancient and modern theologians.<sup>64</sup> At

---

Jews, may have been, like Horace, *libertino patre natus*."

<sup>63</sup> This suggestion is due to Wieseler, who translates the verse which described Stephen's great opponents, so as to mean "Libertines" from "Cyrene, Alexandria, Cilicia, and Asia." We think that another view is more natural, but at least we should observe that we find Saul, a *Roman* citizen, actively operating in persecution with those who are called *Libertini*.

<sup>64</sup> Origen says that he had both names from the first, that he used one among the Jews and the other afterwards; Augustine, that he took the name when he began to preach; Chrysostom, that he received a new title, like Peter, at his ordination in Antioch; Bede, that he did not receive it till the Proconsul was converted; and Jerome, that it was meant to commemorate that victory.

present it will be enough to say that, though we cannot overlook the coincidence, or believe it accidental, yet it is most probably that both names were borne by him in his childhood, that "Saul" was the name of his Hebrew home, and "Paul" that by which he was known among the Gentiles. It will be observed that "Paulus" the name by which he is always mentioned after his departure from Cyprus, and by which he always designates himself in his Epistles, is a Roman, not a Greek, word. And it will be remembered that, among those whom he calls his kinsmen in the Epistle to the Romans, two of the number, Junia and Lucius, have Roman names, while the others are Greek (Rom 16:7, 11, 21). All this may point to a strong Roman connection. These names may have something to do with that honorable citizenship which was an heirloom in the household; and the appellation "Paulus" may be due to some such feelings as those which induced the historian Josephus to call himself "Flavius," in honor of Vespasian and the Flavian family.

If we turn now to consider the social position of the Apostle's father and family, we cannot on the one hand confidently argue, from the possession of the citizenship, that they were in the enjoyment of affluence and outward distinction. The *civitas* of Rome, though at that time it could not be purchased without heavy expense, did not depend on any conditions of wealth, where it was bestowed by authority. On the other hand, it is certain that the manual trade, which we know that St. Paul exercised, cannot be adduced as an argument to prove that his circumstances were narrow and mean; still less, as some have imagined, that he lived in absolute poverty. It was a custom among the Jews that all boys should learn a trade. "What is commanded of a father towards his son?" asks a Talmudic writer. "To circumcise him, to teach him the law, to teach him a trade." Rabbi Judah said, "He that teaches not his son a trade does the same as if he taught him to be a thief;" and Rabban Gamaliel said, "He that hath a trade in his hand, to what is he like? He is like a vineyard that is fenced."

And if, in compliance with the good and useful custom of the Jews, the father of the young Cilician sought to make choice of a trade, which might fortify his son against idleness, or against adversity, none would occur to him more naturally than the profitable occupation of the making of tents, the material of which was hair cloth, supplied by the goats of his native province and sold in the markets of the Levant by the well known name of *cilicium*.<sup>65</sup> The most reasonable conjecture is that his father's business was concerned with these markets and that, like many of his scattered countrymen, he was actively occupied in the traffic of the Mediterranean coasts; and the remote dispersion of those relations, whom he mentions in his letter from Corinth to Rome, is favorable to this opinion.

But whatever might be the station and employment of his father or his kinsmen, whether they were elevated by wealth above, or depressed by poverty below, the average of the Jews of Asia Minor and Italy, we are disposed to believe that this family were possessed of that highest respectability which is worthy of deliberate esteem. The words of Scripture seem to claim for them the tradition of a good and religious reputation. The strict piety of St. Paul's ancestors has already been remarked; some of his kinsmen embraced Christianity before the Apostle himself (Rom. 16:7), and the excellent discretion of his nephew will be the subject of our admiration, when we come to consider the dangerous circumstances which led to the nocturnal journey from Jerusalem to Caesarea (Acts 23).

### St. Paul's Boyhood

But, though a cloud rests on the actual year of St. Paul's birth, and the circumstances of his father's household must be left to imagination, we have the great satisfaction of knowing the exact features of the scenery in the midst of which his childhood was spent. The plain, the

---

<sup>65</sup> Hair cloth of this kind is manufactured at the present day in Asia Minor, and the word is still regained in French, Spanish, and Italian.

mountains, the river, and the sea still remain to us. The rich harvests of corn still grow luxuriantly after the rains in spring. The same tents of goat's hair are still seen covering the plains in the busy harvest.<sup>66</sup> There is the same solitude and silence in the intolerable heat and dust of the summer. Then, as now, the mothers and children of Tarsus went out in the cool evenings and looked from the gardens round the city, or from their terraced roofs, upon the heights of Taurus. The same sunset lingered on the pointed summits. The same shadows gathered in the deep ravines. The river Cydnus has suffered some change in the course of 1800 years; instead of rushing, as in the time of Xenophon, like the Rhone at Geneva, in a stream of two hundred feet broad through the city, it now flows idly past it on the east.

The channel, which floated the ships of Antony and Cleopatra, is now filled up; and wide unhealthy lagoons occupy the place of the ancient docks.<sup>67</sup> But its upper waters still flow, as formerly, cold and clear from the snows of Taurus; and its waterfalls still break over the same rocks, when the snows are melting, like the Rhine at Schasshausen.

We find a pleasure in thinking that the footsteps of the young apostle often wandered by the side of this stream, and that his eyes often looked on these falls. We can hardly believe that he who spoke to the Lystrians of the "rain from heaven," and the "fruitful seasons" and of the "living God who made heaven and earth and the

---

<sup>66</sup> "The plain presented the appearance of an immense sheet of corn stubble, dotted with small camps of tents; these tents are made of hair cloth, and the peasantry reside in them at this season, while the harvest is reaping and the corn treading out.", Beaufort's *Karamania*, p. 273.

<sup>67</sup> In Strabo's day there was an inconvenient "bar" at the mouth of the Cydnus. Here (as in the case of the Pyramus and other rivers on that coast) the land has since that time encroached on the sea. The unhealthiness of the sea coast near the Gulf of Scanderon is notorious, as can be testified by more than one of those who visited there.

sea," (Acts. 14:15,17) could have looked with indifference on beautiful and impressive scenery. Gamaliel was celebrated for his love of nature; and the young Jew, who was destined to be his most famous pupil, spent his early days in the close neighborhood of much that was well adapted to foster such a taste. Or if it be thought that in attributing such feelings to him we are writing in the spirit of modern times; and if it be contended that he would be more influenced by the realities of human life than by the impressions of nature – then let the youthful Saul be imagined on the banks of the Cydnus, where it flowed through the city in a stream less clear and fresh, where the wharves were covered with merchandise, in the midst of groups of men in various costumes, speaking various dialects.

St. Basil says that in his day Tarsus was a point of union for Syrians, Cilicians, Isaurians, and Cappadocians. To these we must add the Greek merchant and the agent of Roman luxury. And one more must be added – the Jew – even then the pilgrims of commerce, trading with every nation and blending with none. In this mixed company Saul, at an early age, might become familiar with the activities of life and the diversities of human character, and even in his childhood make some acquaintance with those various races which in his manhood he was destined to influence.

We have seen what his infancy was; we must now glance at his boyhood. It is usually the case that the features of a strong character display themselves early. His impetuous fiery disposition would sometimes need control. Flashes of indignation would reveal his impatience and his honesty.<sup>68</sup> The affectionate tenderness of his nature would not be without an object of attachment, if that sister, who was afterwards married (Acts 23:16), was his playmate at Tarsus. The work of tent making, rather an amusement than a trade, might sometimes occupy those young hands, which

<sup>68</sup> See Acts 9:1,2; 23:1-5. Compare Acts 13:13 and 15:38 with 2 Tim. 4:11.

were marked with the toil of years when he held them to the view of the Elders at Miletus.<sup>69</sup>

His education was conducted at home rather than at school; for though Tarsus was celebrated for its learning, the Hebrew boy would not lightly be exposed to the influence of Gentile teaching. Or, if he went to a school, it was not a Greek school, but rather to some room connected with the synagogue, where a noisy class of Jewish children received the rudiments of instruction, seated on the ground with their teacher, after the manner of Mahomedan children in the east, who may be seen or heard at their lessons near the mosque.<sup>70</sup>

At such a school, it may be, he learned to read and write, going and returning under the care of some attendant, according to that custom which he afterwards used as an illustration in the Epistle to the Galatians<sup>71</sup> (and perhaps he remembered his own early days while he wrote the passage) when he spoke of the Law as the slave who conducts us to the School of Christ. His religious knowledge, as his years advanced, was obtained from hearing the Law read in the synagogue,

<sup>69</sup> Acts 20:34, "Ye yourselves know that *these hands* have ministered to my necessities, and to them that were with me." Compare 28:3; 1 Cor. 4:12; 1 Thess. 2:9; 2 Thess. 3:8.

<sup>70</sup> This is written from the recollection of a Mahomedan school at Bildah in Algeria, where the mosques can now be entered with impunity. The children, with the teacher, were on a kind of upper story like a shelf, within the mosque. All were seated on this floor, in the way described by Maimonides. The children wrote on boards and recited what they wrote; the master addressed them in rapid succession; and the confused sound of voices was unceasing.

<sup>71</sup> Gal. 3:24, where the word inaccurately rendered "schoolmaster" denotes the attendant slave who accompanied the child to the school. A Jewish illustration of a custom well known among the Greeks and Romans is given by Buxtorf. He describes the child as taken to the preceptor under the skirt of a Rabbi's cloak, and as provided with honey and honeycakes, symbolizing such passages as Deut. 32:13; Cant. 4:11; Ps. 19:10.

from listening to the arguments and discussions of learned doctors, and from that habit of questioning and answering, which was permitted even to the children among the Jews. Familiar with the pathetic history of the Jewish sufferings, he would feel his heart filled with that love to his own people which breaks out in the Epistle to the Romans (9:4,5) – to that people “whose were the adoption and the glory and the covenants, and of whom, as concerning the flesh, Christ was to come” – a love not then, as it was afterwards, blended with love towards all mankind, “to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile,” – but rather united with a bitter hatred to the Gentile children which he saw around him.

His idea of a Messiah, so far as it was distinct, would be the carnal notion of a temporal prince – a “Christ known after the flesh” (2 Cor. 5:16) – and he looked forward with the hope of a Hebrew to the restoration of “the kingdom of Israel.” (Acts 1:6) He would be known at Tarsus as a child of promise, and as one likely to uphold the honor of the Law against the half infidel teaching of the day. But the time was drawing near when his training was to become more exact and systematic. He was destined for the school of Jerusalem. The educational maxim of the Jews, at a later period, was as follows: “At five years of age, let children begin the Scripture; at ten, the Mishnah; at thirteen, let them be subjects of the Law.”<sup>72</sup>

There is no reason to suppose that the general practice was very different before the floating maxims of the great doctors were brought together in the Mishnah. It may therefore be concluded, with a strong degree of probability, that Saul was sent to the Holy City between the

<sup>72</sup> We have learned from Buxtorf that at 13 there was a ceremony something like Christian confirmation. The boy was then called a “Child of the Law” and the father declared in the presence of the Jews that his son fully understood the Law and was fully responsible for his sins.

ages of ten and thirteen.<sup>73</sup> Had it been later than the age of thirteen, he could hardly have said that he had been “brought up” in Jerusalem.

### Paul is Sent to Jerusalem

The first time anyone leaves the land of his birth to visit a foreign and distant country is an important epoch in his life. In the case of one who has taken this first journey at an early age, and whose character is enthusiastic and susceptible of lively impressions from without, this epoch is usually remembered with peculiar distinctness. But when the country which is thus visited has furnished the imagery for the dreams of childhood, and is felt to be more truly the young traveler’s home than the land he is leaving, then the journey assumes the sacred character of a pilgrimage. The nearest parallel which can be found to the visits of the scattered Jews to Jerusalem is in the periodical expedition of the Mohammedan pilgrims to the sanctuary at Mecca. Nor is there anything which ought to shock the mind in such a comparison; for that localizing spirit was the same thing to the Jews under the highest sanction, which it is to the Mohammed’s through the memory of a prophet who was the enemy and not the forerunner of Christ.

As the disciples of Islam may be seen at stated seasons flocking towards Cairo or Damascus, the meeting places of the African and Asiatic caravans, so Saul had often seen the Hebrew pilgrims from the interior of Asia Minor come down through the passes of the mountains and join others at Tarsus who were bound for Jerusalem. They returned when the festivals were over; and he heard them talk of the Holy City, of Herod, and the New Temple and of the great teachers and doctors of the Law. And at length Saul himself was to go, to see the land of

<sup>73</sup> That he came from Tarsus at an early age is implied in Acts 26:4, “My manner of life *from my youth*, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews, which knew me from the beginning.”

promise and the City of David, and grow up a learned Rabbi “at the feet of Gamaliel.”

With his father, or under the care of some other friend older than himself, he left Tarsus and went to Jerusalem. It is not probable that they traveled by the long and laborious land journey which leads from the Cilician plain through the defiles of Mount Amanas to Antioch, and thence along the rugged Phoenician shore through Tyre and Sidon to Judea. The Jews, when they went to the festivals, or to carry contributions, like the Mahommedans of modern days, would follow the lines of natural traffic;<sup>74</sup> and now that the Eastern Sea had been cleared of its pirates, the obvious course would be to travel by water. The Jews, though merchants, were not seamen. We may imagine Saul, therefore, setting sail from the Cydnus on his first voyage, in a Phoenician trader, under the patronage of the gods of Tyre, or in company with Greek mariners in a vessel adorned with some mythological emblem, like that Alexandrian corn ship which subsequently brought him to Italy, “whose sign was Castor and Pollux.” (Acts 28:11)

Gradually they lost sight of Taurus, and the heights of Lebanon came into view. The one had sheltered his early home, but the other had been a familiar form to his Jews forefathers. How histories would crowd into his mind as the vessel –moved on over the waves, and he gazed upon the furrowed flanks of the great Hebrew mountain! Had the voyage been taken fifty years earlier, the vessel would probably been bound for Ptolemais, which still bore the name of the Greek kings of Egypt;<sup>75</sup> but in the reign of Augustus or Tiberius it is more likely that she

<sup>74</sup> That he came from Tarsus at an early age is implied by Acts 26:4, “My manner of life *from my youth*, which was *at the first* among my own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews, which knew me from the beginning.”

<sup>75</sup> See, for instance, 1 Macc. 5:15; 10:1. Ptolemais was still a busy seaport in St. Paul’s day, though Caesarea had become the more important harbor, and indeed, politically, the most important city in Palestine. See Acts 21:7.

sailed round the headland of Carmel and came to anchor in the new harbor of Caesarea, the handsome city which Herod had rebuilt and named in honor of the Emperor.

To imagine incidents when none are recorded, and confidently to lay down a route without any authority, would be inexcusable in writing on this subject. But the imagine the feelings of a Hebrew boy on his first visit to the Holy Land is neither difficult not blamable. During this journey Saul had around him a different scenery and different cultivation from what he had been accustomed to, not a river and a wide plain covered with harvests of corn, but a succession of hills and valleys, with terraced vineyards watered by artificial irrigation. If it was the time of a festival, many pilgrims were moving in the same direction, with music and the songs of Zion. The ordinary road would probably be that mentioned in the Acts, which led from Caesarea through the town of Antipatris (Acts 23:31). But neither of these places would possess much interest for a “Hebrew of the Hebrews.” The one was associated with the thoughts of the Romans and of modern times; the other had been built by Herod in memory of Antipater, his Idumean father. But objects were not wanting of the deepest interest to a child of Benjamin. Those far hilltops on the left were close upon Mount Gilboa, even if the very place could not be seen where “the Philistines fought against Israel...and the battle went sore against Saul...and he fell on his sword...and died, and his three sons, and his armor bearer, and all his men, that same day together.” (1 Sam. 31:1 6).

After passing through the lots of the tribes of Manasseh and Ephraim, the traveler from Caesarea came to the borders of Benjamin. The children of Rachel were together in Canaan as they had been in the desert. The lot of Benjamin was entered near Bethel, memorable for the piety of Jacob, the songs of Deborah, the sin of Jeroboam, and the zeal of Josiah. (Gen. 28:19; Jud. 4:5; 1 Kings 12:29; 2 Kings 23:15) Onward a short distance was Gibeah, the home of Saul when he was anointed king (1 Sam 10:26;

15:34), and the scene of the crime and desolation of the tribe which made it the smallest of the tribes of Israel. (Judges 20:43 ff) Might it not be too truly said concerning the Israelites even of that period: "They have deeply corrupted themselves, as in the days of Gibeah; therefore the Lord will remember their iniquity, He will visit their sins?" (Hos. 9:9)

At a later stage of his life, such thoughts of the unbelief and iniquity of Israel accompanied St. Paul wherever he went. At the early age of twelve years, all his enthusiasm could find an adequate object in the earthly Jerusalem, the first view of which would be descried about this part of the journey. From the time with the line of the city wall was seen all else was forgotten. The further border of Benjamin was almost reached. The Rabbis said that the boundary line of Benjamin and Judah, the two faithful tribes, passed through the Temple. And this City and Temple was the common sanctuary of all Israelites. "Thither the tribes go up, even the tribes of the Lord, to testify unto Israel, to give thanks unto the name of the Lord. There is little Benjamin their ruler, and the princes of Judah their council, the princes of Zebulon and the princes of Naphtali; for there is the seat of judgment, even the seat of the house of David." And now the Temple's glittering roof was seen, with the buildings of Zion crowning the eminence above it, and the ridge of the Mount of Olives rising high over all. And now the city gate was passed, with that thrill of the heart which none but a Jew could know. "Our feet stood within thy gates, O Jerusalem. O pray for the peace of Jerusalem; they shall prosper that love thee. Peace be within thy walls; and plenteousness within thy palaces. O God, wonderful art thou in thy holy places; even the God of Israel. He will give strength and power unto His people. Blessed by God." (Psalms 68 and 122)

And now that this young enthusiastic Jew is come into the land of his forefathers and is about to receive his education in the schools of the Holy city, we may pause to give some description of the state of Judea and Jerusalem.

We have seen that it is impossible to fix the exact date of his arrival, but we know the general features of the period; and we can easily form to ourselves some idea of the political and religious conditions of Palestine.

Herod was now dead. The tyrant had been called to his last account; and that eventful reign, which had destroyed the nationality of the Jews, while it maintained their apparent independence, was over. It is most likely that Archelaus also had ceased to govern and was already in exile. His accession to power had been attended with dreadful fighting in the streets, with bloodshed at sacred festivals, and with wholesale crucifixions; his reign of ten years was one continued season of disorder and discontent; and at last he was banished to Vienna on the Rhone, that Judea might be formally constituted into a Roman province.<sup>76</sup>

We suppose Saul to have come from Tarsus to Jerusalem when one of the four governors who preceded Pontius Pilate was in power, either Coponius, or Marcus Ambivivus, or Annius Rufus, or Valerius Gratus. The governor resided in the town of Caesarea. Soldiers were quartered there and at Jerusalem and throughout Judea, wherever the turbulence of the people made garrisons necessary. Centurions were in the country towns (Luke 7:1 10); soldiers on the banks of the Jordan (Luke 3:14). There was no longer even the show of independence. The revolution, of which Herod had sown the seeds, now came to maturity.

The only change since his death in the appearance of the country was that everything became more Roman than before. Roman money was current in the markets. Roman

---

<sup>76</sup> While the questions of succession was pending, the Roman soldiers under Sabinus had a desperate conflict with the Jews. Fighting and sacrificing went on together. Varus, the governor of Syria, marched from Antioch to Jerusalem, and 2000 Jews were crucified. The Herodian family, after their father's death, had gone to Rome, where Augustus receive them in the Temple of Apollo. Archelaus had never the title of king, though his father had desired it.

words were incorporated in the popular language. Roman buildings were conspicuous in all the towns. Even those two independent principalities which two sons of Herod governed, between the provinces of Judea and Syria, exhibited all the general character of the epoch. Philip, the tetrarch of Gaulonitis, called Bethsaida, on the north of the lake of Gennesareth, by the name of Julias, in honor of the emperor who about this time (AD 14) succeeded his illustrious step father.

These political changes had been attended with a gradual alteration in the national feelings of the Jews with regard to their religion. That the sentiment of political nationality was not extinguished was proved too well by all the horrors of Vespasian's and Hadrian's reigns; but there was a growing tendency to cling rather to their Law and Religion as the center of their unity. The great conquests of the Heathen powers may have been intended by Divine Providence to prepare this change in the Jewish mind. Even under the Maccabees, the idea of the state began to give place, in some degree, to the idea of religious life. Under Herod, the old unity was utterly broken to pieces. The high priests were set up and put down at his caprice; and the jurisdiction of the Sanhedrin was invaded by the more arbitrary interference.

Under the governors the power of the Sanhedrin was still more abridged; and high priests were raised and deposed, as the Christian patriarchs of Constantinople have for some ages been raised and deposed by the Sultan; so that it is often a matter of great difficulty to ascertain who was high priest of Jerusalem in any given year at this period. (See Acts 23:5) Thus the hearts of the Jews turned more and more towards the fulfillment of Prophecy, to the practice of religion, to the interpretation of the Law. All else was now hopeless. The Pharisees, the Scribes, and the Lawyers were growing into a more important body even than the Priests and Levites;<sup>77</sup> and

<sup>77</sup> In earlier periods of Jewish history, the prophets seem often to have been a more influential body than

that system of Rabbinism was beginning which, supplanting the original religion of the Jews, became, after the ruin of the Temple and the extinction of the public worship, a new bond of national union, the great distinctive feature in the character of modern Judaism.

The Apostolic Age was remarkable for the growth of learned Rabbinical schools; but of these the most eminent were the rival schools of Hillel and Schammai. These sages of the law were spoken of by the Jews, and the proverbs quoted, as the seven wise men were quoted by the Greeks. Their traditional systems run through all the Talmudical writings, as the doctrines of the Scotists and Thomists run through the Middle Ages. Both were Pharisaic schools; but the former upheld the honor of tradition as even superior to the law; the latter despised the traditionalists when they clashed with Moses. The antagonism between them was so great that it was said that even "Elijah the Tishbite would never be able to reconcile the disciples of Hillel and Schammai."

### Gamaliel

Of these two schools, that of Hillel was by far the most influential in its own day, and its decisions have been held authoritative by the greater number of later Rabbis. The most eminent ornament of this school was Gamaliel, whose fame is celebrated in the Talmud. Hillel was the father of Simeon, and Simeon the father of Gamaliel. It has been imagined by some that Simeon was the same old man who took the infant Savior in his arms and pronounced the *Nunc Dimitis* (Luke 2:25 35). It is difficult to give a conclusive proof of this; but there is no doubt that this Gamaliel was the same who wisely pleaded the cause of St. Peter and the other apostles (Acts 5:34 40), and who had previously educated the future apostle St. Paul (Acts 22:3). His learning was so eminent, and his character so revered, that he is one of the

---

the priests. It is remarkable that we do not read of "Schools of the Prophets" in any of the Levitical cities. In these schools some were Levites, as Samuel; and some belonged to other tribes, as did Saul and David.

seven who alone among Jewish doctors have been honored with the title of "Rabban."<sup>78</sup> As Aquinas, among the schoolmen, was called *Doctor Angelicus*, and Bonaventura *Doctor Seraphicus*, so Gamaliel was called "The Beauty of the Law;" and it is a saying of the Talmud that "since Rabban Gamaliel died, the glory of the Law has ceased."

He was a Pharisee, but anecdotes are told of him which show that he was not trammelled by the narrow bigotry of the sect.<sup>79</sup> He had no antipathy to the Greek learning. He rose above the prejudices of his party. Our impulse is to class him with the best of the Pharisees, like Nicodemus and Joseph of Arimathea. Candor and wisdom seem to have been features of his character; and this agrees with what we read of him in the Acts of the Apostles,<sup>80</sup> that he was "had in reputation of all the people," and with his honest and intelligent argument when Peter was brought before the council. It has been imagined by some that he became a Christian; and why he did not become so is known only to Him who understands the secrets of the human heart. But he lived and died a Jew; and a well known prayer against Christian "heretics" was composed or sanctioned by him.<sup>81</sup>

<sup>78</sup> This title is the same as *Rabboni*, addressed to our Lord by Mary Magdalene.

<sup>79</sup> He bathed once at Ptolemais in an apartment where a statue was erected to a heathen goddess; and being asked how he could reconcile this with the Jewish law, he replied that the bath was there before the statue, that the bath was not made for the goddess, but the statue for the bath.

<sup>80</sup> Acts 5:34. Yet Nicodemus and Joseph declared themselves the friends of Christ, which Gamaliel never did. And we should hardly expect to find a violent persecutor among the pupils of a really candid and unprejudiced man.

<sup>81</sup> The prayer is given in Mr. Horne's *Introduction to the Scriptures*, 8<sup>th</sup> Ed., Vol. III, p. 216, as follows: "Let there be no hope to them who apostatize from the true religion; and let heretics, how many soever they be, all perish as in a moment. And let the kingdom of pride be speedily rooted out and broken in our days. Blessed art

He died eighteen years before the destruction of Jerusalem,<sup>82</sup> about the time of St. Paul's shipwreck at Malta, and was buried with great honor. Another of his pupils, Onkelos, the author of the celebrated Targum, raised to him such a funeral pile of rich materials as had never before been known except at the burial of a king.

If we were briefly to specify the three effects which the teaching and example of Gamaliel may be supposed to have produced on the mind of St. Paul, they would be as follows: candor and honesty of judgment; a willingness to study and make use of Greek authors; and a keen and watchful enthusiasm for the Jewish law. We shall see these traits of character soon exemplified in his life. But it is time that we should inquire into the manner of communicating instruction, and learn something concerning the place where instruction was communicated, in the schools of Jerusalem.

### Rabbinical Schools

Until the formation of the later Rabbinical colleges, which flourished after the Jews were driven from Jerusalem, the instruction in the divinity schools seems to have been chiefly oral. There was a prejudice against the use of any books except the Sacred Writings. The system was one of Scriptural Exegesis. Josephus remarks at the close of his *Antiquities* that the one thing most prized by his countrymen was power in the exposition of Scripture. "They give to that man," he says, "the testimony of being a wise man, who is fully acquainted with our laws and is able to interpret their meaning." So far as we are able to learn from our sources of information, the method of instruction was something of this kind.<sup>83</sup>

thou, O Lord our God, who destroyest the wicked and bringest down the proud."

<sup>82</sup> His son Simeon, who succeeded him as president of the Council, perished in the ruins of the city.

<sup>83</sup> See Dr. Kiito's *Cyclopedia of Biblical Literature*, article "Schools and Synagogues."

At the meetings of learned men some passage of the Old Testament was taken as a text, or some topic for discussion propounded in Hebrew, translated into the vernacular tongue by means of a Chaldean paraphrase, and made the subject of commentary. Various interpretations were given, aphorisms were propounded, allegories suggested, and the opinions of ancient doctors quoted and discussed. At these discussions the younger students were present, to listen or to inquire; or, in the words of St. Luke, "both hearing them and asking them questions:" for it was a peculiarity of the Jewish schools that the pupil was encouraged to catechize the teacher. Contradictory opinions were expressed with the utmost freedom.

This is evident from a cursory examination of the Talmud which gives us the best notions of the scholastic disputes of the Jews. This remarkable body of Rabbinical jurisprudence has been compared to the Roman body of civil law; but in one respect it might suggest a better comparison with our own English common law, in that it is a vast accumulation of various and often inconsistent precedents. The arguments and opinions which it contains show very plainly that the Jewish doctors must often have been occupied with the most frivolous questions; that the "mint, anise, and cumin" were eagerly discussed, while the "weightier matters of the law" were neglected. But we should not be justified in passing a hasty judgment on ancient volumes, which are full of acknowledged difficulties.

What we read of the system of the Cabala has often the appearance of an unintelligible jargon; but in all ages it has been true that "the words of the wise are as goads, and as nails fastened by the masters of assemblies." (Eccl. 12:11) If we could look back upon the assemblies of the Rabbis of Jerusalem, with Gamaliel in the midst, and Saul among the younger speakers, it is possible that the scene would be as strange and as different from a place of modern education as the schools now seen by travelers in the East differ from contemporary schools in England. But the same might be said of the walks of Plato

in the Academy, or the lectures of Aristotle in the Lyceum. It is certain that these free and public discussions of the Jews tended to create a high degree of general intelligence among the people; that the students were trained there in a system of excellent dialectics; that they learned to express themselves in a rapid and sententious style, often with much poetic feeling; and acquired an admirable acquaintance with the words of the ancient Scriptures.<sup>84</sup>

These "Assemblies of the Wise" were possibly a continuation of the "Schools of the Prophets" which are mentioned in the historical books of the Old Testament.<sup>85</sup> Wherever the earlier meetings were held, whether at the gate of the city or in some more secluded place, we read of no buildings for purpose of worship or instruction before the Captivity. During that melancholy period, when the Jews mourned over their separation from the Temple, the necessity of assemblies must have been deeply felt, for united prayer and mutual exhortation, for the singing of the Songs of Zion, and for remembering the "Word of the Lord." When they returned, the public reading of the law became a practice of universal interest; and from this period we must date the erection of synagogues in the different towns of Palestine.<sup>86</sup> So that St. James could say, in the council of Jerusalem, "Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath day (Acts 15:21). To this later period the 74<sup>th</sup> Psalm may be referred, which laments over "the burning of all the synagogues of God in the land." (Psalm 74:8)

<sup>84</sup> It seems that half-yearly examinations were held on four Sabbaths of the months Adder and Ell (February and August), when the scholars made recitations and were promoted; the punishments were, confinement, flogging, and excommunication.

<sup>85</sup> 1 Sam. 10:5,6; 19:20; 2 Kings 2:3,5; 4:38.

<sup>86</sup> Basnage assigns the erection of synagogues to the time of the Maccabees. Meuschen says that the schools were established by Ezra, but he gives no proof. It is probably that they were nearly contemporary.

These buildings are not mentioned by Josephus in any of the earlier passages of his history. But in the time of the apostles we have the fullest evidence that they existed in all the small towns in Judea and in all the principal cities where Jews were dispersed abroad. It seems that the synagogues often consisted of two apartments, one for prayer, preaching, and the office of public worship; the other for the meetings of learned men, for discussions concerning questions of religion and discipline, and for the purposes of education.<sup>87</sup> Thus the synagogues and the schools cannot be considered as two separate subjects.

No doubt a distinction must be drawn between the smaller schools of the country villages, and the great divinity schools of Jerusalem. The synagogue which was built by the Centurion at Capernaum (Luke 7:5) was unquestionably a far less important place than those synagogues in the Holy City, where "the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, with those of Asia and Cilicia," rose up as one man and disputed against St. Stephen.<sup>88</sup> We have here five groups of foreign Jews, two from Africa, two from Western Asia, and one from Europe; and there is no doubt that the Israelites of Syria,

<sup>87</sup> The place where the Jews met for worship was called Bet-ha-Cneset, as opposed to the Bet-ha-Midrash, where lectures were given. The latter term is still said to be used in Poland and Germany for the place where Jewish lectures are given in the Law.

<sup>88</sup> Acts 6:9. It is difficult to classify with confidence the synagogues mentioned in this passage. According to Wieseler's view, only one synagogue is intended, belonging to *libertini* of certain districts in Northern Africa and Western Asia. Others conceive that five synagogues are intended, namely the Asian, Cilician, Alexandrian, Cyrenian, and that of Jewish freedmen from Italy. We think the most natural view is to resolve the five groups into three and to suppose three synagogues, one Asiatic, one African, and one European. An "Alexandrian synagogue" built by Alexandrian artisans who were employed about the Temple, is mentioned in the Talmud. We have ventured below to use the phrase "Cilician Synagogue," which cannot involve any serious inaccuracy.

Babylonia, and the East were similarly represented. The Rabbinical writers say that there were 480 synagogues in Jerusalem; and though this must be an exaggeration, yet no doubt all shades of Hellenistic and Aramaic opinions found a home in the common metropolis. It is easy to see that an eager and enthusiastic student could have had no lack of excitements to stimulate his religious and intellectual activity, if he spent the years of his youth in that city "at the feet of Gamaliel."

### Mode of Teaching

It has been contended that when St. Paul said he was "brought up" in Jerusalem "at the feet of Gamaliel," he meant that he had lived at the Rabban's house and eaten at his table. But the words evidently point to the customary posture of Jewish students at a school. There is a curious passage in the Talmud where it is said that "from the days of Moses to Rabban Gamaliel, they stood up to learn the Law; but when Rabban Gamaliel died, sickness came into the world and they sat down to learn the Law." We need not stop to criticize this sentence, and it is not easy to reconcile it with other authorities on the same subject. "To sit at the feet of Old Testament a teacher" was a proverbial expression; as when Mary is said to have "sat at Jesus' feet and heard His word." (Luke 10:39; cf 8:35) But the proverbial expression must have arisen from a well known custom. The teacher was seated on an elevated platform, or on the ground, and the pupils around him on low seats or on the floor. Maimonides says, "How do the masters teach? The doctor sits at the head, and the disciples surround him like a crown, that they may all see the doctor and hear his words. Nor is the doctor seated on a seat, and the disciples on the ground, but all are in seats or all on the floor."

St. Ambrose says, in his commentary of the 1<sup>st</sup> Epistle to the Corinthians (14) that "it is the tradition of the synagogue that they sit while they dispute; the elders in dignity on high chairs, those beneath them on low seats, and the last of all on mats upon the pavement." And again Philo says, that the children of the

Essenes sat at the feet of the masters who interpreted the Law and explained its figurative sense. And the same thing is expressed in that maxim of the Jews, "Place thyself in the dust at the feet of the wise."

In this posture the Apostle of the Gentiles spent his schoolboy days, an eager and indefatigable student. "He that giveth his mind to the law of the Most High, and is occupied in the meditation thereof; will seek out the wisdom of all the ancient, and be occupied in prophecies. He will keep the sayings of the renowned men; and where subtle parables are, he will be there also. He will seek out the secrets of grave sentences, and be conversant in dark parables. He shall serve among great men and appear among princes; he will travel through strange countries; for he hath tried the good and the evil among men." (Ecclesiasticus 39:1 4)

Such was the pattern proposed to himself by an ardent follower of the Rabbis; and we cannot wonder that Saul, with such a standard before him, and with so ardent a temperament, "outran in Judaism many of his own age and nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of the Fathers." (Gal. 1:14) Intellectually his mind was trained to logical acuteness, his memory become well stores with "hard sentences of old," and he acquired the facility of quick and apt quotation of Scripture. Morally, he was a strict observer of the requirements of the Law; and, while he led a conscientious life, after the example of his ancestors,<sup>89</sup> he gradually imbibed the spirit of a fervent persecuting zeal.

Among his fellow students, who flocked to Jerusalem from Egypt and Babylonia, from the coasts of Greece and his native Cilicia, he was known and held in his estimation as a rising light in Israel. And if we may draw a natural inference from another sentence of the letter which has just been quoted, he was far from

indifferent to the praise of men.<sup>90</sup> Students of the Law were called "the holy people;" and we know one occasion when it was said, "The people who know not the Law are cursed." (John 7:49) And we can imagine him saying to himself, with all the rising pride of a successful Pharisee, in the language of the Book of Wisdom: "I shall have estimation among the multitude, and honor with the elders, though I be young. I shall be found of a quick conceit in judgment, and shall be admired in the sight of great men. When I hold my tongue, they shall bide my leisure; and when I speak, they shall give good ear unto me." (Wisdom 8:10 12)

### Student Life and Early Manhood

While thus he was passing through the busy years of his student life, nursing his religious enthusiasm and growing in self righteousness, others were advancing towards their manhood, not far from Jerusalem, of whom then he knew nothing, but for whose cause he was destined to count that loss which now was his highest gain. (See Phil. 3:5 7) There was one at Hebron, the son of a priest "of the course of Abia," who was soon to make his voice heard through Israel as the preacher of repentance; there were boys by the Lake of Galilee, mending their fathers' nets, who were hereafter to be the teachers of the world; and there was One, at Nazareth, for the sake of whose love they, and Saul himself, and thousands of faithful hearts throughout all future ages, should unite in saying, "He must increase, but I must decrease."

It is possible that Gamaliel may have been one of those doctors with whom Jesus was found conversing in the Temple. It is possible that Saul may have been within the precincts of the Temple at some festival when Mary and Joseph came up from Galilee. It is certain that the eyes of the Savior and of His future disciple must often have rested on the same objects, the same crowd of pilgrims and worshippers, the same

<sup>89</sup> 2 Tim. 1:3

<sup>90</sup> Gal. 1:10, "Am I now seeking to conciliate men? ... Nay, if I still strove (as once I did) to please men, I should not be the servant of Christ."

walls of the Holy City, the same olives on the other side of the valley of Jehoshaphat. But at present they were strangers. The mysterious human life of Jesus was silently advancing towards its great consummation. Saul was growing more and more familiar with the outward observances of the Law, and gaining that experience of the "spirit of bondage" which should enable him to understand himself, and to teach to others, the blessings of the "spirit of adoption." He was feeling the pressure of that yoke, which, in the words of St. Peter, "neither his fathers nor he were able to bear." He was learning (in proportion as his conscientiousness increased) to tremble at the slightest deviation from the Law as jeopardizing salvation, "whence arose that tormenting scrupulosity which invented a number of limitations, in order (by such self imposed restraint) to guard against every possible transgression of the Law.

The struggles of this period of his life he has himself described in the 7<sup>th</sup> chapter of Romans. Meanwhile, year after year passed away. John the Baptist appeared by the waters of the Jordan. The greatest event of the world's history was finished on Calvary. The sacrifice for sin was offered at a time when sin appeared to be the most triumphant. At the period of the Crucifixion, three of the principal persons who demand the historian's attention are: the Emperor Tiberius, spending his life of shameless lust on the island of Capri, his vile minister, Sejanus, reveling in cruelty at Rome; and Pontius Pilate, at Jerusalem, mingling with the sacrifices the blood of the Galileans. (Luke 13:1) How refreshing is it to turn from these characters to such scenes as that where St. John receives his Lord's dying words from the cross, or where St. Thomas meets Him after the resurrection, to have his doubts turned into faith, or where St. Stephen sheds the first blood of martyrdom, praying for his murderers?

The first martyrdom has the deepest interest for us, since it is the first occasion when Saul comes before us in his early manhood. Where had he been during these years which we have

rapidly passed over in a few lines, the years in which the foundations of Christianity were laid? We cannot assume that he had remained continuously in Jerusalem. Many years had elapsed since he came as a boy from his home in Tarsus. He must have attained the age of twenty five or thirty years when our Lord's public ministry began. His education was completed, and we may conjecture, with much probability, that he returned to Tarsus. When he says, in the first letter to the Corinthians (9:1), "Have I not seen the Lord?" and when he speaks in the second (5:16) of having "known Christ after the flesh," he seems only to allude, in the first case, to his vision on the road to Damascus, and in the second to his carnal opinions concerning the Messiah. It is hardly conceivable that if he had been at Jerusalem during our Lord's public ministrations there, he should never allude to the fact.<sup>91</sup> In this case he would surely have been among the persecutors of Jesus and have referred to this as the ground of his remorse, instead of expressing his repentance for his opposition merely to the Savior's followers.<sup>92</sup>

If he returned to the banks of the Cydnus, he would find that many changes had taken place among his friends in the interval which had brought him from boyhood to manhood. But the only change in himself was that he brought back with him, to gratify the pride of his parents, if they were still living, a mature knowledge of the Law, a stricter life, a more fervent zeal. And here, in the schools of Tarsus, he had abundant opportunity for becoming acquainted with that Greek literature, the taste for which he had caught from Gamaliel, and for studying the writings of Philo and the Hellenistic Jews.

<sup>91</sup> In the absence of more information it is difficult to write with confidence concerning this part of St. Paul's life. Benson thinks he was a young student during our Lord's ministry, and places a considerable interval between the Ascension of Christ and the persecution of Stephen. Lardner thinks that the restraint and retirement of a student might have kept him in ignorance of what was going on in the world.

<sup>92</sup> 1 Cor. 15:9; Acts 22:20.

### First Aspect of the Church

Supposing him to be thus employed, we will describe in a few words the first beginnings of the Apostolic Church, and the appearance presented by it to that Judaism in the midst of which it rose, and follow its short history to the point where the "young man, whose name was Saul" reappears at Jerusalem, in connection with his friends of the Cilician synagogue, "disputing with Stephen."

Before our Savior ascended into heaven, He said to His disciples, "Ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost parts of the earth." (Acts 1:8) And when Matthias had been chosen, and the promised blessing had been received on the day of Pentecost, this order was strictly followed. First the Gospel was proclaimed in the City of Jerusalem, and the numbers of those who believed gradually rose from 120 to 5000. (Acts 1:15; 2:41; 4:4) Until the disciples were scattered (Acts 8:1), "upon the persecution that arose about Stephen," (Acts 9:19) Jerusalem was the scene of all that took place in the Church of Christ. We read as yet of no communications of the truth to the Gentiles, nor to the Samaritans, no hint even of any Apostolic preaching in the country parts of Judea.

It providentially happened, indeed, that the first outburst of the new doctrine, with all its miraculous evidence, was witnessed by "Jews and proselytes" from all parts of the world (Acts 2:9-11).

They had come up to the festival of Pentecost from the banks of the Tigris and Euphrates, of the Nile and the Tiber, from the provinces of Asia Minor, from the desert of Arabia, and from the islands of the Greek Sea; and when they returned to their homes, they carried with them news which prepared the way for the glad tidings about to issue from Mount Zion to "the uttermost parts of the earth." But as yet the Gospel lingered on the Holy Hill. The first acts of the Apostles were "prayer and supplication" in the "upper room;" breaking of bread from

house to house;" miracles in the Temple; gatherings of the people in Solomon's cloister; and the bearing of testimony in the council chamber of the Sanhedrin.

One of the chief characteristics of the apostolic church was the bountiful charity of its members one towards another. Many of the Jews of Palestine, and therefore many of the earliest Christian converts, were extremely poor. The odium incurred by adopting the new doctrine might undermine the livelihood of some who depended on their trade for support, and this would make almsgiving necessary. But the Jews of Palestine were relatively poor compared with those of the dispersion. We see this exemplified on later occasions in the contributions which St. Paul more than once anxiously promoted.<sup>93</sup> And in the very first days of the Church, we find its wealthier members placing their entire possessions at the disposal of the Apostles. Not that there was any abolition of the rights of property, as the words of St. Peter to Ananias very well show (Acts 5:4). But those who were rich gave up what God had given them in the spirit of generous self sacrifice, and according to the true principles of Christian communism, which regards property as entrusted to the possessor, not for himself, but for the good of the whole community, to be distributed according to such methods as his charitable feeling and conscientious judgment may approve.

The Apostolic Church was, in this respect, in a healthier condition than the Church of modern days. But even then we find ungenerous and suspicious sentiments growing up in the midst of the general benevolence. That old jealousy between the Aramaic and Hellenistic Jews reappeared. Their party feeling was excited by some real or apparent unfairness in the distribution of the fund set apart for the poor. "A murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews" (Acts 6:1), or of the Hebrews against the Grecians, had been a common occurrence

<sup>93</sup> Acts 19:29,30; Rom. 15:25,26, cf. Acts 24:17; 1 Cor. 16:1-4; 2 Cor. 8:1-4.

for at least two centuries; and, notwithstanding the power of the Divine Spirit, none will wonder that it broke out again even among those who had become obedient to the doctrine of Christ.

That the widows' fund might be carefully distributed, seven almoners, or deacons,<sup>94</sup> were appointed, of whom the most eminent was St. Stephen, described as a man "full of faith, and of the Holy Spirit," and as one who, "full of faith and power did great wonders and miracles among the people." It will be observed that these seven men have Greek names, and that one was a proselyte from the Greco Syrian city of Antioch. It was natural, from the peculiar character of the quarrel, that Hellenistic Jews should have been appointed to this office. And this circumstance must be looked on as divinely arranged. For the introduction of that party which was most free from local and national prejudices into the very ministry of the Church must have had an important influence in preparing the way for the admission of the Gentiles.

Looking back from our point of view upon the community at Jerusalem, we see in it the beginning of that great society, the Church, which has continued to our own time, distinct both from Jews and heathens, and which will continue until it absorbs both Jews and heathens. But to the contemporary Jews themselves it wore a very different appearance. From the Hebrew point of view the disciples of Christ would be regarded as a Jewish sect or synagogue. The synagogues, as we have seen, were very numerous at Jerusalem. There were already the Cilician Synagogue, the Alexandrian Synagogue, the Synagogue of the Libertines, and to these was now added the Nazarene Synagogue, or the Synagogue of the Galileans.

Not that any separate building was erected for the devotions of the Christians, for they met from house to house for prayer and the breaking of bread. But they were by no means

<sup>94</sup> The general question of the Diaconate in the primitive Church is considered in chapter 13.

separated from the nation:<sup>95</sup> they attended the festivals; they worshipped in the Temple. They were a new and singular party in the nation, holding peculiar opinions and interpreting the Scriptures in a peculiar way. This is the aspect under which the Church would first present itself to the Jews, and among others to Saul himself. Many different opinions were expressed in the synagogues concerning the nature and office of the Messiah. These Galileans would be distinguished as holding the strange opinion that the true Messiah was that notorious "malefactor" who had been crucified at the last Passover. All parties in the nation united to oppose, and if possible to crush, the monstrous heresy.

The first attempts to put down the new faith came from the Sadducees. The high priest and his immediate adherents (Acts 4:1; 5:17) belonged to this party. They hated the doctrine of the resurrection; and the resurrection of Jesus Christ was the cornerstone of all St. Peter's teaching. He and the other Apostles were brought before the Sanhedrin, who in the first instance were content to enjoin silence on them. The order was disobeyed and they were summoned again. The consequences might have been fatal but that the jealousy between the Sadducees and the Pharisees was overruled, and the instrumentality of one man's wisdom was used by Almighty God for the protection of His servants. Gamaliel, the eminent Pharisee, argued that if this cause were not of God, it would come to nothing, like the work of other imposters; but if it were of God, they could not safely resist what must certainly prevail; and the apostles of Jesus Christ were scourged and allowed to "depart from the presence of the

<sup>95</sup> "The worship of the Temple and the synagogue still went side by side with the prayers and the breaking of bread from house to house ... The Jewish family life was the highest expression of Christian unity ... The fulfillment of the ancient law was the aspect of Christianity to which the attention of the Church was most directed." Prof. Stanley's *Sermon on St. Peter*, p. 92; see James 2:2, where the word "synagogue" is applied to Christian assemblies.

council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for His name.” (Acts 5:41)

But it was impossible that those Pharisees, whom Christ had always rebuked, should long continue to be protectors of the Christians. On this occasion we find the teacher, Gamaliel, taking St. Peter’s part; at the next persecution, Saul, the pupil, is actively concerned in the murder of St. Stephen. It was the same alternation of the two prevailing parties, first opposing each other, and then uniting to oppose the Gospel, of which Saul himself had such intimate experience when he became St. Paul.

In many particulars St. Stephen was the forerunner of St. Paul. Up to this time the conflict had been chiefly maintained with the Aramaic Jews; but Stephen carried the war of the Gospel into the territory of the Hellenists. The learned members of the foreign synagogues endeavored to refute him by argument or by clamor. The Cilician Synagogue is particularly mentioned (Acts 6:9,10) as having furnished some conspicuous opponents to Stephen, who “were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit with which he spoke.” We cannot doubt from what follows that Saul of Tarsus, already distinguished by his zeal and talents among the younger champions of Pharisaism, bore a leading part in the discussions which here took place. He was now, though still a young man (Acts 7:58) yet no longer in the first opening of youth. This is evident from the fact that he was appointed to an important ecclesiastical and political office immediately afterwards. Such an appointment he could hardly have received from the Sanhedrin before the age of thirty, and probably not as early; for we must remember that a peculiar respect for seniority distinguished the Rabbinical authorities.

We can imagine Saul, then, the foremost in the Cilician Synagogue, disputing against the new doctrines of the Hellenistic Deacon, in all the energy of vigorous manhood, and with all the vehement logic of the Rabbis. How often must these scenes have been recalled to his mind

when he himself took the place of Stephen in many a synagogue, and bore the brunt of the like furious assault, surrounded by “Jews filled with envy, who spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.” (Acts 13:45)

But this clamor and these arguments were not sufficient to convince or intimidate St. Stephen. False witnesses were then suborned to accuse him of blasphemy against Moses and against God, who asserted, when he was dragged before the Sanhedrin, that they had heard him say that Jesus of Nazareth should destroy the Temple and change the Mosaic customs. It is evident from the nature of this accusation how remarkably his doctrine was an anticipation of St. Paul’s. As a Hellenistic Jew, he was less entangled in the prejudices of Hebrew nationality than his Aramaic brethren, and he seems to have had a fuller understanding of the final intention of the gospel than St. Peter and the apostles had yet attained to. Not doubting the divinity of the Mosaic economy, and not faithless to the god of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, he yet saw that the time was coming when the “true worshippers” should worship Him, not in the Temple only or in any one sacred spot, but everywhere throughout the earth, “in spirit and in truth,” and for this doctrine he was doomed to die.

### The Sanhedrin

When we speak of the Sanhedrin, we are brought into contact with an important controversy. It is much disputed whether it had at this period the power of inflicting death. <sup>96</sup>

<sup>96</sup> Most of the modern German critics are of opinion that they had not at this time the power of life and death. A very careful and elaborate argument for the opposite view will be found in Biscoe’s *History of the Acts Confirmed*, Chapter 6. Dean Milman says that in his “opinion. Formed upon the study of the contemporary Jewish history, the power of the Sanhedrin, at this period of political change and confusion, on this, as well as on other points, was altogether undefined.” – *History of Christianity*, Vol. I,

On the one hand, we apparently find the existence of this power denied by the Jews themselves at the trial of our Lord (John 18:31; 19:6); and, on the other, we apparently find it assumed and acted on in the case of St. Stephen. The Sanhedrin at Jerusalem, like the Areopagus at Athens, was the highest and most awful court of judicature, especially in matters that pertain to religion; but, like that Athenian tribunal, its real power gradually shrank, though the reverence attached to its decisions remained. It probably assumed its systematic form under the second Hyrcanus; and it became a fixed institution in the Commonwealth under his sons, who would be glad to have their authority nominally limited, but really supported, by such a council. <sup>97</sup>

Under the Herods and under the Romans its jurisdiction was curtailed; <sup>98</sup> and we are informed, on Talmudical authority that, forty years before the destruction of Jerusalem, it was formally deprived of the power of inflicting death. If this is true, we must consider the proceedings at the death of St. Stephen as tumultuous and irregular. And nothing is more probable than that Pontius Pilate (if indeed he was not absent at that time) would willingly connive, in the spirit of Gallio at Corinth, at an act of unauthorized cruelty in "a question of words and names and of the Jewish law," (Acts 18:15) and that the Jews would willingly assume as much power as they dared, when the honor of Moses and the Temple was in jeopardy.

### St. Stephen the Forerunner of St. Paul

The council assembled in solemn and formal state to try the blasphemer. There was great

P. 340. Compare the narrative of the death of St. James in Josephus' *Antiquities*, 20:9.

<sup>97</sup> The word from which "Sanhedrin" is derived being Greek, makes it probable that its systematic organization dates from the Greco-Macedonian (i.e., the Maccabean) period.

<sup>98</sup> We see the beginning of this in the first passage where the council is mentioned by Josephus, *Antiquities*, 14:9.

and general excitement in Jerusalem. "The people, the scribes, and the elders" had been "stirred up" by the members of the Hellenistic Synagogues (Acts 6:12). It is evident from that vivid expression which is quoted from the accusers' mouths, "this place" – "this holy place" – that the meeting of the Sanhedrin took place in the close neighborhood of the Temple. Their ancient and solemn room of assembly was the hall Gazith, <sup>99</sup> or the "Stone Chamber" partly within the Temple court and partly without it. The president sat in the less sacred portion, and around him, in a semicircle, were the rest of the seventy judges. <sup>100</sup>

Before these judges Stephen was made to stand, confronted by his accusers. The eyes of all were fixed upon his countenance, which grew bright as they gazed upon it, with a supernatural radiance and serenity. In the beautiful Jewish expression of the Scriptures, "They saw his face as it had been that of an angel." The judges, when they saw his glorified countenance, might have remembered the shining on the face of Moses, <sup>101</sup> and trembled lest Stephen's voice should be about to speak the will of Jehovah, like that of the great lawgiver. Instead of being occupied with the faded glories of the Second Temple, they might have recognized in the spectacle before them the Shekinah of the Christian soul, which is the living sanctuary of God.

But the trial proceeded. The judicial question, to which the accused was required to plead, was

<sup>99</sup> It appears that the Talmudical authorities differ as to whether it was on the south or north side of the Temple. But they agree in placing it to the east of the most Holy Place.

<sup>100</sup> Selden describes the form in which the Sanhedrin sat, and gives a diagram with the "President of the Council" in the middle, the "Father of the Council" by his side, and "Scribes" at the extremities of the semicircle.

<sup>101</sup> Exo. 34:29-35; see 2 Cor. 3:7,13. Chrysostom imagines that the angelic brightness on Stephen's face might be intended to alarm the judges, for, as he says, it is possible for a countenance full of spiritual grace to be awful and terrible to those who are full of hate.

put by the president, "Are these things so?" And then Stephen answered, and his clear voice was heard in the silent council hall as he went through the history of the chosen people, proving his own deep faith in the sacredness of the Jewish economy, but suggesting, here and there, that spiritual interpretation of it which had always been the true one, and the truth of which was now to be made manifest to all.

He began, with a wise discretion, from the call of Abraham, and traveled historically in his argument through all the great stages of their national existence – from Abraham to Joseph – from Joseph to Moses – from Moses to David and Solomon. And as he went on he selected and glanced at those points which made for his own cause. He showed that God's blessing rested on the faith of Abraham, though he had "not so much as to set his foot on" in the land of promise, on the piety of Joseph, though he was an exile in Egypt, and on the holiness of the burning bush, though in the desert of Sinai. He dwelt in detail on the Lawgiver, in such a way as to show his own unquestionable orthodoxy; but he quoted the promise concerning "the prophet like unto Moses and reminded his hearers that the Law, in which they trusted, had not kept their forefathers from idolatry.

And so he passed on to the Temple, which had so prominent a reference to the charge against himself,<sup>102</sup> and of the prophet Isaiah,<sup>103</sup> who denied that any temple made with hands could be the place of God's highest worship. And thus far they listened to him. It was the story of the chosen people, to which every Jew listened with interest and pride.

It is remarkable, as we have said before, how completely St. Stephen is the forerunner of St. Paul, both in the form and the matter of this defense. His securing the attention of the Jews by adopting the historical method is exactly what the Apostle did in the synagogue at Antioch in Pisidia. (Acts 13:16-22) His assertion

<sup>102</sup> 1 Kings 8:27; 2 Chron. 2:6; 6:18

<sup>103</sup> Isa. 66:1,2

of his attachment to the true principles of the Mosaic religion is exactly what was said to Agrippa; "I continue unto this day witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come." (Acts 26:22) It is deeply interesting to think of Saul as listening to the martyr's voice, as he anticipated those very arguments which he himself was destined to reiterate in synagogues and before kings.

There is no reason to doubt that he was present,<sup>104</sup> although he may not have been qualified to vote in the Sanhedrin.<sup>105</sup> And it is evident, from the thoughts which occurred to him in his subsequent vision within the precincts of the Temple,<sup>106</sup> how deep an impression St. Stephen's death had left on his memory. And there are even verbal coincidences which may be traced between this address and St. Paul's speeches or writings. The words used by Stephen of the Temple call to mind those which were used at Athens (Acts 17:24). When he speaks of the Law as received "by the disposition of angels,"

<sup>104</sup> Mr. Humphry, in his accurate and useful *Commentary on the Acts*, remarks that it is not improbably we owe to him the defense of St. Stephen given in the Acts. Besides the resemblances mentioned in the text, he points out the similarity between Acts 7:44 and Heb. 8:5, between Acts 7:5-8 and Rom. 4:10-19, and between Acts 7:60 and 2 Tim. 4:16. And if the Epistle to the Hebrews was written by St. Paul, may we not suppose that this scene was present to his mind when he wrote, "Jesus suffered without the gate; let us go forth therefore unto Him without the camp, bearing His reproach." (Heb. 13:12,13)

<sup>105</sup> One of the necessary qualifications of members of the Sanhedrin was that they should be the fathers of children, because such were supposed more likely to lean towards mercy. If this was the rule when Stephen was tried, and if Saul was one of the judges, he must have been married at the time.

<sup>106</sup> He said in his trance, "Lord, they know that I imprisoned and beat in every synagogue them that believed on thee; and when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him." (Acts 22:19,20)

he anticipates a phrase in the Epistle to the Galatians (3:19). His exclamation at the end, "Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart ... who have received the law ... and have not kept it," is only and indignant condensation of the argument in the Epistle to the Romans; "Behold, thou callest thyself a Jew, and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God, and knowest His will ... Thou, therefore, that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonorest thou God?" ... He is not a Jew which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh. But he is a Jew which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of man but of God." (Rom. 2:17-29)

The rebuke which Stephen, full of the Divine Spirit, suddenly broke away from the course of his narrative to pronounce, was the signal for a general outburst of furious rage on the part of his judges.<sup>107</sup> They "gnashed on him with their teeth" in the same spirit in which they had said, not long before, to the blind man who was healed, "Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us?" (John 9:34) But, in contrast with the malignant hatred which had blinded their eyes, Stephen's serene faith was supernaturally exalted into a direct vision of the blessedness of the Redeemed. He, whose face had been like that of an angel on earth, was made like one of those angels themselves, "who do always behold the face of our Father which is in Heaven." (Matt. 18:10). "He being full of the Holy Spirit, looked up steadfastly into Heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God."

The scene before his eyes was no longer the council hall at Jerusalem and the circle of his infuriated judges; but he gazed up into the endless courts of the celestial Jerusalem, with its "innumerable company of angels," and saw Jesus, in whose righteous cause he was about to

<sup>107</sup> It is evident that the speech was interrupted. We may infer what the conclusion would have been from the analogy of St. Paul's speech at Antioch of Pisidia (Acts 13).

die. In other places, where our Savior is spoken of in His glorified state, He is said to be not standing but seated, at the right hand of the Father. Here alone He is said to be standing. It is as if (according to Chrysostom's beautiful thought) He had risen from His throne to succor His persecuted servant and to receive him to Himself. And when Stephen saw his Lord, perhaps with the memories of what he had seen on earth crowding into his mind, he suddenly exclaimed, in the ecstasy of his vision, "Behold! I see the Heavens opened and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God!"

This was too much for the Jews to bear. The blasphemy of Jesus had been repeated. The follower of Jesus was hurried to destruction. "They cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord." It is evident that it was a savage and disorderly condemnation. They dragged him out of the council hall and, making a sudden rush and tumult through the streets, hurried him to one of the gates of the city, and somewhere about the rocky edges of the ravine of Jehoshaphat, where the Mount of Olives looks down upon Gethsemane and Siloam, or on the open ground to the north, which travelers cross when they go towards Samaria or Damascus, with stones that lay without the walls of the Holy City, this heavenly minded martyr was murdered.

The exact place of his death is not known. There are two traditions,<sup>108</sup> an ancient one, which places it on the north, beyond the Damascus gate, and a modern one, which leads travelers through what is now called the gate of St. Stephen, to a spot near the brook Kedron, over against the garden of Gethsemane. But those who look

<sup>108</sup> It is well known that identified St. Stephens' gate with the Damascus gate, and places the scene of the martyrdom on the North, can be traced from an early period to the 15<sup>th</sup> Century; and that the modern tradition, which places both the gate and the martyrdom on the East, can be traced back to the same century. It is probable that the popular opinion regarding these sacred sites was suddenly changed by some monks from interested motives.

upon Jerusalem from an elevated point on the northeast have both these positions in view; and anyone who stood there on that day might have seen the crowd rush forth from the gate, and the witnesses (who according to the law were required to throw the first stones <sup>109</sup> cast off their outer garments and lay them down at the feet of Saul.

The contrast is striking between the indignant zeal which the martyr <sup>110</sup> had just expressed against the sin of his judges, and the forgiving love which he showed to themselves when they became his murderers. He first uttered a prayer for himself in the words of Jesus Christ, which he knew were spoken from the cross, and which he may himself have heard from those holy lips. And then, deliberately kneeling down, in that posture of humility in which the body most naturally expresses the supplication of the mind, and which has been consecrated as the attitude of Christian devotion by Stephen and by Paul himself (at Miletus, Acts 20:36, and at Tyre, Acts 21:5), he gave the last few moments of his consciousness to a prayer for the forgiveness of his enemies; and the words were scarcely spoken when death seized upon him, or rather, in the words of Scripture, he fell asleep.

“And Saul was consenting to his death.” <sup>111</sup> A Spanish painter, <sup>112</sup> in a picture of Stephen

<sup>109</sup> See Deut. 17:5-7. The stoning was always outside the city. Lev. 24:14; 1 Kings 21:10,13.

<sup>110</sup> The Christian use of the word *martyr* begins with St. Stephen.

<sup>111</sup> The word in Acts 8:1 expresses far more than mere passive consent. St. Paul himself uses the same expression (Acts 22:20) when referring to the occurrence. Compare 9:1 and 26:11. We have said that this scene made a deep impression on St. Paul's mind, but the power of the impression was unfelt or resisted until after his conversion.

<sup>112</sup> Vincent Joannes, the founder of the Valencian school, one of the most austere of the grave and serious painters of Spain. The picture is one of a series of St. Stephen; it was once in the church of St. Stephen at Valencia, and is now in the Royal Gallery at Madrid. See Stirling's *Annals of the Artists of Spain*.

conducted to the place of execution, has represented Saul as walking by the martyr's side with melancholy calmness. He consents to his death from a sincere, though mistaken conviction of duty; and the expression of his countenance is strongly contrasted with the rage of the baffled Jewish doctors and the ferocity of the crowd who flock to the scene of bloodshed. Literally considered, such a representation is scarcely consistent either with Saul's conduct immediately afterward, or which his own expressions concerning himself at the later periods of his life (Acts 22:4; 26:10; Phil. 3:6; 1 Tim. 1:13). But the picture, though historically incorrect, is poetically true. The painter has worked according to the true idea of his art in throwing upon the persecutor's countenance the shadow of his coming repentance. We cannot dissociate the martyrdom of Stephen from the conversion of Paul. The spectacle of so much constancy, so much faith, so much love, could not be lost. It is hardly too much to say with Augustine, that the “church owes Paul to the prayer of Stephen.” *Si Stephanus non orasset, ecclesia Paulum non haberet.*

### Chapter 3

#### Funeral of St. Stephen

The death of St. Stephen is a bright passage in the earliest history of the church. Where in the annals of the world can we find so perfect an image of a pure and blessed saint as that which is drawn in the concluding verses of the seventh chapter of the Acts of the Apostles? And the brightness which invests the scene of the martyr's last moments is the more impressive from its contrast with all that has preceded it since the crucifixion of Christ. The first apostle who died was a traitor. The first disciples of the Christian apostles whose deaths are recorded were liars and hypocrites. The kingdom of the Son of Man was founded in darkness and gloom. But a heavenly light reappeared with the martyrdom of St. Stephen. The revelation of such a character at the moment of death was the strongest of all evidences, and the highest of

all encouragements. Nothing could more confidently assert the divine power of the new religion; nothing could prophesy more surely the certainty of its final victory.

To us who have the experience of many centuries of Christian history, and who can look back through a long series of martyrdoms to this which was the beginning and example of the rest, these thoughts are easy and obvious; but to the friends and associates of the murdered saint, such feelings of cheerful and confident assurance were perhaps more difficult. Though Christ was indeed risen from the dead, His disciples could hardly yet be able to realize the full triumph of the Cross over death. Even many years afterwards Paul the Apostle wrote to the Thessalonians concerning those who had "fallen asleep" (1 Thess. 4:13) more peaceably than Stephen, that they ought not to sorrow for them as those without hope; and now, at the very beginning of the Gospel, the grief of the Christians must have been great indeed, when the corpse of their champion and their brother lay at the feet of Saul the murderer. Yet, amidst the consternation of some and the fury of others, friends of the martyr were found,<sup>113</sup> who gave him all the melancholy honors of a Jewish funeral, and carefully buried him, as Joseph buried his father, "with great and sore lamentation." (Gen. 1:10)

After the death and burial of Stephen the persecution still raged in Jerusalem. That temporary protection which had been extended to the rising sect by such men as Gamaliel was now at an end. Pharisees and Sadducees, priests and people, alike indulged the most violent and ungovernable fury. It does not seem that any check was laid upon them by the Roman authorities. Either the procurator was absent from the city or he was unwilling to connive at

<sup>113</sup> Acts 8:2. Probably they were Hellenistic Jews impressed in favor of Christianity. It seems hardly likely that they were avowed Christians. There is nothing in the expression itself to determine the point.

what seemed to him an ordinary religious quarrel.

The eminent and active agent in this persecution was Saul. There are strong grounds for believing that if he was not a member of the Sanhedrin at the time of St. Stephen's death, he was elected into that powerful senate soon after, possibly as a reward for the zeal he had shown against the heretic. He himself says that in Jerusalem he not only exercised the power of imprisonment by commission from the High Priests, but also, when the Christians were put to death, gave his vote against them.<sup>114</sup> From this expression it is natural to infer that he was a member of that supreme court of judicature.

However this might be, his zeal in conducting the persecution was unbounded. We cannot help observing how frequently strong expressions concerning his share in the injustice and cruelty now perpetrated are multiplied in the Scriptures. In St. Luke's narrative, in St. Paul's own speeches, in his earlier and later epistles, the subject recurs again and again. He "made havoc of the Church," invading the sanctuaries of domestic life, "entering into every house;" (Acts 8:3: see 9:2) and those whom he thus tore from their homes he "committed to prison;" or, in his own words at a later period, when he had recognized as God's people those whom he now imagined to be His enemies, "thinking that he ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth. ... in Jerusalem ... he shut

<sup>114</sup> The word "voice" in the AV should be read "vote." Acts 26:10. If this inference is well founded, and if the qualification for a member of the Sanhedrin mentioned in the last chapter was a necessary qualification, Saul must have been a married man and the father of a family. If so it is probably that his wife and children did not long survive; for otherwise, some notice of them would have occurred in the subsequent narrative, or some allusion to them in the Epistles. And we know that if ever he had a wife she was not living when he wrote his first letter to the Corinthians (1 Cor. 7). It was customary among the Jews to marry at an early age. Baron Bunsen has expressed his belief in the tradition that St. Paul was a widower.

up many of the saints in prison. (Acts 26:9,10; cf. 22:3)

And not only did men thus suffer at his hands, but women also, a fact three times repeated as a great aggravation of his cruelty (Acts 8:3; 9:2; 22:4). These persecuted people were scourged "in many synagogues." (Acts 26:10) Nor was Stephen the only one who suffered death, as we may infer from the apostle's own confession. <sup>115</sup>

And what was worse than scourging or than death itself, he used every effort to make them blaspheme that holy name whereby they were called. <sup>116</sup> His fame as an inquisitor was notorious far and wide. Even at Damascus Ananias had heard (Acts 9:13) "how much evil he had done to Christ's saints at Jerusalem." He was known there (Acts 9:21) as "he that destroyed them which called on this Name in Jerusalem." It was not without reason that in the deep repentance of his later years, he remembered how he had "persecuted the Church of God and wasted it," (Gal. 1:13; cf Phil. 3:6) how he had been a "blasphemer, a persecutor, and injurious," (1 Tim. 1:13), and that he felt he was "not meet to be called an Apostle," because he "had persecuted the Church of God." <sup>117</sup>

From such cruelty, and such efforts to make them deny that Name which they honored about all names, the disciples naturally fled. In consequence of "the persecution against the Church at Jerusalem, they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria." The Apostles only remained (Acts 8:1). But this dispersion led to great results. The moment of

<sup>115</sup> "I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women (Acts 22:4), and when they were put to death I gave my vote against them (Acts 26:10)."

<sup>116</sup> Acts 26:11. It is not said that he succeeded in causing any to blaspheme. It may be necessary to explain to some readers that the Greek imperfect merely denotes that the attempt was made; so in Gal. 1:23, alluded to at the end of this chapter.

<sup>117</sup> 1 Cor. 15:9. It should be observed that in all these passages from the Epistles the same word for "persecution" is used.

lower depression was the very time of the church's first missionary triumph. "They that were scattered abroad went everywhere preaching the word." (Acts 8:4; 11:19 21) First the Samaritans and then the Gentiles received that Gospel which the Jews attempted to destroy. Thus did the providence of God begin to accomplish, by unconscious instruments, the prophecy and command which had been given, "Ye shall be witnesses unto Me, both in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth." (Acts 1:8)

### Philip and the Samaritans

The Jew looked upon the Samaritan as he looked upon the Gentile. His hostility to the Samaritan was probably the greater, in proportion as he was nearer. In conformity with the economy which was observed before the resurrection, Jesus Christ had said to His disciples, "Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not; but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." (Matt. 10:5,6) Yet did the Savior give anticipative hints of His favor to Gentiles and Samaritans, in His mercy to the Syrophenician woman, and in His interview with the woman at the well of Sychar. And now the time was come for both the "middle walls of partition" to be destroyed. The dispersion brought Philip, a companion of Stephen, the second of the seven, to a city of Samaria. <sup>118</sup> He came with the power of miracles and with the message of salvation. The Samaritans were convinced by what they saw, they listened to what he said, and there was great joy in that city.

When the news came to Jerusalem, Peter and John were sent by the Apostles, and the same miraculous testimony attended their presence which had been given on the day of Pentecost. The Divine Power in Peter rebuked the power of evil which were working among the

<sup>118</sup> Acts 8:5. This was probably the ancient capital, at that time called *Sebaste*. The city of Sychar (John 4:5) had also received a Greek name. It was then *Neapolis*, and is still Nablus.

Samaritans in the Person of Simon Magus, as Paul afterwards, on his first preaching to the Gentiles, rebuked in Cyprus Elymas the Sorcerer. The two apostles returned to Jerusalem, preaching as they went in many villages of the Samaritans the Gospel which had been welcomed in the city.

Once more we are permitted to see Philip on his labor of love. We obtain a glimpse of him on the road which leads down by Gaza to Egypt. The chamberlain of Queen Candace is passing southwards on his return from Jerusalem, and reading in his chariot the prophecies of Isaiah. <sup>119</sup> Ethiopia is “stretching out her hands to God” (Psalm 68:31), and the suppliant is not unheard. A teacher is provided at the moment of anxious inquiry. The stranger goes on his way rejoicing, a proselyte who had found the Messiah, a Christian baptized with water and the Holy Spirit. The Evangelist, having finished the work for which he had been sent, is called elsewhere by the Spirit of God. He proceeds to Caesarea and we hear of him no more, until, after the lapse of twenty years, he received under his roof in that city one who, like himself, had traveled in obedience to the Divine command “preaching in all the cities.” <sup>120</sup>

### Aretas, King of Petra

Our attention is now called to that other traveler. We turn from the desert road on the south of Palestine to the desert road on the north, from the border of Arabia near Gaza to its border near Damascus. From Dan to Beersheba the Gospel is rapidly spreading. The dispersion of the Christians had not been confined to Judea

<sup>119</sup> Candace is the name, not of an individual, but of a dynasty, like Aretas in Arabia, or like Pharaoh and Ptolemy.

<sup>120</sup> “But Philip was found at Azotus; and, passing through, he preached in all the cities, till he came to Caesarea.” (Acts 8:40) “And the next day we that were of Paul’s company departed and came to Caesarea, and we entered into the house of Philip the Evangelist, which was one of the seven, and abode with him.” (Acts 21:8)

and Samaria.” On the persecution that arose about Stephen” they had” traveled as far as Phoenicia and Syria.” (Acts 11:19)” Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord,” (Acts 9:1) determined to follow them.” Being exceedingly mad against them, he persecuted them even to strange cities.” (Acts 26:11) He went of his own accord to the high priest and desired of him letters to the synagogues of Damascus, where he had reason to believe that Christians were to be found. And armed with this” authority and commission,” (Acts 26:12) intending” if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women,” (Acts 9:2) to bring them bound unto Jerusalem to be punished (Acts 22:5), he journeyed to Damascus.

The great Sanhedrin claimed over the Jews in foreign cities the same power in religious questions which they exercised at Jerusalem. The Jews in Damascus were very numerous, and there were peculiar circumstances in the political condition of Damascus at this time which may have given facilities to conspiracies or deeds of violence conducted by the Jews. There was a war between Aretas, who reigned at Petra, the desert metropolis of Stony Arabia, <sup>121</sup> and Herod Antipas, his son in law, the Tetrarch

<sup>121</sup> In this mountainous district of Arabia, which had been the scene of the wanderings of the Israelites, and which contained the graves both of Moses and Aaron, the Nabatean Arabs after the time of the Babylonian captivity (or possibly the Edomites before them) grew into a civilized nation, built a great mercantile city at Petra, and were ruled by a line of kings who bore the title of “Aretas.” The Aretas dynasty ceased in the second century when Arabia Petrea became a Roman province under Trajan. In the Roman period, a great road united Ailah on the Red sea with Petra, and thence diverged to the left towards Jerusalem and the powers of the Mediterranean; and to the right towards Damascus, in a direction not very different from that of the modern caravan road from Damascus to Mecca. This state of things did not last very long. The Arabs of this district fell back into their old nomadic state. Petra was long undiscovered. Burckhardt was the first to see it, and Laborde the first to visit it. Now it is well known to Oriental travelers. Its rock theatre and other remains

of Galilee. A misunderstanding concerning the boundaries of the two principalities had been aggravated into an inveterate quarrel by Herod's unfaithfulness to the daughter of the Arabian king, and his shameful attachment to "his brother Philip's wife."

The Jews generally sympathized with the cause of Aretas, rejoiced when Herod's army was cut off, and declared that this disaster was a judgment for the murder of John the Baptist. Herod wrote to Rome and obtained an order for assistance from Vitellius, the governor of Syria. But when Vitellius was on his march through Judea, from Antioch towards Petra, he suddenly heard of the death of Tiberius (AD 37); and the Roman army was withdrawn before the war was brought to a conclusion. It is evident that the relations of the neighboring powers must have been for some years in a very unsettled condition along the frontiers of Arabia, Judea, and Syria; and the falling of a rich border town like Damascus from the hands of the Romans into those of Aretas would be a natural occurrence of the war.

If it could be proved that the city was placed in the power of the Arabian Ethnarch under these particular circumstances, and at the time of St. Paul's journey, good reason would be assigned for believing it probable that the ends for which he went were assisted by the political relations of Damascus. And it would indeed be a singular coincidence, if his zeal in persecuting the Christians were promoted by the sympathy of the Jews for the fate of John the Baptist.

But there are grave objections to this view of the occupation of Damascus by Aretas. Such a liberty taken by a petty chieftain with the Roman power would have been an act of great audacity; and it is difficult to believe that Vitellius would have closed the campaign if such a city were in the hands of an enemy. It is more likely that Caligula, who in many ways contradicted the policy of his predecessor, who banished Herod Antipas and patronized Herod

---

still exist, to show its ancient character of a city of the Roman Empire.

Agrippa, assigned the city of Damascus as a free gift to Aretas.<sup>122</sup> This supposition, as well as the former, will perfectly explain the remarkable passage in St. Paul's letter, where he distinctly says that it was garrisoned by the Ethnarch of Aretas at the time of his escape. Many such changes of territorial occupation took place under the Emperors, which would have been lost to history, were it not for the information derived from a coin, an inscription, or the incidental remark of a writer who had different ends in view.<sup>123</sup> Any attempt to make this escape from Damascus a fixed point of absolute chronology will be unsuccessful; but from what has been said it may fairly be collected that Saul's journey from Jerusalem to Damascus took place not far from that which saw the death of Tiberius and the accession of Caligula.

#### Roads from Jerusalem to Damascus

No journey was ever taken on which so much interest is concentrated as this of St. Paul from Jerusalem to Damascus. It is so critical a passage in the history of God's dealings with man, and we feel it to be so closely bound up with all our best knowledge and best happiness in this life, and with all our hopes for the world to come, that the mind is delighted to dwell upon it, and we are eager to learn or imagine all its details. The conversion of Saul was like the call of a second Abraham. But we know almost more of the Patriarch's journey through this same district, from the north to the south, than we do of the Apostle's in the opposite direction.

---

<sup>122</sup> This is argued with great force by Wieseler, who, so far as we know, is the first to suggest this explanation. His argument is not quite conclusive, because it is seldom easy to give a confident opinion on the details of a campaign, unless its history is minutely recorded. The strength of Wieseler's argument consists in this, that his different lines of reasoning converge to the same result.

<sup>123</sup> Wieseler justly lays some stress on the circumstances that there are coins of Augustus and Tiberius, and again of Nero and his successors, but none of Caligula and Claudius, which imply that Damascus was Roman.

It is easy to conceive of Abraham traveling with his flocks and herds and camels. The primitive features of the East continue still unaltered in the desert, and the Arabian sheik still remains to us a living picture of the patriarch of Genesis. But before the first century of the Christian era, the patriarchal life in Palestine had been modified, not only by the invasions and settlements of Babylonia and Persia, but by large influxes of Greek and Roman civilization. It is difficult to guess what was the appearance of Saul's company on that memorable occasion. We neither know how he traveled nor who his associates were, nor where he rested on his way nor what road he followed from the Judean to the Syrian capital.

His journey must have brought him somewhere into the vicinity of the Sea of Tiberias. But where he approached the nearest to the shores of this sacred lake, whether he crossed the Jordan where, in its lower courses, it flows southwards to the Dead Sea, or where its upper windings enrich the valley at the base of Mount Hermon, we do not know. And there is one thought which makes us glad that it should be so. It is remarkable that Galilee, where Jesus worked so many of His miracles, is the scene of none of those transactions which are related in the Acts. The blue waters of Tiberias, with their fishing boats and towns on the brink of the shore, are consecrated in the Gospels. A greater than Paul was here. When we come to the travels of the Apostles, the scenery is no longer limited and Jewish, but catholic and widely extended, like the Gospel which they preached; and the Sea, which will be so often spread before us in the life of St. Paul, is not the little Lake of Gennesareth, but the great Mediterranean, which washed the shores and carried the ships of the historical nations of antiquity. <sup>124</sup>

Two principal roads can be mentioned, one of which probably conducted the travelers from

---

<sup>124</sup> The next historical notice of the Sea of Tiberias or the Lake of Gennesareth, after that which occurs in the Gospels, is in Josephus.

Jerusalem to Damascus. The track of the caravans, in ancient and modern times, from Egypt to the Syrian capital, has always led through Gaza and Ramleh, and then, turning eastwards about the borders of Galilee and Samaria, has descended near Mount Tabor towards the Sea of Tiberias; and so, crossing the Jordan a little to the north of the Lake by Jacob's Bridge, proceeds through the desert country which stretches to the base of Antilibanus. A similar track from Jerusalem falls into this Egyptian road in the neighborhood of Djenin, at the entrance of Galilee; and Saul and his company may have traveled by this route, performing the journey of one hundred and thirty six miles, like the modern caravans, in about six days.

But at this period, that great work of Roman road making, which was actively going on in all parts of the empire, must have extended, in some degree, to Syria and Judea; and, if the Roman roads were already constructed here, there is little doubt that they followed the direction indicated by the later itineraries. This direction is from Jerusalem to Neapolis (the ancient Shechem), and thence over the Jordan to the south of the Lake, near Scythopolis, where the soldiers of Pompey crossed the river, and where the Galilean pilgrims used to cross it, at the time of the festivals, to avoid Samaria. From Scythopolis it led to Gadara, a Roman city, the ruins of which are still remaining, and so to Damascus. <sup>125</sup>

---

<sup>125</sup> It is very conceivable that he traveled by Caesarea Philippi, the city which Herod Philip had built at the fountains of the Jordan, on the natural line of communication between Tyre and Damascus, and likely to have been one of the "foreign cities" (Acts 26:11) which harbored Christian fugitives. Here, too, he would be in the footsteps of St. Peter, for here the great confession (Matt. 16:16) seems to have been made, and this road also would probably have brought him past Neapolis. It is hardly likely that he would have taken the Petra road, for both the modern caravans and the ancient itineraries cross the Jordan more to the north.

Whatever road was followed in Saul's journey to Damascus, it is almost certain that the earlier portion of it brought him to Neapolis, the Shechem of the Old Testament, and the Nablus of the modern Samaritans. This city was one of the stages in the Itineraries. Dr. Robinson followed a Roman pavement for some considerable distance in the neighborhood of Bethel. This northern road went over the elevated ridges which intervene between the valley of the Jordan and the plain on the Mediterranean coast. As the travelers gained the high ground, the young Pharisee may have looked back, and when he saw the city in the midst of its hills, with the mountains of Moab in the distance, confident in the righteousness of his cause, he may have thought proudly of the 125<sup>th</sup> Psalm: "The hills stand about Jerusalem, even so standeth the Lord round about His people, from this time forth for evermore." His present enterprise was undertaken for the honor of Zion. He was blindly fulfilling the words of One who said; "Whosoever killeth you will think that he does God service." (John 16:2)

Passing through the hills of Samaria, from which he might occasionally obtain a glimpse of the Mediterranean on the left, he would come to Jacob's Well, at the opening of that beautiful valley which lies between Ebal and Gerizim. This, too, is the scene of a Gospel history. The same woman with whom Jesus spoke might be again at the well as the Inquisitor passed. But as yet he knew nothing of the breaking down of the "middle wall of partition." (Eph. 2:14) He could, indeed, have said to the Samaritans, "Ye worship ye know not what, we know what we worship, for salvation is of the Jews." (John 4:22) But he could not have understood the meaning of those other words, "The hour cometh, when ye shall neither in Jerusalem, nor yet in this mountain, worship the Father, the true worshippers shall worship Him in spirit and in truth." (John 4:21,23)

His was not yet the Spirit of Christ. The zeal which burnt in him was that of James and John, before their illumination, when they wished (in this same district) to call down fire from

heaven, even as Elias did, on the inhospitable Samaritan village. (Luke 9:51-56) Philip had already been preaching to the poor Samaritans, and John had revisited them, in company with Peter, with feelings wonderfully changed. But Saul knew nothing of the little Church of Samaritan Christians, or, if he heard of them and delayed among them, he delayed only to injure and oppress. The Syrian city was still the great object before him. And now, when he had passed through Samaria and was entering Galilee, the snowy peak of Mount Hermon, the highest point of Antilibanus, almost as far to the north as Damascus, would come into view. This is that tower of "Lebanon which looketh towards Damascus." (Cant. 7:4) It is already the great landmark of his journey, as he passes through Galilee towards the sea of Tiberias, and the valley of the Jordan.

### Damascus

Leaving now the Sea of Galilee, deep among its hills, as a sanctuary of the holiest thoughts, and imagining the Jordan to be passed, we follow the company of travelers over the barren uplands which stretch in dreary succession along the base of Antilibanus. All around are stony hills and thirsty plains, through which the withered stems of the scanty vegetation hardly penetrate. Over this desert, under the burning sky, the impetuous Saul holds his course, full of the fiery zeal with which Elijah traveled of yore, on his mysterious errand, through the same "wilderness of Damascus." (1 Kings 19:15) "The earth in its length and breadth, and all the deep universe of sky, is steeped in light and heat." When some eminence is gained, the vast horizon is seen stretching on all sides, like the ocean, without a boundary, except where the steep sides of Lebanon interrupt it, as the promontories of a mountainous coast stretch out into a motionless sea. The fiery sun is overhead, and that refreshing view is anxiously looked for, Damascus seen from afar, within the desert circumference, resting, like an island of Paradise, in the green enclosure of its beautiful gardens.

This view is so celebrated, and the history of the place is so illustrious, that we may well be excused if we linger a moment, that we may describe them both. Damascus is the oldest city in the world.<sup>126</sup> Its fame begins with the earliest patriarchs and continues to modern times. While other cities of the East have risen and decayed, Damascus is still what it was. It was founded before Baalbek and Palmyra, and it has outlived them both. While Babylon is a heap in the desert, and Tyre a ruin on the shore, it remains what is called in the prophecies of Isaiah, "the head of Syria." (Isa. 7:8) Abraham's steward was Eliezer of Damascus (Gen. 15:2), and the limit of his warlike expedition in the rescue of Lot was "Hobah, which is on the left hand of Damascus." (Gen. 14:15) How important a place it was in the flourishing period of the Jewish monarchy we know from the garrisons which David placed there (2 Sam. 8:6; 1 Chron. 18:6), and from the opposition it presented to Solomon (1 Kings 11:24). The history of Naaman and the Hebrew captive, Elisha and Gehazi, and of the proud preference of its fresh rivers to the thirsty waters of Israel, are familiar to everyone.

And how close its relations continued to be with the Jews, we know from the chronicles of Jeroboam and Ahaz and the prophecies of Isaiah and Amos.<sup>127</sup> Its mercantile greatness is indicated by Ezekiel in the remarkable words addressed to Tyre, "Syria was thy merchant by reason of the multitude of the wares of thy making; they occupied in this fairs with emeralds, purple, and broided work, and fine linen, and coral, and agate. Damascus was thy merchant in the multitude of the wares of thy making, for the multitude of all riches, in the wine of Helbon, and white wool." (Eze. 27:16,18) Leaving the Jewish annals, we might follow its history through continuous centuries, from the time when Alexander sent Parmenio to

<sup>126</sup> Josephus makes it even older than Abraham. (Antiquities, I.6.3)

<sup>127</sup> See 2 Kings 14:28; 16:9,10; 2 Chron. 24:23; 28:5,23; Isa. 7:8; Amos 1:3,5.

take it, while the conqueror himself was marching from Tarsus to Tyre, to its occupation by Pompey,<sup>128</sup> to the letters of Julian the Apostate, who describes it as "the eye of the East," and onward through its golden days, when it was the residence of the Ommiad Caliphs, and the metropolis of the Mahommedan world, and through the period when its fame was mingled with that of Saladin and Tamarlane, to our own days, when the praise of its beauty is celebrated by every traveler from Europe. It is evident, to use the words of Lamartine, that, like Constantinople, it was a "predestinated capital." Nor is it difficult to explain why its freshness has never faded through all the series of vicissitudes and wars.

Among the rocks and brushwood at the base of Antilibanus are the fountains of a copious and perennial stream, which, after running a course of no great distance to the southeast, loses itself in a desert lake. But before it reaches this dreary boundary it has distributed its channels over the intermediate space and left a wide area behind it rich with prolific vegetation. These are the "streams from Lebanon" which are known to us in the imagery of Scripture (Cant. 4:15); the "rivers of Damascus," which Naaman not unnaturally preferred to all the "waters of Israel." (2 Kings 5:12) By Greek writers the stream is called Chrysorrhoeas, or the "river of gold." And this stream is the inestimable unexhausted treasure of Damascus, The habitations of men must always have been gathered around it, as the Nile has inevitably attracted an immemorial population to its banks. The desert is a fortification round Damascus. The river is its life. It is drawn out into watercourses, and spread in all directions. For miles around it is a wilderness of gardens, gardens with roses among the tangled

<sup>128</sup> Its relative importance was not so great when it was under a Western power like that of the Seleucids or the Romans; hence we find it less frequently mentioned than we might expect in Greek and Roman writers. This arose from the building of Antioch and other cities in northern Syria.

shrubberies and with fruit on the branches overhead. Everywhere among the trees the murmur of unseen rivulets is heard. Even in the city, which is in the midst of the garden, the clear rushing of the current is a perpetual refreshment. Every dwelling has its fountain; and at night, when the sun has set behind Mount Lebanon, the lights of the city are seen flashing on the waters.

It is not to be wondered at that the view of Damascus, when the dim outline of the gardens has become distinct, and the city is seen gleaming white in the midst of them, should be universally famous. All travelers in all ages have paused to feast their eyes with the prospect; and the prospect has always been the same. It is true that in the Apostle's day there were no cupolas and no minarets; Justinian had not built St. Sophia, and the caliphs had erected no mosques. But the white buildings of the city gleamed then, as they do now, in the center of a verdant inexhaustible paradise. The Syrian gardens, with their low walls and waterwheels, and careless mixture of fruits and flowers, were the same then as they are now. The same figures would be seen in the green approaches to the town, camels and mules, horses and asses, with Syrian peasants and Arabs from beyond Palmyra. We know the very time of the day when Saul was entering these shady avenues. It was at mid day.<sup>129</sup> The birds were

<sup>129</sup> Acts 22:6; 26:13. Notices of the traditional place where the vision was seen are variously given both by earlier and later travelers. The old writer Quaresmius mentions four theoretical sites: (1) twelve miles south of Damascus, where there is a stream on the right of the road, with the ruins of a church on rising ground; (2) six miles south on the left of the road, where there are traces of a church and stones marked with crosses; (3) two miles south on the same road; (4) half a mile from the city; and this he prefers on the strength of earlier authorities and because it harmonizes best with what is said of the Apostle being led in by the hand. It one of these cases there is an evident blending of the scene of the Conversion and the Escape; and it would appear from Mr. Stanley's letter that this spot is on the east and not the south of the city.

silent in the trees. The hush of noon was in the city. The sun was burning fiercely in the sky. The persecutor's companions were enjoying the cool refreshment of the shade after their journey; and his eyes rested with satisfaction on those walls which were the end of his mission, and contained the victims of his righteous zeal.

### The Narratives of the Miracle

We have been tempted into some prolixity in describing Damascus. But in describing the solemn and miraculous event which took place in its neighborhood, we hesitate to enlarge upon the words of Scripture. And Scripture relates its circumstances in minute detail. If the importance we are intended to attach to particular events in early Christianity is to be measured by the prominence assigned to them in the Sacred Records, we must confess that, next after the Passion of our blessed Lord, the event to which our serious attention is especially called is the conversion of St. Paul. Besides various allusions to it in his own Epistles, three detailed narratives of the occurrence are found in the Acts. Once it is related by St. Luke (ch. 9), twice by the Apostle himself, in his address to his countrymen at Jerusalem (ch. 22), and in his defense before Agrippa at Caesarea (ch. 26). And as when the same thing is told in more than one of the Holy Gospels, the accounts do not verbally agree, so it is here. St. Luke is more brief than St. Paul. And each of St. Paul's statements supplies something not found in the other. The peculiar difference of these two statements, in their relation to the circumstances under which they were given, and as they illustrate the Apostle's wisdom in pleading the cause of the Gospel and reasoning with his opponents, will be made the subject of some remarks in the later chapters of this book. At present it is our natural course simply to gather the facts from the Apostle's own words, with a careful reference to the shorter narrative given by St. Luke.

In the 22<sup>nd</sup> and 26<sup>th</sup> chapters of the Acts we are told that it was "about noon," "at mid day," when the "great light" shone "suddenly" from

heaven (Acts 22:6; 26:13). And those who have had experience of the glare of a midday sun in the East will best understand the description of that light, which is said to have been a "light above the brightness of the sun, shining round about Paul and them that journeyed with him." All fell to the ground in terror (26:14), or stood dumb with amazement (9:7). Suddenly surrounded by a light so terrible and incomprehensible, "they were afraid." "They heard not the voice of Him that spoke to Paul" (22:9), or if they heard a voice, "they saw no man" (9:7).<sup>130</sup> The whole scene was evidently one of the utmost confusion; and the accounts are such as to express, in the most striking manner, the bewilderment and alarm of the travelers.

But while the others were stunned, stupefied, and confused, a clear light broke in terribly on the soul of one of those who were prostrated on the ground.<sup>131</sup> A voice spoke articulately to him which to the rest was a sound mysterious and indistinct. He heard what they did not hear. He saw what they did not see. To them the awful sound was without a meaning; he heard the voice of the Son of God. To them it was a bright light which suddenly surrounded them; he saw Jesus, whom he was persecuting. The awful dialogue can only be given in the language of Scripture. Yet we may reverentially observe that the words which Jesus spoke were "in the

<sup>130</sup> It has been thought both more prudent and more honest to leave these well-known discrepancies explained by different readers, according to their views of the inspiration of Scripture. Those who do not receive the doctrine of verbal inspiration will find in these discrepancies a confirmation of the general truth of the narrative. Those who lay stress on this doctrine may fairly be permitted to suppose that the stupefied companions of Saul fell to the ground and then rose, and that they heard the voice but did not understand it. Dr. Wordsworth and Prof. Hackett point out that the word "stood" in 9:7 need only mean that their progress was arrested.

<sup>131</sup> It is evident from Acts 9:6,8 and 26:16 that Saul was prostrate on the ground when Jesus spoke to him.

Hebrew tongue." The same language,<sup>132</sup> in which during his earthly life He spoke to Peter and to John, to the blind man by the walls of Jericho, to the woman who washed His feet with her tears, the same sacred language was used when He spoke from heaven to His persecutor on earth.

And as on earth He had always spoken in parables, so it was now. That voice which had drawn lessons from the lilies that grew in Galilee, and from the birds that flew over the mountain slopes near the Sea of Tiberias, was now pleased to call His last Apostle with a figure of the like significance: "Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kick against the goad."<sup>133</sup> And as the ox rebels in vain against the goad of its master, and as all its struggles do nought but increase its distress, so is thy rebellion vain against the power of my grace. I have admonished thee by the word of my truth, by the death of my saints, by the voice of thy conscience. Struggle no more against conviction, "lest a worse thing come unto thee."

### The Real Vision of Jesus Christ

It is evident that this revelation was not merely an inward impression made on the mind of Saul during a trance or ecstasy. It was the direct perception of the visible presence of Jesus Christ. This is asserted in various passages, both positively and incidentally. In St. Paul's first letter to the Corinthians, when he contends for the validity of his own apostleship, he argument is "Am I not an Apostle: Have I not seen Jesus Christ the Lord?" (! Cor. 9:1) And

<sup>132</sup> It is only said in one account (26:14) that Jesus Christ spoke in Hebrew. But this appears incidentally in the other accounts from the Hebrew form of the name "Saul" being used where our Lord's own words are given (9:4; 22:8). In the narrative portion (9:1,8, etc.) it is the Greek, a difference which is not noticed in the Authorized Version. So Ananias (whose name is Aramaic) seems to have addressed Saul in Hebrew, not in Greek (9:7; 22:13).

<sup>133</sup> The "prick" of Acts 26:14 is the goad or sharp-pointed pole which in southern Europe and in the Levant is seen in the hands of those who are plowing or driving cattle.

when he adduces the evidence for the truth of the Resurrection, his argument is again, "He was seen ... by Cephas ... by James ... by all the Apostles ... last of all by me ... as one born out of due time." (1 Cor. 15:8) By Cephas and by James at Jerusalem the reality of Saul's conversion was doubted (Acts 9:27); but "Barnabas brought him to the apostles, and related to them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and had spoken with Him." And similarly Ananias had said to him at their first meeting in Damascus, "The Lord hath sent me, even Jesus who appeared to thee in the way as thou camest" (Acts 9:27).

"The God of our fathers hath chosen thee that thou shouldest see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of His mouth." (22:14). The very words which were spoken by the Savior imply the same important truth. He does not say, "I am the Son of God – the Eternal Word – the Lord of men and of angels:" but, "I am Jesus (9:5; 26:15), "Jesus of Nazareth" (22:8) "I am that man who not having seen thou hatest, the despised prophet of Nazareth who was mocked and crucified at Jerusalem, who died and was buried. But now I appear to thee, that thou mayest know the truth of my Resurrection, that I may convince thee of thy sin, and call thee to be my Apostle."

The direct and immediate character of this call, without the intervention of any human agency, is another point on which St. Paul himself, in the course of his apostolic life, laid the utmost stress; and one, therefore, which it is incumbent on us to notice here. "A called apostle," "an Apostle by the will of God," "an Apostle sent not from men, nor by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised Him from the dead:" (Gal. 1:1) these are the phrases by which he describes himself, in the cases where his authority was in danger of being questioned. No human instrumentality intervened to throw the slightest doubt upon the reality of the communication between Christ Himself and the Apostle of the heathen. And as he was directly and miraculously called, so was the work immediately indicated to which he was set

apart, and in which in after years he always gloried, the work of "preaching among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ." (Eph. 3:8; Rom. 11:13; 14:16; Gal. 2:8; 1 Tim. 2:7; 2 Tim. 1:11)

Unless indeed we are to consider the words which he used before Agrippa (Acts 26:15 18) as a condensed statement <sup>134</sup> of all that was revealed to him both in his vision on the way and afterwards by Ananias in the city: "I am Jesus whom thou persecutest; but rise and stand upon thy feet, for to this end I have appeared unto thee, to ordain thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen and of those things wherein I will appear unto thee. And thee have I chosen from the House of Israel and from among the Gentiles unto whom now I send thee, to open their eyes, that they may turn from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God; that they may receive forgiveness of sins and inheritance among the sanctified, by faith in Me."

But the full intimation of all the labors and sufferings that were before him was still reserved. He was told to arise and go into the city, and there it should be told him what it had been ordained that he should do. He arose humbled and subdued and ready to obey whatever might be the will of Him who had spoken to him from heaven. But when he opened his eyes, all was dark around him. The brilliancy of the vision had made him blind. Those who were with him saw, as before, the trees and the sky, and the road leading into Damascus. But he was in darkness, and they led him by hand into the city. Thus came Saul to Damascus; not as he had expected, to triumph in an enterprise on which his soul was set, to brave all difficulties and dangers. to enter into houses and carry off prisoners to Jerusalem; but he passed himself like a prisoner beneath the

<sup>134</sup> It did not fall in with Paul's plan in his speech before Agrippa to mention Ananias, as, in his speech to the Jews at Jerusalem (chapter 22), he avoided any explicit mention of the Gentiles while giving the narrative of his conversion.

gateway and through colonnades of the street called Straight, where he saw not the crowd of those who gazed upon him, he was led by the hands of others, trembling and helpless, to the house of Judas, his dark and solitary lodging.<sup>135</sup>

Three days the blindness continued. Only one other space of three days' duration can be mentioned of equal importance in the history of the world. The conflict of Saul's feelings was so great, and his remorse so piercing and so deep, that during this time he neither ate nor drank (Acts 9:9). He could have no communion with the Christians, for they had been terrified by the news of his approach. And the unconverted Jews could have no true sympathy with his present state of mind. He fasted and prayed in silence. The recollections of his early years, the passages of the ancient Scriptures which he had never understood, the thoughts of his own cruelty and violence, the memory of the last looks of Stephen, all these crowded into his mind and made the three days equal to long years of repentance. And if we may imagine one feeling above all others to have kept possession of his heart, it would be the feeling suggested by Christ's expostulation; "Why persecutest thou me?" (Matt. 25:40,45) This feeling would be attended with thoughts of peace, with hope, and with faith. He waited on God; and in his blindness a vision was granted to him. He seemed to behold one who came in to him, and he knew by revelation that his name was Ananias, and it appeared to him that the stranger laid his hand on him that he might receive his sight (Acts. 9:12).

### Ananias

The economy of visions by which God revealed and accomplished His will is remarkably similar in the case of Ananias and Saul at Damascus,

<sup>135</sup> Recent excavations show that a magnificent street with a threefold colonnade extended from the Western gate to the Eastern, where a Roman triple archway remains. Mr. Porter observes that this arrangement of the street is a counterpart of those of Palmyra and Jerash. We may perhaps add Antioch.

and in that of Peter and Cornelius at Joppa and Caesarea. The simultaneous preparation of the hearts of Ananias and Saul, and the simultaneous preparation of those of Peter and Cornelius, the questioning and hesitation of Peter, and the questioning and hesitation of Ananias, the one doubting whether he might make friendship with the Gentiles, the other doubting whether he might approach the enemy of the church, the unhesitating obedience of each when the Divine will was made clearly known, the state of mind in which both the Pharisee and the Centurion were found, each waiting to see what the Lord would say unto him, this close analogy will not be forgotten by those who reverently read the two consecutive chapters in which the baptism of Saul and the baptism of Cornelius are narrated in the Acts of the Apostles (Acts 9 and 10).

And in another respect there is a close parallelism between the two histories. The same exact topography characterizes them both. In the one case we have the lodging with Simon the Tanner and the house by the sea side (Acts 10:6), in the other we have the house of Judas and the street called Straight (Acts 10:6). And as the shore where the saint by the ocean prayed, is an unchanging feature of Joppa, which will ever be dear to the Christian heart; so are we allowed to bear in mind that the thoroughfares of Eastern cities do not change,<sup>136</sup> and to believe that the Straight Street, which still extends through Damascus in long perspective from the Eastern Gate, is the street where

<sup>136</sup> See Lord Nugent's remarks on the Jerusalem bazaar, in his *Sacred and Classical Lands*, vol. II, pp. 40,41. Quaresmius says that the Straight Street in Damascus is the bazaar, which he describes as a street darkened and covered over, a mile long and as straight as an arrow. He adds that there the *house of Judas* is shown, a commodious dwelling with traces of having been once a church and then a mosque. The *place of baptism*, he says, is a fountain not far off, near the beginning of the street, where a handsome church has been turned into a mosque. He enters also very fully into the description of the traditional *house of Ananias* and gives a ground plan of it.

Ananias spoke to Saul. More than this we do not venture to say. In the first days of the Church, and for some time afterwards, the local knowledge of the Christians at Damascus might be cherished and vividly retained. But now that through long ages Christianity in the East has been weak and degraded, and Mahommedanism strong and tyrannical, we can only say that the spots still shown to travelers as the sites of the house of Ananias, and the house of Judas, and the place of baptism, may possibly be true.

We know nothing concerning Ananias except what we learn from St. Luke or from St. Paul. He was a Jew who had become a disciple of Christ (Acts 9:10), and he was well reputed and held to be "devout according to the Law," among "all the Jews who dwelt at Damascus (Acts 22:12). He is never mentioned by St. Paul in his Epistles; and the later stories respecting his history are unsupported by proof.<sup>137</sup> Though he was not ignorant of the new convert's previous character, it seems evident that he had no personal acquaintance with him, or he would hardly have been described as "one called Saul of Tarsus," lodging in the house of Judas. He was not an Apostle, nor one of the conspicuous members of the Church. And it was not without a deep significance that he who was called to be an Apostle, should be baptized by one of whom the Church knows nothing, except that he was a Christian disciple and had been a devout Jew.

<sup>138</sup>

<sup>137</sup> Tradition says that he was one of the seventy disciples, that he was afterwards Bishop of Damascus, and stoned after many tortures under Licinius (or Lucianus) the governor.

<sup>138</sup> Ananias, as Chrysostom says, was not one of the leading Apostles, because Paul was not to be taught of men. On the other hand, this very circumstance shows the importance attached by God to baptism. Olshausen, after remarking that Paul was made a member of the Church, not by his divine call, but by simple baptism, adds that this baptism of Paul by Ananias did not imply any inferiority or dependence, more than in the case of

### Baptism and First Preaching of Saul

Ananias came into the house where Saul, faint and exhausted with three days' abstinence, still remained in darkness. When he laid his hands on his head, as the vision had foretold, immediately he would be recognized as the messenger of God, even before the words were spoken, "Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight and be filled with the Holy spirit." These words were followed, as were the words of Jesus Himself when He spoke to the blind, with an instantaneous dissipation of darkness; "There fell from his eyes as it had been scales, and receive sight forthwith, (Acts 9:18) or, in his own more vivid expression, "the same hour he looked up on the face of Ananias" (Acts 22:13). It was a face he had never seen before. But the expression of Christian love assured him of reconciliation with God. He learned that "the God of his fathers" had chosen him "to know His will," "to see that Just One," "to hear the voice of His mouth," to be "His witness unto all men." (Acts 22:14,15) He was baptized, and the "rivers of Damascus" became more to him that "all the waters of Judah" (See 2 Kings 5:12) had been. His body was strengthened with food, and his soul was made strong to "suffer great things" for the name of Jesus, and to bear that name "before the Gentiles and kings and the children of Israel." (See Acts 9:15,16)

He began by proclaiming the honor of that name to the children of Israel in Damascus. He was "not disobedient to the heavenly vision" (Acts 26:19), but "straightway preached in the synagogues that Jesus was the Son of God,"<sup>139</sup> and showed unto them that they should repent and turn to God and do works meet for repentance." His Rabbinical and Pharisaic learning was now used to uphold the cause which he came to

our Lord and John the Baptist. Observe the strong expression in Acts 22:16.

<sup>139</sup> Acts 9:20, where "Jesus" and not "Christ" is the true reading. Verse 22 would make this probable, if the authority of the MSS were not decisive.

destroy. The Jews were astounded. They knew that he had been at Jerusalem. They knew why he had come to Damascus. And how they saw him contradicting the whole previous course of his life, and utterly discarding that "commission of the high priests," which had been the authority of his journey. Yet it was evident that his conduct was not the result of a wayward and irregular impulse. His convictions never hesitated; his energy grew continually stronger, as he strove in the synagogues, maintaining the truth against the Jews, and "arguing and proving that Jesus was indeed the Messiah." (Acts 9:22)

The period of his first teaching at Damascus does not seem to have lasted long. Indeed it is evident that his life could not have been safe had he remained. The fury of the Jews when they had recovered from their first surprise must have been excited to the utmost pitch, and they would soon have received a new commission from Jerusalem armed with full powers to supersede and punish one whom they must have regarded as the most faithless of apostates. Saul left the city, but not to return to Jerusalem. Conscious of his divine mission, he never felt that it was necessary to consult "those who were apostles before him, but he went into Arabia, and returned again into Damascus." (Gal. 1:17)

Many questions have been raised concerning Saul's journey into Arabia. The first question relates to the meaning of the word "Arabia." From the time when the word *Arabia* was first used by any of the writers of Greece or Rome, it has always been a term of vague and uncertain import. Sometimes it includes Damascus; sometimes it ranges over the Lebanon itself, and extends even to the borders of Cilicia. The native geographers usually reckon that stony district, of which Petra was the capital, as belonging to Egypt, and that wide desert toward the Euphrates, where the Bedouins of all ages have lived in tents, as belonging to Syria, and have limited the name to the peninsula between the Red Sea and the Persian Gulf, where Yemen, or "Araby the Blest," is

secluded on the south. In the three fold division of Ptolemy, which remains in our popular language when we speak of this still untraveled region, both the first and second of these districts were included under the name of the third. And we must suppose St. Paul to have gone into one of the former, either that which touched Syria and Mesopotamia, or that which touched Palestine and Egypt. If he went into the first, we need not suppose him to have traveled far from Damascus. For though the strong powers of Syria and Mesopotamia might check the Arabian tribes, and retrench the Arabian name in this direction, yet the Gardens of Damascus were on the verge of the desert, and Damascus was almost as much an Arabian as a Syrian town.

And if he went into Petrean Arabia, there still remains the question of his motive for the journey, and his employment when there. Either retiring before the opposition at Damascus, he went to preach the Gospel; and then, in the synagogues of that singular capital, which was built amidst the rocks of Edom,<sup>140</sup> whence Arabians came to the festivals at Jerusalem (Acts 2:11), he testified of Jesus; or he went for the purpose of contemplation and solitary communion with God, to deepen his repentance and fortify his soul with prayer; and then perhaps his steps were turned to those mountain heights by the Red Sea, which Moses and Elijah had trodden before him.

We cannot attempt to decide the question. The views which different inquirers take of it will probably depend on their own tendency to the practical or the ascetic life. On the one hand, it may be argued that such zeal could not be restrained, that Saul could not be silent, but that he would rejoice in carrying into the metropolis of King Aretas the Gospel which his Ethnarch could afterwards hinder at Damascus. (See 2

<sup>140</sup> Strabo, in his description of Petra, says that his friend Athenodorus found great numbers of strangers there. In the same paragraph, after describing the cliffs and peculiar situation, he says that it was distant three or four days' journey from Jericho.

Cor. 11:32) On the other hand it may be said that with such convictions recently worked in his mind, he would yearn for solitude, that a time of austere meditation before the beginning of a great work is in conformity with the economy of God, that we find it quite natural if Paul followed the example of the great lawgiver and the great prophet, and of One greater than Moses and Elijah, who, after His baptism and before His ministry, "returned from Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness." (Luke 4:1)

### Reflections on St. Paul's Conversion

While Saul is in Arabia, preaching the Gospel in obscurity, or preparing for his varied work by the intuition of sacred truth, it seems the natural place for some reflections on the reality and the momentous significance of his conversion. It has already been remarked, in what we have drawn from the statements of Scripture, that he was called directly by Christ without the intervention of any other Apostle, and that the purpose of his call was clearly indicated when Ananias baptized him.

He was an Apostle "not of men, neither by man," (Gal. 1:1) and the divine will was "to work among the Gentiles by his ministry." (Acts 21:19) But the unbeliever may still say that there are other questions of primary importance. He may suggest that this apparent change in the current of Saul's thoughts, and this actual revolution in the manner of his life, was either the contrivance of deep and deliberate imposture, or the result of wild and extravagant fanaticism. Both in ancient and modern times some have been found who have resolved this great occurrence into the promptings of self interest, or have ventured to call it the offspring of delusion.

There is an old story mentioned by Epiphanius, from which it appears that the Ebionites were content to find a motive for the change, in an idle story that he first became a Jew that he might marry the High Priest's daughter, and then became the antagonist of Judaism because

the High Priest deceived him. <sup>141</sup> And there are modern Jews who are satisfied with saying that he changed rapidly from one passion to another, like those impetuous souls who cannot hate or love by halves. Can we then say that St. Paul was simply a fanatic or an impostor? The question has been so well answered in a celebrated English book, <sup>142</sup> that we are content to refer to it.

It will never be possible for anyone to believe St. Paul to have been a mere fanatic, who duly considers his calmness, his wisdom, his prudence, and above all his humility, a virtue which is not less inconsistent with fanaticism than with imposture. And how can we suppose that he was an impostor who changed his religion for selfish purposes? Was he influenced by the ostentation of learning? He suddenly cast aside all that he had been taught by Gamaliel, or acquired through long years of study, and took up the opinions of fishermen of Galilee, whom he scarcely ever seen, and who had never been educated in the schools.

Was it the love of power which prompted the change? He abdicated in a moment the authority which he possessed, for power "over a flock of sheep driven to the slaughter, whose Shepherd himself had been murdered a little before;" and "all he could hope from that power was to be marked out in a particular manner for the same knife, which he had seen so bloodily drawn against them." "Was it the love of wealth? Whatever might be his own worldly possessions at the time, he joined himself to those who were certainly poor, and the prospect before him was that which was actually realized, of ministering to his necessities with the labor of his hands. (Acts

<sup>141</sup> Epiphanius, after telling the story, argues its impossibility from its contradiction to Phil. 3 and 2 Cor. 11. Barnabas, though a Cyprian, was a Levite, and why not Paul a Jew though a Tarsian? And are we to believe, he adds, what Ebion says of Paul, or what Peter says of him (2 Pet. 3)?

<sup>142</sup> Lord Lyttelton's *Observations on the Conversion and Apostleship of St. Paul.*

20:33,34; 1 Cor. 4:12; 1 Thess. 2:9) Was it the love of fame? His prophetic power must have been miraculous if he could look beyond the shame and scorn which then rested on the servants of a crucified Master, to that glory with which Christendom now surrounds the memory of St. Paul.

And if the conversion of St. Paul was not the act of a fanatic or an impostor, then it ought to be considered how much this wonderful occurrence involves. As Lord Lyttleton observes, "the conversion and apostleship of St. Paul alone, duly considered, is of itself a demonstration sufficient to prove Christianity to be a divine revelation." Saul was arrested at the height of his zeal, and in the midst of his fury. In the words of Chrysostom, "Christ, like a skillful physician, healed him when his fever was at the words:" and he proceeds to remark, in the same eloquent sermon, that the truth of Christ's resurrection, and the present power of Him who had been crucified, were shown far more forcibly that they could have been if Paul had been otherwise called. Nor ought we to forget the great religious lessons we are taught to gather from this event. We see the value set by God upon honesty and integrity, when we find that he, "who was before a blasphemer and a persecutor and injurious, obtained mercy because he did it ignorantly in unbelief."<sup>143</sup>

And we learn the encouragement given to all sinners who repent, when we are told that "for this cause he obtained mercy, that in him first Jesus Christ might show forth all longsuffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on Him to life everlasting."<sup>144</sup>

<sup>143</sup> 1 Tim. 1:12. See Luke 12:48; 23:34; Acts 3:17; 1 Cor. 2:8. On the other hand, "unbelieving ignorance: is often mentioned in Scripture as an aggravation of sin: e.g. Eph. 4:18,19; 2 Thess. 1:7,8. A man is deeply wretched who sins through ignorance; and, as Augustine says, Paul in his unconverted state was like a sick man who through madness tries to kill his physician.

<sup>144</sup> A. Monod's *Cinq Discours* on St. Paul (Paris, 1852) were published shortly before the completion of

### Conspiracy of Damascus

We return to the narrative. Saul's time of retirement in Arabia was not of long continuance. He was not destined to be the evangelist of the East. In the Epistle to the Galatians (1:18),<sup>145</sup> the time from his conversion to his final departure from Damascus, is said to have been three years, which, according to the Jewish way of reckoning, may have been three entire years, or only one year with parts of two others. Meantime Saul had "returned to Damascus, preaching boldly in the name of Jesus." (Acts 9:27) The Jews, being no longer able to meet him in controversy, resorted to that which is the last argument of a desperate cause, they resolved to assassinate him. Saul became acquainted with the conspiracy, and all due precautions were taken to evade the danger. But the political circumstances of Damascus at the time made escape very difficult. Either in the course of the hostilities which prevailed along the Syrian frontiers between Herod Antipas and the Romans, on one side, and Aretas, King of Petra, on the other, and possibly in consequence of that absence of Vitellius which was caused by the Emperor's death, the Arabian monarch had made himself master of Damascus, and the Jews, who sympathized with Aretas, were high in the favor of his officer, the Ethnarch.<sup>146</sup>

---

this work. We have much pleasure here in referring to the third of these eloquent and instructive sermons, on the character and results of St. Paul's conversion.

<sup>145</sup> In Acts 9:23, the time is said to have been many days. Dr. Paley has observed in a note on the *Horae Paulinus* a similar instance in the Old Testament (1 Kings 2:38,39) where "many days" is used to denote a space of three years, "And Shimei dwelt at Jerusalem many days; and it came to pass, at the end of three years, that two of the servants of Shimei ran away."

<sup>146</sup> Some have supposed that this Ethnarch was merely an officer who regulated the affairs of the Jews themselves, such as we know to have existed under this title in cities with many Jewish residents. See Josephus *Antiquities* xix, 7,2 and 8,5; *Wars of the Jews*, 11:6,3. Anger imagines that he was an officer of Aretas, accidentally residing in Damascus, who induced the Roman government to aid in the conspiracy of the

Or Tiberius has ceased to reign, and his successor had assigned Damascus to the King of Petra, and the Jews had gained over his officer and his soldiers, as Pilate's soldiers had once been gained over at Jerusalem. St. Paul at least expressly informs us (2 Cor. 11:32) that "the Ethnarch kept watch over the city with a garrison, purposing to apprehend him." St. Luke says (Acts 9:24), that the Jews "watched the city gates day and night, with the intention of killing him." The Jews furnished the motive, the Ethnarch the military force. The anxiety of the disciples was doubtless great, as when Peter was imprisoned by Herod, "and prayer was made without ceasing of the Church unto God for him." (Acts 12:5) Their anxiety became the instrument of his safety. From an unguarded part of the wall,<sup>147</sup> in the darkness of the night,

Jews. Neither hypothesis seems very probable. Schrader suggests that the Ethnarch's wife might be a Jewish proselyte, as we know was the case with a vast number of women of Damascus.

<sup>147</sup> Quaresmius leaves the place in doubt. We conclude our notices of these traditional sites by an extract from a letter received from Rev. A. P. Stanley, shortly before the publication of his *Sinai and Palestine*. "The only spot now pointed out is a few hundred yards from the town walls, on the eastern side of the city, near the traditional scene of the escape over the wall. It is only marked by a mass of cement in the ground, with a hollow underneath, which the Damascus guides represent as a hole in which after his escape the Apostle concealed himself, and this is the only tradition which in the popular mind attaches to the place. All knowledge or imagination of the conversion or of its locality has entirely passed away. But the French monks in the Latin convent maintain that this was the spot in earlier times believed to be the scene of that event, and that the remains of cement and masonry round about are the ruins of a Christian church or chapel built in memorial. It is, if I remember right, the fourth of the four places mentioned by Quaresmius. It is highly improbable that it can be the true place (of the conversion), because there is no reason so believe that the road from Jerusalem should have fetched such a compass as to enter Damascus on the east, instead of on the west or south." Mr. Porter says that it is only within the last century that the scene of the conversion has been transferred, from interested motives, to the east

probably where some overhanging houses, as is usual in Eastern cities, opened upon the outer country, they let him down from a window<sup>148</sup> in a basket. There was something of humiliation in this mode of escape, and this, perhaps, is the reason why, in a letter written fourteen years afterwards, he specifies the details, "glorying in his infirmities" when he is about to speak of "his visions and revelations of the Lord."<sup>149</sup>

### St. Paul's Visit to Jerusalem

Thus already the Apostle had experience of "perils by his own countrymen, and perils in the city." Already in "journeyings often, in weariness and painfulness," (2 Cor. 11:26,27) he began to learn "how great things he was to suffer" for the name of Christ. (Acts 9:16) Preserved from destruction at Damascus, he turned his steps towards Jerusalem. His motive for the journey, as he tells us in the Epistle to the Galatians, was a desire to become acquainted with Peter. (Gal. 1:18) Not that he was ignorant of the true principles of the Gospel. He expressly tells us that he neither needed nor received any instruction in Christianity from those who were "Apostles before him." But he must have heard much from the Christians at Damascus of the Galilean fisherman. Can we wonder that he

from the west side of the city. His plan of Damascus now gives the means of seeing the traditional localities very clearly.

<sup>148</sup> 2 Cor. 11:33. So Rahab let down the spies; and so David escaped from Saul. St. Paul's word is used in the LXX in both instances. The preposition "through" being used both in Acts and 1 Corinthians, it is possible that the most exact explanation is that suggested by Prof. Hackett. He observed at Damascus "windows in the external face of the wall, opening into houses on the inside of the city." (*Commentary on Acts*) In the larger editions is a view of a portion of the wall of modern Damascus, supporting houses which project and face the open country.

<sup>149</sup> 2 Cor. 11:30; 12:1-5. Both Schrader and Wieseler are of opinion that the vision mentioned here is that which he saw at Jerusalem on his return from Damascus (Acts 22:17), and which was naturally associated in his mind with the recollection of his escape.

should desire to see the Chief of the Twelve, the brother with whom now he was consciously united in the bonds of a common apostleship, and who had long on earth been the constant companion of the Lord?

How changed was everything since he had last traveled this road between Damascus and Jerusalem. If, when the day broke, he looked back upon that city from which he had escaped under the shelter of night, as his eye ranged over the fresh gardens and the wide desert, how the remembrance of that first terrible vision would call forth a deep thanksgiving to Him, who had called him to be a "partaker of His sufferings." (1 Pet. 4:13) And what feelings must have attended his approach to Jerusalem. "He was returning to it from a spiritual, as Ezra had from a bodily, captivity, and to his renewed mind all things appeared new. What an emotion smote his heart at the first distant view of the Temple, that house of sacrifice, that edifice of prophecy. Its sacrifices had been realized, the Lamb of God had been offered, its prophecies had been fulfilled, the Lord had come unto it.

As he approached the gates, he might have trodden the very spot where he had so exultingly assisted in the death of Stephen, and he entered them perfectly content, were it God's will, to be dragged out through them to the same fate. He would feel a peculiar tie of brotherhood to that martyr, for he could not be now ignorant that the same Jesus who in such glory had called him, had but a little while before appeared in the same glory to assure the expiring Stephen. The ecstatic look and words of the dying saint now came fresh upon his memory with their real meaning. When he entered into the city, what deep thoughts were suggested by the haunts of his youth, and by the sight of the spots where he had so eagerly sought that knowledge which he had now so eagerly abandoned. What an intolerable burden he had cast off, He felt as a glorified spirit may be supposed to feel on revisiting the scenes of its fleshly sojourn.

Yet not without grief and awe could he look upon that city of his forefathers, over which he

now knew that the judgment of God was impending. And not without sad emotions could one of so tender a nature think of the alienation of those who had once been his warmest associates. The grief of Gamaliel, the indignation of the Pharisees, the fury of the Hellenistic synagogues, all this, he knew, was before him. The sanguine hopes, however, springing from his own honest convictions, and his fervent zeal to communicate the truth to others, predominated in his mind. He thought that they would believe as he believed. He argues thus with himself, that they well knew that he had "imprisoned and beaten in every synagogue them that believed in Jesus Christ," and that "when the blood of His martyr Stephen was shed, he also was standing by and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him," (Acts 22:17-21) and that when they saw the change which had been produced in him, and heard the miraculous history he could tell them, they would not refuse to "receive his testimony."

Thus, with fervent zeal, and sanguine expectation, "he attempted to join himself to the disciples of Christ." (Acts 9:26) But, as the Jews hated him, so the Christians suspected him. His escape had been too hurried to allow of his bringing "letters of commendation." Whatever distant rumor might have reached them of an apparition on his journey, of his conduct at Damascus, of his retirement in Arabia, they could not believe that he was really a disciple. And then it was that Barnabas, already known to us as a generous contributor of his wealth to the poor, (Acts 4:36) came forward again as the Son of Consolation, took him by the hand and brought him to the Apostles. (Acts 9:27) It is probable that Barnabas and Saul were acquainted with each other before. Cyprus is within a few hours' sail from Cilicia. The schools of Tarsus may naturally have attracted one who, though a Levite, was a Hellenist; and there the friendship may have begun which lasted through many vicissitudes until it was rudely interrupted in the dispute at Antioch. (Acts 15:39) When Barnabas related how the

Lord Jesus Christ had personally appeared to Saul, and had even spoken to him, and how he had boldly maintained the Christian cause in the synagogues of Damascus, then the Apostles laid aside their hesitation. Peter's argument must have been what it was on another occasion, "Forasmuch as God hath given unto the like gift as He did unto me, who am I that I should withstand God?" (Acts 9:17) He and James, the Lord's brother, the only other Apostle who was in Jerusalem at the time, gave to him "the right hands of fellowship." And he was with them, "coming in and going out," more than forgiven for Christ's sake, welcomed and beloved as a friend and a brother.

This first meeting of the fisherman of Bethsaida and the tentmaker of Tarsus, the chosen companion of Jesus on earth and the chosen Pharisee who saw Jesus in the heavens, the Apostle of the circumcision and the Apostle of the Gentiles, is passed over in Scripture in a few words. The divine record does not linger in dramatic description on those passages which a mere human writing would labor to embellish. What took place in the intercourse of these two saints, what was said of Jesus of Nazareth who suffered, died, and was buried, and of Jesus, the glorified Lord, who had risen and ascended and become "head over all things to the Church," what was felt of Christian love and devotion, what was learned, under the Spirit's teaching, of Christian truth, has not been revealed, and cannot be known. The intercourse was full of present comfort and full of great consequences. But it did not last long. Fifteen days passed away and the Apostles were compelled to part. The same zeal which had caused his voice to be heard in the Hellenistic synagogues in the persecution against Stephen now led Saul in the same synagogues to declare fearlessly his adherence to Stephen's cause. The same fury which had caused the murder of Stephen, now brought the murderer of Stephen to the verge of assassination. Once more, as at Damascus, the Jews made a conspiracy to put Saul to death, and once more he was rescued by the anxiety of the brethren. (Acts 9:29,30)

Reluctantly, and not without a direct intimation from on high, he retired from the work of preaching the Gospel in Jerusalem. As he was praying one day in the Temple, it came to pass that he fell into a trance, and in his ecstasy he saw Jesus, who spoke to him and said, "Make haste and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem; for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me." He hesitated to obey the command, his desire to do God's will leading him to struggle against the hindrances of God's providence, and the memory of Stephen which haunted him even in his trance, furnishing him with an argument. But the command was more peremptory than before, "Depart, for I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles." The scene of his apostolic victories was not to be Jerusalem. For the third time it was declared to him that the field of his labors was among the Gentiles. This secret revelation to his soul conspired with the outward difficulties of his situation. The care of God gave the highest sanction to the anxiety of the brethren. And he suffered himself to be withdrawn from the Holy City.

### Saul in Syria and Cilicia

They brought him down to Caesarea by the sea, <sup>150</sup> and from Caesarea they sent him to Tarsus (Acts 9:30). His own expression in the Epistle to the Galatians (1:21) is that he went "into the regions of Syria and Cilicia." From this it has been inferred that he went first from Caesarea to Antioch and then from Antioch to Tarsus. And such a course would have been perfectly natural; for the communication of the city of Caesar and the Herods with the metropolis of

---

<sup>150</sup> Olshausen is certainly mistaken in supposing that Caesarea Philippi is meant. Whenever Caesarea is spoken of absolutely, it always means Caesarea Stratonis. And even if it is assumed that Saul traveled by land through Syria to Tarsus, this would not have been the natural course. It is true enough that this Caesarea is nearer the Syrian frontier than the other; but the physical character of the country is such that the Apostle would naturally go by the other Caesarea, unless indeed he traveled by Damascus to Antioch, which is highly improbable.

Syria, either by sea and the harbor of Seleucia, or by the great coast road through Tyre and Sidon, was easy and frequent. But the supposition is unnecessary. In consequence of the range of Mount Taurus, Cilicia has a greater geographical affinity with Syria than with Asia Minor. Hence it has existed in frequent political combination with it from the time of the old Persian satrapies; and *Syria and Cilicia* appears in history almost as a generic geographical term, the more important district being mentioned first. <sup>151</sup> within the limits of this region Saul's activities were now exercised in studying and teaching at Tarsus, or in founding those Churches <sup>152</sup> which were afterwards greeted in the Apostolic letter from Jerusalem, as the brethren "in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia," and which Paul himself confirmed after his separation from Barnabas, traveling through "Syria and Cilicia."

Whatever might be the extent of his journeys within these limits, we know at least that he was at Tarsus. Once more we find him in the home of his childhood. It is the last time we are distinctly told that he was there. Now at least, if not before, we may be sure that he would come into active intercourse with the heathen philosophers of the place. <sup>153</sup> In his last

<sup>151</sup> This is well illustrated by the hopeless feeling of the Greek soldiers in the Anabasis, when Cyrus had drawn them into Cilicia; by various passages in the history of the Seleucids; by the arrangements of the Romans with Antiochus; by the division of provinces in the later Empire; and by the course of the Mahomedan conquests.

<sup>152</sup> Acts 15:23,41. When we find the existence of Cilician churches mentioned, the obvious inference is that St. Paul founded them during this period.

<sup>153</sup> The passage in Strabo is so important that we give a free translation of it here: "The men of this place are so zealous in the study of philosophy and the whole circle of education, that they surpass both Athens and Alexandria, and every place that could be mentioned, where schools of philosophers are found. And the difference amounts to this. Here, those who are fond of learning are all natives, and strangers do not willingly reside here; and they themselves do not remain, but

residence at Tarsus, a few years before, he was a Jew, and not only a Jew but a Pharisee, and he looked on the Gentiles around him as outcasts from the favor of God. Now he was a Christian, and not only a Christian, but conscious of his mission as the Apostle of the Gentiles. Therefore he would surely meet the philosophers and prepare to argue with them on the own ground, as afterwards in the market at Athens with the Epicureans and the Stoics (Acts 17:17,18).

Many Stoics of Tarsus were men of celebrity in the Roman Empire. Athenodorus, the tutor of Augustus, has already been mentioned. He was probably by this time deceased, and receiving those divine honors, which, as Lucian informs us, were paid to him after his death. The tutor of Tiberius also was a Tarsian and a Stoic. His name was Nestor. He was probably at this time alive; for he lingered to the age of ninety two, and, in all likelihood, survived his wicked pupil, whose death we have recently noticed. Now among these eminent sages and instructors of heathen emperors was one who teaching was destined to survive when the Stoic philosophy should have perished, and whose words still instruct the rulers of every civilized nation. How far Saul's arguments had any success in this quarter we cannot even guess, and we must not anticipate the conversion of Cornelius. At least he was preparing for the future. In the synagogue we cannot believe that he was silent or unsuccessful. In his own family, we may well imagine that some of those Christian kinsmen whose names are handed down to us, possibly his sister, the playmate of his childhood, and his sister's son, who afterwards saved his life, were

finish their education abroad, and gladly take up their residence elsewhere, and few return. Whereas, in the other cities which I have just mentioned, except Alexandria, the contrary takes place: for many come to them and live there willingly; but you will see few of the natives either going abroad for the sake of philosophy, or caring to study it at home. The Alexandrians have both characters; for they receive many strangers, and send out of their own people not a few."

at this time by his exertions gathered into the fold of Christ.

Here this chapter must close, while Saul is in exile from the earthly Jerusalem, but diligently occupied in building up the walls of the "Jerusalem which is above." And it was not without one great and important consequence that that short fortnight had been spent in Jerusalem. He was now known to Peter and James. His vocation was fully ascertained and recognized by the heads of the Judean Christians. It is true that he was yet "unknown by face" to the scattered churches of Judea.<sup>154</sup> But they honored him of whom they had heard so much. And when the news came to them at intervals of all that he was doing for the cause of Christ, they praised God and said, "Behold! He who was once our persecutor is now bearing the glad tidings of that faith which formerly he labored to root out;" and they glorified God in him.

## Chapter 4

### Wider Diffusion of Christianity

Hitherto the history of the Christian church has been confined within Jewish families. We have followed its progress beyond the wall of Jerusalem, but hardly yet beyond the boundaries of Palestine. If any traveler from a distant country has been admitted into the community of believers, the place of his baptism has not been more remote than the desert of Gaza. If any "aliens from the commonwealth of Israel" have been admitted to the citizenship of the spiritual Israelites, they have been "strangers" who dwell among the hills of Samaria. But the time is rapidly

<sup>154</sup> See Gal. 1:21-24. The form of the Greek words seems to imply a continued preaching of the Gospel, the intelligence of which came now and then to Judea. From what follows however ("Then fourteen years afterwards"), St. Paul appears to describe in 1:23,24 the effect produced by the tidings not only of his labors in Tarsus but of his subsequent and more extensive labors as a missionary to the heathen. It should be added that Wieseler thinks he stayed only half a year at Tarsus.

approaching when the knowledge of Christ must spread more rapidly, when those who possess not that Book, which caused perplexity on the road to Ethiopia, will hear and adore His name, and greater strangers than those who drew water from the well of Sychar will come nigh to the Fountain of Life. The same dispersion which gathered in the Samaritans will gather in the Gentiles also. The "middle wall of partition" being utterly broken down, all will be called by the new and glorious name of Christian.

And as we follow the progress of events and find that all movements in the Church begin to have more and more reference to the heathen, we observe that these movements begin to circulate more and more round a new center of activity. Not Jerusalem, but Antioch, not the Holy City of God's ancient people, but the profane city of the Greeks and Romans, is the place to which the student of sacred history is now directed. During the remainder of the Acts of the Apostles our attention is at least divided between Jerusalem and Antioch, until at last, after following St. Paul's many journeys, we come with him to Rome. For some time Constantinople must remain a city of the future, but we are more than once reminded of the greatness of Alexandria:<sup>155</sup> thus even in the life of the Apostle we find prophetic intimations of four of the five great centers of the early Catholic Church.

At present we are occupied with Antioch, and the point before us is that particular moment in the church's history when it was first called Christian. Both the place and the event are remarkable, and the time, if we are able to determine it, is worthy of our attention. Though we are following the course of an individual biography, it is necessary to pause, on critical occasions, to look around on what is passing in the Empire at large. And, happily, we are now arrived at a point where we are able distinctly

<sup>155</sup> See Acts 6:9 (with 2:10), 27:6; 28:11; and compare Acts 18:24; 19:1, with 1 Cor. 1:12; 3:4-6; Tit. 3:13.

to see the path of the Apostle's life intersecting the general history of the period. A few such remarks, made once for all, may justify what has gone before, and prepare the way for subsequent chapters.

### Chronology of the Acts

Some readers may be surprised that up to this point we have made no attempts to ascertain or to state exact chronological details. But theologians are well aware of the difficulties with which such inquired are attended, in the beginnings of St. Paul's biography. The early chapters of Acts are like the narratives in the Gospels. It is often hardly possible to learn how far the events related were contemporary or consecutive. We should endeavor in vain to determine the relations of time which subsist between Paul's retirement into Arabia and Peter's visit to the converted Samaritans,<sup>156</sup> or between the journey of one apostle from Joppa to Caesarea and the journey of the other from Jerusalem to Tarsus. Still less have we sufficient data for pronouncing upon the absolute chronology of the earliest transactions in the Church. No one can tell what particular folly or crime was engaging Caligula's attention when Paul was first made a Christian at Damascus. No one can tell on what work of love the Christians were occupied when the Emperor was inaugurating his bridge at Puteoli,<sup>157</sup> or exhibiting his fantastic pride on the shores of the British sea.<sup>158</sup>

In a work of this kind it is better to place the events of the Apostle's life in the broad light case by the leading features of the period than to attempt to illustrate them by the help of dates, which after all can only be conjectural. Thus we have been content to say that he was born in the strongest and most flourishing period of the

<sup>156</sup> Acts 8 and 9, with Gal. 1

<sup>157</sup> Where St. Paul afterwards landed, Acts 28:13.

<sup>158</sup> Herod was with Caligula in this progress. The emperor's triumph had no more meaning than Napoleon's column at Boulogne; but in the next reign Britain was really conquered.

reign of Augustus, and that he was converted from the religion of the Pharisees about the time when Caligula succeeded Tiberius. But soon after we enter on the reign of Claudius we encounter a coincidence which arrests our attention. We must first take a rapid glance at the reign of his predecessor. Though the cruelty of that reign stung the Jews in every part of the empire, and produced an indignation which never subsided, one short paragraph will be enough for all that need be said concerning that abominable tyrant.

In the early part of the year 37 Tiberius died, and at the close of the same year Nero was born. Between the reigns of these two emperors are those of Caligula and Claudius. The four years during which Caligula sat on the throne of the world were miserable for all the provinces, both in the west and in the east. In Gaul his insults were aggravated by his personal presence. In Syria his caprices were felt more remotely, but not less keenly. The changes of administration were rapid and various. In the year 36, the two great actors in the crime of the crucifixion had disappeared from the public places of Judea. Pontius Pilate<sup>159</sup> had been dismissed by Vitellius to Rome, and Marcellus sent to govern in his stead. Caiaphas had been deposed by the same secular authority and succeeded by Jonathan.

Now, in the year 37, Vitellius was recalled from Syria, and Petronius came to occupy the governor's residence at Antioch. Marcellus at Caesarea made way for Marullus; and Theophilus was appointed high priest at Jerusalem in place of his brother Jonathan. Agrippa, the grandson of Herod the Great, was brought out of the prison where Tiberius had confined him, and Caligula gave a royal crown,<sup>160</sup> with the tetrarchies of two of his uncles, to the

<sup>159</sup> He did not arrive at Rome until after the death of Tiberius. Like his predecessor, he had governed Judea during ten or eleven years, the emperor having a great dislike for frequent changes in the provinces.

<sup>160</sup> Tiberius had imprisoned him because of a conversation overheard by a slave when Caligula and

frivolous friend of his youth. And as this reign began with restless change, so it ended in cruelty and impiety. The emperor, in the career of his blasphemous arrogance, attempted to force the Jews to worship him as God.<sup>161</sup> One universal feeling of horror pervaded the scattered Israelites, who, though they had scorned the Messiah promised to their fathers, were unable to degrade themselves by a return to idolatry. Petronius, who foresaw what the struggle must be, wrote letters of expostulation to his master, Agrippa, who was then in Italy, implored his patron to pause in what he did. An embassy was sent from Alexandria, and the venerable and learned Philo<sup>162</sup> was himself commissioned to state the inexorable requirements of the Jewish religion. Everything appeared to be hopeless, when the murder of Caligula, on the 24<sup>th</sup> of January in the year 41, gave a sudden relief to the persecuted people.

### Claudius and Herod Agrippa I

With the accession of Claudius (AD 41) the Holy Land had a king once more. Judea was added to the tetrarchies of Philip and Antipas, and Herod Agrippa I ruled over the wide territory which had been governed by his grandfather. With the alleviation of the distress of the Jews, proportionate suffering came upon the Christians. The "rest" which, in the distractions of Caligula's reign, the churches had "enjoyed throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria," was now at an end. "About this time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of

---

Herod Agrippa were together in a carriage. Agrippa was much at Rome both at the beginning and end of Caligula's reign.

<sup>161</sup> It appears from Dio Cassius and Suetonius that this was part of a general system for extending the worship of himself through the empire.

<sup>162</sup> Philo's account of this embassy is, next after Josephus, the most important writing of the period for throwing light on the condition of the Jews in Caligula's reign. The Jewish envoys had their interview with the emperor at Puteoli, in the autumn of the same year (40 AD) in which he had made his progress through Gaul to the shore of the ocean.

the church." He slew one Apostle, and "because he saw it pleased the Jews," he proceeded to imprison another. But he was not long spared to seek popularity among the Jews or to murder and oppress the Christians. In the year 44 he perished by that sudden and dreadful death which is recorded in detail by Josephus and St. Luke.<sup>163</sup> In close coincidence with this event we have the mention of a certain journey of St. Paul to Jerusalem. Here, then, we have one of those lines of intersection between the sacred history and the general history of the world, on which the attention of intelligent Christians ought to be fixed. This year, 44 AD, and another year, the year 60 AD (in which Felix ceased to be governor of Judea, and, leaving St. Paul bound at Caesarea, was succeeded by Festus), are the two chronological pivots of the apostolic history.<sup>164</sup> By help of them we find its exact place in the wider history of the world. Between these two limits the greater part of what we are told of St. Paul is situated and included.

Using the year 44 as a starting point for the future, we gain a new light for tracing the apostle's steps. It is evident that we have only to ascertain the successive intervals of his life, in order to see him at every point, in his connection with the transactions of the Empire. We shall observe this often as we proceed. At present it is more important to remark that the

---

<sup>163</sup> Josephus, *Antiquities*, xix:8; Acts 12. The proof that his death took place in 44 may be seen in Anger and Wieseler; and indeed it is hardly doubted by any. A coincident and corroborative proof of the time of St. Paul's journey to Jerusalem, is afforded by the mention of the Famine, which is doubtless that recorded by Josephus. Anger has shown that this famine must be assigned to the interval between 44 and 47; and Wieseler has fixed it more closely to the year 45.

<sup>164</sup> It ought to be stated that the latter date cannot be established by the same exact proof as the former; but, as a political fact, it must always be a cardinal point of reference in any system of Scripture chronology. Anger and Wieseler, by a careful induction of particulars, have made it highly probable that Festus succeeded Felix in the year 60. More will be said on this subject when we come to Acts 24:27.

same date throws some light on that earlier part of the Apostle's path which is confessedly obscure. Reckoning backwards, we remember that "three years" intervened between his conversion and return to Jerusalem. (Gal 1:18) Those who assign the former event to 39 or 40, and those who fix on 37 or some earlier year, differ as to the length of time he spent at Tarsus, or in "Syria and Cilicia."<sup>165</sup> All that we can say with certainty is that St. Paul was converted more than three years before the year 44. The date thus important for all students of Bible chronology is worthy of special regard by the Christians of Britain. For in that year the Emperor Claudius returned from the shores of this island to the metropolis of his empire. He came here in command of a military expedition, to complete the work which the landing of Caesar, a century before, had begun, or at least predicted.<sup>166</sup> When Claudius was in Britain its inhabitants were not Christian. They could hardly in any sense be said to have been civilized. He came, as he thought, to add a barbarous province to his already gigantic empire; but he really came to prepare the way for the silent progress of the Christian church. His troops were the instruments of bringing among our barbarous ancestors those charities which were just then beginning to display themselves in Antioch and Jerusalem. (See Acts 11:22,24, 27 30) A "new name" was faintly rising on the Syrian shore which was destined to spread like the cloud seen by the Prophet's servant from the brow of Mt. Carmel. A better civilization, a better citizenship, than

<sup>165</sup> Acts 9:30; Gal. 1:21. Wieseler, with Schrader, thinks that he stayed at Tarsus only half a year or a year; Anger, that he was there two years, between 41 and 43; Hensen, that he spent there the years 40, 41, and 42. Among the English writers, Bishop Pearson imagines that great part of the interval after 39 was passed in Syria; Burton, who places the conversion very early, is forced to allow nine or ten years for the time spent in Syria and Cilicia.

<sup>166</sup> It may be gathered from Dio Cassius that the Emperor left Rome in July 34 and returned in January 45.

that of the Roman Empire, was preparing for us and for many. One Apostle at Tarsus was waiting for his call to proclaim the Gospel of Christ to the Gentiles. Another Apostle at Joppa was receiving a divine intimation that "God is no respecter of persons, but that in every nation he that fears Him and works righteousness, is accepted with Him." (Acts 9:34,35)

### Conversion of the Gentiles

If we could ascertain the exact chronological arrangement of these passages of Apostolical history, great light would be thrown on the circumstantial details of the admission of Gentiles to the Church, and on the growth of the Church's conviction on this momentous subject. We should then be able to form some idea of the meaning and results of the fortnight spent by Paul and Peter together at Jerusalem. But it is not permitted to us to know the manner and degree in which the different Apostles were illuminated. We have not been informed whether Paul ever felt the difficulty of Peter, whether he knew from the first the full significance of his call, whether he learned the truth by visions or by the gradual workings of his mind under the teaching of the Holy Spirit.<sup>167</sup> All we can confidently assert is that he did not learn from St. Peter the mystery "which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men as it was not revealed unto God's holy apostles by the Spirit; that the Gentiles should be fellow heirs and of the same body and partakers of His promise in Christ by the Gospel." (Eph. 3:4 6)

If St. Paul was converted in 39 or 40, and if the above mentioned rest of the churches was in the last years of Caligula (39 41), and if this rest was the occasion of that journey to Lydda and Joppa which ultimately brought St. Peter to Caesarea, then it is evident that St. Paul was at

<sup>167</sup> The questions touched on here, as to when the complete truth of Christ was communicated to St. Paul, evidently opens a wide field for speculation. It is well treated by Dr. Davidson, who believes that the full disclosures of the Gospel were made to him in Arabia.

Damascus or in Arabia when Cornelius was baptized. Paul was summoned to evangelize the heathen, and Peter begin the work, almost simultaneously. The great transaction of admitting the Gentiles to the Church was already accomplished when the two apostles met at Jerusalem. St. Paul would thus learn that the door had been opened for him by the hand of another; and when he went to Tarsus, the later agreement (Gal. 2:9) might then have been partially adopted, that he should "go to the heather,": while Peter remained as the apostle of the Circumcision.

If we are to bring down the conversion of Cornelius nearer to the year 44, and to place it in that interval of time which St. Paul spent at Tarsus, then it is natural to suppose that his conversations prepared Peter's mind for the change which was at hand, and sowed the seeds of that revolution of opinion, of which the vision at Joppa was the crisis and completion. Paul might learn from Peter (as possibly also from Barnabas) many of the details of our blessed Savior's life. And Peter, meanwhile, might gather from Paul some of those higher views concerning the gospel which prepared him for the miracles which he afterwards saw in the household of the Roman centurion. whatever might be the obscurity of St. Paul's early knowledge, whether it was revealed to him or not that the Gentile converts would be called to overleap the ceremonies of Judaism on the entrance into the Church of Christ, he could not fail to have a clear understanding that his own work was to lie among the Gentiles. This had been announced to him at his first conversion (Acts 27:17,18), in the words of Ananias (Acts 9:15); and in the vision preceding his retirement to Tarsus (Acts 22:21), the words which commanded him to go were, "Depart, for I will send thee far hence to the Gentiles."

In considering, then, the conversion of Cornelius to have happened after this journey from Jerusalem to Tarsus, and before the mission of Barnabas to Antioch, we are adopting the opinion most in accordance with the independent standing point occupied by St.

Paul. And this, moreover, is the view which harmonizes best with the narrative of Scripture, where the order ought to be reverently regarded as well as the words. In the order of Scripture narration, if it cannot be proved that the preaching of Peter at Caesarea was chronologically earlier than the preaching of Paul at Antioch, it is at least brought before us theologically, as the beginning of the Gospel made known to the heathen. When an important change is at hand, God usually causes a silent preparation in the minds of men, and some great fact occurs which may be taken as a type and symbol of the general movement. Such a fact was the conversion of Cornelius, and so we must consider it.

The whole transaction is related and reiterated with so much minuteness (Acts 10:1 to 11:19) that if we were writing a history of the Church, we should be required to dwell upon it at length. But here we have only to do with it as the point of union between Jews and Gentiles, and as the bright starting point of St. Paul's career. A few words may be allowed which are suggested by this view of the transaction as a typical fact in the progress of God's dispensations. The two men to whom the revelations were made, and even the places where the divine interferences occurred, were characteristic of the event. Cornelius was in Caesarea, and St. Peter in Joppa, the Roman soldier in the modern city, which was built and named in the Emperor's honor, the Jewish apostle in the ancient sea port which associates its name with the early passages of Hebrew history, with the voyage of Jonah, the building of the temple, the wars of the Maccabees.<sup>168</sup> All the splendor of Caesarea, its buildings and its ships, and the Temple of Rome and the Emperor, which the sailors saw far out to sea, all has long since vanished. Herod's magnificent city is a wreck upon the shore. A few ruins are all that remain of the harbor. Joppa lingers on,

<sup>168</sup> Jonah 1:3; 2 Chr. 2:16. See Josh. 19:46; Ezra 3:7; and various passages in the Apochrypha, 1 Esdr. v 55; 1 Macc. 10:75; 14:5; 2 Macc. 12:3.

like the Jewish people, dejected but not destroyed. Caesarea has perished, like the Roman Empire which called it into existence.

And no men could well be more contrasted with each other than those two men, in whom the heathen and Jewish worlds met and were reconciled. We know what Peter was, a Galilean fisherman, brought up in the rudest district of an obscure province, with no learning but such as he might have gathered in the synagogue of his native town. All his early days he had dragged his nets in the lake of Gennesareth. And now he was at Joppa, lodging in the house of Simon the tanner, the apostle of a religion that was to change the world. Cornelius was an officer in the Roman army. No name was more honorable at Rome than that of the Cornelius House. It was the name borne by the Scipios, and by Sulla, and the mother of the Gracchi. In the Roman army, as in the army of modern Austria, the soldiers were drawn from different countries and spoke different languages. Along the coast of which we are speaking, many of them were recruited from Syria and Judea. But the corps to which Cornelius belonged seems to have been a cohort of Italians separate from the legionary soldiers, and hence called the "Italian Cohort." He was no doubt a true born Italian. Educated in Rome or some provincial town, he had entered upon a soldier's life, dreaming perhaps of military glory, but dreaming as little of that better glory which now surrounds the Cornelian name, as Peter dreamed at the lake of Gennesareth of becoming the chosen companion of the Messiah of Israel, and of throwing open the doors of the church to the dwellers in Asia and Africa, to the barbarians on the remote and unvisited shores of Europe, and to the undiscovered countries of the West.

### Mission of Barnabas

But to return to our proper narrative. When intelligence came to Jerusalem that Peter had broken through the restraints of the Jewish Law and had even eaten at the table of the Gentiles (Acts 11:3), there was general surprise and displeasure among "those of the circumcision." But when he explained to them all the

transaction, they approved his conduct, and praised God for His mercy to the heathen (Acts 11:18). And soon news came from a greater distance which showed that the same unexpected change was operating more widely. We have seen that the persecution in which Stephen was killed resulted in a general dispersion of the Christians. Wherever they went they spoke to their Jewish brethren of their faith that the promises had been fulfilled in the life and resurrection of Jesus Christ. This dispersion and preaching of the Gospel extended even to the island of Cyprus, and along the Phoenician coast as far as Antioch. For some time the glad tidings were made known only to the scattered children of Israel. But at length some of the Hellenistic Jews, natives of Cyprus and Cyrene, spoke to the Greeks<sup>169</sup> themselves at Antioch, and the divine Spirit gave such power to the Word that a vast number "believed and turned to the Lord." The news was not long in traveling to Jerusalem. Perhaps some message was sent in haste to the Apostles of the Church. The Jewish Christians in Antioch might be perplexed how to deal with the new Gentile converts, and it is not unnatural to suppose that the presence of Barnabas might be anxiously desired by the fellow missionaries of his native island.

We ought to observe the honorable place which the island of Cyprus was permitted to occupy in the first work of Christianity. We shall soon trace the footsteps of the Apostle to the Heathen in the beginning of his travels over the length of this island and see here the first

---

<sup>169</sup> Acts 11:20. We are strongly of opinion that the correct reading here is not "Grecians" (AV), but "Greeks," probably in the sense of proselytes of the Gate. Thus they were in the same position as Cornelius. It has been doubted which case was prior in point of time. Some are of opinion that the events at Antioch took place first. Others believe that those who spoke to the Greeks at Antioch had previously heard of the conversion of Cornelius. There seems no objection to supposing the two cases nearly simultaneous, that of Cornelius being the great typical transaction on which our attention is to be fixed.

earthly potentate converted and linking his name forever with that of St. Paul (Acts 13:6-9). Now, while Saul is yet at Tarsus, men of Cyprus are made the instruments of awakening the Gentiles, one of them might be that "Mnason of Cyprus" who afterwards was his host at Jerusalem (Acts 21:16), and Joses the Levite of Cyprus, whom the apostles had long ago called "the Son of Consolation" and who had removed all the prejudice which looked suspiciously on Saul's conversion (Acts 9:27), is the first teacher sent by the mother church to the new disciples at Antioch. "He was a good man and full of the Holy spirit and of faith." He rejoiced when he saw what God's grace was doing, he exhorted<sup>170</sup> all to cling fast to the Savior whom they had found, and he labored himself with abundant success. But feeling the greatness of the work and remembering the zeal and strong character of his friend, whose vocation to this particular task of instructing the heathen was doubtless well known to him, "he departed to Tarsus to seek Saul."

Whatever length of time had elapsed since Saul came from Jerusalem to Tarsus, and however that time had been employed by him, whether he had already founded any of those churches in his native Cilicia, which we read of soon after (Acts 15:41), whether he had there undergone any of those manifold labors and sufferings recorded by himself (2 Cor. 11) but omitted by St. Luke, whether by active intercourse with the Gentiles, by study of their literature, by traveling, by discoursing with the philosophers, he had been making himself acquainted with their opinions and their prejudices, and so preparing his mind for the work that was before him, or whether he had been waiting in silence for the call of God's providence, praying for guidance from above, reflecting on the condition of the Gentiles, and gazing more and more closely on the plan of the world's redemption, however this may be, it must have

<sup>170</sup> Acts 11:23. The "Son of Consolation" of Acts 4:36, ought rather to be translated "Son of Exhortation" or "Son of Prophecy."

been an eventful day when Barnabas, having come across the sea from Seleucia, or round by the defiles of Mount Amanus, suddenly appeared in the streets of Tarsus. The last time the two friends had met was in Jerusalem. All that they then hoped, and probably more than they then thought possible, had occurred. "God had granted to the Gentiles repentance unto life". (Acts. 9:18) Barnabas had "seen the grace of God" (9:23) with his own eyes at Antioch, and under his own teaching "a great multitude" (9:24) had been added to the Lord. But he needed assistance. He needed the presence of one whose wisdom was higher than his own, whose zeal was an example to all, and whose peculiar mission had been miraculously declared. Saul recognized the voice of God in the words of Barnabas, and the two friends traveled in all haste to the Syrian metropolis.

### The Name "Christian"

There they continued "a whole year" actively prosecuting the sacred work, teaching and confirming those who joined themselves to the assemblies of the ever increasing church. As new converts in vast numbers came in from the ranks of the Gentiles, the church began to lose its ancient appearance of a Jewish sect and to stand out in relief, as a great self existing community, in the face both of Jews and Gentiles. Hitherto it had been possible, and even natural, that the Christians should be considered, by the Jews themselves, and by the heathen whose notice they attracted, as only one among the many theological parties which prevailed in Jerusalem and in the dispersion. But when Gentiles began to listen to what was preached concerning Christ, when they were united as brethren on equal terms and admitted to baptism without the necessity of previous circumcision, when the Mosaic features of this society were lost in the wider character of the New Covenant, then it became evident that these men were something more than the Pharisees or Sadducees, the Essenes of Herodians, or any sect or part among the Jews. Thus a new term in the vocabulary of the human race came into existence at Antioch

about the year 44. Thus Jews and Gentiles who, under the teaching of St. Paul, believed that Jesus of Nazareth was the Savior of the world, "were first called Christians."

It is not likely that they received this name from the Jews. The "Children of Abraham" employed a term much more expressive of hatred and contempt. They called them "the sect of the Nazarenes." (Acts 25:5) These disciples of Jesus traced their origin to Nazareth in Galilee, and it was a proverb that nothing good could come from Nazareth (John 1:46; see John 7:41,52; Luke 13:2). Besides this there was a further reason why the Jews would not have called the disciples of Jesus by the name of "Christian." The word "Christ" has the same meaning with "Messiah," and the Jews, however blinded and prejudices on this subject, would never have used so sacred a word to point an expression of mockery and derision, and they could not have used it in grace and serious earnest to designate those whom they held to be the followers of a false Messiah, a fictitious Christ.

Nor is it likely that the Christians gave this name to themselves. In the Acts of the Apostles, and in their own letters, we find them designating themselves as "brethren," "disciples," "believers," "saints." (Acts 15:23; 9:26; 5:14; 9:32; Rom. 15:25; Col. 1:2) Only in two places (Acts 26:28 and 1 Pet. 4:6) do we find the term "Christians," and in both instances it is implied to be a term used by those who are without. There is little doubt that the name originated with the Gentiles, who began now to see that this new sect was so far distinct from the Jews that they might naturally receive a new designation. And the form of the word implies that it came from the Romans,<sup>171</sup> not from the Greeks. The word "Christ" was often in the conversation of the believers, as we know it

<sup>171</sup> So we read, in the Civil Wars, of "Marians" and "Pompeians," for the partisans of Marius and Pompey; and, under the Empire, of "Othonians" and "Vitellians" for the partisans of Otho and Vitellius. The word "Herodians" (Matt. 22:16; Mark 3:6; 12:13) is formed exactly in the same way.

to have been constantly in their letters. "Christ" was the title of Him whom they avowed as their leader and their chief. They confessed that this Christ had been crucified, but they asserted that He was risen from the dead and that He guided them by His invisible power. Thus "Christian" was the name which naturally found its place in the reproachful language of their enemies.<sup>172</sup>

In the first instance, we have every reason to believe that it was a term of ridicule and derision. And it is remarkable that the people of Antioch were notorious for inventing names of derision and for turning their wit into the channels of ridicule.<sup>173</sup> In every way there is something very significant in the place where we first received the name we bear. Not in Jerusalem, this city of the Old Covenant, the city of the people who were chosen to the exclusion of all others, but in a heathen city, the Eastern center of Greek fashion and Roman luxury, and not until it was shown that the New Covenant was inclusive of all others, then and there we were first called Christians, and the church received from the world its true and honorable name.

### Description of Antioch

In narrating the journeys of St. Paul, it will now be our duty to speak of Antioch, not Jerusalem, as his point of departure and return. Let us look, more closely than has hitherto been necessary, at its character, its history, and its

<sup>172</sup> It is a Latin derivative from the Greek term for the Messiah of the Jews. It is connected with the office, not the name, of our Savior, which harmonizes with the important fact that in the Epistles He is usually called not "Jesus" but "Christ." The word "Jesuit" (which, by the way, is rather Greek than Latin) did not come into the vocabulary of the church until after the lapse of 1500 years. It is not a little remarkable that the word "Jesuit" is a proverbial term of reproach, even in Roman Catholic countries, while the word "Christian" is used so proverbially for all that is good that it has been applied to benevolent actions in which Jews have participated.

<sup>173</sup> Apollonius of Tyana was driven out of the city by their insults, and sailed away (like St. Paul) from Seleucia to Cyprus, where he visited Paphos.

appearance. The position which it occupied near the abrupt angle formed by the coasts of Syria and Asia Minor, and in the opening where the Orontes passes between the ranges of Lebanon and Taurus, has already been noticed. And we have mentioned the numerous colony of Jews which Seleucus introduced into his capital and raise to an equality of civil rights with the Greeks. There was everything in the situation and circumstances of this city to make it a place of concourse for all classes and kinds of people. By its harbor of Seleucia it was in communication with all the trade of the Mediterranean, and through the open country behind the Lebanon, it was conveniently approached by caravans from Mesopotamia and Arabia. It united the inland advantages of Aleppo with the maritime opportunities of Smyrna. It was almost an oriental Rome, in which all the forms of the civilized life of the Empire found some representative. Through the first two centuries of the Christian era, it was what Constantinople became afterwards, "the Gate of the East." And indeed the glory of the city of Ignatius was only gradually eclipsed by that of the city of Chrysostom. That great preacher and commentator himself, who knew them both by familiar residence, always speaks of Antioch with peculiar reverence, as the patriarchal city of the Christian name. <sup>174</sup>

There is something curiously prophetic in the stories which are told of the first founding of this city. Like Romulus on the Palatine, Seleucus is said to have watched the flight of birds from the summit of Mount Casius. An eagle took a fragment of the flesh of his sacrifice and carried it to a point on the seashore a little to the north of the mouth of the Orontes. There he founded a city and called it Seleucia, after his own name. this was on the 23<sup>rd</sup> of April. Again, on the 1<sup>st</sup> of May, he sacrificed on the hill Silpius, and then

<sup>174</sup> In his homilies on St. Matthew he tells the people of Antioch that though they boasted of their city's preeminence in having first enjoyed the Christian name, they were willing enough to be surpassed in Christian virtue by more homely cities.

repeated the ceremony and watched the auguries at the city of Antigonía, which his vanquished rival Antigonos had begun and left unfinished. An eagle again decided that this was not to be his own metropolis and carried the flesh to the hill Silpius, which is on the south side of the river, about the place where it turns from a northerly to a westerly direction. Five or six thousand Athenians and Macedonians were ordered to convey the stones and timber of Antigonía down the river, and Antioch was founded by Seleucus and called after his father's name.

This fable, invented perhaps to give a mythological sanction to what was really an act of sagacious prudence and princely ambition, is well worth remembering. Seleucus was not slow to recognize the wisdom of Antigonos in choosing a site for his capital which should place it in ready communication both with the shores of Greece and with his eastern territories on the Tigris and Euphrates, and he followed the example promptly and completed his work with sumptuous magnificence. Few princes have ever lived with so great a passion for the building of cities, and this is a feature of his character which ought not to be unnoticed in this narrative. Two at least of his cities in Asia Minor have a close connection with the life of St. Paul. These are the Pisidian Antioch (Acts 13:14; 14:21; 2 Tim. 3:11) and the Phrygian Laodicea, (Col. 4:13,15,16) one called by the name of his father and the other of his mother. He is said to have built in all nine Seleucias, sixteen Antiochs, and six Laodiceas. This love of commemorating the members of his family was conspicuous in his works by the Orontes. Besides Seleucia and Antioch he built in the immediate neighborhood a Laodicea in honor of his mother, and an Apamea in honor of his wife. But by far the most famous of these four cities was the Syrian Antioch.

We must allude to its edifices and ornaments only so far as they are due to the Greek kings of Syria and the first five Caesars of Rome. If we were to allow our description to wander to the times of Justinian or the Crusaders, though

these are the times of Antioch's greatest glory, we should be trespassing on a period of history which does not belong to us. Strabo, in the time of Augustus, describes the city as a Tetrapolis, or union of four cities. The two first were erected by Seleucus Nicator himself in the situation already described, between Mount Silpius and the river, on that wide space of level ground where a few poor habitations still remain by the banks of the Orontes. The river has gradually changed its course and appearance as this city has decayed. Once it flowed round an island which, like the island in the Seine, by its thoroughfares and bridges and its own noble buildings, became part of a magnificent whole. But, in Paris, the Old City is on the island, in Antioch, it was the New City, built by the second Seleucus and the third Antiochus.

Its chief features were a palace and an arch like that of Napoleon. The fourth and last part of the Tetrapolis was built by Antiochus Epiphanes where Mount Silpius rises abruptly on the south. On one of its craggy summits he placed, in the fervor of his Romanizing mania, a temple dedicated to Jupiter Capitolinus, and on another, a strong citadel which dwindled to the Saracen Castle of the First Crusade. At the rugged bases of the mountain the ground was leveled for a glorious street which extended for four miles across the length of the city, and where sheltered crowds could walk through continuous colonnades from the eastern to the western suburb. The whole was surrounded by a wall which ascending to the heights and returning to the river does not deviate very widely in its course from the wall of the Middle Ages, which can still be traced by the fragments of ruined towers. This wall is assigned by a Byzantine writer to Tiberius, but it seems more probable that the Emperor only repaired what Antiochus Epiphanes had built.

Turning now to the period of the Empire, we find that Antioch had memorials of all the great Romans whose names have been mentioned as yet in this biography. When Pompey was defeated by Caesar, the conqueror's name was

perpetuated in this Eastern city by an aqueduct and by baths, and by a basilica called Caesarium. In the reign of Augustus, Agrippa<sup>175</sup> built in all cities of the Empire, and Herod of Judea followed the example to the utmost of his power. Both found employment for their munificence at Antioch. A gay suburb rose under the patronage of the one, and the other contributed a road and a portico. The reign of Tiberius was less remarkable for great architectural works, but the Syrians by the Orontes had to thank him for many improvements and restorations in their city. Even the four years of his successor left behind them the aqueduct and the baths of Caligula.

### Character of the Inhabitants of Antioch

The character of the inhabitants is easily inferred from the influences which presided over the city's growth. Its successive enlargement by the Seleucids proves that their numbers rapidly increased from the first. The population swelled still further when, instead of the metropolis of the Greek kings of Syria, it became the residence of the Roman governors. The mixed multitude received new and important additions in the officials who were connected with the details of provincial administration. Luxurious Romans were attracted by its beautiful climate. New wants continually multiplied the business of its commerce. Its gardens and houses grew and extended on the north side of the river. Many are the allusions to Antioch in the history of those times as a place of singular pleasure and enjoyment. Here and there, an elevating thought is associated with its name.

---

<sup>175</sup> This friend of Augustus and Maecenas must be carefully distinguished from that grandson of Herod who bore the same name and whose death is one of the subjects of this chapter. For the works of Herod the Great at Antioch, see Josephus, *Antiquities*, xvi. 5,3; Wars i. 21,11.

Poets have spent their young days at Antioch, great generals have died there,<sup>176</sup> emperors have visited and admired it. But for the most part its population was a worthless rabble of Greeks and Orientals. The frivolous amusements of the theater were the occupation of their life. Their passion for races, and the ridiculous party quarrels connected with them, were the patterns of those which afterwards became the disgrace of Byzantium. The oriental element of superstition and imposture was not less active. The Chaldean astrologers found their most credulous disciples in Antioch.<sup>177</sup> Jewish impostors,<sup>178</sup> sufficiently common throughout the East, found their best opportunities here. It is probable that no populations have ever been more abandoned than those of oriental Greek cities under the Roman Empire, and of these cities Antioch was the greatest and the worst.<sup>179</sup> If we wish to realize the appearance and reality of the complicated heathenism of the first Christian century, we must endeavor to imagine the scene of that suburb, the famous Daphne, with its fountains and groves of bay trees, its bright buildings, its crowds of licentious votaries, its statue of Apollo, where, under the climate of Syria and the wealthy patronage of Rome, all that was beautiful in nature and in art had created a sanctuary for a perpetual festival of vice.

Thus if any city in the first century was worthy to be called the Heathen Queen and Metropolis

---

<sup>176</sup> All readers of Tacitus will recognize the allusion. It is not possible to write about Antioch without some allusion to Germanicus and his noble-minded wife. And yet they were the parents of Caligula.

<sup>177</sup> Chrysostom complains that even Christians, in his day, were led away by this passion for horoscopes. Juvenal traces the superstitions of heathen Rome to Antioch.

<sup>178</sup> Compare the cases of Simon Magus (Acts 8), Elymas the Sorcerer (Acts 13), and the sons of Sceva (Acts 19).

<sup>179</sup> Ausonius hesitates between Antioch and Alexandria as to the rank they occupied in eminence and vice.

of the East, that city was Antioch. She was represented in a famous allegorical statue as a female figure, seated on a rock and crowned, with the river Orontes at her feet. With this image which art has made perpetual we conclude our description. There is no excuse for continuing it to the age of Vespasian and Titus, when Judea was taken, and the Western Gate, decorated with the spoils, was called the "Gate of the Cherubim," or to the Saracen age when, after many years of Christian history and Christian mythology, we find the "Gate of St. Paul" placed opposite the "Gate of St. George," and when Duke Godfrey pitched his camp between the river and the city wall. And there is reason to believe that earthquakes, the constant enemy of the people of Antioch, have so altered the very appearance of its site, that such description would be of little use.

As the Vesuvius of Virgil or Pliny would hardly be recognized in the angry neighbor of modern Naples, so it is more than probable that the dislocated crags which still rise above the Orontes are greatly altered in form from the fort crowned heights of Seleucus or Tiberius, Justinian or Tancred.

### Famine. Mission to Jerusalem

Earthquakes occurred in each of the reigns of Caligula and Claudius. And it is likely that when Saul and Barnabas were engaged in their apostolic work, parts of the city had something of that appearance which still makes Lisbon dreary, new and handsome buildings being raised in close proximity to the ruins left by the late calamity. It is remarkable how often great physical calamities are permitted by God to follow in close succession to each other. That age which, as we have seen, had been visited by earthquakes, was presently visited by famine. The reign of Claudius, from bad harvests, or other causes, was a period of general distress and scarcity "over the whole world."<sup>180</sup> In the

---

<sup>180</sup> Besides the famine in Judea we read of three others in the reign of Claudius, one in Greece,

fourth year of his reign, we are told by Josephus that the famine was so severe that the price of food became enormous and great numbers perished.<sup>181</sup>

At this time it happened that Helena, the mother of Izates, king of Adiabene, and a recent convert to Judaism, came to worship at Jerusalem. Moved with compassion for the misery she saw around her, she sent to purchase corn from Alexandria and figs from Cyprus for distribution among the poor. Izates himself (who had also been converted by one who bore the same name with him who baptized St. Paul)<sup>182</sup> shared the charitable feelings of his mother and sent large sums of money to Jerusalem.

While this relief came from Assyria, from Cyprus, and from Africa to the Jewish sufferers in Judea, God did not suffer His own Christian people, probably the poorest and certainly the most disregarded in that country, to perish in the general distress. And their relief also came from nearly the same quarters. While Barnabas and Saul were evangelizing the Syrian capital and gathering in the harvest, the first seeds of which had been sown by "men of Cyprus and Cyrene," certain prophets came down from Jerusalem to Antioch, and one of them named Agabus announced that a time of famine was at hand (Acts 11:28). The Gentile disciples felt that they were bound by the closest link to those Jewish brethren whom though they had never seen they loved. "For if the Gentiles had been made partakes of their spiritual things, their duty was also to minister unto them in carnal things." (Rom. 15:27) No time was lost in preparing for the coming distress. All the members of the Christian community, according to the means, "determined to send relief," Saul and Barnabas being chosen to take

---

mentioned by Eusebius, and two in Rome, the first mentioned by Dio Cassius, the second by Tacitus.

<sup>181</sup> *Antiquities*, iii. 15,3; xx. 2,5 and 5,2.

<sup>182</sup> This Ananias was a Jewish merchant who made proselytes among the women about the court of Adiabene, and thus obtained influence with the king (Josephus, *Antiquities*, xx. 2,3).

the contribution to the elders at Jerusalem." (Acts 11:29,30)

About the time when these messengers came to the Holy City on their errand of love, a worse calamity than that of famine had fallen upon the church. One apostle had been murdered and another was in prison. There is something touching in the contrast between the two brothers, James and John. One died before the middle of the first Christian century, the other lived on to its close. One was removed just when his Master's kingdom, concerning which he had so eagerly inquired (Mark 10:35 45; Acts 1:6), was beginning to show its real character, he probably never heard the word "Christian" pronounced. Zebedee's other son remained till the antichristian enemies of the faith were "already come," and was laboring against them when his brother had been fifty years at rest in the Lord. He who had foretold the long service of St. John revealed to St. Peter that he should die by a violent death (John 21:18 22. See 2 Pet. 1:14).

But the time was not yet come. Herod had bound him with two chains. Besides the soldiers who watched his sleep, guards were placed before the door of the prison. And after the Passover the king intended to bring him out and gratify the people with his death. But Herod's death was nearer than St. Peter's. For a moment we see the apostle in captivity and the king in the plenitude of his power. But before the autumn a dreadful change had taken place. On the 1<sup>st</sup> of August (we follow a probably calculation and borrow some circumstances from the Jewish historian Josephus<sup>183</sup>) there was a great commemoration in Caesarea. Some say it was in honor of the Emperor's safe return from the island of Britain. However this might be, the city was crowded and Herod was there. On the second day of the festival he came into the theater. That theater had been erected by his grandfather, who had murdered the Innocents,

---

<sup>183</sup> Compare Acts 12:20-24 with Josephus, *Antiquities*, xix. 8,2.

and now the grandson was there, who had murdered an Apostle. <sup>184</sup>

The stone seats, rising in a great semicircle, tier above tier, were covered with an excited multitude. The king came in, clothed in magnificent robes, of which silver was the costly and brilliant material. It was early in the day and the sun's rays fell upon the king, so that the eyes of the beholders were dazzled with the brightness which surrounded him. Voices from the crowd, here and there, exclaimed that it was the apparition of something divine. And when he spoke and made an oration to the people, they gave shout, saying, "It is the voice of a God and not of a man." But in the midst of this idolatrous ostentation the angel of God suddenly smote him. He was carried out of the theater a dying man, and on the 6<sup>th</sup> of August he was dead.

This was the year 44, on which we have already said so much. The country was placed again under Roman governors, and hard times were at hand for the Jews. Herod Agrippa had courted their favor. He had done much for them as was preparing to do more. Josephus tells us that "he had begun to encompass Jerusalem with a wall which, had it been brought to perfection, would have made it impracticable for the Romans to take the city by siege, but his death, which happened at Caesarea before he had raised the walls to their due height, prevented him (Josephus, *Wars*, ii. 11,6) That part of the city which this boundary was intended to enclose was a suburb when St. Paul was converted.. The work was not completed till the Jews were preparing for their final struggle with the Romans, and the apostle,

<sup>184</sup> See Josephus, *Antiquities*, xv. 9,6. It is from his narrative (xix. 8,2) that we know the theater to have been the scene of Agrippa's death stroke. The "throne" (Acts 12:21) is the official "tribunal," as in Acts 18:12,16,17. Josephus says nothing of the quarrel with the Tyrians and Sidonians. Probably it arose simply from mercantile relations (see 1 Kings 5:11; Eze. 27:17), and their desire for reconciliation (Acts 12:20) would naturally be increased by the existing famine.

when he came from Antioch to Jerusalem, must have noticed the unfinished wall to the north and west of the old Damascus gate.

We cannot determine the season of the year when he passed this way. We are not sure whether the year itself was 44 or 45. It is not probable that he was in Jerusalem at the Passover, when St. Peter was in prison, or that he was praying with those anxious disciples at the house of Mary the mother of John. But there is this link of interesting connection between that house and St. Paul, that it was the familiar home of one who was afterwards a companion of his journeys. When Barnabas and Saul returned to Antioch they were attended by "John, whose surname was Mark." With the affection of Abraham towards Lot, his kinsman Barnabas withdrew him from the scene of persecution. We need not doubt that higher motives were added, that at the first as at the last, St. Paul regarded him as "profitable to him for the ministry."

### Results of the Mission to Jerusalem

Thus attended, the apostle willingly retraced his steps towards Antioch. A field of noble enterprise was before him. He could not doubt that God, who had so prepared him, would work by his means great conversions among the heathen. At this point of his life we cannot avoid noticing those circumstances of inward and outward preparation, which fitted him for his peculiar position of standing between the Jews and Gentiles. He was not a Sadducee, he had never Hellenized, he had been educated at Jerusalem, everything conspired to give him authority when he addressed his countrymen at a "Hebrew of the Hebrews." At the same time, in his apostolic relation to Christ, he was quite disconnected with the other apostles, he had come in silence to a conviction of the truth at a distance from the Judaizing Christians, and had early overcome those prejudices which impeded so many in the approaches to the heathen. He had just been long enough at Jerusalem to be recognized and welcomed by the apostolic college (Acts 9:27), but not long enough even to be known by fact "unto the

churches in Judea.” (Gal. 1:22) He had been withdrawn into Cilicia till the baptism of Gentiles was a notorious and familiar fact to those very churches.<sup>185</sup> He could hardly be blamed for continuing what Peter had already begun.

And if the Spirit of God had prepared him for building up the United Church of Jews and Gentiles, and the providence of God had directed all the steps of his life to this one result, we are called on to notice the singular fitness of this last employment, on which we have seen him engaged, for assuaging the suspicious feeling which separated the two great branches of the church. In quitting for a time his Gentile converts in Antioch, and carrying a contribution of money to the Jewish Christians at Jerusalem, he was by no means leaving the higher work for the lower. He was building for aftertimes. The interchange of mutual benevolence was a safe foundation for future confidence. Temporal comfort was given in gratitude for spiritual good received. The church’s first days were christened with charity. No sooner was its new name received, in token of the union of Jews and Gentiles, than the sympathy of its members was asserted by the work of practical benevolence. We need not hesitate to apply to that work the words which St. Paul used, after many years, of another collection for the poor Christians in Judea, “The administration of this service not only supplies the need of the saints, but overflows in many thanksgivings unto God, while they praise God for this proof of your obedience to the glad tidings of Christ.” (2 Cor. 9:12-14)

## Chapter 5

### Second Part of the Acts of the Apostles

The second part of the Acts of the Apostles is generally reckoned to begin with the 13<sup>th</sup> chapter. At this point St. Paul begins to appear

<sup>185</sup> These were the churches of Lydda, Saron, Joppa, etc, which Peter had been visiting when he was summoned to Caesarea. Acts 9:32-43.

as the principal character, and the narrative, gradually widening and expanding with his travels, seems intended to describe to us in detail the communication of the Gospel to the Gentiles. The 13<sup>th</sup> and 14<sup>th</sup> chapters embrace a definite and separate subject, and this subject is the first journey of the first Christian missionaries to the heathen. These two chapters of the inspired record are the authorities for the present and the succeeding chapters of this work, in which we intend to follow the steps of Paul and Barnabas in their circuit through Cyprus and the southern part of Lesser Asia.

The history opens suddenly and abruptly. We are told that there were in the church at Antioch (Acts 13:1) “prophets and teachers,” and among the rest Barnabas, with whom we are already familiar. The others were “Simeon, who was surnamed Niger,” and “Lucius of Cyrene,” and “Manaen, the foster brother of Herod the Tetrarch,” and “Saul” who still appears under his Hebrew name. We observe, moreover, not only that he is mentioned after Barnabas but that he occupies the lowest place in this enumeration of prophets and teachers. The distinction between these two offices in the Apostolic Church will be discussed hereafter (Chapter 13). At present it is sufficient to remark that the “prophecy” of the New Testament does not necessarily imply a knowledge of things to come, but rather a gift of exhorting with a peculiar force of inspiration. In the Church’s early miraculous days the “prophet” appears to have been ranked higher than the “teacher.” And we may perhaps infer that, up to this point of the history, Barnabas had belonged to the rank of “prophets,” and Saul to that of “teachers,” which would be in strict conformity with the inferiority of the latter to the former, which, as we have seen, has been hitherto observed.

Of the other three who are grouped with these two chosen missionaries, we do not know enough to justify any long disquisition. But we may remark in passing that there is a certain interest attaching to each one of them. Simeon

is one of those Jews who bore a Latin surname in addition to their Hebrew name, like "John whose surname was Mark," mentioned in the last verse of the preceding chapter, and like Saul himself, whose change of appellation will presently be brought under notice. Lucius, probably the same who is referred to in the Epistle to the Romans (16:21), is a native of Cyrene, that African city which has already been noticed as abounding in Jews and which sent to Jerusalem our Savior's cross bearer. Manaen is spoken of as the foster brother of Herod the Tetrarch, this was Herod Antipas, the Tetrarch of Galilee, and since we learn from Josephus that this Herod and his brother Archelaus were children of the same mother, and afterwards educated together at Rome, it is probable that this Christian prophet or teacher had spent his early childhood with those two princes, who were now banished from Palestine to the banks of the Rhone.<sup>186</sup>

### Revelation at Antioch

These were the most conspicuous persons in the church of Antioch, when a revelation was received of the utmost importance. The occasion on which the revelation was made seems to have been a fit preparation for it. The Christians were engaged in religious services of peculiar solemnity. The Holy Spirit spoke to them "as they ministered unto the Lord and fasted." The word here translated "ministered" has been taken by opposite controversialists to denote the celebration of the "sacrifice of the mass" on

<sup>186</sup> Their mother's name was Malthace, a Samaritan. Josephus, *War*, i. 28.4; *Antiquities*, 17. 1,3. One of the sect of the Essenes who bore the name of Manaen is mentioned by Josephus (*Antiquities*, xv. 10,5) as having foretold to Herod the Great, in the days of his obscurity, both his future power and future wickedness. The historian adds that Herod afterwards treated the Essenes with great kindness. Nothing is more likely that that this Manaen was the father of the companion of Herod's children. Another Jew of the same name is mentioned, at a later period as having encouraged robberies and come to a violent end. The name is the same as that of the king of Israel (2 Kings 15:14-22).

the one hand, or the exercise of the office of "preaching" on the other. It will be safer if we say simply that the Christian community at Antioch was engaged in one united act of prayer and humiliation. That this solemnity would be accompanied by words of exhortation and that it would be crowned and completed by the Holy Communion, is more than probably; that it was accompanied with fasting we are expressly told. These religious services might have had a special reference to the means which were to be adopted for the spread of the Gospel now evidently intended for all, and the words "separate me now Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them," may have been an answer to specific prayers.

How this revelation was made, whether by the mouth of some of the prophets who were present or by the impulse of a simultaneous and general inspiration, whether the route to be taken by Barnabas and Saul was at this time precisely indicated, and whether they had previously received a conscious personal call, of which this was the public ratification, it is useless to inquire. A definite work was pointed out as now about to be begun under the counsel of God, two definite agents in this work were publicly singled out, and we soon see them sent forth to their arduous undertaking, with the sanction of the church at Antioch.

### Departure of Barnabas and Saul

Their final consecration and departure was the occasion of another religious solemnity. A fast was appointed, and prayers were offered up, and with that simple ceremony of ordination which we trace through the earlier periods of Jewish history, and which we here see adopted under the highest authority in the Christian church, "they laid their hands on them and sent them away." The words are wonderfully simple, but those who devoutly reflect on this great occasion and on the position of the first Christians at Antioch, will not find it difficult to imagine the thoughts which occupied the hearts of the disciples during these first "Ember Days" of the church, their deep sense of importance of the work which was now beginning, their faith

in God, on whom they could rely in the midst of such difficulties, their suspense during the absence of those by whom their own faith had been fortified, their anxiety for the intelligence they might bring on their return.

Their first point of destination was the island of Cyprus. It is not necessary, though quite allowable, to suppose that this particular course was divinely indicated in the original revelation at Antioch. Four reasons at least can be stated, which may have induced the apostles, in the exercise of a wise discretion, to turn in the first instance to this island. It is separated by no great distance from the mainland of Syria; its high mountain summits are easily seen in clear weather from the coast near the mouth of the Orontes; and in the summer season many vessels must often have been passing between Salamis and Seleucia. Besides this, it was the native place of Barnabas (Acts 4:36). Since the time when "Andrew found his brother Simon, and brought him to Jesus," (John 1:41,42) and the Savior was beloved in the house of "Martha and her sister and Lazarus," (John 9:5) the ties of family relationship had not been without effect on the progress of the Gospel.

It could not be unnatural to suppose that the truth would be welcomed in Cyprus when it was brought by Barnabas and his kinsman Mark <sup>187</sup> to their own connections or friends. Moreover, the Jews were numerous in Salamis (Acts 13:5). By sailing to that city they were following the track of the synagogues. Their mission, it is true, was chiefly to the Gentiles, but their surest course for reaching them was through the medium of the Proselytes and the Hellenistic Jews. To these considerations we must add that some of the Cypriotes were already Christians. No one place out of Palestine, with the exception of Antioch, had been so honorably associated with the work of successful evangelization. (See Acts 4:36, 9:19,20; 21:16)

The palaces of Antioch were connected with the sea by the river Orontes. Strabo says that in his

<sup>187</sup> Acts 13:5. See 12:25.

time they sailed up the stream in one day, and Pausanias speaks of great Roman works which had improved the navigation of the channel. Probably it was navigable by vessels of some considerable size, and good and passengers were conveyed by water between the city and the sea. Even in our own day, though there is now a bar at the mouth of the river, there has been a serious project of uniting it by a canal with the Euphrates, and so of re establishing one of the old lines of commercial intercourse between the Mediterranean and the Indian Sea.

The Orontes comes from the valley between Lebanon and Anti Lebanon, and does not, like many rivers, vary capriciously between a winter torrent and a thirsty watercourse, but flows on continually to the sea. Its waters are not always clear, but they are deep and rapid. Their course has been compared to that of the Wye. They wind round the bases of high and precipitous cliffs, or by richly cultivated banks where the vegetation of the South, the vine and the fig tree, the myrtle, the bay, the ilex, and the arbutus, are mingled with dwarf oak and English sycamore. If Barnabas and Saul came down by water from Antioch, this was the course of the boat which conveyed them. If they traveled the five or six leagues <sup>188</sup> by land, they crossed the river at the north side of Antioch, and came along the base of the Pierian hills by a route which is now roughly covered with fragrant and picturesque shrubs, but which then doubtless was a track well worn by travelers, like the road from the Piraeus to Athens, or from Ostia to Rome. <sup>189</sup>

Seleucia united the two characters of a fortress and a seaport. It was situated on a rocky eminence which is the southern extremity of an elevated range of hills projecting from Mount Amanus. From the southeast, where the ruins of

<sup>188</sup> Colonel Chesney says, "The windings give a distance of about forty-one miles, while the journey by land is only sixteen miles and a half.

<sup>189</sup> Dr. Yates observed traces of Roman pavement on the line of road between Antioch and Seleucia.

the Antioch Gate are still conspicuous, the ground rose towards the northeast into high and craggy summits, and round the greater part of its circumference of four miles the city was protected by its natural position. The harbor and mercantile suburb were on level ground towards the west; but here, as on the only weak point at Gibraltar, strong artificial defenses had made compensation for the deficiency of nature. Seleucus, who had named his metropolis in his father's honor, gave his own name to this maritime fortress; and here, around his tomb, his successors contended for the key of Syria. <sup>190</sup> "Seleucia by the Sea" was a place of great importance under the Seleucids and the Ptolemies; and so it remained under the sway of the Romans. In consequence of its bold resistance to Tigranes, when he was in possession of all the neighboring country, Pompey gave it the privileges of a free city, and a contemporary of St. Paul speaks of it as having those privileges still.

The most remarkable work among the extant remains of Seleucia is an immense excavation, probably the same with that which is mentioned by Polybius, leading from the upper part of the ancient city to the sea. It consists alternately of tunnels and deep open cuttings. It is difficult to give a confident opinion as to the uses for which it was intended. But the best conjecture seems to be that it was constructed for the purpose of drawing off the water, which might otherwise have done mischief to the houses and shipping in the lower part of the town; and so arranged at the same time as, when needful, to supply a rush of water to clear out the port. The inner basin, or dock, is now a morass; but its dimensions can be measured, and the wall that surrounded it can be distinctly traced.

---

<sup>190</sup> We may refer to the chapters in which Polybius gives an account of the siege of Seleucia in the war of Antiochus the Great with Ptolemy. In these chapters we find the clearest description both of its military importance and its topography.

The position of the ancient floodgates, and the passage through which the vessels were moved from the inner to the outer harbor, can be accurately marked. The very piers of the outer harbor are still to be seen under the water. The southern jetty takes the wider sweep and overlaps the northern, forming a secure entrance and a well protected basin. The stones are of great size, some of them twenty feet long, five feet deep, and six feet wide, and they were fastened to each other with iron clamps. The masonry of ancient Seleucia is still so good that not long since a Turkish Pasha conceived the idea of clearing out and repairing the harbor.

These piers were unbroken when Saul and Barnabas came down to Seleucia, and the large stones fastened by their iron clamps protected the vessels in the harbor from the swell of the western sea. Here, in the midst of unsympathetic sailors, the two missionary Apostles, with the younger companion, stepped on board the vessel which was to convey them to Salamis. As they cleared the port, the whole sweep of the bay of Antioch opened on their left, the low ground by the mouth of the Orontes, the wild and woody country beyond it, and then the peak of Mount Casius, rising symmetrically from the very edge of the sea to a height of five thousand feet. On the right, in the south west horizon, if the day was clear, they saw the island of Cyprus from the first. The current sets northeast and northerly between the island and the Syrian coast. <sup>191</sup> But with a

---

<sup>191</sup> "In sailing from the southern shores of Cyprus, with the winds adverse, you should endeavor to obtain the advantage of the set of the current, which between Cyprus and the mouths of the Nile always runs to the eastward, changing its direction to the northeast and north as you near the coast of Syria.", Norie, p. 140. "The current, in general, continues easterly along the Libyan coast, and ENE off Alexandria; thence advancing to the coast of Syria, it sets NE and more northerly; so that country vessels bound from Damietta to an eastern port of Cyprus have been carried by the current past the island.", Purdy, p. 276. After leaving the Gulf of Scanderoon, the current sets to the westward along the south coast of Asia Minor, as we

fair wind a few hours would enable them to run down from Seleucia to Salamis; and the land would rapidly rise in forms well known and familiar to Barnabas and Mark.

### Salamis

The coast of nearly every island of the Mediterranean has been minutely surveyed and described by British naval officers. The two islands which were most intimately connected with St. Paul's voyages have been among the latest to receive this kind of illustration. The soundings of the coast of Crete are now proved to furnish a valuable commentary on the 27<sup>th</sup> chapter of Acts; and the chart of Cyprus should at least be consulted when we read the 13<sup>th</sup> chapter. From Cape St. Andreas, the northeastern point of the island, the coast trends rapidly to the west, till it reaches Cape Grego, the southeastern extremity. The modern town of Famagusta is nearer the latter point than the former, and the ancient Salamis was situated a short distance to the north of Famagusta. Near Cape St. Andrea are two or three small islands, anciently called The Keys. These, if they were seen at all, would soon be lost to view. Cape Grego is distinguished by a singular promontory of table land which is very familiar to the sailors of our merchantmen and ships of war; and there is little doubt that the woodcut given in one of their manuals of sailing directions represents that "very rough, lofty, table shaped eminence" which Strabo mentions in his description of the coast, and which has been identified with the Idalium of the classical poets.

The ground lies low in the neighborhood of Salamis, and the town was situated on a bight of the coast to the north of the river Pedieus. This low land is the largest plain in Cyprus, and the Pedieus is the only true river in the island, the rest being merely winter torrents, flowing in the wet season from the two mountain ranges which intersect it from east to west. This plain

---

shall have occasion to notice hereafter. A curious illustration of the difficulty

probably represents the kingdom of Teucer, which is familiar to us in the early stories of legendary Greece. It stretches inwards between the two mountain ranges to the very heart of the country, where the modern Turkish capital, Nicosia, is situated. In the days of historical Greece, Salamis was the capital. Under the Roman Empire, if not the seat of the government, it was at least the most important mercantile town. We have the best reasons for believing that the harbor was convenient and capacious.<sup>192</sup> Thus we can form to ourselves some idea of the appearance of the place in the reign of Claudius. A large city by the seashore, a widespread plain with corn fields and orchards, and the blue distance of mountains beyond, composed the view on which the eyes of Barnabas and Saul rested when they came to anchor in the bay of Salamis.

The Jews, as we would have been prepared to expect, were numerous in Salamis. This fact is indicated to us in the sacred narrative; for we learn that this city has several synagogues, while other cities had often only one.<sup>193</sup> The Jews had doubtless been established here in considerable numbers in the active period which succeeded the death of Alexander. The unparalleled productiveness of Cyprus, and its trade in fruit, wine, flax, and honey would naturally attract them to the mercantile port. The farming of the copper mines by Augustus to Herod may probably have swelled their numbers. One of the most conspicuous passages in the history of Salamis was the insurrection of the Jews in the reign of Trajan, when a great part of the city was destroyed.<sup>194</sup> Its demolition

---

<sup>192</sup> See especially the account in Diodorus Siculus of the great naval victory off Salamis, won by Demetrius Poliorcetes over Ptolemy. Scylax also says that Salamis had a good harbor.

<sup>193</sup> Acts 13:5. Compare 6:9; 9:20, and contrast 17:1; 18:4.

<sup>194</sup> "The flame spread to Cyprus, where the Jews were numerous and wealthy. One Artemio placed himself at their head. They rose and massacred 240,000 of their fellow-citizens; the whole population of

was completed by an earthquake. It was rebuilt by a Christian emperor, from whom it received its medieval name of w

It appears that the proclamation of the Gospel was confined by Barnabas and Saul to the Jews and their synagogues. We have no information of the length of their stay or the success of their labors. Some stress seems to be laid on the fact that John Mark "was their minister." Perhaps we are to infer from this that his hands baptized the Jews and proselytes who were convinced by the preaching of the Apostles.

From Salamis they traveled to Paphos at the other extremity of the island. The two towns were probably connected together by a well traveled road.<sup>195</sup> It is indeed likely that even under the Empire the islands of the Greek part of the Mediterranean, as Crete and Cyprus, were not so completely provided with lines of internal communication as those which were nearer the metropolis, and had been longer under Roman occupation, such as Corsica and Sardinia. But we cannot help believing that Roman roads were laid down in Cyprus and Crete, after the manner of the modern English roads in Corfu and the other Ionian islands, which islands, in their social and political conditions, present many points of resemblance to those which were under the Roman sway in

---

Salamis became a desert. The revolt of Cyprus was first suppressed; Hadrian, afterwards emperor, landed on the island, and marched to the assistance of the few inhabitants who had been able to act on the defensive. He defeated the Jews, expelled them from the island, to whose beautiful coasts no Jew was ever after permitted to approach. If one were accidentally wrecked on the inhospitable shore, he was instantly put to death." Milman, iii. 111, 112. The Rabbinical teachings are full of the sufferings of the Jews in this period. In this island there was a massacre before the time of the rebellion, "and the sea that broke upon the shores of Cyprus was tinged with the red hue of carnage."

<sup>195</sup> On the west of Salamis, in the direction of Paphos, historians have seen a church and monastery dedicated to Barnabas, and a grotto where he is said to have been buried, after suffering martyrdom in the reign of Nero.

the time of St. Paul. On the whole, there is little doubt that his journey from Salamis to Paphos, a distance from east to west or not more than a hundred miles, was accomplished in a short time and without difficulty.

Paphos was the residence of the Roman governor. The appearance of the place (if due allowance is made for the differences of the 19<sup>th</sup> century and the 1<sup>st</sup>) may be compared with that of the town of Corfu in the present day, with its strong garrison of imperial soldiers in the midst of a Greek population, with its mixture of two languages, with its symbols of a strong and steady power side by side with frivolous amusements, and with something of the style of a court about the residence of its governor. All the occurrences which are mentioned at Paphos as taking place on the arrival of Barnabas and Saul are grouped so entirely round the governor's person that our attention must be turned for a time to the condition of Cyprus as a Roman province, and the position and character of Sergius Paulus.

### Roman Provincial System

From the time when Augustus united the world under his own power, the provinces were divided into two different classes. The business of the first Emperor's life was to consolidate the imperial system under the show of administering a republic. He retained the names and semblances of those liberties and rights which Rome had once enjoyed. He found two names in existence, the one of which was henceforth inseparably blended with the Imperial dignity and military command, the other with the authority of the Senate and its civil administration. The first of these names was "Praetor," the second was "Consul." Both of them were retained in Italy, and both were reproduced in the Provinces as "Propraetor" and "Proconsul."<sup>196</sup> He told the Senate and

---

<sup>196</sup> It is important, as we shall see presently, to notice Dio Cassius's further statement, that all governors of the Senate's provinces were to be called Proconsuls, whatever their previous office might have been, and all

people that he would relieve them of all the anxiety of military proceedings and that he would resign to them those provinces where soldiers were unnecessary to secure the fruits of a peaceful administration. He would take upon himself all the care and risk of governing the other provinces, where rebellion might be apprehended and where the proximity of warlike tribes made the presence of the legions perpetually needful.

These were his professions to the Senate; but the real purpose of this ingenious arrangement was the disarming of the Republic and the securing to himself the absolute control of the whole standing army of the Empire.<sup>197</sup> The scheme was sufficiently transparent; but there was no sturdy national life in Italy to resist his despotic innovations, and no foreign civilized powers to arrest the advance of imperial aggrandizement. Thus it came to pass that Augustus, though totally destitute of the military genius either of Cromwell or Napoleon, transmitted to his successors a throne guarded by an invincible army, and a system of government destined to endure through several centuries.

Hence we find in the reign, not only of Augustus, but of each of his successors, from Tiberius to Nero, the provinces divided into these two classes. One the one side we have those which are supposed to be under the Senate and the people. –The governor is appointed by lot, as in the times of the old republic. He carries with him the lictors and fasces, the insignia of a Consul; but he is destitute of military power. His office must be resigned at the expiration of a year. He is styled “Proconsul” and the Greeks, translating the term, call him “anthupatos,” which our English translators has rendered by the ambiguous word “deputy.” Acts 13:7, “The deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus.” Or, “Gallio was the deputy of Achaia.” Acts 18.

---

governors of the Emperor’s provinces were to be styled Legati or Proprætors, even if they had been Consuls.

<sup>197</sup> cf Seutonius and Dio Cassius.

On the other side are the provinces of Caesar. The governor may be styled “Propraetor” or “ANTISTRATEIGOS”, but he is more properly “Legatus” or “PRESBUTEIS” – the representative or “Commissioner” or the Emperor. He goes out from Italy with all the pomp of a military commander, and he does not return until the Emperor recalls him.<sup>198</sup> And to complete the symmetry and consistency of the system, the subordinate districts or these imperial provinces are regulated by the Emperor’s “Procurator” (EPITROPOS), or “High Steward.” The New Testament, in the strictest conformity with the other historical authorities of the period, gives us examples of both kinds of provincial administration. We are told by Strabo, and by Dio Cassius, that “Asia” and “Achaia” were assigned to the Senate; and the title, which in each case is given to the Governor in the Acts of the Apostles, is “Proconsul.” The same authorities inform us that Syria was an imperial province, and no such title as “Proconsul” is assigned by the sacred writers to “Cyrenius Governor of Syria,” (Luke 2:2) or to Pilate, Festus, and Felix, the Procurators of Judea, which was a dependency of that great and unsettled province.<sup>199</sup>

Dio Cassius informs us, in the same passage where he tells us that Asia and Achaia were provinces of the Senate, that Cyprus was retained by the Emperor for himself, along with Syria and Cilicia. If we stop here, we naturally ask the question, and some have asked the question rather

---

<sup>198</sup> All these details are stated, and the two kinds of governors very accurately distinguished in the 53<sup>rd</sup> Book of Dio Cassius, ch. 13. It should be remarked that EPARXIA (the word still used for the subdivisions of the modern Greek Kingdom) is applied indiscriminately to both kinds of provinces.

<sup>199</sup> The word invariably used in the NT is HEIGEMON. This is a general term, like the Roman “Praeses” and the English “Governor”, as may be seen by comparing Luke 2:2 with 3:1 and observing that the very same word is applied to the offices of Procurator of Judea, the Legatus of Syria, and the Emperor himself.

hastily, how it comes to pass that St. Luke speaks of Sergius Paulus by the style of "Proconsul." But any hesitation concerning the strict accuracy of the sacred historian's language is immediately set at rest by the very next sentence of the secular historian, in which he informs us that Augustus restored Cyprus to the Senate in exchange for another district of the Empire, a statement which he again repeats in a later passage of his work. It is evident, then, that the governor's style and title from this time forward would be "Proconsul." But this evidence, however satisfactory, is not all that we possess. Inscriptions, which could easily be adduced, supply us with the names of additional governors who were among the predecessors or successors of Sergius Paulus.

### Sergius Paulus

It is remarkable that two men called Sergius Paulus are described in very similar terms by two physicians who wrote in Greek, the one a heathen, the other a Christian. The heathen writer is Galen. He speaks of his contemporary as a man interested and well versed in philosophy. The Christian writer is St. Luke, who tells us here that the governor of Cyprus was a "prudent" man, who "desired to hear the Word of God." This governor seems to have been of a candid and inquiring mind; nor will this philosophical disposition be thought inconsistent with his connection with the Jewish impostor, whom Saul and Barnabas found at the Paphian court, by those who are acquainted with the intellectual and religious tendencies of the age.

For many years before this time, and many years after, impostors from the East, pretending to magical powers, had great influence over the Roman mind. All the Greek and Latin literature of the empire, from Horace to Lucian, abounds in proof of the prevalent credulity of this skeptical period. Unbelief, when it has become conscious of its weakness, is often glad to give its hand to superstition. The faith of educated Romans was utterly gone. We can hardly wonder, when the East was thrown open – the land of mystery, the fountain of the earliest

migrations, the cradle of the earliest religions – that the imagination both of the populace and the aristocracy of Rome became fanatically excited, and that they greedily welcomed the most absurd and degrading superstitions. Not only was the metropolis of the empire crowded with "hungry Greeks" but "Syrian fortune tellers" flocked into all the haunts of public amusement. Athens and Corinth did not now contribute the greatest or the worst part of the dregs of Rome; but (to adopt Juvenal's use of that river of Antioch we have lately been describing) "the Orontes itself flowed into the Tiber."

### Elymas Barjesus

Every part of the East contributed its share to the general superstition. The gods of Egypt and Phrygia found unfailing votaries. Before the close of the republic the temples of Isis and Serapis had been more than once erected, destroyed, and renewed. Josephus tells us that certain disgraceful priests of Isis (*Antiquities*, xviii.3.4) were crucified at Rome by the second emperor; but this punishment was only a momentary check to their sway over the Roman mind. The more remote districts of Asia Minor sent their itinerant soothsayers; Syria sent her music and her medicines; Chaldea her "Babylonian numbers" and "mathematical calculations."<sup>200</sup> To these corrupters of the people of Romulus we must add one more Asiatic nation, the nation of the Israelites; and it is an instructive employment to observe that, while some members of the Jews people were rising, by the Divine power, to the highest position every occupied by men on earth, others were sinking themselves and others along with them, to the lowest and most contemptible degradation.

The treatment and influence of the Jews at Rome were often too similar to those of other Orientals. One year we find them banished

<sup>200</sup> *Babylonii Numeri*, Hor. I. *Od.* Xi.2. *Chaldaicae rationes*, Cic. *Div.* Ii.47. The Chaldean astrologers were called "Mathematici" (Juvenal vi.562; xiv.248).

(Acts 18:2), another year we see them quietly reestablished (Acts 28:17). The Jewish beggar woman was the gipsy of the first century, shivering and crouching in the outskirts of the city, and telling fortunes, as Ezekiel said of old, "for handfuls of barley and for pieces of bread." (Ezek. 18:19) All this catalogue of Oriental impostors, whose influx into Rome was a characteristic of the period, we can gather from that revolting satire of Juvenal, in which he scourges the follies and vices of the Roman women.

But not only were the women of Rome drawn aside into this varied and multiplied fanaticism; but the eminent men of the declining republic, and the absolute sovereigns of the early Empire, were tainted and enslaved by the same superstitions. The great Marius had in his camp a Syrian, probably a Jewish prophetess, by whose divinations he regulated the progress of his campaigns. As Brutus, at the beginning of the republic, had visited the oracle of Delphi, so Pompey, Crassus, and Caesar, at the close of the republic, when the oracles were silent, sought information from Oriental astrology. No picture in the great Latin satirist is more powerfully drawn than that in which he shows us Emperor Tiberius "sitting on the rock of Capri, with his flock of Chaldeans round him." No sentence in the great Latin historian is more bitterly emphatic than that in which he says that the astrologers and sorcerers are a class of men who "will always be discarded and always cherished."

What we know, from the literature of the period, to have been the case in Rome and in the Empire at large, we see exemplified in a province in the cast of Sergius Paulus. He had attached himself to "a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Barjesus," and who had given himself the Arabic of "Elymas," or "The Wise." But the Proconsul was not so deluded by the false prophet as to be made unable, or unwilling, to listen to the true. "He sent for Barnabas and Saul," of whose arrival he was informed, and whose free and public declaration of the Word of God attracted his

inquiring mind. Elymas used every exertion to resist them and to hinder the Proconsul's mind from falling under the influence of their divine doctrine. Truth and falsehood were brought into visible conflict with each other. It is evident, from the graphic character of the narrative, the description of Paul "setting his eyes" on the sorcerer, "the mist and the darkness" which fell on Barjesus, the "groping about for someone to lead him," that the opposing wonder workers stood face to face in the presence of the Proconsul, as Moses and Aaron withstood the magicians at the Egyptian courts, Sergius Paulus being in this respect different from Pharaoh in that he did not harden his heart.

The miracles of the New Testament are generally distinguished from those of the Old by being for the most part works of mercy and restoration, not of punishment and destruction. Two only of Our Lord's miracles were the infliction of severity, and these were attended with no harm to the bodies of men. The same law of mercy pervades most of those interruptions of the course of nature which He gave His servants the Apostles the power to effect. One miracle of wrath is mentioned as worked in His name by each of the great Apostles, Peter and Paul; and we can see sufficient reasons why liars and hypocrites, like Ananias and Sapphira, and powerful impostors, like Elymas Barjesus, should be publicly punished in the face of the Jewish and Gentile worlds and made the examples and warnings of every subsequent age of the Church.<sup>201</sup>

A different passage in the life of St. Peter presents a parallel which is closer in some respects with this interview of St. Paul with the sorcerer in Cyprus. As Simon Magus, who had "long time bewitched the people of Samaria with his

<sup>201</sup> It is not necessary to infer from these passages, or from 1 Cor. 5:3-5, 1 Tim. 1:20, that Peter and Paul had power to inflict these judgments at their will. Though, even if they had this power, they had also the spirit of love and supernatural knowledge to guide them in the use of it.

sorceries," was denounced by St. Peter "as still in the gall of bitterness and bond of iniquity," and solemnly told that "his heart was not right in the sight of God;" (Acts 8:21-23) so St. Paul, conscious of his apostolic power, and under the impulse of immediate inspiration, rebuked Barjesus, as a child of that Devil who is the father of lies, as a worker of deceit and mischief, and as one who sought to pervert and distort that which God saw and approved as right. He proceeded to pronounce an instantaneous judgment, and according to his prophetic word the "hand of the Lord" struck the sorcerer, as it had once struck the Apostle himself on the way to Damascus. The sight of Elymas began to waver, and presently a darkness settled on it so thick that he ceased to behold the sun's light. This blinding of the false prophet opened the eyes of Sergius Paulus. That which had been intended as an opposition to the gospel proved the means of its extension. We are ignorant of the degree of this extension in the island of Cyprus. But we cannot doubt that when the Proconsul was converted his influence would make Christianity reputable, and that from this moment the Gentiles of the island, as well as the Jews, had the news of salvation brought home to them.

### History of Jewish Names

And now, from this point of the Apostolical history, Paul appears as the great figure in every picture. Barnabas, henceforward, is always in the background. The great Apostle now enters on his work as the preacher of the Gentiles, and simultaneously with his active occupation of the field in which he was called to labor, his name is suddenly changed. As Abram was changed into Abraham, when God promised that he should be the father of man nations, as Simon was changed into Peter when it was said "On this rock I will build my church," so Saul is changed into Paul at the moment of his first great victory among the heathen. What the plains of Mamre by Hebron were to the patriarch, what Caesarea Philippi, by the fountains of the Jordan, was to the fisherman of

Galilee, that was the city of Paphos, on the coast of Cyprus, to the tentmaker of Tarsus.

Are we to suppose that the name was now really given him for the first time, that he adopted it himself as significant of his own feelings, or that Sergius Paulus conferred it on him in grateful commemoration of the benefits he had received, or that "Paul", having been a Gentile form of the Apostle's name in early life conjointly with the Hebrew "Saul," was now used to the exclusion of the other, to indicate that he had receded from his position as a Jewish Christian, to become the friend and teacher of the Gentiles? All these opinions have found their supporters both in ancient and modern times. The question has been alluded to before in this work. It will be well to devote some further space to it now, once for all.

It cannot be denied that the words in Acts 13:9, "Saul who is also Paul," are the line of separation between two very distinct portions of St. Luke's biography of the Apostle, in the former of which he is uniformly called "Saul," while in the latter he receives, with equal consistency, the name of "Paul." It must also be observed that the Apostle always speaks of himself under the latter designation in every one of his epistles, without any exception; and not only so, but St. Peter, in the only passage where he has occasion to allude to him (2 Pet. 3:15), speaks of him as "our beloved brother Paul." We are, however, inclined to adopt the opinion that the Cilician Apostle has this Roman name, as well as his other Hebrew name, in his earlier days, and even before he was a Christian. This adoption of a Gentile name is so far from being alien to the spirit of a Jewish family that a similar practice may be traced through all the period of Hebrew history. Beginning with the Persian epoch (BC 550-350) we find such names as "Nehemiah," "Schammai," "Belteshazzar," which betray an oriental origin, and show that Jewish appellatives followed the growth of the living language. In the Greek period we encounter the names of "Philip" and his son "Alexander" and of Alexander's successors, "Antiochus,"

“Lysimachus,” “Ptolemy,” “Antipater;” the names of Greek philosophers, such as “Zeno” and “Epicurus”, even Greek mythological names, such as “Jason” and “Menelaus.” Some of these words will have been recognized as occurring in the New Testament itself.

When we mention Roman names adopted by the Jews, the coincidence is even more striking. “Crispus,” “Justus,” “Niger,” are found in Josephus as well as in the Acts. “Drusilla” and “Priscilla” might have been Roman matrons. The “Aquila” of St. Paul is the counterpart of the “Apella” of Horace. Nor need we end our survey of Jewish names with the early Roman Empire; for, passing by the destruction of Jerusalem, we see Jews, in the earlier part of the Middle Ages, calling themselves “Basil,” “Leo,” “Theodosius,” “Sophia”, and in the latter part, “Albert,” “Benedict,” “Crispin,” or “Denya.” We might pursue our inquiry into the nations of modern Europe, but enough has been said to show that as the Jews have successively learned to speak Chaldee, Greek, Latin, or German, so they have adopted into their families the appellations of those Gentile families among whom they have lived. It is indeed remarkable that the Separated Nation should bear, in the very names recorded in its annals, the trace of every nation with whom it has come in contact and never united.

It is important to our present purpose to remark that double names often occur in combination, the one national, the other foreign. The earliest instances are “Belteshazzar Daniel” and “Esther Hadasa.” Frequently there was no resemblance or natural connection between the two words, as in “Herod Agrippa,” “Salome Alexandra,” “Juda Aristobulus,” or “Simon Peter.” Sometimes the meaning was reproduced, as in “Malich Kleodemus.” At other times an alliterating resemblance of sound seems to have dictated the choice, as in “Jose Jason,” “Hillel Julius,” “Saulus Paulus.”

Thus it seems to us that satisfactory reasons can be adduced for the double name borne by the apostle, without having recourse to the hypothesis of Jerome, who suggests that, as Scipio was called Africanus from the conquest

of Africa, and Metellus called Creticus from the conquest of Crete, so Saul carried away his new name as a trophy of the victory over the heathenism of the Proconsul Paulus – or to that notion, which Augustine applies with much rhetorical effect in various parts of his writings, where he alludes to the literal meaning of the word “Paulus,” and contrasts Saul, with Paul, the lowly, the penitent, who deliberately wished to indicate by his very name that he was the “least of the Apostles,” the coincident occurrence of these two names in this narrative of events which happened in Cyprus.

## Chapter 6

### Old and New Paphos

The banner of the Gospel was now displayed on the coasts of the heathen. The glad tidings had “passed over the isles of Chittim,”<sup>202</sup> and had found a willing audience in that island which, in the vocabulary of the Jewish prophets, is the representative of the trade and civilization of the Mediterranean Sea. Cyprus was the early meeting place of the oriental and Greek forms of social life. Originally colonized from Phoenicia, it was successively subject to Egypt, to Assyria, and to Persia. The settlements of the Greeks on its shores had begun in a remote period, and their influence gradually advanced until the older links of connection were entirely broken by Alexander and his successors. But not only in political and social relations, by the progress of conquest and commerce, was Cyprus the meeting place of Greece and the East. Here also their forms of idolatrous worship met and became blended together. Paphos was, indeed, a sanctuary of Greek religion; on this shore the fabled goddess first landed when she rose from the sea; this was the

<sup>202</sup> The general notion intended by the phrases “isles” and “coasts” of “Chittim” seems to have been “the islands and coasts of the Mediterranean to the west and northwest of Judea.” Num. 24:24; Jer. 2:10; Eze. 27:6. See Gen. 10:4,5; Isa. 23:1; Dan. 11:30. But primarily the name is believed to have been connected with *Citium*, which was a Phoenician colony in Cyprus.

scene of a worship celebrated in the classical poets, from the age of Homer, down to the time when Titus, the son of Vespasian, visited the spot in the spirit of a heathen pilgrim, on his way to subjugate Judea.<sup>203</sup>

But the polluted worship was originally introduced from Assyria or Phoenicia; the oriental form under which the goddess is worshipped is represented on Greek coins; the Temple bore a curious resemblance to those of Astarte at Carthage or Tyre; and Tacitus pauses to describe the singularity of the altar and the ceremonies before he proceeds to narrate the campaign of Titus.

And here it was that we have seen Christianity firmly established by St. Paul, in the very spot where the superstition of Syria had perverted man's natural veneration and love of mystery, and where the beautiful creations of Greek thought had administered to what Athanasius, when speaking of Paphos, well describes as the "deification of lust."

The Paphos of the poets, or Old Paphos, as it was afterwards called, was situated on an eminence at a distance of nearly two miles from the sea. New Paphos was on the seashore about ten miles to the northwest. But the old town still remained as the sanctuary which was visited by heathen pilgrims; profligate processions, at stated seasons, crowded the road between Antioch and Daphne; and small models of the mysterious image were sought as eagerly as the little silver shrines of Diana at Ephesus (Acts 19:24). Doubtless the position of the old town was an illustration of the early custom, mentioned by Thucydides, of building at a safe distance from the shore, at a time when the sea was infested by pirates; and the new town had been established in a place convenient for commerce when navigation had become more secure. It was situated on the

<sup>203</sup> Tacitus, *History*, ii.2-4. Compare Seutonius, *Titus*, 5. Tacitus speaks of magnificent offerings presented by kings and others to the Temple of Old Paphos.

verge of a plain, smaller than that of Salamis, and watered by a scantier stream than the Pedieus. Not long before the visit of Paul and Barnabas it had been destroyed by an earthquake. Augustus had rebuilt it, and from him it had received the name of Augusta or Sebaste. But the old name still retained its place in popular usage and has descended to modern times. The Paphos of Strabo, Ptolemy, and St. Luke became the Paphos of the Venetians and the Baffa of the Turks.

A second series of Latin architecture has crumbled into decay. Mixed up with the ruins of palaces and churches are the poor dwellings of the Greek and Mahomedan inhabitants, partly on the beach, but chiefly on a low ridge of sandstone rock about two miles from the ancient port, makes the shore unhealthy during the heats of summer by its noxious exhalations. One of the most singular features of the neighborhood consists of the curious caverns excavated in the rocks, which have been used both for tombs and dwellings.

The harbor is now almost blocked up and affords only shelter for boats." The Venetian stronghold, at the extremity of the Western mole, is fast crumbling into ruins. The mole itself is broken up, and every year the massive stones of which it was constructed are rolled over from their original position into the port." The approaches to the harbor can never have been very safe, in consequence of the ledge of rocks which extends some distance into the sea. At present, the eastern entrance to the anchorage is said to be the safer of the two. The western under ordinary circumstances would be more convenient for a vessel clearing out of the port and about to sail for the Gulf of Pamphylia.

We have remarked in the last chapter that it is not difficult to imagine the reasons which induced Paul and Barnabas, on their departure from Seleucia, to visit first the Island of Cyprus. It is not quite so easy to give an opinion upon the motives which directed their course to the coast of Pamphylia when they had passed through the native island of Barnabas, from

Salamis to Paphos. It might be one of those circumstances which we call accidents, and which, as they never influence the actions of ordinary men without the determining direction of Divine Providence, so were doubtless used by the same Providence to determine the course even of the Apostles. As St. Paul, many years afterwards, joined at Myra that vessel in which he was shipwrecked (Acts 27:5,6), and then was conveyed to Puteoli in a ship which had accidentally wintered at Malta (Acts 28:11-13), so on this occasion there might be some small craft in the harbor at Paphos, bound for the opposite gulf of Attaleia, when Paul and Barnabas were thinking of the future progress.

The distance is not great, and frequent communication, both political and commercial, must have taken place between the towns of Pamphylia and those of Cyprus. It is possible that St. Paul, having already preached the Gospel in Cilicia, might wish now to extend it among those districts which lay more immediately contiguous, and the population of which was in some respects similar to that of his native province. He might also reflect that the natives of a comparatively unsophisticated district might be more likely to receive the message of salvation than the inhabitants of those provinces which were more completely penetrated with the corrupt civilization of Greece and Rome. Or his thoughts might be turning to those numerous families of Jews whom he well knew to be settled in the great towns beyond Mount Taurus, such as Antioch in Pisidia, and Iconium in Lycaonia, with the hope that his Master's cause would be most successfully advanced among those Gentiles who flocked there, as everywhere, to the worship of the Synagogue.

Or, finally, he may have had a direct revelation from on high, and a vision, like that which had already appeared to him in the Temple (Acts 22:17-21), or like that which he afterwards saw on the confines of Europe and Asia (Acts 16:9), may have directed the course of his voyage. Whatever may have been the calculations of his

own wisdom and prudence, or whatever supernatural intimations may have reached him, he sailed, with his companions Barnabas and John, in some vessel, of which the size, the cargo, and the crew, are unknown to us, past the promontories of Drepanum and Acamas, and then across the waters of the Pamphylian Sea, leaving on the right the cliffs which are the western boundary of Cilicia, to the innermost bend of the bay of Attaleia.

### The Coast of Pamphylia

This bay is a remarkable feature in the shore of Asia Minor; and it is not without some important relations with the history of this part of the world. It forms a deep indentation in the general coastline and is bordered by a plain, which retreats itself like a bay into the mountains. From the shore to the mountains, across the widest part of the plain, the distance is a journey of eight or nine hours. Three principal rivers intersect this level space: The Catarrhactes, which falls over sea cliffs near Attaleia, in the waterfalls which suggested its name; and farther to the east the Cestrus and Eurymedon, which flow by Perga and Aspendus to a low sandy shore.

About the banks of these rivers, and on the open waters of the bay, whence the eye ranges freely over the ragged mountain summits which enclose the scene, armies and fleets had engaged in some those battles of which the results were still felt in the day of St. Paul. From the base of that steep shore on the west, where a rugged knot of mountains is piled up into snowy heights above the rocks of Phaselis, the united squadron of the Romans and Rhodians sailed across the bay in the year 190 BC; and it was in rounding that promontory near Side on the east that they caught sight of the ships of Antiochus, as they came on by the shore with the dreadful Hannibal on board. And close to the same spot where the Latin power then defeated the Greek king of Syria, another battle had been fought at an earlier period, in which the Greeks gave one of their last blows to the retreating force of Persia, and the Athenian Cimon gained a victory both by land and sea;

thus winning, according to the boast of Plutarch, in one day the laurels of Plataea and Salamis.

On that occasion a large navy sailed up the river Eurymedon as far as Aspendus. Now, the bar at the mouth of the river would make this impossible. The same is the case with the river Cestrus which, Strabo says, was navigable in his day for sixty stadia, or seven miles, to the city of Perga. Ptolemy calls this city an inland town of Pamphylia; but so he speaks of Tarsus in Cilicia. And we have seen that Tarsus, though truly called an inland town, as being some distance from the coast, was nevertheless a mercantile harbor. Its relation with the Cydnus was similar to that of Perga with the Cestrus; and the vessel which brought St. Paul to win more glorious victories than those of the Greek and Roman battles of the Eurymedon, came up the course of the Cestrus to her moorings near the Temple of Diana.

All that Strabo tells us of this city is that the Temple of Diana was on an eminence at some short distance and that an annual festival was held in honor of the goddess. The chief associations of Perga are with the Greek rather than the Roman period; and its existing remains are described as being "purely Greek, there being no trace of any later inhabitants." Its prosperity was probably arrested by the building of Attaleia (Acts 15:25) after the death of Alexander, in a more favorable situation on the shore of the bay. Attaleia has never ceased to be an important town since the day of its foundation by Attalus Philadelphus.

But when the traveler pitches his tent at Perga, he finds only the encampments of shepherds, who pasture their cattle amidst the ruins. These ruins are walls and towers, columns and cornices, a theater and a stadium, a broken aqueduct encrusted with the calcareous deposit of the Pamphylian streams, and tombs scattered on both sides of the site of the town. Nothing else remains of Perga but the beauty of its natural situation, "between and upon the sides of two hills, with an extensive valley in

front, watered by the river Cestrus, and backed by the mountains of the Taurus."<sup>204</sup>

The coins of Perga are a lively illustration of its character as a city of the Greeks. We have no memorial of its condition as a city of the Romans; nor does our narrative require us to delay any longer in describing it. The Apostles made no long stay in Perga. This seems evident, not only from the words used at this point of the history, but from the marked manner in which we are told that they *did* stay (Acts 15:25), on their return from the interior.

### Mark's Return to Jerusalem

One event, however, is mentioned as occurring at Perga, which, though noticed incidentally and in few words, was attended with painful feelings at the time, and involved the most serious consequences. It must have occasioned deep sorrow to Paul and Barnabas, and possibly even then some mutual estrangement; and afterwards it became the cause of their quarrel and separation (Acts 15:37-39). Mark" departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work." He came with them up the Cestrus as far as Perga, but there he forsook them, and taking advantage of some vessel which was sailing towards Palestine, he returned to Jerusalem (Acts 13:13), which had been his home in earlier years (Acts 12:12,25).

We are not to suppose that this implied an absolute rejection of Christianity. A soldier who has wavered in one battle may live to obtain a glorious victory. Mark was afterwards not unwilling to accompany the apostles on a second missionary journey (Acts 15:37), and actually did accompany Barnabas again to Cyprus (15:30). Nor did St. Paul always retain his unfavorable judgment of him (Acts 15:38), but long afterwards, in his Roman imprisonment, commended him to the Colossians as one who was a "fellow worker unto the Kingdom of God," and "a comfort" to himself (Col. 4:10). And in his last letter, just

<sup>204</sup> This description is quoted from Sir C. Fellows, *Asia Minor*, 1839, pp. 190-193.

before his death, he speaks of him again as one "profitable to him for the ministry." (2 Tim. 4:11)

Yet if we consider all the circumstances of his life, we shall not find it difficult to blame his conduct in Pamphylia, and to see good reasons why Paul should afterwards, at Antioch, distrust the steadiness of his character. The child of a religious mother, who had sheltered in her house the Christian disciples in a fierce persecution, he had joined himself to Barnabas and Saul when they traveled from Jerusalem to Antioch on their return from a mission of charity. He had been a close spectator of the wonderful power of the religion of Christ, he had seen the strength of faith under trial in his mother's home, he had attended his kinsman Barnabas in his labors of zeal and love, he had seen the word of Paul sanctioned and fulfilled by miracles, he had even been the minister of apostles in their successful enterprise (Acts 13:5); and now he forsook them when they were about to proceed through greater difficulties to more glorious success.

We are not left in doubt as to the real character of his departure. He was drawn from the work of God by the attraction of an earthly home. As he looked up from Perga to the Gentile mountains, his heart failed him, and he turned back with desire towards Jerusalem. He could not resolve to continue persevering," in journeyings often, in perils of rivers, in perils of robbers." (2 Cor. 11:26)

'Perils of rivers" and" perils of robbers" – these words express the very dangers which St. Paul would be most likely to encounter on his journey from Perga in Pamphylia to Antioch in Pisidia. The lawless and marauding habits of the population of those mountains which separate the table land in the interior of Asia Minor from the plains on the south coast were notorious in all parts of ancient history. Strabo uses the same strong language both of the Isaurians who separated Cappadocia from Cilicia, and of their neighbors the Pisidians, whose native fortresses were the barrier between Phrygia and Pamphylia. We have the same character of the latter of these robber

tribes in Xenophon, who is the first to mention them; and in Zosimus, who relieves the history of the later empire by telling us of the adventures of a robber chief who defied the Romans and died a desperate death in these mountains.

### Mountain Scenery of Pisidia

Alexander the Great, when he heard that Memnon's fleet was in the Aegean, and marched from Perga to rejoin Parmenio in Phrygia, found some of the worst difficulties of his whole campaign in penetrating through this district.

Pisidia was the scene of one of the roughest campaigns connected with the wars of Antiochus the Great, carried out among the hill forts near the upper waters of the Cestrus and Eurymedon. (An episode of the TV documentary series *Sunset Earth* was about a Turkish village on the Eurymedon river.)

No population through the midst of which St. Paul ever traveled abound in more of those perils by robbers that the wild and lawless clans of the Pisidian Highlanders.

And if on this journey he was exposed to dangers from the attacks of men, there might be other dangers, not less imminent, arising from the natural character of the country itself. To travelers in the East there is a reality in "perils by rivers" which we in England are hardly able to understand. Unfamiliar with the sudden flooding of thirsty water courses, we seldom comprehend the full force of some of the most striking images in the Old and New Testaments. The rivers of Asia Minor, like all the rivers in the Levant, are liable to violent and sudden changes.<sup>205</sup> And no district in Asia Minor is more singularly characterized by its water floods than the mountainous tract of Pisidia, where rivers burst out at the bases of huge cliffs, or dash down wildly through narrow ravines.

<sup>205</sup> The crossing of the Halys by Croesus, as told by Herodotus, is an illustration of the difficulties presented by the larger rivers of Asia Minor.

The very notice of the *bridges* in Strabo, when he tells us how the Cestrus and Eurymedon tumble down from the heights and precipices of Selge to the Pamphylian Sea, is more expressive than any elaborate description. We cannot determine the position of any bridges which the apostle may have crossed; but his course was never far from the channels of these two rivers. It is an interesting fact that his name is still traditionally connected with one of them, as we learn from the information recently given to an English traveler by the Archbishop of Pisidia.

206

Such considerations respecting the physical peculiarities of the country now traversed by St. Paul naturally lead us into various trains of thought concerning the scenery, the climate, and the seasons. And there are certain probabilities in relation to the time of the year when the apostle may be supposed to have journeyed this way, which may well excuse some remarks on these subjects. And this is all the more allowable, because we are absolutely without any data for determining the year in which this first missionary expedition was undertaken.

All that we can assert with confidence is that it must have taken place somewhere in the interval between the years 45 and 50. But this makes us all the more desirous to determine, by any reasonable conjectures, the movements of the apostle in reference to a better chronology than that which reckons by successive years – the chronology which furnishes us with the real imagery round his path – the chronology of the seasons.

Now we may well suppose that he might sail from Seleucia to Salamis at the beginning of spring. In that age and in those waters the

<sup>206</sup> ‘About two hours and a half from Isbarta, towards the southeast, is the village of Sav, where is the source of a river called the Sav-Sou. Five hours and a half beyond, and still towards the southeast, is the village of *Paoli* (St. Paul), and here the river, which had continued its course so far, is lost in the mountains.’ Arundell’s *Asia Minor*, vol ii, p. 31. The river is probably the Eurymedon.

commencement of a voyage was usually determined by the advance of the season. The sea was technically said to be open in the month of March. If St. Paul began his journey in that month, the lapse of two months might easily bring him to Perga and allow sufficient time for all that we are told of his proceedings at Salamis and Paphos. If we suppose him to have been in Perga in May, this would have been exactly the most natural time for a journey to the mountains. Earlier in the spring, the passes would have been filled with snow. In the heat of the summer the weather would have been less favorable for the journey. In the autumn the disadvantages would have been still greater, from the approaching difficulties of winter. But again, if St. Paul was at Perga in May, a further reason may be given why he did not stay there, but seized all the advantages of the season for prosecuting his journey to the interior.

The habits of a people are always determined or modified by the physical peculiarities of their country; and a custom prevails among the inhabitants of this part of Asia Minor, which there is every reason to believe has been unbroken for centuries. At the beginning of the hot season they move up from the plains to the cool basin like hollows on the mountains. These *yailahs* or summer retreats are always spoken of with pride and satisfaction, and the time of the journey anticipated with eager delight. When the time arrives, the people may be seen ascending to the upper grounds, men, women, and children, with flocks and herds, camels and asses, like the patriarchs of old.

<sup>207</sup> “We passed many families enroute from Adalia to the mountain plains for the summer.” During a halt in the valley of the Xanthus, Sir C. Fellows says that an almost uninterrupted train of cattle and people (nearly twenty families) passed by. The snowy tops of the mountains were seen through the lofty and dark green fir trees, terminating in abrupt cliffs ... From clefts in these gushed out cascades ... and the waters were carried away by the wind in spray over the green woods. ... In a zigzag course up the wood lay the track leading to the cool places. In advance of the pastoral

If then St. Paul was at Perga in May, he would find the inhabitants deserting its hot and silent streets. They would be moving in the direction of his own intended journey. He would be under no temptation to stay. And if we imagine him as joining some such caravan of Pamphylian families on his way to the Pisidian mountains, it gives much interest and animation to the thought of this part of his progress.

Perhaps it was in such company that the Apostle entered the first passes of the mountainous district, along some road formed partly by artificial pavement and partly by the native marble, with high cliffs frowning on either hand, with tombs and inscriptions, even then ancient, on the projecting rocks around, and with copious fountains bursting out among thickets of pomegranates and oleanders. <sup>208</sup>

---

groups were the straggling goats, browsing on the fresh blossoms of the wild almond as they passed. In more steady courses followed the small black cattle ... then came the flocks of sheep and the camels ... bearing piled loads of plows, tent poles, kettles, ... and amidst this rustic load was always seen the rich Turkish carpet and damask cushions, the pride even of the tented Turk.

<sup>208</sup> IN ascending from Limyra, a small plain on the coast not far from Phaselis, Spratt and Forbes mentions "a rock tablet with a long Greek inscription ... by the side of an ancient paved road, at a spot where numerous and copious springs gush out among thickets of pomegranates and oleanders." Fellows, in coming to Attaleia from the north, 'suddenly entered a pass between the mountains, which diminished in width until cliffs almost perpendicular enclosed us on either side. The descent became so abrupt that we were compelled to dismount and walk for two hours, during which time we continued rapidly descending an ancient paved road, formed principally of the native marble rock, but which had been perfected with large stones at a very remote age; the deep ruts of chariot wheels were apparent in many places. The road is much worn by time; and the people of a later age, diverging from the track, have formed a road with stones very inferior both in size and arrangement. About half an hour before I reached the plain ... a view burst upon me through the cliffs ... I looked down from the rocky steps of the throne of winter upon the rich and verdant plain of

The oleander," the favorite flower of the Levantine midsummer," abounds in the lower watercourses; and in the month of May it borders all the banks with a line of brilliant crimson. As the path ascends, the rocks begin to assume the wilder grandeur of mountains, the richer fruit trees begin to disappear, and the pine and walnut succeed; though the plane tree still stretches its wide leaves over the stream which dashes wildly down the raving, crossing and recrossing the dangerous road. The alteration of climate which attends on the traveler's progress is soon perceptible. A few hours will make the difference of weeks or even months. When the corn is in the ear on the lowlands, plowing and sowing are hardly well begun upon the highlands. Spring flowers may be seen in the mountains by the very edge of the snow, when the anemone is withered in the plain, and the pink veins in the white asphodel flower are shriveled by the heat. When the cottages are closed and the grass is parched, and everything is silent below in the purple haze and stillness of midsummer, clouds are seen drifting among the Pisidian precipices, and the cavern is often a welcome shelter from a cold and penetrating wind.

The upper part of this district is a wild region of cliffs, often isolated and bare, and separates from each other by valleys of sand, which the storm drives with blinding violence among the shivered points. The trees become fewer and smaller at every step. Three belts of vegetation are successively passed through in ascending from the coast; first the oak woods, then the forests of pine, and lastly the dark scattered patches of the cedar juniper. Then we reach the treeless plains of the interior, which stretch in dreary extension to the north and east.

---

summer, with the blue sea in the distance ... Nor was the foreground without its interest; on each projecting rock stood an ancient sarcophagus, and the trees half concealed the lids and broken sculptures of innumerable tombs." This may very well have been the pass and road by which the apostle Paul ascended.

After such a journey as this, separating we know not where from the companions they may have joined, and often thinking of the Christian companion who had withdrawn himself from their society when they needed him most, Paul and Barnabas emerged from the rugged mountain passes and came upon the central tableland of Asia Minor. The whole interior region of the peninsula may be correctly described by this term; for though intersected in various directions by mountain ranges, it is on the whole a vast plateau, elevated higher than the summit of Ben Nevis above the level of the sea. This is its general character, though a long journey across the district brings the traveler through many varieties of scenery. Sometimes he moves for hours along the dreary margin of an inland sea of salt, sometimes he rests in a cheerful hospitable town by the shore of a freshwater lake. In some places the ground is burnt and volcanic, in others green and fruitful. Sometimes it is depressed into watery hollows, where wild swans visit the pools, and storks are seen fishing and feeding among the weeds. More frequently it is spread out into broad open downs, like Salisbury Plain, which afford an interminable pasture for flocks of sheep.<sup>209</sup>

To the north of Pamphylia the elevated plain stretches through Phrygia for a hundred miles from Mount Taurus to Mount Olympus. The southern portion of these bleak uplands was crossed by St. Paul's track, immediately before his arrival at Antioch in Pisidia. The features of human life which he had around him are probably almost as unaltered as the scenery of the country – dreary villages with flat roofed huts and cattle sheds in the day, and at night an encampment of tents of goats' hair – horses fastened around – and in the distance the moon shining on the snowy summits of Taurus.

The *Sultan Tareek*, or Turkish Royal Road from Adalia to Kiutayah and Constantinople, passes

<sup>209</sup> We shall have occasion to return presently to this character of much of the interior of Asia Minor when we come to the mention of Lycaonia (Acts 14:6).

nearly due north by the beautiful lake of Buldur. The direction of Antioch in Pisidia bears more to the east. After passing somewhere near Selge and Sagalassus, St. Paul approached by the margin of the much larger, though perhaps not less beautiful, lake of Eyerdir. The position of the city is not far from the northern shore of this lake, at the base of a mountain range which stretches through Phrygia in a southeasterly direction. It is, however, not many years since this statement could be confidently made.

### Situation of Antioch

Strabo describes its position with remarkable clearness and precision. His words are as follows: "In the district of Phrygia called Paroreia, there is a certain mountain ridge, stretching from east to west. On each side there is a large plain below this ridge; and it has two cities in its neighborhood: Philomelium on the north, and on the other side Antioch, called Antioch near Pisidia. The former lies entirely in the plain, the latter (which has a Roman colony) is on a height." With this description before him, and taking into account certain indications of distance furnished by ancient authorities, Colonel Leake, who has perhaps done more for the elucidation of Classical Topography than any other man, felt that Ak Sher, the position assigned to Antioch by D'Anville and other geographers, could not be the true place; Ak Sher is on the north of the ridge, and position could not be made to harmonize with the Tables. But he was not in possession of any information which could lead him to the true position; and the problem remained unsolved until Mr. Arundell started from Smyrna in 1833 with the deliberate purpose of discovering the scene of St. Paul's labors.

He successfully proved that Ak Sher is Philomelium, and that Antioch is at Yalobatch, on the other side of the ridge. The narrative of his successful journey is very interesting; and every Christian ought to sympathize in the pleasure with which, knowing that Antioch was 70 miles from Apames, and forty five miles from Appolonia, he first succeeded in identifying Appolonia; and then, exactly at the right

distance, perceived in the tombs near a fountain, and the vestiges of an ancient road, sure indications of his approach to a ruined city. He then saw, across the plain, the remains of an aqueduct at the base of the mountain. And finally, arrived at Jalobatch, ascended to the elevation described by Strabo, and felt, as he looked on the superb ruins around, that he was" really on the spot consecrated by the labors and persecution of the apostles Paul and Barnabas."

The position of the Pisidian Antioch being thus determined by the convergence of ancient authority and modern research, we perceive that it lay on an important line of communication westward by Apamea with the valley of the Meander and eastward by Iconium with the country behind the Taurus. In this general direction, between Smyrna and Ephesus on the one hand, and the Cilician Gates which lead down to Tarsus on the other, conquering armies and trading caravans, Persian satraps, Roman proconsuls and Turkish pashas, have traveled for centuries.<sup>210</sup>

The Pisidian Antioch was situated about halfway between these extreme points. It was built by the founder of the Syrian Antioch; and in the age of the Greek kings of the line of Seleucus it was a town of considerable importance. But its appearance had been modified since the campaigns of Scipio and Manlius and the defeat of Mithridates, by the introduction of Roman usages and the Roman style of building. This was true to a certain extent of all the larger towns of Asia Minor; but this change had probably taken place in the Pisidian Antioch more than in many cities of greater importance, for, like Philippi, it was a Roman *colonia*.<sup>211</sup>

<sup>210</sup> In illustration of this we may refer to the caravan routes and Persian military roads as indicated in Kiepert's *Hellas*, to Xenophon's *Anabasis*, to Alexander's campaign and Cicero's progress, to the invasion of Tamerlane, and the movements of the Turkish and Egyptian armies in 1832 and 1833.

<sup>211</sup> The constitution of a Roman *Colonia* will be explained when we come to the discussion of Acts 16:12.

Without delaying, at present, to explain the full meaning of this term, we may say that the character impressed on any town in the Empire which had been made subject to military colonization was particularly Roman, and all such towns were bound by a tie of peculiar closeness to the Mother City. The insignia of Roman power were displayed more conspicuously than in other towns in the same province. In the provinces where Greek was spoken, while other towns had Greek letters on their coins, the money of the colonies was distinguished by Latin superscriptions. Antioch must have had some eminence among the eastern colonies, for it was founded by Augustus, and called Caesarea. When St. Paul visited these cities, and more than at any other city visited on this journey, he would hear Latin spoken side by side with the Greek and ruder Pisidian dialect.<sup>212</sup>

### The Synagogue

Along with this population of Greeks, Romans, and native Pisidians, a greater or smaller number of Jews was intermixed. They may not have been a very numerous body, for only one synagogue is mentioned in the narrative. But it is evident from the events recorded that they were an influential body, that they had made many proselytes, and that they had obtained some considerable dominion over the minds of the Gentile women.

On the Sabbath days the Jews and the proselytes met in the synagogue. It is evident that at this time full liberty of public worship was permitted to the Jewish people in all parts of the Roman Empire, whatever limitations might have been enacted by law or compelled by local opposition, as relates to the form and situation of the synagogues. We infer from Epiphanius that the Jewish places of worship were often erected in open and conspicuous positions. This natural wish may frequently

<sup>212</sup> We shall have to return to this subject of language again in speaking of the 'speech of Lycaonia.' Acts 14:11.

have been checked by the influence of the heathen priests, who would not willingly see the votaries of an ancient idolatry forsaking the temple for the synagogue; and feelings of the same kind may probably have hindered the Jews, even if they had the ability or desire, from erecting religious edifices of any remarkable grandeur and solidity.

No ruins of the synagogues of imperial times have remained to us, like those of the temples in every province, from which we are able to convince ourselves of the very form and size of the sanctuaries of Jupiter, Apollo, and Diana. There is little doubt that the sacred edifices of the Jews have been modified by the architecture of the remote countries through which they have been dispersed, and the successive centuries through which they have continued a separated people. Under the Roman Empire it is natural to suppose that they must have varied, according to circumstances, through all gradations of magnitude and decoration, from the simple *proseucha* at Philippi to the magnificent prayer houses at Alexandria.

Yet there are certain traditional peculiarities which have doubtless united together by a common resemblance the Jewish synagogues of all ages and countries. The arrangement for the women's places in a separate gallery, or behind a partition of lattice work – the desk in the center where the Reader, like Ezra in ancient times, from his "pulpit of wood," may "open the Book in the sight of all the people ... and read in the Book the Law of God distinctly, and give the sense, and cause them to understand the reading," (Neh. 8:4 8) – the carefully closed Ark on the side of the building nearest to Jerusalem, for the preservation of the rolls or manuscripts of the Law, the seats all round the building from which "the eyes of all them that are in the synagogue" may "be fastened" on him who speaks, (see Luke 4:20) – the "chief seats," which were appropriated to the "ruler" or "rulers" of the synagogue, according as its organization might be more or less complete, and which were so dear to the hearts of those who professed to be peculiarly learned or

devout – these are some of the features of a synagogue, which agree at once with the notices of Scripture, the descriptions in the Talmud, and the practice of modern Judaism.

The meeting of the congregations in ancient synagogues may be easily realized, if due allowance be made for the change of costume, for those who have seen the Jews at their worship in the large towns of Modern Europe. On their entrance into the building, the four cornered Tallith was first placed like a veil over the head, or like a scarf over the shoulders.<sup>213</sup> The prayers were then recited by an officer called the "Angel" or "Apostle," of the assembly. The prayers were doubtless many of them identically the same with those which are found in the present service books of the German and Spanish Jews, though their liturgies, in the course of ages, have undergone successive developments, the steps of which are not easily ascertained.

It seems that the prayers were sometimes read in the vernacular language of the country where the synagogue was built; but the Law was always read in Hebrew. The sacred roll of manuscript was handed from the Ark to the Reader by the Chazan, or "Minister;" (Luke 4:17,29) and then certain portions were read according to a fixed cycle, first from the Law and then from the Prophets. It is impossible to determine the period when the sections from these two divisions of the Old Testament were arranged as in use at present; but the same necessity for translation and explanation existed then as now. The Hebrew and English are now printed in parallel columns. Then, the reading of the Hebrew was elucidated by the Targum or the Septuagint, or followed by a paraphrase in the spoken language of the country.<sup>214</sup>

<sup>213</sup> The use of the Tallith is said to have arisen from the Mosaic commandment directing that fringes should be worn on the four corners of the garment.

<sup>214</sup> In Palestine the Syro-Chaldaic language would be used; in the Dispersion, usually the Greek. Lightfoot

The Reader stood while thus employed, and all the congregation sat around. The manuscript was rolled up and returned to the Chazan. (See Luke 4:20) Then followed a pause during which strangers or learned men, who had" any word of consolation" or exhortation, rose and addressed the meeting. And thus, after a pathetic enumeration of the sufferings of the chosen people, or an allegorical exposition of some dark passage of Holy Write, the worship was closed with a benediction and a solemn "Amen." (Neh. 8:6; 1 Cor. 14:16)

To such a worship in such a building a congregation came together at Antioch in Pisidia, on the Sabbath which immediately succeeded the arrival of Paul and Barnabas. Proselytes came and seated themselves with the Jews; and among the Jewesses behind the lattice were" honorable women" (Acts 13:50) of the colony. The two strangers entered the synagogue and, wearing the Tallith, which was the badge of an Israelite," sat down" (Acts 13:14) with the rest. The prayers were recited, the extracts from the Law and the Prophets were read (Acts 13:15); the Book returned to the Minister (Luke 4:20), and then we are told that the rules of the synagogue sent to the newcomers, on whom many eyes had already been fixed, and invited them to address the assembly, if they had words of comfort or instruction to speak to their fellow Israelites. The very attitude of St. Paul as he answered the invitation is described to us. He rose from his seat, and with the animated and emphatic gesture which he used on other occasions (Acts 26:1; 21:40; 20:34), he beckoned with his hand (Acts 13:16).

### Address to the Jews

After thus graphically bringing the scene before our eyes, St. Luke gives us, if not the whole speech delivered by St. Paul, yet at least the substance of what he said. For into however short a space he may have condensed the

---

seems to think that the Pisidian language was used here. Strabo speaks of a dialect as peculiar to this district.

speeches which he reports, yet it is no mere outline, no dry analysis of them which he gives. He has evidently preserved, if not *all* the words, yet the *very* words uttered by the apostle. Nor can we fail to recognize in all these speeches a tone of thought, and even of expression, which stamps them with the individuality of the speaker.

On the present occasion we find St. Paul beginning his address by connecting the Messiah whom he preached with the preparatory dispensation which ushered in His advent. He dwells upon the previous history of the Jewish people, for the same reasons which had led St. Stephen to do the like in his defense before the Sanhedrin. He endeavors to conciliate the minds of his Jewish audience by proving to them that the Messiah whom he proclaimed was the same whereto their own prophets bore witness, come not to destroy the law but to fulfill it, and that His advent had been duly heralded by His predicted messenger. He then proceeds to remove the prejudice which the rejection of Jesus by the authorities at Jerusalem (the metropolis of their faith) would naturally raise in the minds of the Pisidian Jews against his divine mission.

He shows that Christ's death and resurrection had accomplished the ancient prophecies and declares this to be the" Glad Tidings" which the apostles were charged to proclaim. Thus far the speech contains nothing which could offend the exclusive spirit of Jewish nationality. On the contrary, St. Paul has endeavored to carry his hearers with him by the topics on which he has dwelt; the Savior whom he declares is" a Savior unto Israel;" the Messiah whom he announces in the fulfiller of the Law and the Prophets. But having thus conciliated their feelings, and won their favorable attention, he proceeds in a bolder tone to declare the catholicity of Christ's salvation and the antithesis between the Gospel and the Law. His concluding words, as St. Luke relates them, might stand as a summary representing in outline the early chapters of the Epistle to the Romans; and therefore, conversely, those chapters will enable us to

realize the manner in which St. Paul would have expanded the heads of argument which his disciple here records. The speech ends with a warning against that bigoted rejection of Christ's doctrine, which this latter portion of the address was so likely to call forth.

The following were the words (so far as they have been preserved to us) spoken by St. Paul on this memorable occasion:

Acts 13:16 41 (translation by the authors; see *Introduction*)

Men of Israel, and ye, proselytes of the Gentiles, who worship the God of Abraham, give audience.

The God of this people Israel chose our fathers, and raised up His people, when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt; and with an high arm brought He them out there from. And about the time of forty years, even as a nurse bears her child, so bare He them through the wilderness. <sup>215</sup>

And He destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, and gave their land as a portion unto His people. And after that He gave unto them Judges about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the Prophet; then desired they a king, and He gave unto them Saul, the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, to rule them for forty years. And when He had removed Saul, He raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said: *I have found David, the son of Jesse, a man after my own heart, which shall fulfill all my will.* <sup>216</sup> Of this man's seed hath God, according to His promise, raised unto Israel a Savior Jesus.

<sup>215</sup> The beauty of this metaphor has been lost to the Authorized version on account of the reading adopted in the Received Text. There is an evident allusion to Deut. 1:31.

<sup>216</sup> Compare Psalm 89:20 with 1 Sam. 13:14. The quotation is from the Septuagint, but not verbatim, being apparently made from memory.

And John was *the messenger who went before His face* <sup>217</sup> *to prepare His way before Him*, and he preached the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. And as John fulfilled his course his saying was, "Whom think ye that I am? I am not He. But behold there cometh one after me whose shoes" latchet I am not worthy to loose."

Men and brethren, <sup>218</sup> whether ye be children of the stock of Abraham, or proselytes of the Gentiles, to you have been sent the tidings of this salvation; for the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew Him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read in their synagogues every Sabbath day, have fulfilled the Scriptures in condemning Him. And though they found in Him no cause of death, yet besought they Pilate that He should be slain. And when they had fulfilled all which was written of Him, they took Him down from the tree, and laid Him in a sepulcher.

But God raised Him from the dead.

And He was seen for many days by them who came up with Him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are now His witnesses to the people of Israel. <sup>219</sup>

And while they proclaim it in Jerusalem, we declare unto you the same Glad Tidings concerning the promise which was made to our fathers; even that God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He hath raised up Jesus from the dead; as it is also written in the second psalm, *Thou art my Son, this day his I begotten thee.* (Psalm 2:7)

<sup>217</sup> Mal. 3:1, as quoted in Matt. 11:10, not exactly after the LXX, but rather according to the literal translation of the Hebrew.

<sup>218</sup> Literally, "men that are my brethren." So in Acts 17:22, "men of Athens." It might be rendered simply "Brethren."

<sup>219</sup> "The people" always means the *Jewish* people.

And whereas He hath raised Him from the grave, no more to return unto corruption, He hath said on this wise, *The blessings of David will I give you, even the blessings which stand fast in holiness.* (Isa. 55:3) Wherefore it is written also in another psalm, *Thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.* (Psalm 16:10) Now David, after he had ministered in his own generation <sup>220</sup> to the will of God, fell asleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption; but He whom God raised from the dead saw no corruption.

Be it known unto you, therefore, men and brethren, that through this Jesus is declared unto you the forgiveness of sins. And in Him all who have faith are justified from all transgressions, wherefrom in the Law of Moses ye could not be justified.

Beware, therefore, lest that come upon you which is spoken in the Prophets, *Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish; for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.* (Hab. 1:5)

This address made a deep and thrilling impression on the audience. While the congregation were pouring out of the synagogue, many of them crowded round the speaker, begging that "these words" which had moved their deepest feelings, might be repeated to them on their next occasion of assembling together. <sup>221</sup> And when at length the mass of the people had dispersed singly or in groups to their

<sup>220</sup> David's ministration was performed (like that of other men) in his own generation; but the ministration of Christ extended to all generations. The thought is similar to Heb. 7:23,24.

<sup>221</sup> It is not quite certain whether we are to understand the words in v. 42 to mean 'the next Sabbath' or some intermediate days of meeting during the week. The Jews were accustomed to meet in the synagogues on Monday and Thursday as well as on Saturday.

homes, many of the Jews and proselytes still clung to Paul and Barnabas, who earnestly exhorted them (in the form of expression which we could almost recognize as St. Paul's, from its resemblance to the phraseology of his Epistles)" to abide in the grace of God"

With what pleasure can we fancy the apostles to have observed these hearers of the Word, who seemed to have heard it in such earnest. How gladly must they have talked with them, entered into various points more fully than was possible in any public address, appealed to them in various ways which no one can touch upon who is speaking to a mixed multitude. Yet, with all their pleasure and their hope, their knowledge of man's heart must have taught them not to be over confident; and therefore they would earnestly urge them to continue in the grace of God; to keep up the impression which had already outlasted their stay within the synagogue; to feed it and keep it alive, and make it deeper and deeper, that it should remain with them forever. What the issue was we know now, nor does that concern us, only we may be sure that here, as in other instances, there were some in whom their hopes and endeavors were disappointed; there were some in whom they were to their fullest extent realized.

### Preaching to the Gentiles

The intervening week between this Sabbath and the next had not only its days of meeting in the synagogue, but would give many opportunities for exhortation and instruction in private houses; the doctrine would be noised abroad, and through the proselytes would come to the hearing of the Gentiles. So that "on the following Sabbath almost the whole city came together to hear the Word of God." The synagogue was crowded. Multitudes of Gentiles were there in addition to the proselytes. This was more than the Jews could bear. Their spiritual pride and exclusive bigotry was immediately roused. They could not endure the notion of others being freely admitted to the same religious privileges with themselves.

This was always the sin of the Jewish people. Instead of realizing their position in the world as the prophetic nation for the good of the whole earth, the indulged in self exalting opinion, that God's highest blessings were only for themselves. Their oppressions and their dispersions had not destroyed this deeply rooted prejudice; but they rather found comfort under the yoke, in brooding over their religious isolation; and even in their remote and scattered settlements, they clung with the utmost tenacity to the feeling of their exclusive nationality. Thus, in the Pisidian Antioch, they who on one Sabbath had listened with breathless interest to the teachers who spoke to them of the promised Messiah, were on the next Sabbath filled with the most excited indignation, when they found that this Messiah was a "light to lighten the Gentiles," as well as "the glory of His people Israel." They made an uproar and opposed the word of Paul with all manner of calumnious expressions, "contradicting and blaspheming."

Then the apostles, promptly recognizing in the willingness of the Gentiles and the unbelief of the Jews the clear indications of the path of duty, followed that bold course which was alien to all the prejudices of a Jewish education.<sup>222</sup> They turned at once and without reserve to the Gentiles. St. Paul was not unprepared for the events which called for this decision. The prophetic intimations at his first conversion, his vision in the Temple at Jerusalem, his experience at the Syrian Antioch, his recent success in the island of Cyprus, must have led him to expect the Gentiles to listen to that message which the Jews were too ready to scorn. The words with which he turned from his unbelieving countrymen were these: "It was needful that the Word of God should first be spoken unto you; but inasmuch as ye reject it, and deem yourselves unworthy of eternal life, lo! We turn to the Gentiles." And then he quotes a prophetic passage from their own sacred

<sup>222</sup> Compare 1 Thess. 2:2, where the circumstances appear to have been very similar.

writings. "For thus hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou shouldst be for salvation to the ends of the earth." (Isa. 59:6)

This is the first recorded instance of a scene which was often re enacted. It is the course which St. Paul himself defines in his Epistle to the Romans, when he describes the Gospel as coming first to the Jew and then to the Gentile (Rom. 1:16; 2:9; cf 11:12,25); and it is the course which he followed himself on various occasions of his life, at Corinth (Acts 18:6), at Ephesus (Acts 19:9), and at Rome (Acts 28:28).

That which was often obscurely foretold in the Old Testament, that those should "seek after God who knew Him not," and that He should be honored by "those who were not a people,"<sup>223</sup> that which had already seen its first fulfillment in isolated cases during our Lord's life, as in the centurion and the Syrophenician woman, whose faith had no parallel in all the people of Israel (Matt. 8:5 10; 15:21 28); that which had received an express accomplishment through the agency of two of the chiefest of the apostles, in Cornelius, the Roman officer at Caesarea, and in Sergius Paulus, the Roman governor at Paphos, began now to be realized on a large scale in a whole community.

### Persecution by the Jews

While the Jews blasphemed and rejected Christ, the Gentiles" rejoiced and glorified the Word of God." The counsels of God were not frustrated by the unbelief of His chosen people. A new Israel, a new election, succeeded to the former.<sup>224</sup> A church was formed of united Jews and Gentiles; and all who were destined to enter the path of eternal life were gathered into the catholic brotherhood of the hitherto separated races. The synagogue had rejected the inspired missionaries, but the apostolic instruction went on in some private house or public building

<sup>223</sup> See Hosea 1:10; 2:23, as quoted in Romans 9:25,26.

<sup>224</sup> See Rom. 9:7; Gal. 6:16.

belonging to the heathen. And gradually the knowledge of Christianity began to be disseminated through the whole vicinity. (Acts 13:49)

The enmity of the Jews, however, was not satisfied by the expulsion of the apostles from their synagogue. What they could not accomplish by violence and calumny, they succeeded in effecting by a pious intrigue. That influence of women in religious questions, to which our attention will be repeatedly called hereafter, is here for the first time brought before our notice in the sacred narrative of St. Paul's life. Strabo, who was intimately acquainted with the social position of the female sex in the towns of Western Asia, speaks in strong terms of the power which they possessed and exercised in controlling and modifying the religious opinions of the men. This general fact received one of its most striking illustrations in the case of Judaism.

We have already more than once alluded to the influence of proselytes at Damascus; and the good service which women contributed towards the early progress of Christianity is abundantly known both from the Acts and the Epistles (Acts 16:14; 18:2; Phil. 4:3; 1 Cor. 7:16). Here they appear in a position less honorable, but not less influential. The Jews contrived, through the female proselytes at Antioch, to win over to their cause some influential members of their sex, and through them to gain the ear of men who occupied a position of eminence in the city. Thus a systematic persecution was excited against Paul and Barnabas. Whether the supreme magistrates of the colony were induced by this unfair agitation to pass a sentence of formal banishment, we are not informed (we should, rather, infer the contrary, since they revisited the place on their return from Derbe (15:21)); but for the present the apostles were compelled to retire from the colonial limits.

In cases such as these, instruction had been given by our Lord himself how His apostles were to act. During His life on earth, He had said to the Twelve, "Whosoever shall not receive

you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily, I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city." (Mark 6:11; Matt. 10:14,15) <sup>225</sup> And while Paul and Barnabas thus fulfilled our Lord's words, shaking off from their feet the dust of the dry and sunburnt road, in token of God's judgment on willful unbelievers, and turning their steps eastwards in the direction of Lycaonia, another of the sayings of Christ was fulfilled, in the midst of those who had been obedient to the faith: "Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice and be exceeding glad, for great is your reward in heaven; for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you." (Matt. 5:11,12)

Even while their faithful teachers were removed from them, and traveling across the bare uplands which separate Antioch from the plan of Iconium, <sup>226</sup> the disciples of the former city received such manifest tokens of the love of God, and the power of the Holy Spirit, that they were "filled with joy" in the midst of persecution.

### Iconium

Iconium has obtained a place in history far more distinguished than that of the Pisidian Antioch. It is famous as the cradle of the rising power of the conquering Turks. <sup>227</sup> And the remains of its

<sup>225</sup> It was taught in the schools of the Scribes that the dust of a heathen land defiled by the touch. Hence the shaking of dust off the feet implied that the city was regarded as profane.

<sup>226</sup> Leake approached Iconium from the northern side of the mountains which separate Antioch from Philomelium. He says "On the descent from a ridge branching eastward from these mountains, we came in sight of the vast plain around Konieh, and of the lake which occupies the middle of it; and we saw the city with its mosques and ancient walls, still at the distance of twelve or fourteen miles from us."

<sup>227</sup> Iconium was the capital of the Seljuk Sultans and had a great part in the growth of the Ottoman Empire.

Mahomedan architecture still bear a conspicuous testimony to the victories and strong government of a tribe of Tatar invaders.

But there are other features in the view of modern *Konieh* which to us are far more interesting. To the traveler in the footsteps of St. Paul, it is not the armorial bearings of the Knights of St. John, carved over the gateways in the streets of Rhodes, which arrest the attention, but the ancient harbor and the view across the sea to the opposite coast. And at *Konieh* his interest is awakened, not by minarets and palaces and Saracenic gateways, but by the vast plain and the distant mountains.

These features remain what they were in the first century, while the town has been repeatedly destroyed and rebuilt, and its architectural character entirely altered. Little, if anything, remains of Greek or Roman *Iconium*, if we except the ancient inscriptions and the fragments of sculptures which are built into the Turkish walls. At a late period of the Empire it was made a *Colonia*, like its neighbor, *Antioch*; but it was not so in the time of St. Paul.

There is no reason to suppose that its character was different from that of other important towns on the principal lines of communication throughout *Asia Minor*. The elements of its population would be as follows: a large number of trifling and frivolous Greeks, whose principal places of resort would be the theater and the market place; some remains of a still older population, coming in occasionally from the country or residing in a separate quarter of the town; some few Roman officials, civil or military, holding themselves proudly aloof from the inhabitants of the subjugated province; and an old established colony of Jews, who exercised their trade during the week, and met

<sup>228</sup> *Konieh* extends to the east and south over the plain far beyond the walls, which are about two miles in circumference ... Mountains covered with snow rise on every side, excepting towards the east, where a plain, as flat as the desert of Arabia, extends far beyond the reach of the eye.

on the Sabbath to read the Law in the synagogue.

The same kind of events took place here as in *Antioch*, and almost in the same order (Acts 15:1-5). The apostles went first to the synagogue, and the effect of their discourses there was such that great numbers of both the Jews and Greeks (i.e. proselytes or heathens) believed the Gospel. The unbelieving Jews raised up an indirect persecution by exciting the minds of the Gentile population against those who received the Christian doctrine. But the apostles persevered and remained in the city some considerable time, having their confidence strengthened by the miracles which God worked through their instrumentality, in attestation of the truth of His Word.

There is an apocryphal narrative of certain events assigned to this residence at *Iconium* (the legend of Paul and *Thecla*); and we may innocently adopt so much of the legendary story as to imagine St. Paul preaching long and late to crowded congregations, as he did afterwards at *Assos* (Acts 20:7-11), and his enemies bringing him before the civil authorities, with the cry that he was disturbing their households by his sorcery, or with complaints like those at *Philippi* and *Ephesus*, that he was "exceedingly troubling their city," and "turning away much people." (Acts 16:20; 19:26)

We learn from an inspired source (Acts 14:4) that the whole population of *Iconium* was ultimately divided into two great factions (a common occurrence, on far less important occasions, in these cities of oriental Greeks), and that one party took the side of the apostles, the other that of the Jews. But here, as at *Antioch*, the influential classes were on the side of the Jews. A determined attempt was at last made to crush the apostles, by loading them with insult and actually stoning them. Learning this wicked conspiracy, in which the magistrates themselves were involved, they fled to some of the neighboring districts of *Lycaonia*, where they might be more secure and have more liberty in preaching the Gospel.

It would be a very natural course for the apostles, after the cruel treatment they had experienced in the great towns on a frequented route, to retire into a wilder region and among a ruder population. In any country, the political circumstances of which resemble those of Asia Minor under the early emperors, there must be many districts into which the civilization of the conquering and governing people has hardly penetrated. An obvious instance is furnished by our Eastern presidencies, in the Hindu villages, which have retained their character with alteration, notwithstanding the successive occupations by Mahommedans and English. Thus, in the Eastern provinces of the Roman Empire there must have been many towns and villages where local customs were untouched, and where Greek, though certainly understood, was not commonly spoken. Such, perhaps, were the places which now come before our notice in the Acts of the Apostles, small towns, with a rude and primitive superstition (Acts 14:11,12), Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia (Acts 14:6).

The district of Lycaonia extends from the ridges of Mount Taurus and the border of Cilicia, on the south, to the Cappadocian hills, on the north. It is a bare and dreary region, unwatered by streams, though in parts liable to occasional inundations. Strabo mentions one place where water was even sold for money. In this respect there must be a close resemblance between this country and large tracts of Australia. Nor is this the only particular in which the resemblance may be traced. Both regions afford excellent pasture for flocks of sheep, and give opportunities for obtaining large possessions by trade in wool. In was here, on the downs of Lycaonia, that Amyntas, while he yet led the life of a nomad chief, before the time of his political elevation, fed his three hundred flocks.

### Lycaonia

Of the whole district Iconium was properly the capital; and the plain round Iconium may be reckoned as its great central space, situated midway between Cilicia and Cappadocia. This plain is spoken of as the largest in Asia Minor. It is almost like the steppes of Great Asia, of which

the Turkish invaders must often have been reminded when they came to these level spaces in the West. The camels which convey modern travelers to and from Konieh find by the side of their path tufts of salt and prickly herbage not very dissimilar to that which grows in their native deserts.

Across some portion of this plain Paul and Barnabas traveled before as well as after their residence in Iconium. After leaving the high land to the northwest, during a journey of several hours before arriving at the city, the eye ranges freely over a vast expanse of level ground to the south and the east. The two most eminent objects in the view are certain snowy summits which rise high above all the intervening hills in the direction of Armenia; and, in the nearer horizon, the singular mountain mass called the Kara Dagh or Black Mount, southeastwards in the direction of Cilicia. And still these features continue to be conspicuous after Iconium is left far behind, and the traveler moves on over the plain towards Lystra and Derbe.

Mount Argaeus still rises far to the northeast, at the distance of one hundred and fifty miles. The Black Mountain is gradually approached and discovered to be an isolated mass, with reaches of the plain extending round it like channels of the sea. The cities of Lystra and Derbe were somewhere about the bases of the Black Mountain.

We have dwelt thus minutely on the physical characteristics of this part of Lycaonia, because the positions of its ancient towns have not been determined. We are only acquainted with the general features of the scene. While the site of Iconium has never been forgotten, and that of Antioch in Pisidia has now been clearly identified, those of Lystra and Derbe remain unknown, or at best are extremely uncertain. No conclusive coins or inscriptions have been discovered; nor has there been any such convergence of modern investigation and ancient authority as leads to an infallible result.

We resume the thread of our narrative with the arrival of Paul and Barnabas at Lystra. One peculiar circumstance strikes us immediately in what we read of the events in this town; that no mention occurs of any synagogue or of any Jews. It is natural to infer that there were few Israelites in the place, though it would be a mistake to imagine that there were none. We are instantly brought into contact with a totally new subject, with heathen superstition and mythology; yet not the superstition of an educated mind, as that of Sergius Paulus, nor the mythology of a refined and cultivated taste, like that of the Athenians, but the mythology and superstition of a rude and unsophisticated people.

Thus does the Gospel, in the person of St. Paul, successively clash with opposing powers, with sorcerers and philosophers, cruel magistrates and false divinities. Now it is the rabbinical master of the synagogue, now the listening proselyte from the Greeks, that is resisted or convinced, now the honest inquiry of a Roman officer, now the wild fanaticism of a rustic credulity, that is addressed with bold and persuasive eloquence.

### St. Paul at Lystra

It was a common belief among the ancients that the gods occasionally visited the earth in the form of men. Such a belief with regard to Jupiter," the father of gods and men," would be natural in any rural district; but nowhere should we be prepared to find the traces of it more than at Lystra; for Lystra, as it appears from St. Luke's narrative, was under the tutelage of Jupiter, and tutelary divinities were imagined to haunt the cities under their protection, though elsewhere invisible. The temple of Jupiter was a conspicuous object in front of the city gates (Acts 14:13); what wonder it the citizens should be prone to believe that their" Jupiter, which was before the city," would willingly visit his favorite people? Again, the expeditions of Jupiter were usually represented as attended by Mercury. He was the companion, the messenger, the servant of the gods. Thus the notion of these two divinities

appearing together in Lycaonia is quite in conformity with what we know of the popular belief.

But their appearance in that particular district would be welcomed with more than usual credulity. Those who are acquainted with the literature of the Roman poets are familiar with a beautiful tradition of Jupiter and Mercury visiting in human form those very regions <sup>229</sup> in the interior of Asia Minor. And it is not without a singular interest that we find one of Ovid's stories reappearing in the sacred pages of the Acts of the Apostles. In this instance, as in so many others, the Scripture, in its incidental descriptions of the heathen world, presents" undesigned coincidences" with the facts ascertained from heathen memorials.

These introductory remarks prepare us for considering the miracle recorded in the Acts. We must suppose that Paul gathered groups of the Lystrians about him and addressed them in places of public resort, as a modern missionary might address the natives of a Hindu village. But it would not be necessary in his case, as in that of Schwartz or Martyn, to have learned the primitive language of those to whom he spoke. He addressed them in Greek, for Greek was well understood in this border country of the Lystrians, though their own dialect was either a barbarous corruption of that noble language or the surviving remainder of some older tongue.

The subjects he brought before these illiterate idolaters of Lycaonia were doubtless such as would lead them, by the most natural steps, to the knowledge of the true God and the belief in His Son's resurrection. He told them, as he told the educated Athenians, <sup>230</sup> of Him whose

<sup>229</sup> See the story of Baucis and Philemon, Ovid, *Metamorphosis* vii. 611, etc. Even if the Lycaonians were a Semitic tribe, it is not unnatural to suppose them familiar with Greek mythology. An identification of classical and 'barbarian' divinities had taken place in innumerable instances, as in the case of the Tyrian Hercules and Paphian Venus.

<sup>230</sup> It is important to compare the speeches at Lystra and Athens, and both with the first chapter of Romans.

worship they had ignorantly corrupted; whose unity, power, and goodness they might have discerned through the operations of nature; whose displeasure against sin had been revealed to them by the admonitions of the natural conscience.

On one of these occasions (Acts 15:8) St. Paul observed a cripple, who was earnestly listening to his discourse. He was seated on the ground, for he had an infirmity in his feet and had never walked from the hour of his birth. St. Paul looked at him attentively, with that remarkable expression of the eye which we have already noticed. The same Greek word is used as when the apostle is described as "earnestly beholding the council," and "as setting his eyes on Elymas the sorcerer." (Acts 23:1; 13:9). On this occasion that penetrating glance saw, by the power of the divine Spirit, into the very secrets of the cripple's soul. Paul perceived "that he had faith to be saved." (Acts 14:9) These words, implying so much of moral preparation in the heart of this poor heathen, rise above all that is told of the lame Jew whom Peter, "fastening his eyes upon him with John," had once healed at the temple gate in Jerusalem. (Acts 3)

In other respects the parallel between the two cases is complete. As Peter said in the presence of the Jews, "In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk," so Paul said before his idolatrous audience at Lystra, "Stand upright on thy feet." And in this case, also, the word which had been suggested to the speaker by a supernatural intuition was followed by a supernatural result. The obedient alacrity in the spirit, and the new strength in the body, rushed together simultaneously. The lame man sprang up in the joyful consciousness of a power he had never felt before, and walked like those who had never had experience of infirmity.

And now arose a great tumult of voices from the crowd. Such a cure of a congenital disease, so sudden and so complete, would have confounded the most skilful and skeptical physicians. An illiterate people would be filled with astonishment and rush immediately to the conclusion that supernatural powers were

present among them. These Lycaonians thought at once of their native traditions, and crying out vociferously in their mother tongue, they exclaimed that the gods had again visited them in the likeness of men, that Jupiter and Mercury were again in Lycaonia, that the persuasive speaker was Mercury and his companion Jupiter.

They identified Paul with Mercury because his eloquence corresponded with one of that divinity's attributes. Paul was the "chief speaker" and Mercury was the god of eloquence. And if it be asked why they identified Barnabas with Jupiter, it is evidently a sufficient answer to say that these two divinities were always represented as companions in their terrestrial expeditions.

How truthful and how vivid is the scene brought before us! And how many thoughts it suggests to those who are at once conversant with heathen mythology and disciples of Christian theology! Barnabas, identified with the Father of Gods and Men, seems like a personification of mild beneficence and provident care; while Paul appears invested with more active attributes, flying over the world on the wings of faith and love, with quick words of warning and persuasion, and ever carrying in his hand the purse of the "unsearchable riches."<sup>231</sup>

The news of a wonderful occurrence is never long in spreading through a small country town. At Lystra the whole population was presently in an uproar. They would lose no time in paying due honor to their heavenly visitors. The priest attached to the temple of Jupiter was summoned to do sacrifice to the god whom he served. Bulls and garlands, and whatever else was required for the performance of the ceremony, were duly prepared, and the procession moved amidst crowds of people to the residence of the apostles.

<sup>231</sup> The winged heels and the purse are the well known insignia of Mercury.

### Address to the Gentiles

They, hearing the approach of the multitude, and learning their idolatrous intention, were filled with the utmost horror. They "rent their clothes" and rushed out of the house in which they lodged and met the idolaters approaching the vestibule.<sup>232</sup> There, standing at the doorway, they opposed the entrance of the crowd; and Paul expressed his abhorrence of their intention, and earnestly tried to prevent their fulfilling it, in a speech of which only the following short outline is recorded by St. Luke:

"Sirs, why do ye do these things? We also are men, of like passions with you; and we are come to preach to you the Glad Tidings, that you may turn from these vain idols to the living God, who made the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein. For in the generations that are past, He suffered all the nations of the Gentiles to walk in their own ways. Nevertheless He left not Himself without witness, in that He blessed you, and gave you rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling your hearts with food and gladness."

This address held them listening, but they listened impatiently. Even with this energetic disavowal of his divinity and this strong appeal to their reason, St. Paul found it difficult to dissuade the Lycaonians from offering to him and Barnabas an idolatrous worship (Acts 14:18).

There is no doubt that St. Paul was the speaker, and before we proceed further in the narrative,

---

<sup>232</sup> The word used here does not mean the gate of the city, but the vestibule or gate which gave admission from the public street into the court of the house. So it is used, Matt. 26:71, for the vestibule of the high priest's palace; Luke 16:20, for that of Dives; Acts 10:17, of the house where Peter lodged at Joppa; Acts 12:13, of the house of Mary, the mother of John Mark. It is nowhere used for the gate of a city except in the Apocalypse. Moreover, it seems obvious that if the priest had only brought the victims to sacrifice them at the city gates, it would have been no offering to Paul and Barnabas.

we cannot help pausing to observe the essentially Pauline character which this speech manifests, even in so condensed a summary of its contents. It is full of undesigned coincidences in argument, and even in the expressions employed, with St. Paul's language in other parts of the Acts, and in his own Epistles. Thus, as here he declares the object of his preaching to be that the idolatrous Lystrians should "turn from these vain idols to the living God," so he reminds the Thessalonians how they, at his preaching, had "turned from idols to serve the living and true God." (1 Th. 1:9)

Again, as he tells the Lystrians that "God had in the generations that were past, suffered the nations of the Gentiles to walk in their own ways;" so he tells the Romans that "God in His forbearance had passed over the former sins of men, in the times that were gone by (Rom 3:25); and so he tells the Athenians (Acts 17:30), that" the past times of ignorance God had overlooked." Lastly, how striking is the similarity between the natural theology with which the present speech concludes, and that in the Epistle to the Romans, where, speaking of the heathen, he says that atheists are without excuse," for that which can be known of God is manifested in their hearts, God himself having shown it to them. For His eternal power and Godhead, though they be invisible, yet are seen ever since the world was made, being understood by the works which He hath wrought"

The crowd reluctantly retired, and led the victims away without offering them in sacrifice to the apostles. It might be supposed that at least a command had been obtained over their gratitude and reverence which would not easily be destroyed; but we have to record here one of those sudden changes of feeling which are humiliating proofs of the weakness of human nature and of the superficial character of religious excitement.

The Lycaonians were proverbially fickle and faithless; but we may not too hastily decide that they were worse than many others might have been under the same circumstances. It would

not be difficult to find a parallel to their conduct among the modern converts from idolatry to Christianity. And certainly no later missionaries have had more assiduous enemies than the Jews whom the apostles had everywhere to oppose. Certain Jew from Iconium, and even from Antioch (Acts 14:19), followed in the footsteps of Paul and Barnabas and endeavored to excite the hostility of the Lystrians against them. When they heard of the miracle worked on the lame man, and found how great an effect it had produced on the people of Lystra, they would be ready with a new interpretation of this occurrence. They would say that it had been accomplished, not by Divine agency, but by some diabolical magic; as once they had said at Jerusalem, that He who came "to destroy the works of the Devil," cast out devils" by Beelzebub the prince of the devils." (Matt. 12:24)

#### St. Paul Stoned

And this is probably the true explanation of that sudden change of feeling among the Lystrians, which at first sight is very surprising. Their own interpretation of what they had witnessed having been disavowed by the authors of the miracle themselves, they would readily adopt a new interpretation, suggested by those who appeared to be well acquainted with the strangers, and who had followed them from distant cities. Their feelings changed with a revulsion as violent as that which afterwards took place among the "barbarous people" of Malta (Acts 28:4-6), who first thought St. Paul was a murderer, and then a god. The Jews, taking advantage of the credulity of a rude tribe, were able to accomplish at Lystra the design they had meditated in Iconium (Acts 14:5). St. Paul was stoned – not hurried out of the city to execution like St. Stephen, the memory of whose death must have come over St. Paul at this moment with impressive force – but stoned somewhere in the streets of Lystra, and then

dragged through the city gate and cast outside the walls, under the belief that he was dead. <sup>233</sup>

This is that occasion to which the apostle afterwards alluded in the words, "once I was stoned," in that long catalog of sufferings. Thus was he "in perils by his own countrymen, in perils by the heathen," "in deaths oft," "always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in his body ... Always delivered unto death for Jesus" sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in his mortal flesh." <sup>234</sup>

On the present occasion these last words were literally realized, for by the power and goodness of God he rose from a state of apparent death as if by a sudden resurrection. Though "persecuted," he was not "forsaken," though "cast down," he was not destroyed. "As the disciples stood about him, he rose up, and came into the city." We see from this expression that his labors in Lystra had not been in vain. He had found some willing listeners to the truth, some disciples who did not hesitate to show their attachment to their teacher by remaining near his body, which the rest of their fellow citizens had wounded and cast out. These courageous disciples were left for the present in the midst of the enemies of the truth. Jesus Christ had said (Matt. 10:23), "when they persecute you in one city, flee to another;" and the very next day Paul departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

#### Timothy. Derbe

But before we leave Lystra we must say a few words on one spectator of St. Paul's sufferings who is not yet mentioned by St. Luke but who was destined to be the constant companion of his after years, the zealous follower of his doctrine, the faithful partner of his danger and distress. St. Paul came to Lystra again after the

<sup>233</sup> At Jerusalem the law required that these executions should take place outside the city. It must be remembered that stoning was a Jewish punishment, that it was proposed by Jews at Iconium, and instigated and carried out by Jews at Lystra.

<sup>234</sup> Compare 2 Cor. 4:8-12 ;and 11:23-27.

interval of one or two years, and on that occasion we are told (Acts 16:1) that he found a certain Christian there," whose name was Timothy, whose mother was a Jewess, while his father was a Greek," and whose excellent character was highly esteemed by his fellow Christians of Lystra and Iconium. It is distinctly stated that at the time of this second visit Timothy was already a Christian; and since we know from St. Paul's own expression," my own son in the faith," that he was converted by St. Paul himself, we must suppose this change to have taken place at the time of the first visit. <sup>235</sup>

And the reader will remember that St. Paul in the second Epistle to Timothy (3:10,11) reminds him of his own intimate and personal knowledge of the sufferings he had endured," at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra," the places (it will be observed) being mentioned in the exact order in which they were visited, and in which the successive persecutions took place. We have thus the strongest reasons for believing that Timothy was a witness of St. Paul's injurious treatment; and this too at a time of life when the mind receives its deepest impressions from the spectacle of innocent suffering and undaunted courage. And it is far from impossible that the generous and warm hearted youth was standing in that group of disciples who surrounded the apparently lifeless body of the apostle at the outside of the walls of Lystra.

We are called on to observe at this point, with a thankful acknowledgement of God's providence, that the flight from Iconium, and the cruel persecution at Lystra, were events which involved the most important and beneficial consequences to universal Christianity. It was

<sup>235</sup> 1 Tim. 1:2. Compare 1:18 and 2 Tim. 2:1. It is indeed possible that Timothy became a Christian by his mother's influence, and through the recollection of Paul's sufferings, but the common view is the most natural. See what is said in 1 Cor. 4:14,15, 'As my beloved sons I warn you; for though you have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers; for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the Gospel.'

here, in the midst of barbarous idolaters, that the Apostle of the Gentiles found an associate, who became to him and the church far more than Barnabas, the companion of his first mission. As have observed, there appears to have been at Lystra no synagogue, no community of Jews and proselytes, among whom such an associate might naturally have been expected. Perhaps Timothy and his relations may have been almost the only persons of Jewish origin in the town. And his "grandmother Lois" and "mother Eunice" may have been brought there originally by some accidental circumstances, as Lydia (Acts 16:14) was brought from Thyatira to Philippi. And, though there was no synagogue at Lystra, this family may have met with a few others in some *proseucha*, like that in which Lydia and her fellow worshippers met" by the riverside." (Acts 16:13)

Whatever we conjecture concerning the congregational life to which Timothy may have been accustomed, we are accurately informed of the nature of that domestic life which nurtured him for his future labors. The good soil of his heart was well prepared before Paul came, by the instructions of Lois and Eunice (2 Tim. 1:5), to receive the seed of Christian truth, sown at the apostle's first visit, and to produce a rich harvest of faith and good works before the time of his second visit.

Derbe, as we have seen, is somewhere not far from the Black Mountain which rises like an island in the southeastern part of the plain of Lycaonia. A few hours would suffice for the journey between Lystra and its neighboring city. We may infer from the fact that Derbe is not mentioned in the list of places which St. Paul (2 Tim. 3:11) brings to the recollection of Timothy as scenes of past suffering and distress, that in this town the apostles were exposed to no persecution. It may have been a quiet resting place after a journey full of toil and danger. It does not appear that they were hindered in evangelizing the city; and the fruit of their labors was the conversion of many disciples. (Acts 14:21)

And now we have reached the limit of St. Paul's first missionary journey. About this part of the Lycaonian plain, where it approaches, through gradual undulations, to the northern bases of Mount Taurus, he was not far from that well known pass which leads down from the central tableland to Cilicia and Tarsus.<sup>236</sup> But his thoughts did not center in an earthly home. He turned back upon his footsteps and revisited Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch, where he himself had been reviled and persecuted; but where he had left, as sheep in the desert, the disciples whom his Master had enabled him to gather. They needed building up and strengthening in the faith (Acts 14:22), comforting in the midst of their inevitable sufferings, and fencing round by permanent institutions.

Therefore Paul and Barnabas revisited the scenes of their labors, undaunted by the dangers which awaited them, and using words of encouragement which none but the founders of a true religion would have ventured to address to their earliest converts, that "we can only enter the kingdom of God by passing through much tribulation." But not only did they fortify their faith by passing words of encouragement; they also ordained elders in every church after the pattern of the first Christian communities in Palestine (Acts 9:30), and with that solemn observation which had attended their own consecration, and which has been transmitted to later ages in connection with ordination, "with fasting and prayer, the made choice of fit persons to serve in the sacred ministry of the church"

Thus, having consigned their disciples to Him "in whom they had believed," and who was "able to keep that which was entrusted to Him," (Acts 14:23) Paul and Barnabas descended through the Pisidian mountains to the plain of Pamphylia. If our conjecture is correct, that they went up from Perga in spring, and returned at the close of autumn, and spent all the hotter months of the year in the elevated

<sup>236</sup> The Cilician Gates, to which we shall return at the beginning of the 2<sup>nd</sup> missionary journey (Acts 15:41).

districts, they would again pass in a few days through a great change of seasons, and almost from winter to summer.

The people of Pamphylia would have returned from their cold residences to the warm shelter of the plain by the seaside; and Perga would be full of its inhabitants. The Gospel was preached within the walls of this city, through which the apostles had merely passed on their journey to the interior. But from St. Luke's silence it appears that the preaching was attended with no marked results. We read neither of conversions nor persecutions. The Jews, if any Jews resided there, were less inquisitive and less tyrannical than those at Antioch and Iconium; and the votaries of Diana at Perga were less excitable than those who worshipped Jupiter at Lystra. When the time came for returning to Syria, they did not sail down the Cydnus, up the channel of which river they had come on the arrival from Cyprus, but traveled across the plain to Attaleia, which was situated on the edge of the Pamphylian gulf.

Attaleia had something of the same relation to Perga, which Cadiz has to Seville. In each case the latter city is approached by a river voyage, and the former is more conveniently placed on the open sea. Attalus Philadelphus, king of Pergamus, whose dominions extended from the northwestern corner of Asia Minor to the Sea of Pamphylia, had built this city in a convenient position for commanding the trade of Syria or Egypt. When Alexander the Great passed this way, no such city was in existence; but since the days of the kings of Pergamus, who inherited a fragment of his vast empire, Attaleia has always existed and flourished, retaining the name of the monarch who built it.

Behind it is the plain through which the calcareous waters of the Catarrhactes flow, perpetually constructing and destroying and reconstructing their fantastic channels. In front of it, and along the shore on either side, are long lines of cliffs, over which the river finds its way in waterfalls to the sea, and which conceal the plain from those who look toward the land from

the inner waters of the bay, and even encroach on the prospect of the mountains themselves. When this scene is before us, the mind reverts to another band of Christian warriors who once sailed the bay of Satalia to the Syrian Antioch. Certain passages, in which the movements of the Crusaders and Apostles may be compared with each other, are among the striking contrasts of history. Conrad and Louis, each with an army at first of 70,000 men, marched through part of the same districts which were traversed by Paul and Barnabas alone and unprotected. The shattered remains of the French host had come down to Attaleia through the abrupt mountain passes and the deep valleys which are so well described by the contemporary historian, William of Tyre. They came to fight the battle of the Cross with a great multitude, and with the armor of human power; their journey was encompassed with defeat and death; their arrival at Attaleia was disastrous and disgraceful, and they sailed to Antioch a broken and dispirited army. But the crusaders of the first century, the apostles of Christ, though they too passed through much tribulation, advanced from victory to victory. Their return to the place whence they had been recommended to the grace of God for the work which they fulfilled, was triumphant and joyful, for the weapons of their warfare were not carnal. The Lord himself was their tower and shield.

## Chapter 7

### Controversy in the Church

If, when we contrast the voyage of Paul and Barnabas across the bay of Attaleia, with the voyage of those who sailed over the same waters in the same direction, eleven centuries later, our minds are powerfully drawn towards the pure age of early Christianity, when the power of faith made human weakness irresistibly strong; the same thoughts are not less forcibly presented to us, when we contrast the reception of the Crusaders at Antioch with the reception of the apostles in the same city. We are told by the chroniclers that Raymond,

Prince of Antioch, waited with much expectation for the arrival of the French king, and that when he heard of his landing in Seleucia, he gathered together all the nobles and chief men of the people and went out to meet him, and brought him into Antioch with much pomp and magnificence, showing him all reverence and homage, in the midst of a great assemblage of the clergy and people.

All that St. Luke tells us of the reception of the apostles after their victorious campaign is that they entered into the city and gathered together the church and told them how God had worked with them, and how He had opened a door of faith to the Gentiles." (Acts 14:27) Thus the kingdom of God came at the first without observation," (Luke 17:20) with the humble acknowledgement that all power is given from above, and with a thankful recognition of our Father's merciful love to all mankind.

No age, however, of Christianity, not even the earliest, has been without its difficulties, controversies, and corruptions. The presence of Judas among the disciples, and of Ananias and Sapphira among the first disciples (Acts 5), were proofs of the power which moral evil possesses to combine itself with the holiest works. The misunderstanding of the "Grecians and Hebrews" in the days of Stephen, the suspicion of the apostles when Paul came from Damascus to Jerusalem, the secession of Mark at the beginning of the first missionary journey, were symptoms of the prejudice, ignorance, and infirmity in the midst of which the Gospel was to win its way in the hearts of men. And the arrival of the apostles at Antioch at the close of their journey was presently followed by a troubled controversy, which involved the most momentous consequences to all future ages of the church, and led to that visit to Jerusalem which, next after his conversion, is perhaps the most important passage in St. Paul's life.

We have seen that great numbers of Jews had long been dispersed beyond the limits of their own land, and were at this time distributed over every part of the Roman Empire." Moses had of old time, in every city, them that

preached him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath day." (Acts 15:21) In every considerable city, both of the East and West, were established some members of that mysterious people, who had a written Law which they read and re read in the midst of the contempt of those who surrounded them, week by week, and year by year, who were bound everywhere by a secret link of affection to one City in the world, where alone their religious sacrifices could be offered, whose whole life was utterly abhorrent from the temples and images which crowded the neighborhood of their synagogues, and from the gay and licentious festivities of the Greek and Roman worship.

In the same way it might be said that Plato and Aristotle, Zeno and Epicurus," had in every city those that preached them." Side by side with the doctrines of Judaism, the speculations of Greek philosophers were, not indeed read in connection with religious worship, but orally taught and publicly discussed in the schools. Hence the Jews, in their foreign settlements, were surrounded, not only by an idolatry which shocked all their deepest feelings, and by a shameless profligacy unforbidden by, and even associated with, that which the Gentiles called religion, but also by a proud and contemptuous philosophy that alienated the more educated classes of society to as great a distance as the unthinking multitude.

Thus a strong line of demarcation between the Jews and Gentiles ran through the whole Roman Empire. Though their dwellings were often contiguous, they were separated from each other by deep rooted feelings of aversion and contempt. The "middle wall of partition" (Eph. 2:14) was built up by diligent hands on both sides. This mutual alienation existed, notwithstanding the vast number of proselytes who were attracted to the Jewish doctrine and worship, and who were silently preparing the way for the ultimate union of the two races. The breach was even widened, in many cases, in consequence of this work of proselytism; for those who went over to the Jewish camp, or

hesitated on the neutral ground, were looked on with some suspicion by the Jews themselves, and thoroughly hated and despised by the Gentiles.

It must be remembered that the separation of which we speak was both religious and social. The Jews had a divine Law, which sanctioned the principle, and enforced the practice, of national isolation. They could not easily believe that the Lord, with which all the glorious passages of their history were associated, was meant only to endure for a limited period; and we cannot but sympathize in the difficulty they felt in accepting the notion of a cordial union with the uncircumcised, even after idolatry was abandoned and morality observed. And again, the peculiar character of the religion which isolated the Jews was such as to place insuperable obstacles in the way of social union with other men. Their ceremonial observances precluded the possibility of their eating with the Gentiles.

The nearest parallel we can find to this barrier between the Jew and Gentile is the institution of *caste* among the ancient populations of India, which presents itself to our politicians as a perplexing fact in the government of the presidencies, and to our missionaries as the great obstacle to the progress of Christianity in the East. A Hindu cannot eat with a Parsee or a Mohammedan, and among the Hindus themselves the meals of a Brahmin are polluted by the presence of a Pariah, though they meet and have free intercourse in the ordinary transaction of business. So it was in the patriarchal age. It was "an abomination for the Egyptians to eat bread with the Hebrews. (Gen. 43:32) The same principle was divinely sanctioned for a time in the Mosaic institutions. The Israelites, who live among the Gentiles, met them freely in the places of public resort, buying and selling, conversing and disputing; but their families were separate; in the relations of domestic life, it was unlawful, as Peter said to Cornelius," for a man that was a Jew to keep company or come unto one of another nation." (Acts 10:28) When St. Peter

returned from the centurion at Caesarea to his brother Christians at Jerusalem, their great charge against him was that he had "gone in to men uncircumcised, and had eaten with them:" (Acts 11:3) and the weak compliance of which he was guilty, after the true principle of social unity had been publicly recognized, and which called forth the stern rebuke of his brother apostle, was that, after eating with the Gentiles, he "withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision." (Gal. 2:12)

### Difficulty in the Narrative

How these two difficulties, which seemed to forbid the formation of a united church on earth, were ever to be overcome, how the Jews and Gentiles were to be religiously united without the enforced obligation of the whole Mosaic Law, how they were to be socially united as equal brethren in the family of a common Father, the solution of this problem must in that day have appeared impossible. And without the direct intervention of Divine grace it would have been impossible. We now proceed to consider how that grace gave to the minds of the apostles the wisdom, discretion, forbearance, and firmness which were required; and how St. Paul was used as the great instrument in accomplishing a work necessary to the very existence of the Christian church.

We encounter here a difficulty, well known to all who have examined this subject, in combining into one continuous narrative the statements in the Epistle to the Galatians and in the Acts of the Apostles. In the latter book we are informed of five distinct journeys made by the Apostle to Jerusalem after the time of his conversion; first, when he escaped from Damascus and spent a fortnight with Peter; secondly, when he took the collection from Antioch with Barnabas in the time of the famine; thirdly, on the occasion of the Council, which is now before us in the 15<sup>th</sup> chapter of Acts; fourthly, in the interval between his second and third missionary journeys (Acts 18:22); and fifthly, when the uproar was made

in the Temple and he was taken into custody of the Roman garrison (Acts 21 ff).

In the Epistle to the Galatians, St. Paul speaks of two journeys to Jerusalem, the first being three years after his conversion (Gal. 1:18), the second "fourteen years" later, when his own apostleship was asserted and recognized in a public meeting of the other apostles (Gal. 2:1-10). Now, while we have no difficulty in stating that the first journey of one account is the first journey of the other, theologians have been variously divided in opinion as to whether the second journey of the epistle must be identified with the second, third, or fourth of the Acts, or whether it is a separate journey, distinct from any of them. It is agreed by all that the fifth cannot possibly be intended. The view we have adopted, that the second journey of the Epistle is the third of the Acts is that of the majority of the best critics and commentators. So far as the circumstances combined together in the present chapter appear natural, consecutive, and coherent, so far some reason will be given for believing that we are not following an arbitrary assumption or a fanciful theory.

It is desirable to recur at the outset to the first instance of a Gentile's conversion to Christianity (Acts 10:11). After the preceding remarks, we are prepared to recognize the full significance of the vision which St. Peter saw at Joppa. The trance into which he fell at the moment of his hunger, the vast sheet descending from heaven, the promiscuous assemblage of clean and unclean animals, the voice from heaven which said, "Arise, Peter, kill and eat," the whole of this imagery is invested with the deepest meaning, when we recollect all the details of religious and social life, which separated, up to that moment, the Gentile from the Jew. The words heard by St. Peter in his trance came like a shock on all the prejudices of his Jewish education. He had never so spoken the Law of his forefathers as to eat anything it condemned as unclean.

And though the voice spoke to him a second time (Acts 10:15), and answered him from heaven (Acts 11:9), "What God has made clean

that call not thou common," it required a wonderful combination of natural and supernatural evidence to convince him that God is "no respecter of persons," but "in every nation" accepts him that "fears Him and works righteousness," that all such distinctions that depend on "meat and drink," on "holydays, new moons, and Sabbaths," were to pass away, that these things were only "a shadow of things to come," that "the body of Christ," and that "in Him we are complete ... circumcised with a circumcision not made with hands ... buried with him in baptism," and risen with him through faith. (Col. 2:8 23)

The Christians of the circumcision (Acts 10:45, with 11:12) who traveled with Peter from Joppa to Caesarea were astonished when they saw the gift of the Holy Spirit poured out on uncircumcised Gentiles; and much dissatisfaction was created in the church when intelligence of the whole transaction came to Jerusalem. On Peter's arrival, his having "gone in to men uncircumcised, and eaten with them," was arraigned as a serious violation of religious duty. When St. Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order, appealing to the evidence of six brethren who had accompanied him, his accusers were silent; and so much conviction was produced at the time that they expressed their gratitude to God for His mercy in "granting to the Gentiles repentance unto life." (Acts 11:1 18)

### Discontent at Jerusalem

But subsequent events too surely proved that the discontent at Jerusalem was only partially allayed. Hesitation and perplexity began to arise in the minds of the Jewish Christians, with scrupulous misgivings concerning the rectitude of St. Peter's conduct, and an uncomfortable jealousy of the new converts. And nothing could be more natural than that all this jealousy and perplexity. To us, with out present knowledge, it seems that the slightest relaxation of a ceremonial law should have been willingly and eagerly welcomed. But the view from the Jewish standing was very different. The religious difficulty in the mind of a Jew was greater than

we can easily imagine. We can well believe that the minds of many may have been perplexed by the words and the conduct of our Lord himself; for He had not been sent "save to the lost sheep of the house of Israel," and He had said that it was "not meet to take the children's bread and cast it to dogs." (Matt. 15:24,26)

Until St. Paul appeared before the church in his true character as the apostle of the uncircumcision, few understood that "the law of the commandments contained in ordinances" had been abolished by the cross of Christ (Eph. 2:15); and that the "other sheep," not of the Jewish fold, should be freely united to the "one flock" by the "one Shepherd."

The smoldering feeling of discontent which had existed from the first increased and became more evident as new Gentile converts were admitted into the church. To pass over all the other events of the interval which had elapsed since the baptism of Cornelius, the results of the recent journey of Paul and Barnabas through the cities of Asia Minor must have excited a great commotion among the Jewish Christians. "A door of faith" had been opened "unto the Gentiles." (Acts 14:27) "He that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same had been mighty in Paul towards the Gentiles." (Gal. 2:8) And we cannot well doubt that both he and Barnabas had freely joined in social intercourse with the Gentile Christians, at Antioch in Pisidia, at Iconium, Lystra, and Derbe, as Peter "at the first" (Acts 15:14) "a good while ago" (Acts 15:7) had eaten with Cornelius at Caesarea.

At Antioch in Syria it seems evident that both parties lived together in amicable intercourse and in much freedom (Gal 2:4). Nor, indeed, is this the city where we should have expected the Jewish controversy to have come to a crisis; for it was from Antioch that Paul and Barnabas had first been sent as missionaries to the heathen; and it was at Antioch that Greek proselytes had first accepted the truth, and that the united body of believers had first been called "Christians"

Jerusalem was the metropolis of the Jewish world. The exclusive feelings which the Jews carried with them wherever they were diffused, were concentrated in Jerusalem in their most intense degree. It was there, in the sight of the Temple, and with all the recollections of their ancestors surrounding their daily life, that the impatience of the Jewish Christians kindled into burning indignation. They saw that Christianity, instead of being the purest and holiest form of Judaism, was rapidly becoming a universal and indiscriminating religion, in which the Jewish element would be absorbed and lost. This revolution could not appear to them in any other light than as a rebellion against all they had been taught to hold inviolably sacred. And since there was no doubt that the great instigator of this change of opinion was that Saul of Tarsus whom they had once known as a young Pharisee at the feet of Gamaliel, the contest took the form of an attack made by certain of the sect of the Pharisees upon St. Paul. The battle which had been fought and lost in the Cilician synagogue was now to be renewed within the church itself.

Some of the "false brethren" (for such is the name which St. Paul gives to the Judaizers, Gal. 2:4) went down from Judea to Antioch (Acts 15:1). The course they adopted, in the first instance, was not that of open antagonism to Paul, but rather of clandestine intrigue. They came as "spies" into an enemy's camp, creeping in unawares, that they might ascertain how far the Jewish Law had been relaxed by the Christians at Antioch; their purpose being to bring the whole church, if possible, under the bondage of the Mosaic yoke.

It appears that they remained some considerable time in Antioch (inferred from the imperfect tense in the Greek), gradually insinuating their opinion that the observance of the Jewish Law was necessary for salvation. It is very important to observe the exact form which their teaching assumed. They did not merely recommend or enjoin, for prudential reasons, the continuance of certain ceremonies in themselves indifferent; but they said, "Except

you be circumcised after the manner of Moses, you cannot be saved."

Such a doctrine must have been instantly opposed by St. Paul with his utmost energy. He was always ready to go to the extreme verge of charitable concession, when the question was one of peace and mutual understanding; but when the very foundations of Christianity were in danger of being undermined, when the very continuance of the truth of the Gospel (Gal. 2:5) was in jeopardy, it was impossible that he should give place by subjection, even for an hour.

The "dissension and disputation" (Acts 15:2) which arose between Paul and Barnabas and the false brethren from Judea resulted in a general anxiety and perplexity among the Syrian Christians. The minds of those who from among the Gentiles were turned unto God were troubled and unsettled (Acts 15:19). Those words which perverted the Gospel of Christ tended also to subvert the souls of those who heard them (Gal. 1:7; Acts 15:24). It was determined therefore that Paul and Barnabas, with certain others, should go up to Jerusalem to the Apostles and elders about this question. It was well known that those who were disturbing the peace of the church had their headquarters in Judea. Such a theological party could only be successfully met in the stronghold of Jewish nationality. Moreover, the residence of the principal Apostles was at Jerusalem, and the community over which James presided was still regarded as the mother church of Christendom.

In addition to this mission with which Paul was entrusted by the church at Antioch, he received an intimation of the divine will, communicated by direct revelation. Such a revelation at so momentous a crisis must appear perfectly natural to all who believe that Christianity was introduced into the world by the immediate power of God. If a man of Macedonia appeared to Paul in the visions of the night, when he was about to carry the Gospel from Asia into Europe (Acts 16:9); if the angel of God stood by him in the night, when the ship that was conveying

him to Rome was in danger of sinking (Acts 27:23); we cannot wonder when he tells us that, on this occasion, when he sent up to Jerusalem with Barnabas, he went by revelation (Gal. 2:2).

### Journey from Antioch to Jerusalem

And we need not be surprised if we find that St. Paul's path was determined by two different causes; that he went to Jerusalem partly because the church deputed him, and partly because he was divinely admonished. Such a combination and cooperation of the natural and the supernatural we have observed before, in the case of that vision which induced St. Peter to go from Joppa to Caesarea. Nor in adopting this view of St. Paul's journey from Antioch to Jerusalem need we feel any great difficulty – from this circumstance, that the two motives which conspired to direct him are separately mentioned in different parts of Scripture. It is true that we are told in the Acts (15:2) simply that it was determined at Antioch that Paul should go to Jerusalem; and that in Galatians (2:2) we are informed by himself that he went by revelation. But we have an exact parallel in an earlier journey from Jerusalem to Tarsus. In St. Luke's narrative (Acts 9:30) it is stated that the brethren, knowing the conspiracy against his life, brought him down to Caesarea and sent him forth; while in the speech of St. Paul himself (Acts 22:17,18), we are told that in a trance he saw Jesus Christ, and received from Him a command to depart quickly out of Jerusalem.

Similarly directed from without and within, he traveled to Jerusalem on the occasion before us. It would seem that his companions were carefully chosen with reference to the question in dispute. On the one hand was Barnabas (Acts 15:2), a Jew and a Levite by birth (Acts 4:36), a good representative of the church of the circumcision. On the other hand was Titus (Gal. 2:1 5), now first mentioned in the course of our narrative, a convert from heathenism, an uncircumcised Greek.<sup>237</sup>

<sup>237</sup> Titus is not mentioned at all in the Acts, and besides the present Epistle and that to Titus himself, he

From the expression used of the departure of this company it seems evident that the majority of the Christians at Antioch were still faithful to the truth of the Gospel. Had the Judaizers triumphed, it would hardly have been said that Paul and his fellow travelers were "brought on their way by the church." (Acts 15:3) Their course was along the great Roman Road, which followed the Phoenician coastline, and traces of which are still seen on the cliffs overhanging the sea: and thence through the midland districts of Samaria and Judea.<sup>238</sup>

When last we had occasion to mention Phoenicia we were alluding to those who were dispersed on the death of Stephen, and preached the Gospel "to Jews only" on this part of the Syrian coast. Now, it seems evident that many of the heathen Syro Phoenicians had been converted to Christianity; for, as Paul and Barnabas passed through, "declaring the conversion of the Gentiles, they caused great joy unto all the

---

is only mentioned in 2 Cor. and 2 Tim. In a later part of this work he will be noticed more particularly as Paul's fellow-laborer (2 Cor. 8:23).

<sup>238</sup> It may be interesting here to allude to the journey of a Jew in the Middle Ages from Antioch to Jerusalem. It is probable that the stations, the road, and the rate of traveling were the same, and the distribution of the Jews not very different. We find the following passage in the itinerary of Benjamin of Tudela, who traveled in 1163: 'Two days bring us from Antioch to Lega, which is Latachia, and contains about 200 Jews, the principal of whom are R. Chiia and R. Joseph ... One day's journey to Gebal of the children of Ammon; it contains about 150 Jews. ... Two days hence is Beirut; the principal of its Jewish inhabitants are R. Solomon, R. Obadiah, and R. Joseph. It is hence one day's journey to Saida, which is Sidon of Scripture (Acts 27:3), a large city, with about 20 Jewish families ... One day's journey to New Sur [Tyre, Acts 21:3], a very beautiful city ... The Jews of Sur are ship-owners and manufacturers of the celebrated Tyrian glass ... It is one day hence to Acre [Ptolemais, Acts 21:7]. It is the frontier town of Palestine; and, in consequence of its situation on the shore of the Mediterranean, and of its large port, it is the principal place of disembarkation of all pilgrims who visit Jerusalem by sea.' *Early Travels to Palestine*, pp. 78-81.

brethren." As regards the Samaritans, we cannot be surprised that they who, when Philip first" preached Christ unto them," had received the Glad Tidings with great joy, should be ready to express their sympathy in the happiness of those who, like themselves, had recently been" aliens from the commonwealth of Israel"

Fifteen years had now elapsed since that memorable journey, when St. Paul left Jerusalem, with all the zeal of a Pharisee, to persecute and destroy the Christians in Damascus. He had twice entered, as a Christian, the Holy City again. Both visits had been short and hurried and surrounded with danger. The first was three years after his conversion, when he spent a fortnight with Peter and escaped assassination by a precipitate flight to Tarsus. The second was in the year 44, when Peter himself was in imminent danger, and when the messengers who brought the charitable contribution from Antioch were probably compelled to return immediately.

Now St. Paul came, at a more peaceful period of the Church's history, to be received as the successful champion of the Gospel, and as the leader of the greatest revolution which the world has seen. It was now undeniable that Christianity had spread to a wide extent in the Gentile world, and that he had been the great instrument in advancing its progress. He came to defend his own principles and practice against an increasing torrent of opposition, which had disturbed him in his distant ministrations at Antioch, but the fountain head of which was among the Pharisees at Jerusalem.

### Views of the Pharisaic Christians

The Pharisees had been the companions of St. Paul's younger days. Death had made many changes in the course of fifteen years; but some must have been there who had studied with him at the feet of Gamaliel. Their opposition was doubtless embittered by remembering what he had been before his conversion. Nor do we allude here to those Pharisees who opposed Christianity. These were not the enemies whom St. Paul came to resist. The time was past when

the Jews, unassisted by the Roman power, could exercise a cruel tyranny over the church. Its safety was no longer dependent on the wisdom or caution of Gamaliel. The great debates at Jerusalem are no longer between Jews and Christians in the Hellenistic synagogues, but between the Judaizing and spiritual parties of the Christians themselves.

Many of the Pharisees, after the example of St. Paul, had believed that Jesus was Christ (Acts 15:5). But they had not followed the example of their school companion in the surrender of Jewish bigotry. The battle, therefore, which had once been fought without was now to be renewed within, the church. It seems that, at the very first reception of Paul and Barnabas in Jerusalem, some of these Pharisaic Christians rose up, and insisted that the observance of Judaism was necessary to salvation. They said that it was absolutely" needful to circumcise" the new converts, and to" command them to keep the Law of Moses." The whole course of St. Paul's procedure among the Gentiles was here openly attacked. Barnabas was involved in the same suspicion and reproach; and with regard to Titus, who was with them as the representative of the Gentile church, it was asserted that, without circumcision, he could not hope to be partaker of the blessings of the Gospel.

But far more was involved than any mere opposition, however factious, to individual missionaries, or than the severity of any conditions imposed on individual converts. The question of liberty or bondage for all future ages was to be decided; and a convention of the whole church at Jerusalem was evidently called for. In the meantime, before" the Apostles and elders came together to consider this matter," (Acts 15:6) St. Paul had private conferences with the more influential members of the Christian community (Gal. 1:2), and especially with James, Peter, and John (Gal. 2:9), the great apostles and pillars of the church. Extreme caution and management were required, in consequence of the intrigues of the" false brethren," both in Jerusalem and Antioch. He

was, moreover, himself the great object of suspicion; and it was his duty to use very effort to remove the growing prejudice. Thus, though conscious of his own inspiration, and tenaciously holding the truth which he knew to be essential, he yet acted with that prudence which was characteristic of his whole life, and which he honestly avows in the Epistle to the Galatians.

### The Meeting at Jerusalem

If we may compare our own feeble imitations of apostolic zeal and prudence with the proceedings of the first founders of the Church of Christ, we may say that these preliminary conferences were like the private meetings which prepare the way for a great religious assembly in England. Paul and Barnabas had been deputed from Antioch; Titus was with them as a sample of Gentile conversions, and a living proof of their reality; and the great end in view was to produce full conviction in the church at large. At length the great meeting was summoned which was to settle the principles of missionary action among the Gentiles. It was a scene of earnest debate, and perhaps in its earlier portion, of angry disputing (Acts 15:7); but the passages which the Holy Spirit has caused to be recorded for our instruction are those which relate to the apostles themselves: the address of St. Peter, the narrative of Barnabas and Paul, and the concluding speech of St. James. These three passages must be separately considered in the order of Scripture.

St. Peter was the first of the Apostles who rose to address the assembly (Acts 15:7 11). He gave his decision against the Judaizers and in favor of St. Paul. He reminded his hearers of the part which he himself had taken in admitting the Gentiles into the Christian church. They were well aware, he said, that these recent converts in Syria and Cilicia were not the first heathens who had believed the Gospel, and that he himself had been chosen by God to begin the work which St. Paul had only been continuing. The communication of the Holy Spirit was the true test of God's acceptance; and God had shown that He was no respecter of persons by

shedding abroad the same miraculous gifts on Jew and Gentile, and purifying by faith the hearts of both alike. And then St. Peter went on to speak, in touching language, of the yoke of Jewish Law. Its weight had pressed heavily on many generations of Jews, and was well known to the Pharisees who were listening at that moment. They had been relieved from legal bondage by the salvation offered through faith; and it would be tempting God to impose on others a burden which neither they nor their fathers had ever been able to bear.

The next speakers were Paul and Barnabas. There was great silence through all the multitude (Acts 15:12), and every eye was turned on the missionaries while they gave the narrative of their journeys. Though Barnabas is mentioned here before Paul, it is most likely that the latter was the chief speaker. But both of them appear to have addressed the audience (v. 13, after *they* were silent). They had much to relate of what they had done and seen together; and especially they made appeal to the miracles which God had worked among the Gentiles by them. Such an appeal must have been a persuasive argument to the Jew, who was familiar, in his ancient scriptures, with many divine interruptions of the course of nature. These interferences had signalized all the great passages of Jewish history. Jesus Christ had proved His divine mission in the same manner. And the events at Paphos (Acts 13:11), and Iconium (Acts 14:3), and Lystra (Acts 14:8), could not well be regarded in any other light than as a proof that the same power had been with Paul and Barnabas which accompanied the words of Peter and John in Jerusalem and Judea (Acts chapter 2, 5, 9).

But the opinion of another speaker still remained to be given. This was James, the brother of the Lord, who, from the austere sanctity of his character, was commonly called, both by Jews and Christians, James the Just. No judgment could have such weight with the Judaizing party as his. Not only in the vehement language in which he denounced the sins of the age, but even in garb and appearance, he

resembled John the Baptist, or one of the older prophets, rather than the other Apostles of the new dispensation." Like the ancient saints, even in outward aspect, with the austere features, the linen ephod, the bare feet, the long locks and unshorn head of the Nazarite," such, according to tradition, was the man who now came forward, and solemnly pronounced the Mosaic rites were not of eternal obligation. After alluding to the argument of Peter (whose name we find him characteristically quoting in its Jewish form, Acts 15:14), he turns to the ancient prophets and adduces a passage from Amos (9:11,12) to prove that Christianity is the fulfillment of Judaism. And then he passes to the historical aspect of the subject, contending that this fulfillment was predetermined by God himself, and that the Jewish dispensation was in truth the preparation for the Christian (compare Acts 17:26; Rom. 1:2; Eph. 1:10; 3:9; Col. 1:26).

Such a decision, pronounced by one who stood emphatically on the confines of the two dispensations, came with great force on all who heard it, and carried with it the general opinion of the assembly to the conclusion that those "who from among the Gentiles had turned unto God" should not be "troubled" with any Jewish obligations, except such as were necessary for peace and mutual good understanding of the two parties.

The spirit of charity and mutual forbearance is very evident in the decree which was finally enacted. Its spirit was that expressed by St. Paul in his Epistles to the Romans and Corinthians. He knew, and was persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that nothing is unclean of itself; but to him that esteems anything to be unclean, to him it is unclean. He knew that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no other God but one. But all men have not this knowledge; some could not eat that which had been offered in sacrifice to an idol without defiling their conscience. It is good to abstain from everything whereby a weaker brother may be led to stumble. To sin thus against our brethren is to sin against Christ (Rom. 14; 1 Cor. 8).

In accordance with the principles it was enacted that the Gentile converts should be required to abstain from that which had been polluted by being offered in sacrifice to idols, from the flesh of animals which had been strangled, and generally from the eating of blood. The reason for these conditions is stated in the verse to which particular allusion has been made at the beginning of this chapter. The Law of Moses was read every Sabbath in all the cities where the Jews were dispersed (Acts 15:21). A due consideration for the prejudices of the Jews made it reasonable for the Gentile converts to comply with some of the restrictions which the Mosaic Law and ancient custom had imposed on every Jewish meal. In no other way could social intercourse be built up and cemented between the two parties.

If some forbearance were required on the part of the Gentiles in complying with such conditions, not less forbearance was required from the Jews in exacting no more strict requirements. And to the Gentiles themselves the restrictions were a merciful condition; for it helped them to disentangle themselves more easily from the pollutions connected with their idolatrous life.

We are not merely concerned here with the question of social separation, the food which may have been a delicacy to the Gentile being abominated by the Jew, nor with the difficulties of weak and scrupulous consciences, who might fear too close a contact between "the table of the Lord" and "the table of demons," (1 Cor. 10:21) but this controversy had an intimate connection with the principles of universal morality. The most shameless violations of purity took place in connection with the sacrifices and feasts celebrated in honor of heathen divinities. Everything, therefore, which tended to keep the Gentile converts even from accidental or apparent association with these scenes of vice, made their own recovery from pollution more easy, and enabled the Jewish converts to look on their new Christian brethren with less suspicion and antipathy. This seems to be the reason why we find an

acknowledged sin mentioned in the decree along with ceremonial observances which were meant to be only temporary and perhaps local.  
<sup>239</sup>

We must look on the whole subject from the Jewish point of view, and consider how violations of morality and contradictions of the ceremonial law were associated together in the Gentile world. It is hardly necessary to remark that much additional emphasis is given to the moral part of the decree, when we remember that it was addressed to those who lived in close proximity to the profligate sanctuaries of Antioch and Paphos.

We have said that the ceremonial part of the decree was intended for a temporary and perhaps only a local observance. It is not for a moment implied that any Jewish ceremony is necessary for salvation. On the contrary, the great principle was asserted, once for all, that man is justified, not by the Law, but by faith: one immediate result was that Titus, the companion of Paul and Barnabas, "was not compelled to be circumcised." (Gal. 2:3)

Titus' case was not like that of Timothy at a later period (Acts 16:3), whose circumcision was a prudential accommodation to circumstances, without endangering the truth of the Gospel. To have circumcised Titus at the time of the meeting in Jerusalem would amount to an assertion that he was "bound to keep the whole Law." (Gal. 5:3) And when the alternative was between "the liberty wherewith Christ has made us free," and the reimposition of "the yoke of bondage," St. Paul's language always was (Gal. 5:2) that if Gentile converts were circumcised, Christ could "profit them nothing." By seeking to be justified in the Law, they fell from grace (Gal. 5:4). In this firm refusal to comply with the demand of the Judaizers, the case of all future converts from heathenism was virtually involved. It was asserted, once for all,

<sup>239</sup> At least the decree of Acts 15:23 is addressed only to the churches of Syria and Cilicia, and we do not see the subject mentioned again after Acts 16:4.

that in the Christian church there is" neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, barbarian, Scythian, bond, nor free; but that Christ is all and in all." (Col. 3:11)

Certain other points decided in this meeting had a more direct personal reference to St. Paul himself. His own independent mission had been called in question. Some said that he was antagonistic to the apostles at Jerusalem, others that he was entirely dependent on them.<sup>240</sup> All the Judaizers agreed in blaming his course of procedure among the Gentiles. This course was now entirely approved by the other apostles. His independence was fully recognized. Those who were universally regarded as "pillars of the truth," James, Peter, and John, gave to him and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship and agreed that they should be to the heathen what themselves were to the Jews. This was St. Paul publicly acknowledged as the apostle to the Gentiles, and openly placed in that position from which "he shall never more go out," as a pillar of the Temple of the New Jerusalem, inscribed with the New Name which proclaims the union of all mankind in one Savior.<sup>241</sup>

One of those who gave the right hand of fellowship to Paul was the beloved disciple of that Savior (Gal. 2:9). This is the only meeting of Paul and John recorded in scripture. It is, moreover, the last notice which we find there of the life of John, until the time of his apocalyptic vision in the island of Patmos. For both these reasons the mind seizes eagerly on the incident, though it is only casually mentioned in Galatians. Like other incidental notices

<sup>240</sup> The charges brought against Paul by the Judaizers were various at different times.

<sup>241</sup> See Rev. 3:12. The same metaphor is found in 1 Tim. 3:15 where Timothy is called 'a pillar and support of the truth.' In these passages it is important to bear in mind the peculiarity of ancient architecture, which was characterized by vertical columns, supporting horizontal tabatures. Inscriptions were often engraved on these columns. Hence the words in the passage quoted from Revelation, 'I will write upon him ... my new name.'

contained in scripture, it is very suggestive of religious thoughts. John had been silent during the discussion in the public assembly; but at the close of it he expressed his cordial union with Paul in the truth of the Gospel (Gal. 2:5). That union has been made visible to all ages by the juxtaposition of their Epistles in the same Bible. They stand together among the pillars of the holy temple; and the church of God is thankful to learn how contemplation may be united with action, and faith with love, in the spiritual life.

To the decree with which Paul and Barnabas were charged, one condition was annexed, with which they gladly promised to comply. The Hebrews of Judea were relatively poor, compared with those of the dispersion; and the Jewish Christians in Jerusalem were exposed to particular suffering from poverty. We have seen Paul and Barnabas once before the bearers of a contribution from a foreign city for their relief. They were exhorted now to continue the same charitable work, and in their journeys among the Gentiles and the dispersed Jews, to "remember the poor" at Jerusalem (Gal. 2:10). In proof of Paul's faithful discharge of this promise, we need only allude to his zeal in making "the contribution for the poor saints at Jerusalem" in Galatia, Macedonia, and Achaia (1 Cor. 16:1-4), and to that last journey to the Holy Land, when he went, "after many years," to take "alms to his nation" (Acts 24:17).

It is more important here to consider the effect which this charitable exertion would have had in binding together the divided parties in the church. There cannot be a doubt that the apostles had this result in view. Their anxiety on this subject is the best commentary on the spirit in which they had met on this great occasion; and we may rest assured that the union of the Gentile and Jewish Christians was very much aided by the benevolent efforts which attended the diffusion of the apostolic decree.

### Return of Paul to Antioch

The controversy being settled, Paul's mission to the Gentiles being fully recognized, and his

method of communicating the Gospel approved by the other Apostles, and the promise being given that in their journeys among the heathen they would remember the necessities of the Hebrew Christians in Judea, the two missionaries returned from Jerusalem to Antioch. They carried with them the decree which was to give peace to the consciences that had been troubled by the Judaizing agitators; and the two companions, Judas and Silas (Acts 15:22,27,32), who traveled with them, were empowered to accredit their commission and character. It seems also that Mark was another companion of Paul and Barnabas on this journey; for the last time we had occasion to mention his name was when he withdrew from Pamphylia to Jerusalem, and presently we see him once more with his kinsman at Antioch (Acts 15:37).

The reception of the travelers at Antioch was full of joy and satisfaction (Acts 15:31). The whole body of the Church was summoned together to hear the reading of the letter; and we can well imagine the eagerness with which they crowded to listen, and the thankfulness and consolation with which such a communication was received, after so much anxiety and perplexity. The letter indeed is almost as interesting to us as to them, not only because of the principle asserted and the results secured, but also because it is the first document preserved to us from the acts of the primitive church. The words of the original document, literally translated, are as follows:

**The apostles and the elders and the brethren, to the Gentile brethren in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia - Greetings:**

**Whereas we have heard that certain men who went out from us have troubled you with words, and unsettled your souls by telling you to circumcise yourselves and keep the Law, although we gave them no such commission:**

**It has been determined by us, being assembled with one accord, to choose**

**some from amongst ourselves and send them to you with our beloved Barnabas and Saul, men that have offered up their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who themselves also will tell you by word the same which we tell you by letter.**

**For it has been determined by the Holy Spirit and by us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things: that ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication. Wherefrom if you keep yourselves it shall be well with you. Farewell.**

The encouragement inspired by this letter would be increased by the sight of Judas and Silas, who were ready to confirm its contents by word of mouth. These two disciples remained some short time at Antioch. They were possessed of that power of prophecy which was one of the forms in which the Holy Spirit made His presence known; and the Syrian Christians were "exhorted and confirmed" by the exercise of this miraculous gift (Acts 15:32, cf. 13:1). The minds of all were in great tranquility when the time came for the return of these messengers to the apostles at Jerusalem. Silas, however, either remained at Antioch or soon came back there. He was destined, as we shall see, to become the companion of Paul and to be at the beginning of the second missionary journey which Barnabas had been at the beginning of the first.

### **St. Peter Rebuked by St. Paul**

Two painful scenes were witnessed at Antioch before the apostle started on that second journey. We are informed (Acts 15:35) that Paul and Barnabas protracted their stay in this city and were diligently occupied, with many others, in making the glad tidings of the Gospel known, and in the general work of Christian instruction. It is in this interval of time that we must place that visit of Paul to Antioch which Paul mentions in the Epistle to the Galatians (Gal. 2:11 ff), immediately after his notice of the affairs of the Council.

It appears that Peter, having come to Antioch for some reason which is unknown to us, lived at first in free and unrestrained intercourse with the Gentile converts, meeting them in social friendship and eating with them, in full consistency with the spirit of the recent decree, and with his own conduct in the case of Cornelius. At this time certain Jewish brethren came "from James," who presided over the church at Jerusalem. Whether they were really sent on some mission by James, or we are merely to understand that they came from Jerusalem, they brought with them their old Hebrew repugnance against social intercourse with the uncircumcised; and Peter in their society began to vacillate. In weak compliance with their prejudices, he "withdrew and separated himself" from those whom he had lately treated as brethren and equals in Christ.

Just as in an earlier part of his life he had asserted his readiness to follow his Master to death, and then denied him through fear of a maid servant, so now, after publicly protesting against the notion of making any difference between the Jew and the Gentile, and against laying on the neck of the latter a yoke which the former had never been able to bear (Acts 15:9,10), we find him contradicting his own principles, and "through fear of those who were of the circumcision (Gal 2:12)" giving all the sanction of his example to the introduction of caste into the church of Christ.

Such conduct could not fail to excite in Paul the utmost indignation. Peter was not simply yielding a non essential point, through a tender consideration for the consciences of others. This would have been quite in accordance with the principle asserted by his brother apostle, that "it is good neither to eat flesh nor to drink wine, nor anything whereby thy brother stumbles, or is made weak." Nor was this proceeding a prudent and innocent accommodation to circumstances, for the sake of furthering the Gospel, like Paul's conduct in circumcising Timothy at Iconium (Acts 16:3); or, indeed, like the Apostolic Decree itself. Peter was acting under the influence of a

contemptible and sinful motive, the fear of man: and his behavior was giving a strong sanction to the very heresy which was threatening the existence of the church, namely, the opinion that the observance of Jewish ceremonies was necessary to salvation!

Nor was this all. Other Jewish Christians, as was naturally to be expected, were led away by his example; and even Barnabas, the chosen companion of Paul, who had been a witness and an actor in all the great transactions in Cyprus, in Pisidia, and Lycaonia, even Barnabas, the missionary was "carried away" with the dissimulation of the rest (Gal. 2:13). When Paul was a spectator of such inconsistency, and perceived both the motive in which it originated and the results to which it was leading, he would have been a traitor to his Master's cause, if he had hesitated (to use his own emphatic words) to rebuke Peter "before all," and to "withstand him to the face." (Gal. 2:11,14)

### Appearance of the two Apostles

It is evident from Paul's expression that it was on some public occasion that this open rebuke took place. The scene, though slightly mentioned, is one of the most remarkable in sacred history: and the mind naturally labors to picture to itself the appearance of the two men. It is, therefore, at least allowable to mention here the general notion of the forms and features of the two apostles, which has been handed down in tradition and was represented by the early artists. Paul is set before us as having the strongly marked and prominent features of a Jew, yet not without some of the finer lines indicative of Greek thought. His stature was diminutive, and his body disfigured by some lameness or distortion, which may have provoked the contemptuous expressions of his enemies. His beard was long and thin; his head was bald. The characteristics of his face were: a transparent complexion, which visibly betrayed the quick changes of his feelings, a bright gray eye under thickly overhanging united eyebrows, a cheerful and winning expression of countenance, which invited the

approach and inspired the confidence of strangers. It would be natural to infer,<sup>242</sup> from his continual journeys and manual labor, that he was possessed of great strength of constitution. But men of delicate health have often gone through the greatest exertions, and his own words on more than one occasion show that he suffered much from bodily infirmity (2 Cor. 12:7; Gal. 4:13,14)

Peter is represented to us as a man of larger and stronger form, as his character was harsher and more abrupt. The quick impulses of his soul revealed themselves in the flashes of a dark eye. The complexion of his face was pale and sallow; and the short hair, which is described as entirely gray at the time of his death, curled black and thick round his temples and chin, which the two apostles stood together at Antioch, twenty years before their martyrdom.

Believing, as we do, that these traditional pictures have probably some foundation in truth, we gladly take them as helps to the imagination. And they certainly assist us in realizing a remarkable scene where Judaism and Christianity, in the persons of the two apostles, are for a moment brought before us in strong antagonism. The words addressed by Paul to Peter before the assembled Christians at Antioch contain the full statement of the Gospel as opposed to the Law.

**If you, being born a Jew, are wont to live according to the customs of the Gentiles and not of the Jews, why would you now constrain the Gentiles to keep the ordinances of the Jews? We are Jews by birth, and not unhallowed Gentiles; yet, knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the Law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, we ourselves also have put our faith in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by**

<sup>242</sup> See Acts 20:7; 1 Thess. 2:9; 2 Thess. 3:8; 2 Cor. 11:23-28

**the works of the Law. For by the words of the Law shall no flesh be justified.”<sup>243</sup>**

These sentences contain in a condensed form the whole argument of Galatians and Romans.

Though the sternest indignation is expressed in this rebuke, we have no reason to suppose that any actual quarrel took place between the two apostles. It is likely that Peter was immediately convinced of his fault and melted at once into repentance [“changed his mind immediately” wd]. His mind was easily susceptible of quick and sudden changes; his disposition was loving and generous; and we should expect his contrition, as well as his weakness, at Antioch, to be what it was in the high priest’s house in Jerusalem. Yet, when we read the narrative of this rebuke in Paul’s epistle, it is a relief to turn to that passage at the conclusion of one of Peter’s letters where, in speaking of the” long suffering of our Lord,” and of the prospect of sinless happiness in the world to come, he alludes to the Epistles of” our beloved brother Paul.” (2 Pet. 3:15,16).

We see how entirely all past differences are forgotten, how all earthly misunderstandings are absorbed and lost in the contemplation of Christ and eternal life. Not only did the Holy Spirit overrule all contrary opinions, so that the writings of both apostles teach the church the same doctrine; but the apostle who was rebuked is not ashamed to call the attention of the church to epistles in one page of which his own censure is recorded. It is an eminent triumph of Christianity humility and love. We shall not again have occasion to mention Peter and Paul together until we come to the last scene of all, the martyrdom at Rome. But, though they might seldom meet while laboring in their Master’s cause, their lives were united, and in their deaths they were not divided.

<sup>243</sup> See Psalm 143:2 for the phrase “no flesh be justified,” and Romans 3:20 for another instance of the quote in the same connection.

## Chapter 8

### Political Divisions of Asia Minor

The Life of St. Paul, being that of a traveler, and our purpose being to give a picture of the circumstances by which he was surrounded, it is often necessary to refer to the geography, both physical and political, of the countries through which he passed. This is the more needful in the case of Asia Minor, not only because it was the scene of a very great portion of his journeys, but also because it is less known to many readers than Palestine, Italy, or Greece. We have already described the physical geography of those southern districts which are in the immediate neighborhood of Mount Taurus.<sup>244</sup> And now that the apostle’s travels take a wider range, and cross the Asiatic peninsula from Syria to the frontiers of Europe, it is important to take a general view of the political geography of this part of the Roman Empire. Unless such a view is obtained in the first place, it is impossible to understand the topographical expressions employed in the narrative, or to conjecture the social relations into which St. Paul was brought in the course of his journeys through Asia Minor, i.e. the journeys described in Acts 16 and 18.

It is, however, no easy task to ascertain the exact boundaries of the Roman provinces in this part of the world at any given date between Augustus and Constantine. In the first place, these boundaries were continually changing. The area of the different political districts was liable to sudden and arbitrary alterations. Such terms as” Asia,”” Pamphylia,” though denoting the extent of a true political jurisdiction, implied a larger or smaller territory at one time than another. And again, we find the names of earlier and later periods of history mixed up together in inextricable confusion.

Some of the oldest geographical terms, such as” Aeolis,”” Ionic,”” Caria,”” Lydia,” were disappearing from ordinary use in the time of the Apostles : but others, such as” Mysia” and

<sup>244</sup> Chapters 1 and 6

`Lycaonia," still remained. Obsolete and existing divisions are presented to us together: and the common maps of Asia Minor are as unsatisfactory as if a map of France were set before us, distributed half into provinces and half into departments. And in the third place, some of the names have no political significance at all, but express rather the ethnographical relations of ancient tribes. Thus, "Pisidia," denotes a district which might partly be in one province and partly in another; and "Phrygia" reminds us of the diffusion of an ancient people, the broken portions of whose territory were now under the jurisdiction of three or four distinct governors. Cases of this kind are, at first sight, more embarrassing than the others. They are not merely similar to the two fold subdivision of Ireland, where a province, like Ulster, may contain several definite counties, but a nearer parallel is to be found in Scotland, where a geographical district, associated with many historical recollections, such as Galloway or Lothian, may be partly in one county and partly in another.

Our purpose is to elucidate the political subdivisions of Asia Minor as they were in the reigns of Claudius and Nero, or in other words, to enumerate the provinces which existed, and to describe the boundaries which were assigned to them, in the middle of the first century of the Christian era. The order we shall follow is from West to East, and in so doing we shall not deviate widely from the order in which the provinces were successively incorporated as substantive parts of the Roman Empire. We are not, indeed, to suppose that St. Luke and St. Paul used all their topographical expressions in the strict political sense, even when such, a sense was more or less customary. There was an exact usage and a popular usage of all these terms. But the first step towards fixing our geographical ideas of Asia Minor must be to trace the boundaries of the provinces. When this is done, we shall be better able to distinguish those terms which, about the year 50 A.D., had ceased to have any true political significance, and to discriminate

between the technical and the popular language of the sacred writers.

### ASIA

There is sometimes a remarkable interest associated with the history of a geographical term. One case of this kind is suggested by the allusion which has just been made to the British islands. Early writers speak of Ireland under the appellation of "Scotia." Certain of its inhabitants crossed over to the opposite coast: their name spread along with their influence: and at length the title of Scotland was entirely transferred from one island to the other. In classical history we have a similar instance in the name of "Italy," which at first only denoted the southernmost extremity of the peninsula: then it was extended so as to include the whole with the exception of Cisalpine Gaul: and finally, crossing the Rubicon, it advanced to the Alps; while the name of "Gaul" retreated beyond them. Another instance, on a larger scale, is presented to us on the south of the Mediterranean. The "Africa" of the Romans spread from a limited territory on the shore of that sea, till it embraced the whole continent which was circumnavigated by Vasco da Gama. And similarly the term, by which we are accustomed to designate the larger and more famous continent of the ancient world, traces its derivation to the "Asian meadow" by the streams of the Cayster, celebrated in the poems of Homer.

This is the earliest occurrence of the word "Asia." We find, however, even in the older poets the word used in its widest sense to denote all the countries in the far East. Either the Greeks, made familiar with the original Asia by the settlement of their kindred in its neighborhood, applied it as a generic appellation to all the regions beyond it: or the extension of the kingdom of Lydia from the banks of the Cayster to the Halys as its eastern boundary, diffused the name of Asia as far as that river, and thus suggested the division of Herodotus into "Asia within the Halys" and "Asia beyond the Halys."

<sup>245</sup> However this might be, the term retained, through the Greek and Roman periods, both a wider and a narrower sense ; of which senses we are concerned only with the latter. The Asia of the New Testament is not the continent which stretches into the remote East from the Black Sea and the Red Sea, but simply the western portion of that peninsula which, in modern times, has received the name of `Asia Minor.' What extent of country, and what political significance we are to assign to the term, will be shown by a statement of a few historical changes.

The fall of Croesus reduced the Lydian kingdom to a Persian satrapy. With the rest of the Persian empire, this region west of the Halys fell before the armies of Alexander. In the confusion which followed the conqueror's death, an independent dynasty established itself at Pergamus, not far from the site of ancient Troy. At first their territory was narrow, and Attalus I. had to struggle with the Gauls who had invaded the peninsula, and with the neighboring chieftains of Bithynia, who had invited them. Antagonists still more formidable were the Greek kings of Syria, who claimed to be `Kings of Asia,' and aimed at the possession of the whole peninsula. But the Romans appeared in the East, and ordered Antiochus to retire beyond the Taurus, and then conferred substantial rewards on their faithful allies. Rhodes became the mistress of Caria and Lycia, on the opposite coast ; and Eumenes, the son of Attalus, received, in the West and North west, Lydia and Mysia, and a good portion of that vague region in the interior which was usually denominated `Phrygia,' stretching in one direction over the district of Lycaonia. Then it was that, as 150 years since the Margraves of

<sup>245</sup> We may compare the case of Asia. The term Asia Minor' is first 'Palestine,' which at first meant only found in Orosius, a writer of the fourth century of the Philistines, and then century, though `Asia Major' is used was used by the Greeks and Romans by Justin to denote the remote and to designate the whole of the land of eastern parts of the continent.

Brandenburg became Kings of Prussia, so the Princes of Pergamus became `Kings of Asia.' For a time they reigned over a highly civilized territory, which extended from sea to sea. The library of Pergamus was the rival of that of Alexandria : and Attaleia, from whence we have lately seen the Apostle sailing to Syria (Acts 14:25, 26) and Troas, from whence we shall presently see him sailing to Europe (Acts 16:11), were the southern and northern (or rather the eastern and western) harbors of King Attalus II. At length the debt of gratitude to the Romans was paid by King Attalus III., who died in the year 133 B.C., and left by testament the whole of his dominions to the benefactors of his house. And now the "Province of Asia" appears for the first time as a new and significant term in the history of the world. The newly acquired possession was placed under a praetor, and ultimately a proconsul. The letters and speeches of Cicero make us familiar with the names of more than one who enjoyed this distinction. One was the orator's brother, Quintus ; another was Flaccus, whose conduct as governor he defended before the Senate. Some slight changes in the extent of the province may be traced. Pamphylia was withdrawn from this jurisdiction. may lost her continental possessions, and Caria was added to Asia, while Lycia was declared independent. The boundary on the side of Phrygia is not easily determined, and was probably variable . But enough has been said to give a general idea of what is meant in the New Testament by that `Asia,' which St. Paul attempted to enter (Acts 16:6), after passing through Phrygia and Galatia ; which St. Peter addressed in his First Epistle (1 Pet. 1:1), along with Pontus, Cappadocia, Galatia, and Bithynia ; and which embraced the `seven churches" (Rev. 1:11) whose angels are mentioned in the Revelation of St. John.

### Bithynia

Next to Asia, both in proximity of situation and in the order of its establishment, was the province of Bithynia. Nor were the circumstances very different under which these two provinces passed under the Roman scepter.

As a new dynasty established itself after the death of Alexander on the north eastern shores of the Aegean, so an older dynasty secured its independence at the western edge of the Black Sea. Nicomedes I. was the king who invited the Gauls with whom Attalus I. had to contend : and as Attalus III., the last of the House of Pergamus, paid his debt to the Romans by making them his heirs, so the last of the Bithynian House, Nicomedes III., left his kingdom as a legacy to the same power in the year 75. It received some accessions on the east after the defeat of Mithridates ; and in this condition we find it in the list given by Dio of the provinces of Augustus; the debatable land between it and Asia being the district of Mysia, through which it is neither easy nor necessary to draw the exact frontier line. Stretching inland from the shores of the Propontis and Bosphorus, beyond the lakes near the cities of Nicea and Nicomedia, to the upper ravines of the Sangarius, and the snowy range of Mount Olympus, it was a province rich in all the changes of beauty and grandeur. Its history is as varied as its scenery, if we trace it from the time when Hannibal was an exile at the court of Prusias, to the establishment of Othman's Mahomedan capital in the city which still bears that monarch's name. It was Hadrian's favorite province, and many monuments remain of that emperor's partiality. But we cannot say more of it without leaving our proper subject. We have no reason to believe that St. Paul ever entered it, though once he made the attempt (Acts 16:7). Except the passing mention of Bithynia in this and one other place (1 Pet. 1:1) it has no connection with the apostolic writings. The first great passage of its ecclesiastical history is found in the correspondence of Trajan with its governor Pliny, concerning the persecution of the Christians. The second is the meeting of the first general Council, when the Nicene Creed was drawn up on the banks of the Lake Ascanius.

### **Pamphylia**

This province has been already mentioned (Chap. 6.) as one of the regions traversed by St.

Paul in his first missionary journey. But though its physical features have been described, its political limits have not been determined. The true Pamphylia of the earliest writers is simply the plain which borders the Bay of Attaleia, and which retreats itself like a bay into the mountains. How small and insignificant this territory was, may be seen from the records of the Persian war, to which Herodotus says that it sent only thirty ships ; while Lycra, on one side, contributed fifty, and Cilicia, on the other, a hundred. Nor do we find the name invested with any wider significance, till we approach the frontier of the Roman period. A singular dispute between Antiochus and the king of Pergamus, as to whether Pamphylia was really within or beyond Mount Taurus, was decided by the Romans in favor of their ally. This could only be effected by a generous inclusion of a good portion of the mountainous country within the range of this geographical term. Henceforward, if not before, Pamphylia comprehended some considerable part of what was anciently called Pisidia. We have seen that the Romans united it to the kingdom of Asia. It was, therefore, part of the province of Asia at the death of Attalus. It is difficult to trace the steps by which it was detached from that province. We find it (along with certain districts of Asia) included in the military jurisdiction of Cicero, when he was governor of Cilicia. It is spoken of as a separate province in the reign of Augustus. Its boundary on the Pisidian side, or in the direction of Phrygia, must be left indeterminate. Pisidia was included in this province : but, again, Pisidia is itself indeterminate: and we have good reasons for believing that Antioch in Pisidia was really under the governor of Galatia. Cilicia was contiguous to Pamphylia on the east. Lycra was a separate region on the west, first as an appendage to Rhodes in the time of the republic, and then as a free state under the earliest emperors ; but about the very time when Paul was traveling in these countries, Claudius brought it within the provincial system, and united it to Pamphylia; and inscriptions make us acquainted with a public

officer who bore the title of `Proconsul of Lycra and Pamphylia.

### Galatia

We now come to a political division of Asia Minor, which demands a more careful attention. Its sacred interest is greater than that of all the others, and its history is more peculiar. The Christians of Galatia were they who received the Apostle `as if he had been an angel" who, `if it had been possible, would have plucked out their eyes and given them to him" and then were `so soon removed" by new teachers `from him that called them, to another Gospel" who began to `run well," and then were hindered, who were `bewitched" by that zeal which compassed sea and land to make one proselyte, and who were as ready, in the fervor of their party spirit, to `bite and devour one another," as they were willing to change their teachers and their gospels." (Gal. 4:15; 1:6; 5:7; 3:1; 1:7; 5:15) It is no mere fancy which discovers, in these expressions of St. Paul's Epistle, indications of the character of that remarkable race of mankind, which all writers, from Caesar to Thierry, have described as susceptible of quick impressions and sudden changes, with a fickleness equal to their courage and enthusiasm, and a constant liability to that disunion which is the fruit of excessive vanity, that race, which has not only produced one of the greatest nations of modern times, but which, long before the Christian era, wandering forth from their early European seats, burnt Rome and pillaged Delphi, founded an. empire in northern Italy more than co extensive with Austrian Lombardy, and another in Asia Minor, equal in importance to one of the largest domains of the pashas.

For the" Galatia" of the New Testament was really the `Gaul" of the East. The `Epistle to the Galatians" would more literally and more correctly be called the `Epistle to the Gauls." When Livy, in his account of the Roman campaigns in Galatia, speaks of its inhabitants,

he always calls them `Gauls."<sup>246</sup> When the Greek historians speak of the inhabitants of ancient France, the word they use is `Galatians. The two terms are merely the Greek and Latin forms of the same `barbarian" appellation.

That emigration of the Gauls, which ended in the settlement in Asia Minor, is less famous than those which led to the disasters in Italy and Greece ; but it is, in fact, identical with the latter of these two emigrations, and its results were more permanent. The warriors who roamed over the Cevennes, or by the banks of the Garonne, reappear on the Halys and at the base of Mount Dindymus. They exchange the superstitions of Druidism for the ceremonies of the worship of Cybele. The very name of the chief Galatian tribe is one with which we are familiar in the earliest history of France ; and Jerome says that, in his own day, the language spoken at Ancyra was almost identical with that of Treves.

The Galatians were a stream from that torrent of barbarians which poured into Greece in the third century before our era, and which recoiled in confusion from the cliffs of Delphi. Some tribes had previously separated from the main army, and penetrated into Thrace. There they were joined by certain of the fugitives, and together they appeared on the coasts, which are separated by a narrow arm of the sea from the rich plains and valleys of Bithynia. The wars with which that kingdom was harassed, made their presence acceptable. Nicomedes was the Vortigern of Asia Minor: and the two Gaulish chieftains, Leonor and Lutar, may be fitly compared to the two legendary heroes of the Anglo Saxon invasion. Some difficulties occurred in the passage of the Bosphorus, which curiously contrast with the easy voyages of our pirate ancestors.

But once established in Asia Minor, the Gauls lost no time in spreading over the whole peninsula with their arms and devastation. In

---

<sup>246</sup> The country of the Galatians was sometimes called Gallogrecia.

their first crossing over we have compared them to the Saxons. In their first occupation they may be more fitly compared to the Danes. For they were a movable army rather than a nation, encamping, marching, and plundering at will. They stationed themselves on the site of ancient Troy, and drove their chariots in the plain of the Cayster. They divided nearly the whole peninsula among their three tribes. They levied tribute on cities, and even on kings. The wars of the East found them various occupation. They hired themselves out as mercenary soldiers. They were the royal guards of the kings of Syria, and the mamelukes of the Ptolemies in Egypt.<sup>247</sup>

The surrounding monarchs gradually curtailed their power, and repressed them within narrower limits. First Antiochus Soter drove the Tectosages, and then Eumenes drove the Trocmi and Tolistobii, into the central district which afterwards became Galatia. Their territory was definitely marked out and surrounded by the other states of Asia Minor, and they retained a geographical position similar to that of Hungary in the midst of its German and Slavonic neighbors. By degrees they coalesced into a number of small confederate states, and ultimately into one united kingdom. Successive circumstances brought them into contact with the Romans in various ways ; first, by a religious embassy sent from Rome to obtain peaceful possession of the sacred image of Cybele ; secondly, by the campaign of Manlius, who reduced their power and left them a nominal independence ; and then through the period of hazardous alliance with the rival combatants in the Civil Wars. The first Deiotarus was made king by Pompey, fled before Caesar at the battle of Pharsalia, and was defended before the conqueror by Cicero, in a speech which still remains to us. The second Deiotarus, like his father, was Cicero's friend,

<sup>247</sup> Even in the time of Julius Caesar, we find four hundred Gauls (Galatians), who had previously been part of Cleopatra's bodyguard, given for the same purpose to Herod. Josephus, *War*, xx.3.

and took charge of his son and nephew during the Cilician campaign. Amyntas, who succeeded him, owed his power to Antony, but prudently went over to Augustus in the battle of Actium. At the death of Amyntas, Augustus made some modifications in the extent of Galatia, and placed it under a governor. It was now a province, reaching from the borders of Asia and Bithynia to the neighborhood of Iconium, Lystra, and Derbe, "cities of Lycaonia"

Henceforward, like the Western Gaul, this territory was a part of the Roman Empire, though retaining the traces of its history in the character and language of its principal inhabitants. There was this difference, however, between the Eastern and the Western Gaul, that the latter was more rapidly and more completely assimilated to Italy. It passed from its barbarian to its Roman state, without being subjected to any intermediate civilization. The Gauls of the East, on the other hand, had long been familiar with the Greek language and the Greek culture. St. Paul's Epistle was written in Greek. The cotemporary inscriptions of the province are usually in the same language. The Galatians themselves are frequently called Gallo Grecians ; and many of the inhabitants of the province must have been of pure Grecian origin. Another section of the population, the early Phrygians, were probably numerous, but in a lower and more degraded position. The presence of great numbers of Jews<sup>4</sup> in the province, implies that it was, in some respects, favorable for traffic; and it is evident that the district must have been constantly intersected by the course of caravans from Armenia, the Hellespont, and the South. The Roman Itineraries inform us of the lines of communication between the great towns near the Halys and the other parts of Asia Minor. These circumstances are closely connected with the spread of the Gospel, and we shall return to them again when we describe St. Paul's first reception in Galatia.

### Pontus

The last independent dynasties in the north of the Peninsula have hitherto appeared as

friendly or subservient to the Roman power. Asia and Bithynia were voluntarily ceded by Attalus and Nicomedes; and Galatia, on the death of Amyntas, quietly fell into the station of a province. But when we advance still further to the east, we are reminded of a monarch who presented a formidable and protracted opposition to Rome. The war with Mithridates was one of the most serious wars in which the Republic was ever engaged; and it was not till after a long struggle that Pompey brought the kingdom of Pontus under the Roman yoke. In placing Pontus among the provinces of Asia Minor at this exact point of St. Paul's life, we are (strictly speaking) guilty of an anachronism. For long after the western portion of the empire of Mithridates was united partly with Bithynia and partly with Galatia, the region properly called Pontus remained under the government of independent chieftains. Before the Apostle's death, however, it was really made a province by Nero. Its last king was that Polemo II who was alluded to at the beginning of this work, as the contemptible husband of one of Herod's grand daughters. In himself he is quite unworthy of such particular notice, but he demands our attention, not only because, as the last independent king in Asia Minor, he stands at one of the turning points of history, but also because, through his marriage with Berenice, he must have had some connection with the Jewish population of Pontus, and therefore probably with the spread of the Gospel on the shores of the Euxine. We cannot forget that Jews of Pontus were at Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2:9), that the Jewish Christians of Pontus were addressed by St. Peter in his first epistle (1 Pet 1:1), and that a Jew born in Pontus (Acts 18:2) became one of the best and most useful associates of the Apostle of the Gentiles.

### Cappadocia

Crossing the country southwards from the birthplace of Aquila towards that of St. Paul, we traverse the wide and varied region which formed the province of Cappadocia, intermediate between Pontus and Cilicia. The

period of its provincial existence began in the reign of Tiberius. Its last king was Archelaus, the contemporary of the Jewish tetrarch of the same name (Matt. 2:22). Extending from the frontier of Galatia to the river Euphrates, and bounded on the south by the chain of Taurus, it was the largest province of Asia Minor. Some of its cities are celebrated in ecclesiastical history." But in the New Testament it is only twice alluded to, once in the Acts (Acts 2:9), and once in the Epistles (1 Pet. 1:1).

### Cilicia

A single province yet remains, in one respect the most interesting of all, for its chief city was the Apostle's native town. For this reason the reader's attention was invited long ago to its geography and history. It is therefore unnecessary to dwell upon them further. We need not go back to the time when Servilius destroyed the robbers in the mountains, and Pompey the pirates on the coast." And enough has been said of the conspicuous period of its provincial condition, when Cicero came down from Cappadocia through the great pass of Mount Taurus, and the letters of his correspondents in Rome were forwarded from Tarsus to his camp on the Pyramus. Nearly all the light we possess concerning the fortunes of Roman Cilicia is concentrated on that particular time. We know the names of hardly any of its later governors. One of the few allusions to its provincial condition about the time of Claudius and Nero, which we can adduce from any ancient writer, is that passage in the Acts, where Felix is described as inquiring" of what province" St. Paul was. The use of the strict political term informs us that it was a separate province ; but the term itself is not so explicit as to enable us to state whether the province was under the jurisdiction of the Senate or the Emperors.

### Planning for the 2<sup>nd</sup> Missionary Journey

With this last division of the Heptarchy of Asia Minor we are brought to the starting point of St. Paul's second missionary journey. Cilicia is contiguous to Syria, and indeed is more

naturally connected with it than with the rest of Asia Minor. We might illustrate this connection from the letters of Cicero; but it is more to our purpose to remark that the Apostolic Decree, recently enacted at Jerusalem, was addressed to the Gentile Christians in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia (Acts 15:23), and that Paul and Silas traveled through Syria and Cilicia" (Acts 15:36) in the early part of their progress.

This second missionary journey originated in a desire expressed by Paul to Barnabas, that they should revisit all the cities where they had preached the Gospel and founded churches (Acts 15:41). He felt that he was not called to spend a peaceful, though laborious, life at Antioch, but that his true work was far off among the Gentiles." (Acts 22:21) He knew that his campaigns were not ended, that, as the soldier of Jesus Christ, he must not rest from his warfare, but must endure hardness," that he might please Him who had called him." (2 Tim. 2:3,4) As a careful physician, he remembered that they, whose recovery from sin had been begun, might be in danger of relapse; or, to use another metaphor, and to adopt the poetical language of the Old Testament, he said, "Come, let us get up early to the vineyards: let us see if the vine flourish. The words actually recorded as used by Paul on this occasion, are these: "Come, let us turn back and visit our brethren in every city, where we have announced the word of the Lord, and let us see how they fare."

We notice here, for the first time, a trace of that tender solicitude concerning his converts, that earnest longing to behold their faces, which appears in the letters which he wrote afterwards, as one of the most remarkable, and one of the most attractive, features of his character. Paul was the speaker, and not Barnabas. The feelings of Barnabas might not be so deep, nor his anxiety so urgent. Paul thought doubtless of the Pisidians and Lycaonians, as he thought afterwards at Athens and Corinth of the Thessalonians, from whom he had been lately taken, in presence not in heart, endeavoring to see their face with great desire night and day praying exceedingly that

he might see their face, and might perfect that which was lacking in their faith (1 Thess. 2:17; 3:19). He was not ignorant of Satan's devices (2 Cor. 2:11). He feared lest by any means the Tempter had tempted them, and his labor had been in vain (1 Thess. 3:5). He stood in doubt of them," and desired to be present with them" once more (Gal. 4:20). His wish was to revisit every city where converts had been made. We are reminded here of the importance of continuing a religious work when once begun. We have had the institution of presbyters (Acts 15:23), and of councils (Acts 15), brought before us in the sacred narrative; and now we have an example of that system of church visitation, of the happy effects of which we have still some experience, when we see weak resolutions strengthened, and expiring faith rekindled, in confirmations at home, or in missionary settlements abroad.

#### Separation of Paul and Barnabas

This plan, however, of a combined visitation of the churches was marred by an outbreak of human infirmity. The two apostolic friends were separated from each other by a quarrel, which proved that they were indeed, as they had lately told the Lystrians," men of like passions" with others (Acts 14:15). Barnabas was unwilling to undertake the journey unless he were accompanied by his relation Mark. Paul could not consent to the companionship of one who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work:" (Acts 15:38) and neither of them could yield his opinion to the other.

This quarrel was much more closely connected with personal feelings than that which had recently occurred between St. Peter and St. Paul, and it was proportionally more violent. There is little doubt that severe words were spoken on the occasion. It is unwise to be overanxious to dilute the words of Scripture, and to exempt even Apostles from blame. By such criticism we lose much of the instruction which the honest record of their lives was intended to convey. We are taught by this scene at Antioch, that a good work may be blessed by

God, though its agents are encompassed with infirmity, and that changes, which are violent in their beginnings, may be overruled for the best results. Without attempting to balance too nicely the faults on either side, our simplest course is to believe that, as in most quarrels, there was blame with both. Paul's natural disposition was impetuous and impatient, easily kindled to indignation, and (possibly) overbearing.

Barnabas had shown his weakness when he yielded to the influence of Peter and the Judaizers (Gal. 2:13). The remembrance of the indirect censure he then received may have been perpetually irritated by the consciousness that his position was becoming daily more and more subordinate to that of the friend who rebuked him. Once he was spoken of as chief of those "prophets at Antioch," among whom Saul was the last: now his name was scarcely heard, except when he was mentioned as the companion of Paul. In short, this is one of those quarrels in which, by placing ourselves in imagination on the one side and the other, we can alternately justify both, and easily see that the purest Christian zeal, when combined with human weakness and partiality, may have led to the misunderstanding. How could Paul consent to take with him a companion who would really prove an embarrassment and a hindrance?

Such a task as that of spreading the Gospel of God in a hostile world needs a resolute will and an undaunted courage. And the work is too sacred to be put in jeopardy by any experiments. Mark had been tried once and found wanting. "No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God." And Barnabas would not be without strong arguments to defend the justice of his claims. It was hard to expect him to resign his interest in one who had cost him much anxiety and many prayers. His dearest wish was to see his young kinsman approving himself as a missionary of Christ. Now, too, he had been won back to a willing obedience, he had come from his home at Jerusalem, he was ready now to face all the difficulties and dangers of the

enterprise. To repel him in the moment of his repentance was surely "to break a bruised reed" and to "quench the smoking flax"

It is not difficult to understand the obstinacy with which each of the disputants, when his feelings were once excited, clung to his opinion as to a sacred truth. The only course which now remained was to choose two different paths and to labor independently; and the Church saw the humiliating spectacle of the separation of its two great missionaries to the Heathen. We cannot, however, suppose that Paul and Barnabas parted, like enemies, in anger and hatred. It is very likely that they made a deliberate and amicable arrangement to divide the region of their first mission between them, Paul taking the continental, and Barnabas the insular, part of the proposed visitation.

Of this at least we are certain, that the quarrel was overruled by Divine Providence to a good result. One stream of missionary labor had been divided, and the regions blessed by the waters of life were proportionally multiplied. St. Paul speaks of Barnabas afterwards as of an Apostle actively engaged in his Master's service. We know nothing of the details of his life beyond the moment of his sailing for Cyprus; but we may reasonably attribute to him not only the confirming of the first converts, but the full establishment of the Church in his native island.

At Paphos the impure idolatry gradually retreated before the presence of Christianity; and Salamis, where the tomb of the Christian Levite (Acts 4:36) is shown, has earned an eminent place in Christian history, through the writings of its bishop, Epiphanius. Mark, too, who began his career as a "minister" of the Gospel in this island (Acts 13;) justified the good opinion of his kinsman. Yet, the severity of Paul may have been of eventual service to his character, in leading him to feel more deeply the serious importance of the work he had undertaken. And the time came when Paul himself acknowledged, with affectionate tenderness, not only that he had again become his fellow laborer," (Philemon 24) but that he

was" profitable to the ministry" (2 Tim. 4:11) and one of the causes of his own "comfort." (Col. 4:10,11)

### Paul and Silas in Cilicia

It seems that Barnabas was the first to take his departure. The feeling of the majority of the Church was evidently with St. Paul, for when he had chosen Silas for his companion and was ready to begin his journey, he was specially "commended by the brethren to the grace of God (Acts 15:40)." The visitation of Cyprus having now been undertaken by others, his obvious course was not to go by sea in the direction of Perga or Attaleia, but to travel by the Eastern passes directly to the neighborhood of Iconium. It appears, moreover, that he had an important work to accomplish in Cilicia. The early fortunes of Christianity in that province were closely bound up with the city of Antioch and the personal labors of St. Paul. When he withdrew from Jerusalem, "three years" after his conversion, his residence for some time was in "the regions of Syria and Cilicia." (Gal. 1:21; Acts 9:30)

He was at Tarsus in the course of that residence, when Barnabas first brought him to Antioch (Acts 11:25). The churches founded by the Apostle in his native province must often have been visited by him; for it is far easier to travel from Antioch to Tarsus, than from Antioch to Jerusalem, or even from Tarsus to Iconium. Thus the religious movements in the Syrian metropolis penetrated into Cilicia. The same great "prophet" had been given to both, and the Christians in both were bound together by the same feelings and the same doctrines. When the Judaizing agitators came to Antioch, the result was anxiety and perplexity, not only in Syria, but also in Cilicia. This is nowhere literally stated; but it can be legitimately inferred.

We are, indeed, only told that certain men came down with false teaching from Judea to Antioch (Acts 15:1). But the Apostolic Decree is addressed to the Gentiles of Cilicia (Acts 15:23), as well as those of Antioch, thus implying that

the Judaizing spirit, with its consequences, had been at work beyond the frontier of Syria. And, doubtless, the attacks on St. Paul's apostolic character had accompanied the attack on apostolic truth, and a new fulfillment of the proverb was nearly realized, that a prophet in his own country is without honor. He had, therefore, no ordinary work to accomplish as he went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches (Acts 15:41); and it must have been with much comfort and joy that he was able to carry with him a document, emanating from the Apostles at Jerusalem, which justified the doctrine he had taught, and accredited his personal character.

Nor was he alone as the bearer of this letter, but Silas was with him also, ready to tell the same things by mouth (Acts 15:27). It is a cause for thankfulness that God put it into the heart of Silas to abide still at Antioch when Judas returned to Jerusalem, and to accompany St. Paul (Acts 15:40) on his northward journey. For when the Cilician Christians saw their countryman arrive without his companion Barnabas, whose name was coupled with his own in the Apostolic letter, their confidence might have been shaken, occasion might have been given to the enemies of the truth to slander St. Paul, had not Silas been present, as one of those who were authorized to testify that both Paul and Barnabas were "men who had hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ." (Acts 15:26)

Where the churches were, which he confirmed on his journey, in what particular cities of Syria and Cilicia, we are not informed. After leaving Antioch by the bridge over the Orontes, he would cross Mount Amanus lay the gorge which was anciently called the "Syrian Gates," and is now known as the Beilan Pass.<sup>248</sup> Then he

<sup>248</sup> The Syrian Gates are the entrance into Cilicia from Syria, as the among these different towns in the Cilician Gates are from Cappadocia. The latter pass, however, is by far the grander and more important of the two. Intermediate between these two, in the angle

would come to Alexandria and Issus, two cities that were monuments of the Macedonian conqueror; one as retaining his name, the other as the scene of his victory. After entering the Cilician plain, he may have visited Adana, Agae, or Mopsuetia, three of the conspicuous cities on the old Roman roads. With all these places St. Paul must have been more or less familiar: probably there were Christians in all of them, anxiously waiting for the Decree, and ready to receive the consolation it was intended to bring. And one other city must certainly have been visited.

If there were churches anywhere in Cilicia, there must have been one at Tarsus. It was the metropolis of the province; Paul had resided there, perhaps for some years, since the time of his conversion; and if he loved his native place well enough to speak of it with some thing like pride to the Roman officer at Jerusalem (Acts 21:39), he could not be indifferent to its religious welfare. Among the Gentiles of Cilicia, to whom the letter which he carried was addressed, the Gentiles of Tarsus had no small place in his affections. And his heart must have overflowed with thankfulness, if, as he passed through the streets which had been familiar to him since his childhood, he knew that many households were around him where the Gospel had come "not in word only but in power," and the relations between husband and wife, parent and child, master and slave, had been purified and sanctified by Christian love.

No doubt the city still retained all the aspect of the cities of that day, where art and amusement were consecrated to a false religion. The symbols of idolatry remained in the public places, statues, temples, and altars, and the various objects of devotion, which in all Greek towns, as well as in Athens (Acts 17:23), were conspicuous on every side.

But the silent revolution was begun. Some families had already turned "from idols to serve the living and true God (1 Thess. 1:9)." The

---

where Taurus and Amanus meet, is the pass into Syria by which Darius fled after the battle of Issus.

"dumb idols" to which, as Gentiles, they had been "carried away even as they were led (1 Cor. 12:2)," had been recognized as "nothing in the world (1 Cor. 8:4)," and been cast to the moles and to the bats (Isa. 2:20) The homes which had once been decorated with the emblems of a vain mythology, were now bright with the better ornaments of faith, hope, and love. And the Apostle of the Gentiles rejoiced in looking forward to the time when the grace which had been triumphant in the household should prevail against principalities and powers, when "every knee should bow at the name of Jesus, and every tongue confess that He is Lord, to the glory of God the Father"

### Across the Taurus

But it has pleased God that we should know more of the details of early Christianity in the wilder and remoter regions of Asia Minor. To these regions the footsteps of St. Paul were turned after he had accomplished the work of confirming the churches in Syria and Cilicia. The task now before him was the visitation of the churches he had formed in conjunction with Barnabas. We proceed to follow him in his second journey across Mount Taurus.

The vast mountain barrier which separates the sunny plains of Cilicia and Pamphylia from the central table land, has frequently been mentioned. On the former journey (Acts 13:14) St. Paul traveled from the Pamphylian plain to Antioch in Pisidia, and thence by Iconium to Lystra and Derbe. His present course across the mountains was more to the eastward; and the last mentioned cities were visited first. More passes than one lead up into Lycaonia and Cappadocia through the chain of Taurus from Cilicia. And it has been supposed that the Apostle traveled through one of the minor passes, which quits the lower plain at Pompeiopolis, and enters the upland plain of Iconium, not far from the conjectural site of Derbe. But there is no sufficient reason to suppose that he went by any other than the ordinary road.

A traveler wishing to reach the Valais conveniently from the banks of the Lago Maggiore would rather go by the Simplon, than by the difficult path across the Monte Moro; and there is one great pass in Asia Minor which may be called the Simplon of Mount Taurus, described as a rent or fissure in the mountain chain, extending from north to south through a distance of eighty miles," and known in ancient days by the name of the Cilician Gates," which has been, in all ages, the easiest and most convenient entrance from the northern and central parts of the peninsula to the level by the sea shore, where the traveler pauses before he enters Syria.

The securing of this pass was the greatest cause of anxiety to Cyrus, when he marched into Babylonia to dethrone his brothers Through this gorge Alexander descended to that Cilician plain, which has been finely described by a Greek historian as a theatre made by Nature's hand for the drama of great battles. Cicero followed in the steps of Alexander, as he tells his friend Atticus in a letter written with characteristic vanity. And to turn to the centuries which have elapsed since the time of the Apostles and the first Roman emperors: twice at least, this pass has been the pivot on which the struggle for the throne of the East seemed to turn, once, in the war described by obscure historians," when a pretender at Antioch made the Taurus his defense against the Emperor of Rome; and once in a war which we remember, when a pretender at Alexandria fortified it and advanced beyond it in his attempt to dethrone the Sultans In the wars between the Crescent and the Cross, which have filled up much of the intervening period, this defile has decided the fate of many an army. The Greek historians of the first Saracen invasions describe it by a word, unknown to classical Greek, which denotes that when this passage (between Cappadocia and Cilicia) was secure, the frontier was closed. The Crusaders, shrinking from the remembrance of its precipices and dangers, called it by the more awful name of the "Gates of Judas"

Through this pass we conceive St. Paul to have traveled on his way from Cilicia to Lycaonia. And if we say that the journey was made in the spring of the year 51, we shall not deviate very far from the actual date. By those who have never followed the Apostle's footsteps, the successive features of the scenery through which he passed may be compiled from the accounts of recent travelers, and arranged in the following order. After leaving Tarsus, the way ascends the valley of the Cydnus, which, for some distance, is nothing more than an ordinary mountain valley, with wooded eminences and tributary streams. Beyond the point where the road from Adana comes in from the right, the hills suddenly draw together and form a narrow pass, which has always been guarded by precipitous cliffs, and is now crowned by the ruins of a medieval castle. In some places the ravine contracts to a width of ten or twelve paces, leaving room for only one chariot to pass. It is an anxious place to any one in command of a military expedition.

To one who is unburdened by such responsibility, the scene around is striking and impressive. A canopy of fir trees is high overhead. Bare limestone cliffs rise above on either hand to an elevation of many hundred feet. The streams which descend towards the Cydnus are close by the wayside, and here and there undermine it or wash over it. Then the higher and more distant of these streams are left behind, the road emerges upon an open and elevated region, 4,000 feet above the level of the sea. This space of high land may be considered as dividing the whole mountain journey into two parts. For when it is passed, the streams are seen to flow in a new direction. Not that we have attained the point where the highest land of Asia Minor I turns the waters north and south. The torrents which are seen descending to the right, are merely the tributaries of the Sarus, another river of Cilicia. The road is conducted northwards through this new ravine; and again the rocks close in upon it, with steep naked cliffs, among cedars and pines, forming an intricate defile, which a handful of

men might convert into another Thermopylae. When the highest peaks of Taurus are left behind, the road to Tyana is continued in the same northerly direction; r while that to Iconium takes a turn to the left, and passes among wooded slopes with rocky projections, and over ground comparatively level, to the great Lycaonian plain.

The whole journey from Tarsus to Konieh is enough, in modern times, to occupy four laborious days; and, from the nature of the ground, the time required can never have been much less. The road, however, was doubtless more carefully maintained in the time of St. Paul than at the present day, when it is only needed for Tatar couriers and occasional traders. Antioch and Ephesus had a more systematic civilization then, than Aleppo or Smyrna has now; and the governors of Cilicia, Cappadocia, and Galatia, were more concerned than a modern Pacha in keeping up the lines of internal communication. At various parts of the journey from Tarsus to Iconium traces of the old military way are visible, marks of ancient chiseling, substructions, and pavement; stones that have fallen over into the rugged river bed, and sepulchers hewn out in the cliffs, or erected on the level ground . Some such traces still follow the ancient line of road where it enters the plain of Lycaonia, beyond Cybistra, near the spot where we conceive the town of Derbe to have been formerly situated.

As St. Paul emerged from the mountain passes, and came among the lower heights through which the Taurus recedes to the Lycaonian levels, the heart which had been full , of affection and anxiety all through the journey, would beat more quickly at the sight of the well known objects before him. The thought of his disciples would come with new force upon his mind, with a warm thanksgiving that he was at length allowed to revisit them, and to see how they fared.

The recollection of friends, from whom we have parted with emotion, is often strongly associated with natural scenery, especially when the scenery is remarkable. And here the

Apostle was approaching the home of his Lycaonian converts. On his first visit, when he came as a stranger, he had traveled in the opposite direction: but the same objects were again before his eyes, the same wide spreading plain, the same black summit of the Kara Dagh. In the further reach of the plain, beyond the `Black Mount," was the city of Iconium ; nearer to its base was Lystra ; and nearer still to the traveler himself was Derbe, the last point of his previous journey. Here was his first meeting now with the disciples he had then been enabled to gather. The incidents of such a meeting, the inquiries after Barnabas, the welcome given to Silas, the exhortations, instructions, encouragements, warnings, of St. Paul, may be left to the imagination of those who have pleasure in picturing to themselves the features of the Apostolic age, when Christianity was new.

### Lystra

This is all we can say of Derbe, for we know no details either of the former or present visit to the place. But when we come to Lystra, we are at once in the midst of all the interest of St. Paul's public ministry and private relations. Here it was that Paul and Barnabas were regarded as Heathen divinities (Acts 14:12 22); that the Jews, who had first cried `Hosanna" and then crucified the Savior, turned the barbarians from homage to insult; and that the little Church of Christ had been fortified by the assurance that the kingdom of heaven can only be entered through" much tribulation. Here too it was that the child of Lois and Eunice, taught the Holy Scriptures from his earliest years, had been trained to a religious life, and prepared, through the Providence of God, by the sight of the Apostle's sufferings, to be his comfort, support, and companion.

Spring and summer had passed over Lystra, since the Apostles had preached there. God had continued to bless them, and given them `rain from heaven and fruitful seasons, filling their hearts with food and gladness. But still `the living God, who made the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and all things that are

therein," was recognized only by a few. The temple of the Lystrians Jupiter still stood before the gate, and the priest still offered the people's sacrifices to the imaginary protector of the city.

Heathenism was invaded, but not yet destroyed. Some votaries had been withdrawn from that polytheistic religion, which wrote and sculptured in stone its dim ideas of present deities; crowding its thoroughfares with statues and altars, ascribing to the king of the gods the attributes of beneficent protection and the government of atmospheric changes," and vaguely recognizing Mercury as the dispenser of fruitful seasons and the patron of public happiness. But many years of difficulty and persecution were yet to elapse before Greeks and Barbarians fully learned, that the God whom St. Paul preached was a Father everywhere present to His children, and the One Author of every "good and perfect gift"

### Timothy

We have seen how the seeds of Gospel truth were sown in the heart of Timothy. The instruction received in childhood, the sight of St. Paul's sufferings, the hearing of his words, the example of the "unfeigned faith, which first dwelt in his grandmother Lois and his mother Eunice," (2 Tim. 1:5) and whatever other influences the Holy Spirit had used for his soul's good, had resulted in the full conviction that Jesus was the Messiah. And if we may draw an obvious inference from the various passages of Scripture, which describe the subsequent relation of Paul and Timothy, we may assert that natural qualities of an engaging character were combined with the Christian faith of this young disciple.

The Apostle's heart seems to have been drawn towards him with peculiar tenderness. He singled him out from the other disciples. "Him would Paul have to go forth with him." (Acts 16:3) This feeling is in harmony with all that we read, in the Acts and the Epistles, of St. Paul's affectionate and confiding disposition. He had no relative ties which were of service in his apostolic work; his companions were few and

changing; and though Silas may well be supposed to have supplied the place of Barnabas, it was no weakness to yearn for the society of one who might become, what Mark had once appeared to be, a son in the Gospels.

Yet how could he consistently take an untried youth on so difficult an enterprise? How could he receive Timothy into "the glorious company of Apostles," when he had rejected Mark? Such questions might be raised, if we were not distinctly told that the highest testimony was given to Timothy's Christian character, not only at Lystra, but at Iconium also. (Acts 16:2) We infer from this, that diligent inquiry was made concerning his fitness for the work to which he was willing to devote himself. To omit, at present, all notice of the prophetic intimations which sanctioned the appointment of Timothy, we have the best proof that he united in himself those outward and inward qualifications which a careful prudence would require.

One other point must be alluded to, which was of the utmost moment at that particular crisis of the Church. The meeting of the Council at Jerusalem had lately taken place. And, though it had been decided that the Gentiles were not to be forced into Judaism on embracing Christianity, and though St. Paul carried with him "the Decree, to be delivered" to all the churches," yet still he was in a delicate and difficult position. The Jewish Christians had naturally a great jealousy on the subject of their ancient divine Law; and in dealing with the two parties the Apostle had need of the utmost caution and discretion. We see, then, that in choosing a fellow worker, for his future labors, there was a peculiar fitness in selecting one whose mother was a Jewess, while his father was a Greek.

We may be permitted here to take a short retrospect of the childhood and education of St. Paul's new associate. The hand of the Apostle himself has drawn for us the picture of his early years. (2 Tim. 1:5; 3:15) That picture represents to us a mother and a grandmother, full of tenderness and faith, piously instructing the young Timothy in the ancient Scriptures,

making his memory familiar with that "cloud of witnesses" which encompassed all the history of the chosen people, and training his hopes to expect the Messiah of Israel.

It is not allowed to us to trace the previous history of these godly women of the dispersion. It is highly probable that they may have been connected with those Babylonian Jews whom Antiochus settled in Phrygia three centuries before: or they may have been conducted into Lycaonia by some of those mercantile and other changes which affected the movements of so many families at the epoch we are writing of; such, for instance, as those which brought the household of the Corinthian Chloe into relations with Ephesus," and caused the proselyte Lydia to remove from Thyatira to Philippi"

There is one difficulty which, at first sight, seems considerable; viz. the fact that a religious Jewess, like Eunice, should have been married to a Greek. Such a marriage was scarcely in harmony with the stricter spirit of early Judaism, and in Palestine itself it could hardly have taken place." But among the Jews of the dispersion, and especially in remote districts, where but few of the scattered people were established, the case was rather different. Mixed marriages, under such circumstances, were doubtless very frequent. We are at liberty to suppose that in this case the husband was a proselyte. We hear of no objections raised to the circumcision of Timothy, and we may reasonably conclude that the father was himself inclined to Judaism:" if, indeed, he were not already deceased, and Eunice a widow.

This very circumstance, however, of his mixed origin gave to Timothy an intimate connection with both the Jewish and Gentile worlds. Though far removed from the larger colonies of Israelite families, he was brought up in a thoroughly Jewish atmosphere: his heart was at Jerusalem while his footsteps were in the level fields near Lystra, or on the volcanic crags of the Black Mount: and his mind was stored with the Hebrew or Greek words of inspired men of old in the midst of the rude idolaters, whose language was "the speech of Lycaonia." And yet

he could hardly be called a Jewish boy, for he had not been admitted within the pale of God's ancient covenant by the rite of circumcision. He was in the same position, with respect to the Jewish Church, as those, with respect to the Christian Church, who, in various ages, and for various reasons, have deferred their baptism to the period of mature life. And "the Jews which were in those quarters," (Acts 16:3) however much they may have respected him, yet, knowing "that his father was a Greek," and that he himself was uncircumcised, must have considered him all but an "alien from the commonwealth of Israel"

Now, for St. Paul to travel among the synagogues with a companion in this condition, and to attempt to convince the Jews that Jesus was the Messiah, when his associate and assistant in the work was an uncircumcised Heathen, would evidently have been to encumber his progress and embarrass his work. We see in the first aspect of the case a complete explanation of what to many has seemed inconsistent, and what some have ventured to pronounce as culpable, in the conduct of St. Paul. "He took and circumcised Timothy." How could he do otherwise, if he acted with his usual "farsighted caution and deliberation? Had Timothy not been circumcised, a storm would have gathered round the Apostle in his further progress.

The Jews, who were ever ready to persecute him from city to city, would have denounced him still more violently in every synagogue, when they saw in his personal preferences, and in the co operation he most valued, a visible revolt against the law of his forefathers. To imagine that they could have overlooked the absence of circumcision in Timothy's case, as a matter of no essential importance, is to suppose they had already become enlightened Christians. Even in the bosom of the Church we have seen the difficulties which had recently been raised by scrupulousness and bigotry on this very subject. And the difficulties would have been increased tenfold in the untrodden field before St. Paul by proclaiming everywhere

on his very arrival that. circumcision was abolished. His fixed line of procedure was to act on the cities through the synagogues, and to preach the Gospel first to the Jew and then to the Gentile."

He had no intention of abandoning this method, and we know that he continued it for many years." But such a course would have been impossible had not Timothy been circumcised. He must necessarily have been repelled by that people who endeavored once (as we shall see hereafter) to murder St. Paul, because they imagined he had taken a Greek into the Temple (Acts 21:29, with 22:22). The very intercourse of social life would have been hindered, and made almost impossible, by the presence of a half heathen companion: for, however far the stricter practice may have been relaxed among the Hellenizing Jews of the dispersion, the general principle of exclusiveness everywhere remained, and it was still "an abomination" for the circumcised to eat with the uncircumcised.

It may be thought, however, that St. Paul's conduct in circumcising Timothy was inconsistent with the principle and practice he maintained at Jerusalem when he refused to circumcise Titus (Gal. 2:3). But the two cases were entirely different. Then there was an attempt to enforce circumcision as necessary to salvation : now it was performed as a voluntary act, and simply on prudential grounds. Those who insisted on the ceremony in the case of Titus were Christians, who were endeavoring to burden the Gospel with the yoke of the Law: those for whose sakes Timothy became obedient to one provision of the Law were Jews, whom it was desirable not to provoke, that they might more easily be delivered from bondage. By conceding in the present case, prejudice was conciliated and the Gospel furthered: the results of yielding in the former case would have been disastrous, and perhaps ruinous, to the cause of pure Christianity.

If it be said that even in this case there was danger lest serious results should follow, that doubt might be thrown on the freedom of the Gospel, and that color might be given to the

Judaizing propensity; it is enough to answer, that indifferent actions become right or wrong according to our knowledge of their probable consequences, and that St. Paul was a better judge of the consequences likely to follow from Timothy's circumcision than we can possibly be. Are we concerned about the effects likely to have been produced on the mind of Timothy himself? There was no risk, at least, lest he should think that circumcision was necessary to salvation, for he had been publicly recognized as a Christian before he was circumcised, and the companion, disciple, and minister of St. Paul was in no danger, we should suppose, of becoming a Judaizer.

And as for the moral results which might be expected to follow in the minds of the other Lycaonian Christians, it must be remembered that at this very moment St. Paul was carrying with him and publishing the Decree which announced to all Gentiles that they were not to be burdened with a yoke which the Jews had never been able to bear. St. Luke notices this circumstance in the very next verse after the mention of Timothy's circumcision, as if to call our attention to the contiguity of the two facts. It would seem, indeed, that the very best arrangements were adopted which a divinely enlightened prudence could suggest. Paul carried with him the letter of the Apostles and elders, that no Gentile Christian might be enslaved to Judaism. He circumcised his minister and companion, that no Jewish Christian might have his prejudices shocked. His language was that which he always used, "Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing. The renovation of the heart in Christ is everything." Let every man be persuaded in his own mind." (Rom. 14:5) No innocent prejudice was ever treated roughly by St. Paul. To the Jew he became a Jew, to the Gentile a Gentile: "he was all things to all men, if by any means he might save some." (1 Cor. 9:20 22)

Iconium appears to have been the place where Timothy was circumcised. The opinion of the Christians at Iconium, as well as those at Lystra, had been obtained before the Apostle took him

as his companion. These towns were separated only by the distance of a few miles; and constant communication must have been going on between the residents in the two places, whether Gentile, Jewish, or Christian. Iconium was by far the more populous and important city of the two, and it was the point of intersection of all the great roads in the neighborhood. For these reasons we conceive that St. Paul's stay in Iconium was of greater moment than his visits to the smaller towns, such as Lystra. Whether the ordination of Timothy, as well as his circumcision, took place at this particular place and time, is a point not easy to determine. But this view is at least as probable as any other that can be suggested: and it gives a new and solemn emphasis to this occasion, if we consider it as that to which reference is made in the tender allusions of the pastoral letters, where St. Paul reminds Timothy of his good confession before "many witnesses," (1 Tim. 6:12) of the "prophecies" which sanctioned his dedication to God's services ((1 Tim. 1:18), and of the "gifts" received by the laying on of" the hands of the presbyters" (1 Tim. 4:14) and the Apostle's" own hands." (2 Tim. 1:6)

Such references to the day of ordination, with all its well remembered details, not only were full of serious admonition to

Timothy, but possess the deepest interest for us. And this interest becomes still greater if we bear in mind that the "witnesses" who stood by were St. Paul's own converts, and the very "brethren" who gave testimony to Timothy's high character at Lystra and Iconium; that the "prophecy" which designated him to his office was the same spiritual gift which had attested the commission of Barnabas and Saul at Antioch, <sup>249</sup> and that the College of Presbyters (1 Tim. 4:14), who, in conjunction with the Apostle, ordained the new minister of the Gospel, consisted of those who had been" ordained in, every church" at the close of that first journey.

<sup>249</sup> Compare 1 Tim. 1:18 with Acts 13:51 to 14:21.

### Journey through Phrygia

On quitting Iconium St. Paul left the route of his previous expedition; unless indeed he went in the first place to Antioch in Pisidia, a journey to which city was necessary in order to complete a full visitation of the churches founded on the continent in conjunction with Barnabas. It is certainly most in harmony with our first impressions, to believe that this city was not unvisited. No mention, however, is made of the place, and it is enough to remark that a residence of a few weeks at Iconium as his headquarters would enable the Apostle to see more than once all the Christians at Antioch, Lystra, and Derbe. It is highly probable that he did so: for the whole aspect of the departure from Iconium, as it is related to us in the Bible, is that of a new missionary enterprise, undertaken after the work of visitation was concluded. St. Paul leaves Iconium, as formerly he left the Syrian Antioch, to evangelize the Heathen in new countries. Silas is his companion in place of Barnabas, and Timothy is with him "for his minister," as Mark was with him then. Many roads were before him. By traveling westwards he would soon cross the frontier of the province of Asia, and he might descend by the valley of the Maeander to Ephesus, its metropolis: or the roads to the south might have conducted him to Perga and Attaleia, and the other cities on the coast of Pamphylia. But neither of these routes was chosen. Guided by the ordinary indications of Providence, or consciously taught by the Spirit of God, he advanced in a northerly direction, through what is called, in the general language of Scripture, "Phrygia and the region of Galatia"

We have seen" that the term" Phrygia" had no political significance in the time of St. Paul. It was merely a geographical expression, denoting a debatable country of doubtful extent, diffused over the frontiers of the provinces of Asia and Galatia, but mainly belonging to the former. We believe that this part of the Apostle's journey might be described under various forms of expression, according as the narrator might speak politically or popularly. A traveler

proceeding from Cologne to Hanover might be described as going through Westphalia or through Prussia. The course of the railroad would be the best indication of his real path. So we imagine that our best guide in conjecturing St. Paul's path through this part of Asia Minor is obtained by examining the direction of the ancient and modern roads.

We have marked his route in our map along the general course of the Roman military way, and the track of Turkish caravans, which leads by Laodicea, Philomelium, and Synnada, or, to use the existing terms, by Ladik, Ak Sher, and Eski Karahissar. This road follows the northern side of that ridge which Strabo describes as separating Philomelium and Antioch in Pisidia. If St. Paul revisited Antioch on his way, and we cannot be sure that he did not, he would follow the course of his former journey (Acts 14), and then regain the road to Synnada by crossing the ridge to Philomelium. We must again repeat, that the path marked down here is conjectural. We have nothing either in St. Luke's narrative or in St. Paul's own letters to lead us to any place in Phrygia, as certainly visited by him on this occasion, and as the home of the converts he then made. One city indeed, which is commonly reckoned among the Phrygian cities, has a great place in St. Paul's biography, and it lay on the line of an important Roman road.<sup>250</sup> But it was situated far within the province of Asia, and for several reasons we think it highly improbable that he visited Colossi on this journey, if indeed he ever visited it at all. The most probable route is that which lies more to the northwest in the direction of the true Galatia.

### Churches of Galatia

The remarks which have been made on Phrygia, must be repeated, with some modification,

---

<sup>250</sup> Xenophon reckons Colossae in Phrygia. So does Strabo. It was on the great road from Iconium to Ephesus. We come here upon a question which we need not anticipate, that is, whether Paul was ever at Colossae.

concerning Galatia. It is true that Galatia was a province : but we can plainly see that the term is used here in its popular sense, not as denoting the whole territory which was governed by the Galatian proprietor, but rather the primitive region of the tetrarchs and kings, without including those districts of Phrygia or Lycaonia, which were now politically united with it.

There is absolutely no city in true Galatia which is mentioned by the Sacred Writers in connection with the first spread of Christianity. From the peculiar form of expression with which the Christians of this part of Asia Minor are addressed by St. Paul in the Epistle which he wrote to them, and alluded to in another of his Epistles (1 Cor. 16:1), we infer that the churches of Galatia, were not confined to any one city, but distributed through various parts of the country.

If we were to mention two cities, which, both from their intrinsic importance, and from their connection with the leading roads, are likely to have been visited and revisited by the Apostle, we should be inclined to select Pessinua and Ancyra. The first of these cities retained some importance as the former capital of one of the Galatian tribes, and its trade was considerable under the early Emperors. Moreover, it had an ancient and widespread renown, as the seat of the primitive worship of Cybele, the Great Mother. Though her oldest and most sacred image (which, like that of Diana at Ephesus, had 'fallen down from heaven') had been removed to Rome, her worship continued to thrive in Galatia, under the superintendence of her effeminate and fanatical priests; and Pessinus was the object of one of Julian's pilgrimages, when Heathenism was on the decline. Ancyra was a place of still greater moment : for it was the capital of the province.

The time of its highest eminence was not under the Gaulish but the Roman government. Augustus built there a magnificent temple of marble, and inscribed there a history of his deeds, almost in the style of an Asiatic sovereign." This city was the meeting place of

all the great roads in the north of the peninsula." And, when we add that Jews had been established there from the time of Augustus," and probably earlier, we can hardly avoid the conclusion that the Temple and Inscription at Angora, which successive travelers have described and copied during the last three hundred years, were once seen by the Apostle of the Gentiles.

However this may have been, we have some information from his own pen, concerning his first journey through" the region of Galatia." We know that he was delayed there by sickness, and we know in what spirit the Galatians received him.

St. Paul affectionately reminds the Galatians (Gal. 4:13)" that it was `bodily sickness which caused him to preach the Glad Tidings to them at the first." The allusion is to his first visit : and the obvious inference is, that he was passing through Galatia to some other district (possibly Pontus, where we know that many Jews were established), when the state of his bodily health arrested his progress.

Thus he became, as it were, the Evangelist of Galatia against his will. But his zeal to discharge the duty that was laid on him did not allow him to be silent. He was instant" in season and out of season." "Woe" was on him if he did not preach the Gospel. The same Providence detained him among the Gauls, which would not allow him to enter Asia or Bithynia (Acts 16:6,7): and in the midst of his weakness he made the Glad Tidings known to all who would listen to him.

We cannot say what this sickness was, or even with certainty identify it with that" thorn in the flesh" (2 Cor. 12:7 10) to which he feelingly alludes in his Epistles as a discipline which God had laid on him. But the remembrance of what he suffered in Galatia seems so much to color all the phrases in this part of the Epistle that a deep personal interest is connected with the circumstance. Sickness in a foreign country has a peculiarly depressing effect on a sensitive mind. And though doubtless Timothy watched

over the Apostle's weakness with the most affectionate solicitude, yet those who have experienced what fever is in a land of strangers will know how to sympathize, even with St. Paul, in this human trial.

The climate and the prevailing maladies of Asia Minor may have been modified with the lapse of centuries: and we are without the guidance of St. Luke's medical language," which sometimes throws a light on diseases alluded to in Scripture: but two Christian sufferers, in widely different ages of the Church, occur to the memory as we look on the map of Galatia. We could hardly mention any two men more thoroughly imbued with the spirit of St. Paul, than John Chrysostom and Henry Martyn, And when we read how these two saints suffered in their last hours from fatigue, pain, rudeness, and cruelty, among the mountains of Asia Minor which surround the place where they rest, <sup>251</sup> we can well enter into the meaning of St. Paul's expressions of gratitude to those who received him kindly in the hour of his weakness.

The Apostle's reception among the frank and warmhearted Gauls was peculiarly kind and disinterested. No Church is reminded by the Apostle so tenderly of the time of their first meeting. The recollection is used by him to strengthen his reproaches of their mutability, and to enforce the pleading with which he urges them to return to the true Gospel. That Gospel had been received in the first place with the same affection which they extended to the Apostle himself. And the subject, the manner, and the results of his preaching are not obscurely indicated in the Epistle itself. The great topic there, as at Corinth and everywhere, was `the cross of Christ" Christ crucified" set forth among them. <sup>252</sup> The Divine evidence of the Spirit followed the word, spoken by the mouth of the Apostle, and received by `the hearing of the

<sup>251</sup> It is remarkable that Chrysostom and Martyn are buried in the same place. They both died on a journey at Tocat or Comana in Pontus.

<sup>252</sup> Compare Gal. 3:1 with 1 Cor. 1:13,17 and 2:2

ear." Many were converted, both Greeks and Jews, men and women, free men and slaves.

The worship of false divinities, whether connected with the old superstition at Pessinus, or the Roman idolatry at Ancyra, was forsaken for that of the true and living God. And before St. Paul left the region of Galatia on his onward progress, various Christian communities were added to those of Cilicia, Lycaonia, and Phrygia.

### Journey to the Aegean

In following St. Paul on his departure from Galatia, we come to a passage of acknowledged difficulty in the Acts of the Apostles (Acts 16:6,7). Not that the words themselves are obscure. The difficulty relates, not to grammatical construction, but to geographical details. The statement contained in St. Luke's words is as follows: After preaching the Gospel in Phrygia and Galatia, they were hindered from preaching it in Asia ; accordingly, when in Mysia or its neighborhood, they attempted to penetrate into Bithynia; and this also being forbidden by the Divine Spirit, they passed by Mysia and came down to Troas.

Now everything depends here on the sense we assign to the geographical terms. What is meant by the words "Mysia," "Asia," and "Bithynia?" It will be remembered that all these words had a wider and a more restricted sense. They might be used popularly and vaguely; or they might be taken in their exact political meaning. It seems to us that the whole difficulty disappears by understanding them in the former sense, and by believing that St. Luke wrote in the usual popular language, without any precise reference to the provincial boundaries.

We need hardly mention Bithynia ; for whether we speak of it traditionally or politically, it was exclusive both of Asia and Mysia. In this place it is evident that Mysia is excluded also from Asia, just as Phrygia is above; not because these two districts were not parts of it in its political character of a province, but because they had a history and a traditional character of their own sufficiently independent to give them a name in popular usage.

As regards Asia, it is simply viewed as the western portion of Asia Minor. Its relation to the peninsula has been very well described by saying that it occupied the same relative position which Portugal occupies with regard to Spain. The comparison would be peculiarly just in the passage before us; for the Mysia of St. Luke is to Asia what Galicia is to Portugal ; and the journey from Galatia and Phrygia to the city of Troas has its European parallel in a journey from Castile to Vigo.

We are evidently destitute of materials for laying down the route of St. Paul and his companions. All that relates to Phrygia and Galatia must be left vague and blank, like an unexplored country in a map, where we are at liberty to imagine mountains and plains, rivers and cities, but are unable to furnish any proofs. As the path of the Apostle, however, approaches the Aegean, it comes out into comparative light: the names of places are again mentioned, and the country and the coast have been explored and described.

The early part of the route then must be left indistinct. Thus much, however, we may venture to say, that since the Apostle usually turned his steps towards the large towns, where many Jews were established, it is most likely that Ephesus, Smyrna, or Pergamus was the point at which he aimed, when he sought `to preach the Word in Asia.' There is nothing else to guide our conjectures, except the boundaries of the provinces and the lines of the principal roads. If he moved from Angora in the general direction above pointed out, he would cross the river Sangarius near Kiutaya, which is a great modern thoroughfare, and has been mentioned before (Chapter 5) in connection with the route from Adalia to Constantinople; and a little further to the west, near Aizani, he would be about the place where the boundaries of Asia, Bithynia, and Mysia meet together, and on the watershed which separates the waters flowing northwards to the Propontis, and those which feed the rivers of the Aegean.

Here then we may imagine the Apostle and his three companions to pause, uncertain of their

future progress, on the chalk downs which lie between the fountains of the Rhyndacus and those of the Hermus, in the midst of scenery not very unlike what is familiar to us in England. The long range of the Mysian Olympus to the north is the boundary of Bithynia. The summits of the Phrygian Dindymus on the south are on the frontier of Galatia and Asia. The Hermus flows through the province of Asia to the islands of the Aegean. The Rhyndacus flows to the Propontis, and separates Mysia from Bithynia. By following the road near the former river they would easily arrive at Smyrna or Pergamus. By descending the valley of the latter and then crossing Olympus, they would be in the richest and most prosperous part of Bithynia. In which direction shall their footsteps be turned ?

Some Divine intimation, into the nature of which we do not presume to inquire, told the Apostle that the Gospel was not yet to be preached in the populous cities of Asia. The time was not yet come for Christ to be made known to the Greeks and Jews of Ephesus, and for the churches of Sardis, Pergamus, Philadelphia, Smyrna, Thyatira, and Laodicea, to be admitted to their period of privilege and trial, for the warning of future generations. Shall they turn, then, in the direction of Bithynia ? This also is forbidden. St. Paul (so far as we know) never crossed the Mysian Olympus, or entered the cities of Nicea and Chalcedon, illustrious places in the Christian history of a later age. By revelations, which were anticipative of the fuller and clearer communication at Troas, the destined path of the apostolic company was pointed out, through the intermediate country, directly to the West. Leaving the greater part of what was popularly called Mysia to the right, they came to the shores of the Aegean, about the place where the deep gulf of Adramyttium, over against the island of Lesbos, washes the very base of Mount Ida.

### Alexandria Troas

At Adramyttium, if not before, St. Paul is on the line of a great Roman road. We recognize the

place as one which is mentioned again in the description of the voyage to Rome (Acts 27:2.). It was a mercantile town, with important relations, both with foreign harbors and the cities of the interior of Asia Minor. From this point the road follows the northern shore of the gulf, crossing a succession of the streams which flow from Ida, and alternately descending to the pebbly beach and rising among the rocks and evergreen brushwood, while Lesbos appears and reappears through the branches of the rich forest trees, till the sea is left behind at the city of Assos. This also is a city of St. Paul. The nineteen miles of road which lie between it and Troas is the distance which he traveled by land before he rejoined the ship which had brought him from Philippi (Acts 20:13); and the town across the strait, on the shore of Lesbos, is Mytilene, whither the vessel proceeded when the Apostle and his companions met on board.

But to return to the present journey. Troas is the name either of a district or a town. As a district it had a history of its own. Though geographically a part of Mysia, and politically a part of the province of Asia, it was yet usually spoken of as distinguished from both. This small region, extending from Mount Ida to the plain watered by the Simoia and Scamander, was the scene of the Trojan war; and it was due to the poetry of Homer that the ancient name of Priam's kingdom should be retained. This shore has been visited on many memorable occasions by the great men of this world. Xerxes passed this way when he undertook to conquer Greece. Julius Caesar was here after the battle of Pharsalia.

But, above all, we associate the spot with a European conqueror of Asia, and an Asiatic conqueror of Europe; with Alexander of Macedon and Paul of Tarsus. For here it was that the enthusiasm of Alexander was kindled at the tomb of Achilles, by the memory of his heroic ancestors; here he girded on their armor; and from this goal he started to overthrow the august dynasties of the East. And now the great Apostle rests in his triumphal progress upon the same poetic shore; here he is armed by

heavenly visitants with the weapons of a warfare that is not carnal; and hence he is sent forth to subdue all the powers of the West, and bring the civilization of the world into captivity to the obedience of Christ.

Turning now from the district to the city of Troas, we must remember that its full and correct name was Alexandria Troas. Sometimes, as in the New Testament, it is simply called Troas; sometimes, as by Pliny and Strabo, simply Alexandria. It was not, however, one of those cities (amounting in number to nearly twenty) which were built and named by the conqueror of Darius. This Alexandria received its population and its name under the successors of Alexander. It was an instance of that centralization of small scattered towns into one great mercantile city, which was characteristic of the period. Its history was as follows: Antigonus, who wished to leave a monument of his name on this classical ground, brought together the inhabitants of the neighboring towns to one point on the coast, where he erected a city, and called it Antigoma Troas. Lysimachus, who succeeded to his power on the Dardanelles, increased and adorned the city, but altered its name, calling it in honor of the man of Macedonia, Alexandria Troas.

This name was retained ever afterwards. When the Romans began their eastern wars, the Greeks of Troas espoused their cause, and were thenceforward regarded with favor at Rome. But this willingness to recompense useful service was combined with other feelings, half poetical, half political, which about this time took possession of the mind of the Romans. They fancied they saw a primeval Rome on the Asiatic shore. The story of Aeneas in Virgil, who relates in twelve books how the glory of Troy was transferred to Italy, the warning of Horace, who admonishes his fellow citizens that their greatness was gone if they rebuilt the ancient walls, reveal to us the fancies of the past and the future, which were popular at Rome. Alexandria Troas was a recollection of the city of Priam, and a prophecy of the city of Constantine. The Romans regarded it in its best

days as a "New Troy:" and the Turks even now call its ruins "Old Constantinople"

It is said that Julius Caesar, in his dreams of a monarchy which should embrace the East and the West, turned his eyes to this city as his intended capital: and there is no doubt that Constantine, before he gave a just preference to the situation of Byzantium, had conceived the design of erecting the seat of empire on this celebrated spot, from whence the Romans derived their fabulous origin.

Augustus brought the town into close and honorable connection with Rome by making it a colony and assimilated its land to that of Italy by giving it the *jus Italicum*. When St. Paul was there, it had not attained its utmost growth as a city of the Romans. The great aqueduct was not yet built, by which Herod Atticus brought water from the fountains of Ida, and the piers of which are still standing. The enclosure of the walls, extending above a mile from east to west, and near a mile from north to south, may represent the limits of the city in the age of Claudius. The ancient harbor, even yet distinctly traceable, and not without a certain desolate beauty, when it is the foreground of a picture with the hills of Imbros and the higher peak of Samothrace in the distance, is an object of greater interest than the aqueduct and the walls. All further allusions to the topography of the place may be deferred until we describe the apostle's subsequent and repeated visits (Acts 16, 20; 2 Cor. 2; 2 Tim. 4). At present he is hastening towards Europe. Everything in this part of our narrative turns our eyes to the west.

### Paul's Vision

When St. Paul's eyes were turned towards the West, he saw that remarkable view of Samothrace over Imbros, which has just been mentioned. And what were the thoughts in his mind when he looked towards Europe across the Aegean? Though ignorant of the precise nature of the supernatural intimations which had guided his recent journey, we are led irresistibly to think that he associated his future work with the distant prospect of the

Macedonian hills. We are reminded of another journey, when the Prophetic Spirit gave him partial revelations on his departure from Corinth, and on his way to Jerusalem." After I have been there I must also see Rome (Acts 19:21)';" I have no more place in these parts (Rom. 15:23);" "I know not what shall befall me, save that the Holy Ghost witnesses that bonds and afflictions abide me." (Acts 20:22,23)

Such thoughts, it may be, had been in the Apostle's mind at Troas, when the sun set beyond Athos and Samothrace, and the shadows fell on Ida and settled dark on Tenedos and the deep. With the view of the distant land of Macedonia imprinted on his memory, and the thought of Europe's miserable heathenism deep in his heart, he was prepared, like Peter at Joppa, to receive the full meaning of the voice which spoke to him in a dream. In the visions of the night, a form appeared to come and stand by him;" and he recognized in the supernatural visitant" a man of Macedonia, who came to plead the spiritual wants of his country. It was the voice of the sick inquiring for a physician, of the ignorant seeking for wisdom, the voice which ever since has been calling on the Church to extend the Gospel to heathendom," Come over and help us"

Virgil has described an evening and a sunrise on this coast, before and after an eventful night. That night was indeed eventful in which St. Paul received his commission to proceed to Macedonia. The commission was promptly executed (Acts 16:10). The morning star appeared over the cliffs of Ida. The sun rose and spread the day over the sea and the islands as far as Athos and Samothrace. The men of Troas awoke to their trade and their labor. Among those who were busy about the shipping in the harbor were the newly arrived Christian travelers, seeking for a passage to Europe, Paul, and Silas, and Timothy, and that new companion," Luke the beloved Physician," who, whether by pre arrangement, or by a providential meeting, or (it may be) even in consequence of the Apostle's delicate health, now joined the mission, of which he afterwards

wrote the history. God provided a ship for the messengers He had chosen; and (to use the language of a more sacred poetry than that which has made these coasts illustrious)" He brought the wind out of His treasuries, and by His power He brought in the south wind," (Psalm 135:7; 78:26) and prospered the voyage of His servants.

## Chapter 9

### Voyage by Samothrace to Neapolis

The weather itself was propitious to the voyage from Asia to Europe. It is evident that Paul and his companions sailed from Troas with a fair wind. On a later occasion we are told that five days were spent on the passage from Philippi to Troas. On the present occasion the same voyage, in the opposite direction, was made in two. If we attend to St. Luke's technical expression, which literally means that they" sailed before the wind," and take into account that the passage to the west, between Tenedos and Lemnos, is attended with some risk,<sup>253</sup> we may infer that the wind blew from the southward. The southerly winds in this part of the Archipelago do not usually last long, but they often blow with considerable force. Sometimes they are sufficiently strong to counteract the current which sets to the southward from the mouth of the Dardanelles.

<sup>253</sup> All ships should pass to the eastward of Tenedos. . . Ships that go to the westward in callus may drift on the shoals of Lemnos, and the S. E. end of that island being very low is not seen above nine miles off: . . . It is also to be recollected, that very dangerous shoals extend from the N. W. and W. ends of Tenedos.'-Purdv's Sailing Directory, pp. 158, 189. Captain Stewart says: I To work up to the Dardanelles, I prefer going inside of Tenedos . . . you can go by your lead, and, during light winds, you may anchor anywhere. If you go outside of Tenedos, and it falls calm, the current sets you towards the shoal off Lemnos-' The writer has heard this and what follows confirmed by those who have had practical experience in the merchant service in the Levant.]

However this might be on the day when St. Paul passed over these waters, the vessel in which he sailed would soon cleave her way through the strait between Tenedos and the main, past the Dardanelles, and near the eastern shore of Imbros. On rounding the northern end of this island, they would open Samothrace, which had hitherto appeared as a higher and more distant summit over the lower mountains of Imbros.<sup>254</sup>

The distance between the two islands is about twelve miles. Leaving Imbros, and bearing now a little to the west, and having the wind still (as our sailors say) two or three points abaft the beam, the helmsman steered for Samothrace; and, under the shelter of its high shore, they anchored for the night. (Acts 16:11)

Samothrace is the highest land in the north of the Archipelago, with the exception of Mount Athos. These two eminences have been in all ages the familiar landmarks of the Greek mariners of the Aegean. Even from the neighborhood of Troas, Mount Athos is seen towering over Lemnos, like Samothrace over Imbros. And what Mount Athos is, in another sense, to the superstitious Christian of the Levant, the peak of Samothrace was, in the days of Heathenism, to his Greek ancestors in the same seas.

It was the 'Monte Santo,' on which the Greek mariner looked with awe, as he gazed on it in the distant horizon, or came to anchor under the shelter of its coast. It was the sanctuary of an ancient superstition, which was widely spread over the neighboring continents, and the history of which was vainly investigated by Greek and Roman writers.

If St. Paul had stayed here even a few days, we might be justified in saying something of the "Cabiri;" but we have no reason to suppose that he even landed on the island. At present it possesses no good harbor, though many places of safe anchorage: "and if the wind was from

<sup>254</sup> The island Imbros is separated from Samothraki by a channel twelve miles in breadth. by is much longer and larger, but not so high, as that island.'

the southward, there would be smooth water anywhere on the north shore. The island was, doubtless, better supplied with artificial advantages in an age not removed by many centuries from the flourishing period of that mercantile empire which the Phoenicians founded, and the Athenians inherited, in the Aegean Sea.

The relations of Samothrace with the opposite coast were close and frequent, when the merchants of Tyre had their miners at work in Mount Pangams,<sup>255</sup> and when Athens diffused her citizens as colonists or exiles on all the neighboring shores. Nor can those relations have been materially altered when both the Phoenician and Greek settlements on the sea were absorbed in the wider and continental dominion of Rome. Ever since the day when Perseus fled to Samothrace from the Roman conqueror, frequent vessels had been passing and repassing between the island and the coasts of Macedonia and Thrace.

The Macedonian harbor at which St. Paul landed was Neapolis. Its direction from Samothrace is a little to the north of west. But a southerly breeze would still be a fair wind, though they could not literally 'run before it.' A run of seven or eight hours, notwithstanding the easterly current, would bring the vessel under the lee of the island of Thasos, and within a few miles of the coast of Macedonia. The shore of the mainland in this part is low, but mountains rise to a considerable height behind. "To the westward of the channel which separates it from Thasos, the coast recedes and forms a bay, within which, on a promontory with a port on each sides the ancient Neapolis was situated.

Some difference of opinion has existed concerning the true position of this harbor: but the traces of paved military roads approaching

<sup>255</sup> Thasos was the headquarters of the Phoenician mining operations in this part of the Aegean. Herodotus visited this island and was much struck with the traces of their work.

the promontory we have described, in two directions corresponding with those indicated in the ancient Itineraries; the Latin inscriptions which have been found on the spot; the remains of a great aqueduct on two tiers of Roman arches, and of cisterns like those at Baiæ near the other Neapolis on the Campanian shore, seem to leave little doubt that the small Turkish village of Cavallo is the Naples of Macedonia, the "Neapolis" at which St. Paul landed, and the seaport of Philippi, the "first city" (Acts 16:12) which the traveler reached on entering this 'part of Macedonia,' and a city of no little importance as a Roman military "colony"

A ridge of elevated land, which connects the range of Pangeus with the higher mountains in the interior of Thrace, is crossed between Neapolis and Philippi. The whole distance is about ten miles. The ascent of the ridge is begun immediately from the town, through a defile formed by some precipices almost close upon the sea. When the higher ground is attained, an extensive and magnificent sea view is opened towards the south. Samothrace is seen to the east; Thasos to the south east; and, more distant and farther to the right, the towering summit of Athos.<sup>256</sup>

<sup>256</sup> We may quote here two passages from Clarke, one describing this approach to Neapolis from the neighborhood, the other his departure in the direction of Constantinople. 'Ascending the mountainous boundary of the plain on its north-eastern side by a broad ancient paved way, we had not daylight enough to enjoy the fine prospect of the sea and the town of Cavallo upon a promontory. At some distance lies the isle of Thasos, now, called Tasso. It was indistinctly discerned by us; but every other object, excepting the town, began to disappear as we descended towards Cavallo.' Upon quitting the town, we ascended a part of Mount Pangeus by a paved road, and had a fine view of the bay of Neapolis. The top of the hill, towards the left, was covered with ruined walls, and with the ancient aqueduct, which here crosses the road. From hence we descended by a paved road as before . . . the isle of Thasos being in view towards the S. E. Looking to the E., we saw the high top of Samothrace, which makes such a conspicuous figure from the plains of

When the descent on the opposite side begins and the sea is lost to view, another prospect succeeds, less extensive, but not less worthy of our notice. We look down on a plain, which is level as an inland sea, and which, if the eye could range over its remoter spaces, would be seen winding far within its mountain enclosure, to the west and the north. Its appearance is either exuberantly green, for its fertility has been always famous, or cold and dreary, for the streams which water it are often diffused into marshes, according to the season when we visit this corner of Macedonia; whether it be when the snows are white and chill on the summits of the Thracian Haemus, or when the roses, of which Theophrastus and Pliny speak, are displaying their bloom on the warmer slopes of the Pangæan hills.

### Philippi

This plain, between Haemus and Pangæus, is the plain of Philippi, where the last battle was lost by the republicans of Rome. The whole region around is eloquent of the history of this battle. Among the mountains on the right was the difficult path by which the republican army penetrated into Macedonia; on some part of the very ridge on which we stand were the camps of Brutus and Cassius; the stream before us is the river which passed in front of them; below us, upon the left hand of the even field, is the marsh by which Antony crossed as he approached his antagonist; directly opposite is the hill of Philippi, where Cassius died; behind us is the narrow strait of the sea, across which Brutus sent his body to the island of Thasos, lest the army should be disheartened before the final struggle. The city of Philippi was itself a monument of the termination of that struggle. It had been founded by the father of Alexander, in a place called, from its numerous streams, 'The Place of Fountains,' to commemorate the addition of a new province to his kingdom, and to protect the frontier against the Thracian mountaineers. For similar reasons the city of

Troy. To the S., towering above a region of clouds, appeared the loftier summit of Mount Athos.'

Philip was gifted by Augustus with the privileges of a colonia.<sup>257</sup> It thus became at once a border garrison of the province of Macedonia, and a perpetual memorial of his victory over Brutus. And now a Jewish Apostle came to the same place, to win a greater victory than that of Philippi, and to found a more durable empire than that of Augustus. It is a fact of deep significance, that the "first city" at which St. Paul arrived, on his entrance into Europe, should be that "colony," which was more fit than any other in the empire to be considered the representative of Imperial Rome.

The characteristic of a colonia was, that it was a miniature resemblance of Rome. Philippi is not the first city of this kind to which we have traced the footsteps of St. Paul; Antioch in Pisidia, and Alexandria Troas, both possessed the same character but this is the first place where Scripture calls our attention to the distinction; and the events which befell the Apostle at Philippi were directly connected with the privileges of the place as a Roman colony, and with his own privileges as a Roman citizen. It will be convenient to consider these two subjects together. A glance at some of the differences which subsisted among individuals and communities in the provincial system will enable us to see very clearly the position of the citizen and of the colony.

We have had occasion (Chapter 1) to speak of the combination of actual provinces and nominally independent states through which the power of the Roman Emperor was variously diffused; and again (Chapter 5), we have described the division of the provinces by Augustus into those of the Senate, and those of the Emperor. Descending now to examine the component population of any one province, and to inquire into the political condition of individuals and communities, we find here again a complicated system of rules and exceptions.

---

<sup>257</sup> The full and proper name was *Colonia Augusta Julia Philippensis*.

As regards individuals, the broad distinction we must notice is that between those who were citizens and those who were not citizens. When the Greeks spoke of the inhabitants of the world, they divided them into "Greeks" and "Barbarians," according as the language in which poets and philosophers had written was native to them or foreign. Among the Romans the phrase was different. The classes into which they divided mankind consisted of those who were politically "Romans," and those who had no link (except that of subjection) with the city of Rome. The technical words were *Cives* and *Peregrini* "citizens" and "strangers." The inhabitants of Italy were "citizens;" the inhabitants of all other parts of the Empire (until Caracalla extended to the provinces the same privileges which Julius Caesar had granted to the peninsula) were naturally and essentially "strangers." Italy was the Holy Land of the kingdom of this world.

We may carry the parallel further in order to illustrate the difference which existed among the citizens themselves. Those true born Italians, who were diffused in vast numbers through the provinces, might be called Citizens of the Dispersion; while those strangers who, at various times, and for various reasons, had received the gift of citizenship, were in the condition of political Proselytes. Such were Paul and Silas, in their relation to the empire, among their fellow Romans in the colony of Philippi. Both these classes of citizens, however, were in full possession of the same privileges; the most important of which were exemption from scourging, and freedom from arrest, except in extreme cases; and in all cases the right of appeal from the magistrate to the Emperor.<sup>258</sup>

---

<sup>258</sup> Two of these privileges will come more particularly before us, when we reach the narrative of St. Paul's arrest at Jerusalem. It appears that Paul and Silas were treated with a cruelty which was only justifiable in the case of a slave, and was not usually allowed in the case of any freeman. It would seem, that an accused citizen could only be imprisoned before trial

The remarks which have been made concerning individuals may be extended, in some degree, to communities in the provinces. The City of Rome might be transplanted, as it were, into various parts of the empire, and reproduced as a colonies; or an alien city might be adopted, under the title of a municipium," into a close political communion with Rome. Leaving out of view all cities of the latter kind (and indeed they were limited entirely to the western provinces), we will confine ourselves to what was called a colonia. A Roman colony was very different from anything which we usually intend by the term. It was no mere mercantile factory, such as those which the Phoenicians established in Spain, or on those very shores of Macedonia with which we are now engaged : or such as modern nations have founded in the Hudson's Bay territory or on the coast of India.

Still less was it like those incoherent aggregates of human beings which we have thrown, without care or system, on distant islands and continents. It did not even go forth, as a young Greek republic left its parent state, carrying with it, indeed, the respect of a daughter for a mother, but entering upon a new and independent existence.

The Roman colonies were primarily intended as military safeguards of the frontiers, and as checks upon insurgent provincials. Like the military roads, they were part of the great system of fortification by which the Empire was made safe. They served also as convenient possessions for rewarding veterans who had served in the wars, and for establishing freedmen and other Italians whom it was desirable to remove to a distance.

The colonists went out with all the pride of Roman citizens, to represent and reproduce the City in the midst of an alien population. They proceeded to their destination like an army with its standards ; and the limits of the new city were marked out by the plough. Their

---

for a very heinous offence,' or when evidently guilty. Bail was generally allowed, or retention in a magistrate's house was held sufficient.

names were still enrolled in one of the Roman tribes. Every traveler who passed through a colonia saw there the insignia of Rome. He heard the Latin language, and was amenable, in the strictest sense, to the Roman law. The coinage of the city, even if it were in a Greek province, had Latin inscriptions.

Cyprian tells us that in his own episcopal city, which once had been Rome's greatest enemy, the Laws of the XII. Tables were inscribed on brazen tablets in the market place.," Though the colonists, in addition to the poll tax, which they paid as citizens, were compelled to pay a ground tax (for the land on which their city stood was provincial land, and therefore tributary, unless it were assimilated to Italy by a special exemption); yet they were entirely free from any intrusion by the governor of the province. Their affairs were regulated by their own magistrates. These officers were named Duumviri ; and they took a pride in calling themselves by the Roman title of Praetors."

The primary settlers in the colony were, as we have seen, real Italians; but a state of things seems to have taken place, in many instances, very similar to what happened in the early history of Rome itself. A number of the native provincials grew up in the same city with the governing body; and thus two (or sometimes three) co ordinate communities were formed, which ultimately coalesced into one, like the Patricians and Plebeians. Instances of this state of things might be given from Corinth and Carthage, and from the colonies of Spain and Gaul; and we have no reason to suppose that Philippi was different from the rest.

Whatever the relative proportion of Greeks and Romans at Philippi may have been, the number of Jews was small. This is sufficiently accounted for, when we remember that it was a military, and not a mercantile, city. There was no synagogue in Philippi, but only one of those buildings called Proseuchae, which were distinguished from the regular places of Jewish worship by being of a more alight and

temporary structure, and frequently open to the sky." <sup>259</sup> For the sake of greater quietness, and freedom from interruption, this place of prayer was "outside the gate;" and, in consequence of the ablutions, which were connected with the worship, it was "by the river side," on the bank of the Gaggitas, the fountains of which gave the name to the city before the time of Philip of Macedon,

---

<sup>259</sup> Extracts to this effect might be quoted from Epiphanies. A Proseucha may be considered as a place of prayer, as opposed to a synagogue, or a house of prayer. It appears, however, that the words were more or less convertible, and some consider them nearly equivalent. Josephus (Life, 54) describes a Proseucha as "a urge building, capable of holding a considerable crowd:" and Philo mentions, under the same denomination, buildings at Alexandria, which were so strong that it was difficult to destroy them. Probably, it was the usual name of the meeting-place of Jewish congregations in Greek cities. Other passages in ancient writers, which bear upon the subject, are alluded to in the following extract from Biscoe: "The seashore was esteemed by the Jews a place most pure, and therefore proper to offer up their prayers and thanksgiving to Almighty God. Philo tells us that the Jews of Alexandria, when Flaccus the governor of Egypt, who had been their great enemy, was arrested by order of the Emperor Gaius, not being able to assemble at their synagogues, which had been taken from them, crowded out at the gates of the city early in the morning, went to the neighboring shores, and standing in a most pure place with one accord lifted up their voices in praising God. Tertullian says, that the Jews in his time, when they kept their great fast, left their synagogues, and on every shore sent forth their prayers to heaven: and in another place, among the ceremonies used by the Jews, mentions *orationes littoral*, the prayers they made upon the shores. And long before Tertullian's time there was a decree made at Halicarnassua in favor of the Jews, which, among other privileges, allows them to say their prayers near the shore, according to the custom of their country. (Joseph. Ant. xiv. 16, 23 It is hence abundantly evident, that it was common with the Jews to choose the shore as a place highly fitting to offer up their prayers.-P.251. He adds that the words in Acts 16:13 ' may signify nothing more than that the Jews of Philippi were wont to go and offer up their prayers at a certain place by the river side, as other Jews who lived near the sea were accustomed to do upon the sea-shore.' See Acts 21:5.

and which, in the great battle of the Romans, had been polluted by the footsteps and blood of the contending armies.

### Lydia

The congregation, which met here for worship on the Sabbath, consisted chiefly, if not entirely, of a few women; (Acts 16:13,14) and these were not all of Jewish birth, and not all residents at Philippi. Lydia, who is mentioned by name, was a proselyte; and Thyatira, her native place, was a city of the province of Asia. The business which brought her to Philippi was connected with the dyeing trade, which had flourished from a very early period, as we learn from Homers in the neighborhood of Thyatira, and is permanently commemorated in inscriptions which relate to the 'guild of dyers' in that city, and incidentally give a singular confirmation of the veracity of St. Luke in his casual allusions.

In this unpretending place, and to this congregation of pious women, the Gospel was first preached by an Apostle within the limits of Europe. St. Paul and his companions seem to have arrived in the early part of the week; for "some days" elapsed before "the Sabbath." On that day the strangers went and joined the little company of worshippers at their prayer by the river side. Assuming at once the attitude of teachers, they "sat down," and spoke to the women who were assembled together. The Lord, who had summoned His servants from Troas to preach the Gospel in Macedonia, (Acts 16:10) now vouchsafed to them the signs of His presence, by giving Divine energy to the words which they spoke in His name. Lydia "was one of the listeners," and the Lord "opened her heart, that she took heed to the things that were spoken of Paul."

Lydia, being convinced that Jesus was the Messiah, and having made a profession of her faith, was forthwith baptized. The place of her baptism was doubtless the stream which flowed by the proseucha. With the baptism of Lydia that of her "household" was associated. Whether we are to understand by this term her

children, her slaves, or the work people engaged in the manual employment connected with her trade, or all these collectively, cannot easily be decided. But we may observe that it is the first passage in the life of St. Paul where we have an example of that family religion, to which he often alludes in his Epistles. The `connections of Chloe," (1 Cor. 1:11) the `household of Stephanas," (1 Cor. 1:16) the `Church in the house" of Aquila and Priscilla, (Rom. 16:5) are parallel cases, to which we shall come in the course of the narrative.

It may also be rightly added, that we have here the first example of that Christian hospitality which was so emphatically enjoined, (Heb. 13:2) and so lovingly practiced, in the Apostolic Church. The frequent mention of the `hosts" who gave shelter to the Apostles, (Rom. 16:23 ff) reminds us that they led a life of hardship and poverty, and were the followers of Him `for whom there was no room, iii the inn." The Lord had said to His Apostles, that, when they entered into a city, they were to seek out `those who were worthy," and with them to abide. The search at Philippi was not difficult. Lydia voluntarily presented herself to her spiritual benefactors, and said to them, earnestly and humbly, that, `since they had regarded her as a believer on the Lord," her house should be their home. She admitted of no refusal to her request, and" their peace was on that house"

Thus the Gospel had obtained a home in Europe. It is true that the family with whom the Apostles lodged was Asiatic rather than European : and the direct influence of Lydia may be supposed to have contributed more to the establishment of the church of Thyatira, addressed by St. John, (Rev. 2) than to that of Philippi, which received the letter of St. Paul. But still the doctrine and practice of Christianity were established in Europe ; and nothing could be more calm and tranquil than its first beginnings on the shore of that continent, which it has long overspread.

The scenes by the riverside, and in the house of Lydia, are beautiful prophecies of the holy influence which women, elevated by

Christianity to their true position, and enabled by Divine grace to wear `the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit," have now for centuries exerted over domestic happiness and the growth of piety and peace. If we wish to see this in a forcible light, we may contrast the picture which is drawn for us by St. Luke, with another representation of women in the same neighborhood given by the Heathen poets, who tell us of the frantic excitement of the Edonian matrons, wandering, under the name of religion, with disheveled hair and violent cries, on the banks of the Strymon.

Thus far all was peaceful and hopeful in the work of preaching the Gospel to Macedonia: the congregation met in the house or by the riverside; souls were converted and instructed ; and a Church, consisting both of men and women, was gradually built up. This continued for `many days." It was difficult to foresee the storm which was to overcast so fair a prospect. A bitter persecution, however, was unexpectedly provoked: and the Apostles were brought into collision with heathen superstition in one of its worst forms, and with the rough violence of the colonial authorities.

As if to show that the work of Divine grace is advanced by difficulties and discouragement, rather than by ease and prosperity, the Apostles, who had been supernaturally summoned to a new field of labor, and who were patiently cultivating it with food success, were suddenly called away from it, silenced, and imprisoned.

### The Demoniac Slave

In tracing the life of St. Paul we have not as yet seen Christianity directly brought into conflict with Heathenism. The sorcerer who had obtained influence over Sergius Paulus in Cyprus was a Jew, like the Apostle himself. The first impulse of the idolaters of Lystra was to worship Paul and Barnabas ; and it was only after the Jews had perverted their minds, that they began to persecute them. But as we travel farther from the East, and especially through countries where the Israelites were thinly

scattered, we must expect to find Pagan creeds in immediate antagonism with the Gospel ; and not merely Pagan creeds, but the evil powers themselves which give Paganism its supremacy over the minds of men. The questions which relate to evil spirits, false divinities, and demoniacal possession, are far too difficult and extensive to be entered on here." We are content to express our belief, that in the demoniacs of the New Testament allusion is really made to personal spirits who exercised power for evil purposes on the human will.

The unregenerate world is represented to us in Scripture as a realm of darkness, in which the invisible agents of wickedness are permitted to hold sway under conditions and limitations which we are not able to define. The degrees and modes in which their presence is made visibly apparent may vary widely in different countries and in different ages. In the time of Jesus Christ and His Apostles, we are justified in saying that their workings in one particular mode were made peculiarly manifest. As it was in the life of our Great Master, so it was in that of His immediate followers. The demons recognized Jesus as "the Holy One of God;" and they recognized His Apostles as the "bondsmen of the Most High God, who preach the way of salvation." Jesus "cast out daemons ;" and, by virtue of the power which He gave, the Apostles were able to do in His name what he did in His own.

If in any region of Heathendom the evil spirits had preeminent sway, it was in the mythological system of Greece, which, with all its beautiful imagery and all its ministrations to poetry and art, left man powerless against his passions, and only amused him while it helped him to be unholy. In the lively imagination of the Greeks, the whole visible and invisible world was peopled with spiritual powers or demons. The same terms were often used on this subject by Pagans and by Christians. But in the language of the Pagan the daemon might be either a beneficent or a malignant power; in the language of the Christian it always denoted what was evil. When the Athenians said (Acts

17:18) that St. Paul was introducing "new demons" among them, they did not necessarily mean that he was in league with evil spirits; but when St. Paul told the Corinthians (1 Cor. 10:20) that though "idols" in themselves were nothing, yet the sacrifices offered to them were, in reality, offered to "demons," he spoke of those false divinities which were the enemies of the True.

Again, the language concerning physical changes, especially in the human frame, is very similar in the sacred and profane writers.

Sometimes it contents itself with stating merely the facts and symptoms of disease ; sometimes it refers the facts and symptoms to invisible personal agency. One class of phenomena, affecting the mind as well as the body, was more particularly referred to preternatural agency. These were the prophetic conditions of mind, showing themselves in stated oracles or in more irregular manifestations, and accompanied with convulsions and violent excitement, which are described or alluded to by almost all Heathen authors. Here again we are brought to a subject which is surrounded with difficulties.

How far, in such cases, imposture was combined with real possession; how we may disentangle the one from the other; how far the supreme will of God made use of these prophetic powers and overruled them to good ends; such questions inevitably suggest themselves, but we are not concerned to answer them here. It is enough to say that we see no reason to blame the opinion of those writers, who believe that a wicked spiritual agency was really exerted in the prophetic sanctuaries and prophetic personages of the Heathen world.

The Heathens themselves attributed these phenomena to the agency of Apollo, [Python is the name of Apollo in his character as an oracle.] the deity of Pythonic spirits ; and such phenomena were of very frequent occurrence, and displayed themselves under many varieties of place and circumstance. Sometimes those

who were possessed were of the highest condition; sometimes they went about the streets like insane impostors of the lowest rank.

It was usual for the prophetic spirit to make itself known by an internal muttering or ventriloquism. We read of persons in this miserable condition used by others for the purpose of gain. Frequently they were slaves; and there were cases of joint proprietorship in these unhappy ministers of public superstition.

In the case before us it was a female slave "who was possessed with a spirit of divination (Acts 16:16):" and she was the property of more than one master, who kept her for the purpose of practicing on the credulity of the Philippians, and realized much profit" in this way. We all know the kind of sacredness with which the ravings of common insanity are apt to be invested by the ignorant; and we can easily understand the notoriety which the gestures and words of this demoniac would obtain in Philippi.

It was far from a matter of indifference, when she met the members of the Christian congregation on the road to the Proseucha, and began to follow St. Paul, and to exclaim (either because the words she had overheard mingled with her diseased imaginations, or because the evil spirit in her was compelled" to speak the truth) : " These men are the bondsmen of the Most High God, who are come to announce unto you the way of salvation." This was continued for several days," and the whole city must soon have been familiar with her words. Paul was well aware of this; and he could not bear the thought that the credit even of the Gospel should be enhanced by such unholy means.

Possibly one reason why our Blessed Lord Himself forbade the demoniacs to make Him known, was, that His holy cause would be polluted by resting on such evidence. And another of our Savior's feelings must have found an imitation in St. Paul's breast, that of deep compassion for the poor victim of demoniac power. At length he could bear this Satanic interruption no longer, and, I being

grieved, he commanded the evil spirit to come out of her." It would be wrong to suppose that the Apostle spoke in mere irritation, as it would be ridiculous to imagine that Divine help would have been vouchsafed to gratify such a feeling. No doubt there was grief and indignation, but the grief and indignation of an Apostle maybe the impulses of Divine inspiration.

He spoke, not in his own name, but in that of Jesus Christ, and power from above attended his words. The prophecy and command of Jesus concerning His Apostles were fulfilled: that in His name they should cast out demons." It was as it had been at Jericho and by the Lake of Gennesareth. The demoniac at Philippi was restored to her right mind." Her natural powers resumed their course; and the gains of her masters were gone.

Violent rage on the part of these men was the immediate result. They saw that their influence with the people, and with it all hope" of any future profit, was at end. They proceeded, therefore, to take a summary revenge. Laying violent hold of Paul and Silas (for Timothy and Luke were not so evidently concerned in what had happened), they dragged them into the forum (Acts 16:19) before the city authorities. The case was brought before the Praetors (so we may venture to call them, since this was the title which colonial Duumviri were fond of assuming); but the complainants must have felt some difficulty in stating their grievance. The slave that had lately been a lucrative possession had suddenly become valueless; but the law had no remedy for property depreciated by exorcism.

The true state of the case was therefore concealed, and an accusation was laid before the Praetors in the following form. "These men are throwing the whole city into confusion; moreover they are Jews; and they are attempting to introduce new religious observances, which we, being Roman citizens, cannot legally receive and adopt." The accusation was partly true and partly false. It was quite false that Paul and Silas were disturbing the colony; for nothing could have

been more calm and orderly than their worship and teaching at the house of Lydia, or in the Proseucha by the water side.

In the other part of the indictment there was a certain amount of truth. The letter of the Roman law, even under the Republic, was opposed to the introduction of foreign religions; and though exceptions were allowed, as in the case of the Jews themselves, yet the spirit of the law entirely condemned such changes in worship as were likely to unsettle the minds of the citizens, or to produce any tumultuous uproar; and the advice given to Augustus, which both he and his successors had studiously followed, was, to check religious innovations as promptly as possible, lest in the end they should undermine the Monarchy.

### Paul and Silas Arrested

Thus Paul and Silas had undoubtedly been doing what in some degree exposed them to legal penalties; and were beginning a change which tended to bring down, and which ultimately did bring down, the whole weight of the Roman law on the martyrs of Christianity." The force of another part of the accusation, which was adroitly introduced, namely, that the men were "Jews to begin with," will be fully apprehended, if we remember, not only that the Jews were generally hated, suspected, and despised, but that they had lately been driven out of Rome in consequence of an uproar," and that it was incumbent on Philippi, as a colony, to copy the indignation of the mother city.

Thus we can enter into the feelings which caused the mob to rise against Paul and Silas (Acts 16:22), and tempted the Praetors to dispense with legal formalities and consign the offenders to immediate punishment. The mere loss of the slave's prophetic powers, so far as it was generally known, was enough to cause a violent agitation: for mobs are always more fond of excitement and wonder than of truth and holiness. The Philippians had been willing to pay money for the demoniac's revelations, and now strangers had come and deprived them of that which gratified their superstitious

curiosity. And when they learned, moreover, that these strangers were Jews, and were breaking the laws of Rome; their discontent became fanatical. It seems that the Praetors had no time to hesitate, if they would retain their popularity. The rough words were spoken: "Go, lictors strip off their garments: let them, be scourged." The order was promptly obeyed, and the heavy blows descended. It is happy for us that few modern countries know, by the example of a similar punishment, what the severity of a Roman scourging was. The Apostles received "many stripes;" and when they were consigned to prison, bleeding and faint from the rod, the jailer received a strict injunction "to keep them safe." Well might St. Paul, when at Corinth, look back to this day of cruelty, and remind the Thessalonians how he and Silas had "suffered before, and were shamefully treated at Philippi." (1 Thess. 2:2)

The jailer fulfilled the directions of the magistrates with rigorous and conscientious cruelty. Not content with placing the Apostles among such other offenders against the law as were in custody at Philippi, he "thrust them into the inner prison," (Acts 16:24) and then "forced their limbs, lacerated as they were, and bleeding from the rod into a painful and constrained posture, by means of an instrument employed to confine and torture the bodies of the worst malefactors. Though we are ignorant of the exact relation of the outer and inner prisons, and of the connection of the jailer's "house" with both; we are not without very good notions of the misery endured in the Roman places of captivity.

We must picture to ourselves something very different from the austere comfort of an English jail. It is only since that Christianity for which the Apostles bled has had influence on the hearts of men, that the treatment of felons has been a distinct subject of philanthropic inquiry, and that we have learnt to pray for all prisoners and captives: "The inner prisons of which we read in the ancient world were like that dungeon in the court of the prison," into which Jeremiah was let down with cords, and where

“he sank in the mire.” They were pestilential cells, damp and cold, from which the light was excluded, and where the chains rusted on the limbs of the prisoners.

One such place may be seen to this day on the slope of the Capitol at Rome. It is known to the readers of Cicero and Sallust as the place where certain notorious conspirators were executed. The Tullianum (for so it was called) is a type of the dungeons in the provinces; and we find the very name applied, in one instance, to a dungeon in the province of Macedonia. What kind of torture was inflicted by the “stocks,” in which the arms and legs, and even the necks, of offenders were confined and stretched, we are sufficiently informed by the allusions to the punishment of slaves in the Greek and Roman writers; and to show how far the cruelty of Heathen persecution, which may be said to have begun at Philippi, was afterwards carried in this peculiar kind of torture, we may refer to the sufferings which Origen endured under an iron collar, and in the deepest recesses of the prison, when, for many days, he was extended and stretched to the distance of four holes on the rack”

A few hours had made a serious change from the quiet scene by the water side to the interior of a stifling dungeon. But Paul and Silas had learnt, “in whatever state they were, therewith to be content.” They were even able to “rejoice” that they were “counted worthy to suffer” for the name of Christ. And if some thoughts of discouragement came over their minds, not for their own sufferings, but for the cause of their Master; and if it seemed “a strange thing” that a work to which they had been beckoned by God should be arrested in its very beginning; yet they had faith to believe that His arm would be revealed at the appointed time.

Joseph's feet; too, had been “hurt in the stocks,” and he became a prince in Egypt. Daniel had been cast into the lions’ den, and he was made ruler of Babylon. Thus Paul and Silas remembered with joy the “Lord our Maker, who giveth songs an the night.” Racked as they were with pain, sleepless and weary, they were heard

“about midnight,” from the depth of their prison house, “praying and singing hymns to God.” What it was that they sang, we know not; but the Psalms of David have ever been dear to those who suffer; they have instructed both Jew and Christian in the language of prayer and praise.

And the Psalms abound in such sentences as these: “The Lord looketh down from His sanctuary: out of heaven the Lord beholdeth the earth: that He might hear the mournings of such as are in captivity, and deliver the children appointed unto death” “O let the sorrowful sighing of the prisoners come before thee: according to the greatness of thy power, preserve thou those that are appointed to die” “The Lord helpeth them to right that suffer wrong: the Lord looseth men out of prison the Lord helpeth them that are fallen: the Lord careth for the righteous”

Such sounds as these were new in a Roman dungeon. Whoever the other prisoners might be, whether they were the victims of oppression, or were suffering the punishment of guilt, debtors, slaves, robbers, or murderers, they listened with surprise to the voices of those who filled the midnight of the prison with sounds of cheerfulness and joy. Still the Apostles continued their praises, and the prisoners listened. “They that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death: being fast bound in misery and iron; when they cried unto the Lord in their trouble, He delivered them out of their distress. For He brought them out of darkness, and out of the shadow of death; and brake their bonds in sunder. O that men would therefore praise the Lord for His goodness, and declare the wonders that He doeth for the children of men: for He hath broken the gates of brass, and smitten the bars of iron in sunder.” (Psalm 107:10 16)

When suddenly, as if in direct answer to the prayer of His servants, an earthquake shook the very foundations of the prison (Acts 16:26), the gates were broken, the bars smitten asunder, and the bands of the prisoners loosed. Without striving to draw a line between the natural and supernatural in this occurrence, and still less

endeavoring to resolve what was evidently miraculous into the results of ordinary causes, we turn again to the thought suggested by that single but expressive phrase of Scripture, `the prisoners were listening” “

When we reflect on their knowledge of the Apostles’ sufferings (for they were doubtless aware of the manner in which they had been brought in and thrust into the dungeon), and on the wonder they must have experienced on hearing sounds of joy from those who were in pain, and on the awe which must have overpowered them when they felt the prison shaken and the chains fall from their limbs; and when to all this we add the effect produced on their minds by all that happened on the following day, and especially the fact that the jailer himself became a Christian; we can hardly avoid the conclusion that the hearts of many of those unhappy bondsmen were prepared that night to receive the Gospel, that the tidings of spiritual liberty came to those whom, but for the captivity of the Apostles, it would never have reached, and that the jailer himself was their evangelist and teacher.

The effect produced by that night on the jailer’s own mind has been fully related to us.

Awakened in a moment by the earthquake, his first thought was of his prisoners (Acts 16:27): and in the shock of surprise and alarm,” seeing the doors of the prison open, and supposing that the prisoners were fled,” aware that inevitable death awaited him,” with the stern and desperate resignation of a Roman official, he resolved that suicide was better than disgrace, and `drew his sword”

Philippi is famous in the annals of suicide. Here Cassius, unable to survive defeat, covered his face in the empty tent, and ordered his freedmen to strike the blow. His messenger Titinius held it to be `a Roman’s part” to follow the stern example. Here Brutus bade adieu to his friends, exclaiming, `Certainly we must fly, yet not with the feet, but with the hands;” and many, whose names have never reached us, ended their last struggle for the republic by self-inflicted death. Here, too, another despairing

man would have committed the same crime, had not his hand been arrested by an Apostle’s voice. Instead of a sudden and hopeless death, the jailer received at the hands of his prisoner the gift both of temporal and spiritual life.

The loud exclamation of Paul, `Do thyself no harm :for we are all here,” gave immediate reassurance to the terrified jailer. He laid aside his sword, and called for lights, and rushed to the `inner prison,” where Paul and Silas were confined. But now a new fear of a higher kind took possession of his soul. The recollection of all he had heard before concerning these prisoners and all that he had observed of their demeanor when he brought them into the dungeon, the shuddering thought of the earthquake, the burst of his gratitude towards them as the preservers of his life, and the consciousness that even in the darkness of midnight they had seen his intention of suicide, all these mingling and conflicting emotions made him feel that he was in the presence of a higher power.

He fell down before them, and brought them out, as men whom he had deeply injured and insulted, to a place of greater freedom and comfort; and then he asked them, with earnest anxiety, what he must do to be saved. We see the Apostle here self possessed in the earthquake, as afterwards in the storm at sea able to overawe and control those who were placed over him, and calmly turning the occasion to a spiritual end. It is surely, however, a mistake to imagine that the jailer’s inquiry had reference merely to temporal and immediate danger.

The awakening of his conscience, the presence of the unseen world, the miraculous visitation, the nearness of death, coupled perhaps with some confused recollection of the `way of salvation” which these strangers were said to have been proclaiming, were enough to suggest that inquiry which is the most momentous that any human soul can make: `What must I do to be saved ?” Their answer was that of faithful Apostles. They preached not themselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord. `Believe, not in us, but in

the Lord Jesus, and thou shalt be saved; and not only thou, but the like faith shall bring salvation to all thy house." From this last expression, and from the words which follow, we infer that the members of the jailer's family had crowded round him and the Apostles.

No time was lost in making known to them "the word of the Lord." All thought of bodily comfort and repose was postponed to the work of saving the soul. The meaning of "faith in Jesus" was explained, and the Gospel was preached to the jailer's family at midnight, while the prisoners were silent around, and the light was thrown on anxious faces and the dungeon wall.

And now we have an instance of that sympathetic care, that interchange of temporal and spiritual service, which has ever attended the steps of true Christianity. As it was in the miracles of our Lord and Savior, where the soul and the body were regarded together, so has it always been in His Church. "In the same hour of the night" (Acts 16:33) the jailer took the Apostles to the well or fountain of water which was within or near the precincts of the prison, and there he washed their wounds, and there also he and his household were baptized. He did what he could to assuage the bodily pain of Paul, and Silas, and they admitted him and his, by the "laver of regeneration" (Tit. 3:5) to the spiritual citizenship of the kingdom of God.

The prisoners of the jailer were now become his guests. His cruelty was changed into hospitality and love. "He took them up b into his house," and, placing them in a posture of repose, set food before them and refreshed their exhausted strength. It was a night of happiness for all. They praised God that His power had been made effectual in their weakness; and the jailer's family had their first experience of that joy which is the fruit of believing in God.

At length morning broke on the eventful night. In the course of that night the greatest of all changes had been wrought in the jailer's relations to this world and the next. From being the ignorant slave of a Heathen magistracy he

had become the religious head of a Christian family. A change, also, in the same interval of time, had come over the minds of the magistrates themselves, Either from reflecting that they had acted more harshly than the case had warranted, or from hearing a more accurate statement of facts, or through alarm caused by the earthquake, or through that vague misgiving which sometimes, as in the case of Pilate and his wife," haunts the minds of those who have no distinct religious convictions, they sent new orders in the morning to the jailer. The message conveyed by the lictors was expressed in a somewhat contemptuous form, "Let those men go."

But the jailer received it with the utmost joy. He felt his infinite debt of gratitude to the Apostles, not only for his preservation from a violent death, but for the tidings they had given him of eternal life. He would willingly have seen them freed from their bondage ; but he was dependent on the will of the magistrates, and could do nothing without their sanction. When, therefore, the lictors brought the order, he went with them to announce the intelligence to the prisoners, and joyfully told them to leave their dungeon and I go in peace"

But Paul, not from any fanatical love of braving the authorities, but calmly looking to the ends of justice and the establishment of Christianity, refused to accept his liberty without some public acknowledgment of the wrong he had suffered. He now proclaimed a fact which had hitherto been unknown, that he and Silas were Roman citizens. Two Roman laws had been violated by the magistrates of the colony in the scourging inflicted the day before. And this, too, with signal aggravations. They were uncondemned. There had been no form of trial, without which, in the case of a citizen slighter punishment would have been illegal, even if it had been done "publicly"

In the face of the colonial population, an outrage had been committed on the majesty of the name in which they boasted, and Rome had been insulted in her citizens." No," said St. Paul ;" they have oppressed the innocent and

violated the law. Do they seek to satisfy justice by conniving at a secret escape? Let them come themselves and take us out of prison. They have publicly treated us as guilty; let them publicly declare that we are innocent”

“How often,” says Cicero, “has this exclamation, I am a Roman citizen, brought aid and safety even among barbarians in the remotest parts of the earth.” The lictors returned to the Praetors, and the Praetors were alarmed. They felt that they had committed an act, which, if divulged at Rome, would place them in the utmost jeopardy. They had good reason to fear even for their authority in the colony; for the people of Philippi, “being Romans,” might be expected to resent such a violation of the law. They hastened, therefore, immediately to the prisoners, and became the suppliants of those whom they had persecuted. They brought them at once out of the dungeon, and earnestly “besought them to depart from the city”

The whole narrative of St. Paul's imprisonment at Philippi sets before us in striking colors his clear judgment and presence of mind. He might have escaped by help of the earthquake and under the shelter of the darkness ; but this would have been to depart as a runaway slave. He would not do secretly what he knew he ought to be allowed to do openly. By such a course his own character and that of the Gospel would have been disgraced, the jailer would have been cruelly left to destruction, and all religious influence over the other prisoners would have been gone.

As regards these prisoners, his influence over them was like the sway he obtained over the crew in the sinking vessel (Acts 27). It was so great, that not one of them attempted to escape. And not only in the prison, but in the whole town of Philippi, Christianity was placed on a high vantage ground by the Apostle's conduct that night. It now appeared that these persecuted Jews were themselves sharers in the vaunted Roman privilege. Those very laws had been violated in their treatment which they themselves had been accused of violating. That no appeal was made against this treatment,

might be set down to the generous forbearance of the Apostles. Their cause was now, for a time at least, under the protection of the law, and they themselves were felt to have a claim on general sympathy and respect.

### Departure from Philippi

They complied with the request of the magistrates. Yet, even in their departure, they were not unmindful of the dignity and self possession which ought always to be maintained by innocent men in a righteous cause. They did not retire in any hasty or precipitate flight, but proceeded “from the prison to the house of Lydia;” (Acts 16:40) and there they met the Christian brethren who were assembled to hear their farewell words of exhortation ; and so they departed from the city. It was not, however, deemed sufficient that this infant church at Philippi should be left alone with the mere remembrance of words of exhortation. Two of the Apostolic company remained behind: Timothy, of whom the Philippians “learned the proof” that he honestly cared for their state, that he was truly like minded with St. Paul, “serving him in the Gospel as a son serves his father,” (Phil. 2:19 25) and “Luke the Evangelist, whose praise is in the Gospel,” though he never praises himself, or relates his own labors, and though we only trace his movements in connection with St. Paul by the change of a pronoun, or the unconscious variation of his style.

Timothy seems to have rejoined Paul and Silas, if not at Thessalonica, at least at Berea. But we do not see St. Luke again in the Apostle's company till the third missionary journey and the second visit to Macedonia. (Acts 20:4 6) At this exact point of separation, we observe that he drops the style of an eyewitness and resumes that of a historian, until the second time of meeting, after which he writes as an eyewitness till the arrival at Rome, and the very close of the Acts. To explain and justify the remark here made, we need only ask the reader to contrast the detailed narrative of events at

Philippi with the more general account of what happened at Thessalonica.<sup>260</sup> It might be inferred that the writer of the Acts was an eye witness in the former city and not in the latter, even if the pronoun did not show us when he was present and when he was absent.

### Luke

We shall trace him a second time, in the same manner, when he rejoins St. Paul in the same neighborhood. He appears again on a voyage from Philippi to Troas (Acts 20:56), as now he has appeared on a voyage from Troas to Philippi. It is not an improbable conjecture that his vocation as a physician may have brought him into connection with these contiguous coasts of Asia and Europe. It has even been imagined, on reasonable grounds, that he may have been in the habit of exercising his professional skill as a surgeon at sea. However this may have been, we see no reason to question the ancient opinion, stated by Eusebius and Jerome, that St. Luke was a native of Antioch. Such a city was a likely place for the education of a physician." It is also natural to suppose that he may have met with St. Paul there, and been converted at an earlier period of the history of the Church. His medical calling, or his zeal for Christianity, or both combined (and the combination has ever been beneficial to the cause of the Gospel), may account for his visits to the North of the Archipelago: or St. Paul may himself have directed his movements, as he afterwards directed those of Timothy and Titus.

All these suggestions, though more or less conjectural, are worthy of our thoughts, when we remember the debt of gratitude which the Church owes to this Evangelist, not only as the historian of the Acts of the Apostles, but as an

<sup>260</sup> Observe, for instance, his mention of running before the wind, and staying for the night at Samothrace. Again, he says that Philippi was the first city they came to, and that it was a colony. He tells us that the place of prayer was outside the gate and near a riverside. There is no such particularity in the account of what took place at Thessalonica.

example of long continued devotion to the truth, and of unshaken constancy to that one Apostle, who said with sorrow, in his latest trial, that others had forsaken him, and that "only Luke" was with him"

Leaving their first Macedonian converts to the care of Timothy and Luke, aided by the cooperation of godly men and women raised up among the Philippians themselves, Paul and Silas set forth on their journey. Before we follow them" to Thessalonica, we may pause to take a general survey of the condition and extent of Macedonia, in the sense in which the term was understood in the language of the day. It has been well said that the Acts of the Apostles have made Macedonia a kind of Holy Land;" and it is satisfactory that the places there visited and revisited by St. Paul and his companions are so well known, that we have no difficulty in representing to the mind their position and their relation to the surrounding country.

### Macedonia Described

Macedonia, in its popular sense, may be described as a region bounded by a great semicircle of mountains, beyond which the streams flow westward to the Adriatic, or northward and eastward to the Danube and the Euxine. This mountain barrier sends down branches to the sea on the eastern or Thracian frontier, over against Thasos and Samothrace; and on the south shuts out the plain of Thessaly, and rises near the shore to the high summits of Pelion, Ossa, and the snowy Olympus. The space thus enclosed is intersected by two great rivers. One of these is Homer's "wide flowing Axius," which directs its course past Pella, the ancient metropolis of the Macedonian kings, and the birthplace of Alexander, to the low levels in the neighborhood of Thessalonica, where other rivers flow near it into the Thermaic gulf.

The other is the Strymon, which brings the produce of the great inland level of Serres by Lake Cercinus to the sea at Amphipolis, and beyond which was Philippi, the military outpost that commemorated the successful conquests of

Alexander's father. Between the mouths of these two rivers a remarkable tract of country, which is insular rather than continental, projects into the Archipelago, and divides itself into three points, on the furthest of which Mount Athos rises nearly into the region of perpetual snow. Part of St. Paul's path between Philippi and Berea lay across the neck of this peninsula. The whole of his route was over historical ground. At Philippi he was close to the confines of Thracian barbarism, and on the spot where the last battle was fought in defense of the Republic. At Berea he came near the mountains, beyond which is the region of Classical Greece, and close to the spot where the battle was fought which reduced Macedonia to a province"

If we wish to view Macedonia as a province, some modifications must be introduced into the preceding description. It applies, indeed, with sufficient exactness to the country on its first conquest by the Romans. The rivers already alluded to, define the four districts into which it was divided. Macedonia Prima was the region east of the Strymon, of which Amphipolis was the capital; Macedonia Secunda lay between the Strymon and the Axios, and Thessalonica was its metropolis; and the other two regions were situated to the south towards Thessaly, and on the mountains to the west. This was the division adopted by Paulus Aemilius after the battle of Pydna. But the arrangement was only temporary.

The whole of Macedonia, along with some adjacent territories, was made one province, and centralized under the jurisdiction of a proconsul who resided at Thessalonica. This province included Thessaly, and extended over the mountain chain which had been the western boundary of ancient Macedonia, so as to embrace a seaboard of considerable length on the shore of the Adriatic. The political limits, in this part of the Empire, are far more easily discriminated than those with which we have been lately occupied (Chapter 8). Three provinces divided the whole surface which extends from the basin of the Danube to Cape

Matapan. All of them are familiar to us in the writings of St. Paul.

The extent of Macedonia has just been defined. Its relations with the other provinces were as follows. On the north west it was contiguous to Illyricum, which was spread down the shore of the Adriatic nearly to the same point to which the Austrian territory now extends, fringing the Mohammedan empire with a Christian border. A hundred miles to the southward, at the Acroceraunian promontory, it touched Achaia, the boundary of which province ran thence in an irregular line to the bay of Thermopylae and the north of Euboea, including Epirus, and excluding Thessaly. Achaia and Macedonia were traversed many times by the Apostle; and he could say, when he was hoping to travel to Rome, that he had preached the Gospel 'round about unto Illyricum." (Rom. 15:19)

When we allude to Rome, and think of the relation of the City to the provinces, we are inevitably reminded of the military roads; and here, across the breadth of Macedonia, was one of the greatest roads of the Empire. It is evident that, after Constantinople was founded, a line of communication between the Eastern and Western capitals was of the utmost moment; but the Via Egnatia was constructed long before that period. Strabo, in the reign of Augustus, informs us that it was regularly made and marked out by milestones, from Dyrrhachium on the Adriatic, to Cypselus on the Hebrus in Thrace; and, even before the close of the republic, we find Cicero speaking, in one of his orations, of 'that military way of ours, which connects us with the Hellespont."

Certain districts on the European side of the Hellespont had been part of the legacy of King Attalus, and the simultaneous possession of Macedonia, Asia, and Bithynia, with the prospect of further conquests in the East, made this line of communication absolutely necessary. When St. Paul was on the Roman road at Troas or Philippi, he was on a road which led to the gates of Rome. It was the same pavement which he afterwards trod at Appii Forum and the Three Taverns (Acts 28:15). The

nearest parallel which the world has seen of the imperial roads is the present European railway system.

The Hellespont and the Bosphorus, in the reign of Claudius, were what the Straits of Dover and Holyhead are now; and even the passage from Brundisium in Italy, to Dyrrhachium and Apollonia in Macedonia, was only a tempestuous ferry, only one of those difficulties of nature which the Romans would have overcome if they could, and which the boldest of the Romans dared to defy. From Dyrrhachium and Apollonia, the Via Egnatia, strictly so called, extended a distance of five hundred miles, to the Hebrus, in Thrace. Thessalonica was about half way between these remote points, and Philippi was the last important town in the province of Macedonia. Our concern is only with that part of the Via Egnatia which lay between the two last mentioned cities.

### **Paul's Journey Through Amphipolis and Apollonia**

The intermediate stages mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles are Amphipolis and Apollonia. The distances laid down in the Itineraries are as follows : Philippi to Amphipolis, thirty three miles; Amphipolis to Apollonia, thirty miles; Apollonia to Thessalonica, thirty seven miles. These distances are evidently such as might have been traversed each in one day; and since nothing is said of any delay on the road, but everything to imply that the journey was rapid, we conclude (unless, indeed, their recent sufferings made rapid traveling impossible) that Paul and Silas rested one night at each of the intermediate places, and thus our notice of their journey is divided into three parts.

From Philippi to Amphipolis, the Roman way passed across the plain to the north of Mount Pangaeus. A traveler, going direct from Neapolis to the mouth of the Strymon, might make his way through an opening in the mountains" nearer the coast. This is the route by which Xerxes brought his army, and by which modern journeys are usually made. But Philippi was not

built in the time of the Persian war, and now, under the Turks, it is a ruined village. Under the Roman emperors, the position of this colony determined the direction of the road.

The very productiveness of the soil," and its liability to inundations, must have caused this road to be carefully constructed. The surface of the plain, which is intersected by multitudes of streams, is covered now with plantations of cotton and fields of Indian corn, and the villages are so numerous that, when seen from the summits of the neighboring mountains, they appear to form one continued town." Not far from the coast', the Strymon spreads out into a lake as large as Windermere; and between the lower end of this lake and the inner reach of the Strymonic gulf, where the mountains leave a narrow opening, Amphipolis was situated on a bend of the river.

The position of Amphipolis is one of the most important in Greece. It stands in a pass which traverses the mountains bordering the Strymonic gulf, and it commands the only easy communication from the coast of that gulf into the great Macedonian plains, which extend, for sixty miles, from beyond Meleniko to Philippi. The ancient name of the place was 'Nine Ways,' from the great number of Thracian and Macedonian roads which met at this point. The Athenians saw the importance of the position, and established a colony there, which they called Amphipolis, because the river surrounded it. Some of the deepest interest in the history of Thucydides, not only as regards military and political movements, but in reference to the personal experience of the historian himself, is concentrated on this spot.

And again, Amphipolis appears in the speeches of Demosthenes as a great stake in the later struggle between Philip of Macedon and the citizens of Athens. It was also the scene of one, striking passage in the history of Roman conquest: here Paulus Amilius, after the battle of Pydna, publicly proclaimed that the Macedonians should be free; and now another Paulus was here, whose message to the Macedonians was an honest: proclamation of a

better liberty, without conditions and without reserve.

St. Paul's next stage was to the city of Apollonia. After leaving Amphipolis; the road passes along the edge of the Stryonic gulf, first between cliffs and the sea; and then across a well wooded maritime plain, whence the peak of Athos is seen far across the bay to the left. We quit the sea shore at the narrow gorge of Aulon, or Arethusa, and there enter the valley which crosses the neck of the Chalcidic peninsula. Up to this point we have frequent historical landmarks reminding us of Athens. Thucydides has just been mentioned in connection with Amphipolis and the Strymon. As we leave the sea, we have before us, on the opposite coast, Stagirus, the birth place of Aristotle; and in the pass, where the mountains close on the road, is the tomb of Euripides. Thus the steps of our progress, as we leave the East and begin to draw near to Athens, are already among her historians, philosophers, and poets.

Apollonia is somewhere in the inland part of the journey, where the Via Egnatia crosses from the gulf of the Strymon to that of Thessalonica; but its exact position has not been ascertained. We will, therefore, merely allude to the scenery through which the traveler moves, in going from sea to sea. The pass of Arethusa is beautiful and picturesque. A river flows through it in a sinuous course, and abundant oaks and plane trees are on the rocks around. Presently this stream is seen to emerge from an inland lake, whose promontories and villages, with the high mountains rising to the south west, have reminded travelers of Switzerland. As we journey towards the west, we come to a second lake. Between the two is the modern post station of Klisali, which may possibly be Apollonia, though it is generally believed to be on the mountain slope to the south of the easternmost lake.

The whole region of these two lakes is a long valley, or rather a succession of plains, where the level spaces are richly wooded with forest trees, and the nearer hills are covered to their summits with olives." Beyond the second lake,

the road passes over some rising ground, and presently, after emerging from a narrow glen, we obtain a sight of the sea once more, the eye ranges freely over the plain of the Axios, and the city of Thessalonica is immediately before us.

Once arrived in this city, St. Paul no longer follows the course of the Via Egnatia. He may have done so at a later period, when he says that he had preached the Gospel round about unto Illyricum. But at present he had reached the point most favorable for the glad proclamation. The direction of the Roman road was of course determined by important geographical positions; and along the whole line from Dyrrhachium to the Hebrus, no city was so large and influential as Thessalonica.

### Thessalonica

The Apostolic city at which we are now arrived was known in the earliest periods of its history under various names. Under that of Therma it is associated with some interesting recollections. It was the resting place of Xerxes on his march; it is not unmentioned in the Peloponnesian war; and it was a frequent subject of debate in the last independent assemblies of Athens. When the Macedonian power began to overshadow all the countries where Greek was spoken, this city received its new name, and began a new and more distinguished period of its history. A sister of Alexander the Great was called Thessalonica, and her name was given to the city of Therma, when rebuilt and embellished by her husband, Cassander the son of Antipater. This name, under a form slightly modified, has continued to the present day.

The Salneck of the early German poets has become the Salo of the modern Levant. Its history can be followed as continuously as its name. When Macedonia was partitioned into four provincial divisions by Paulus Amilius, Thessalonica was the capital, of that which lay between the Agius and the Strymon. When the four regions were united into one Roman province, this city was chosen as the metropolis of the whole. Its name appears more than once

in the annals of the Civil Wars. It mss the scene of the exile of Cicero; and one of the stages of his journey between Rome and his province in the East. Antony and Octavius were here after the battle of Philippi: and coins are still extant which allude to the "freedom" granted by the victorious leaders to the city of the Thermaic gulf. Strabo, in the first century, speaks of Thessalonica as the most populous town in Macedonia. Lucian, in the second century, uses similar language.

Before the founding of Constantinople, it was virtually the capital of Greece and Illyricum, as well as of Macedonia, and shared the trade of the Aegean with Ephesus and Corinth. Even after the Eastern Rome was built and reigned over the Levant, we find both Pagan and Christian writers speaking of Thessalonica as the metropolis of Macedonia and a place of great magnitude. Through the Middle Ages it never ceased to be important: and it is, at the present day, the second city in European Turkey. The reason of this continued preeminence is to be found in its geographical position. Situated on the inner bend of the Thermaic Gulf, half way between the Adriatic and the Hellespont, on the sea margin of a vast plain watered by several rivers, and at the entrance of the pass which commands the approach to the other great Macedonian level, it was evidently destined for a mercantile emporium. Its relation with the inland trade of Macedonia was as close as that of Amphipolis; and its maritime advantages were perhaps even greater.

Thus, while Amphipolis decayed under the Byzantine emperors, Thessalonica, continued to prosper. There probably never was a time, from the day when it first received its name, that this city has not had the aspect of a busy commercial town. We see at once how appropriate a place it was for one of the starting points of the Gospel in Europe; and we can appreciate the force of the expression used by St. Paul within a few months of his departure from the Thessalonians (1 Thess. 1:8), when he says, that "from them the Word of the Lord had

sounded forth like a trumpet, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but in every place"

No city, which we have yet had occasion to describe, has had so distinguished a Christian history, with the single exception of the Syrian Antioch; and the Christian glory of the Patriarchal city gradually faded before that of the Macedonian metropolis. The heroic age of Thessalonica was the third century. It was the bulwark of Constantinople in the shock of the barbarians; and it held up the torch of the truth to the successive tribes who overspread the country between the Danube and the Aegean, the Goths and the Slavs, the Bulgarians of the Greek Church, and the Wallachians, whose language still seems to connect them with Philippi and the Roman colonies. Thus, in the medieval chroniclers, it has deserved the name of "the Orthodox City." The remains of its Hippodrome, which is for ever associated with the history of Theodosius and Ambrose," can yet be traced among the Turkish houses.

Its bishops have sat in great councils. <sup>261</sup> The writings of its great preacher and scholar Eustathius (12<sup>th</sup> Century) are still preserved to us. It is true that the Christianity of Thessalonica, both medieval and modern, has been debased by humiliating superstition. The glory of its patron saint, Demetrius, has eclipsed that of St. Paul, the founder of its Church. But the same Divine Providence, which causes us to be thankful for the past, commands us to be hopeful for the future; and we may look forward to the time when a new harvest of the "work of faith, and labor of love, and patience of hope," shall spring up from the seeds of Divine Truth, which were first sown on the shore of the Thermaic Gulf by the Apostle of the Gentiles.

If Thessalonica can boast of a series of Christian annals, unbroken since the day of St. Paul's arrival, its relations with the Jewish people have continued for a still longer period. In our

---

<sup>261</sup> We find the bishop of Thessalonica in the Council of Sardis, AD 347; and a decree of the Council relates to the place.

own day it contains a multitude of Jews commanding an influential position, many of whom are occupied (not very differently from St. Paul himself) in the manufacture of cloth. A considerable number of them are refugees from Spain, and speak the Spanish language. There are materials for tracing similar settlements of the same scattered and persecuted people in this city, at intervals, during the Middle Ages; and even before the destruction of Jerusalem we find them here, numerous and influential, as at Antioch and Iconium. Here, doubtless, was the chief colony of those Jews of Macedonia of whom Philo speaks; for while there was only a Proseucha at Philippi, and while Amphipolis and Apollonia had no Israelite communities to detain the Apostles, "the synagogue" of the neighborhood was at Thessalonica.

The first scene to which we are introduced in this city is entirely Jewish. It is not a small meeting of proselyte women by the river side, but a crowded assembly of true born Jews, intent on their religious worship, among whom Paul and Silas now make their appearance. If the traces of their recent hardships were manifest in their very aspect, and if they related to their Israelitish brethren how they had "suffered before and been cruelly treated at Philippi" (1 Thess. 2:2), their entrance in among them must have created a strong impression of indignation and sympathy, which explains the allusion in St. Paul's Epistle.

He spoke, however, to the Thessalonian Jews with the earnestness of a man who has no time to lose and no thought to waste on his own sufferings. He preached not himself but Christ crucified. The Jewish Scriptures were the ground of his argument. He recurred to the same subject again and again. On three successive Sabbaths (Acts 17:2) he argued with them; and the whole body of Jews resident in Thessalonica were interested and excited with the new doctrine, and were preparing either to adopt or oppose it.

The three points on which he insisted were these: that He who was foretold in prophecy was to be a suffering Messiah; that after death

He was to rise again; and that the crucified Jesus of Nazareth was indeed the Messiah who was to come. Such is the distinct and concise statement in the Acts of the Apostles (17:3): and the same topics of teaching are implied in the first Epistle, where the Thessalonians are appealed to as men who had been taught to "believe that Jesus had really died and risen again" (4:14), and who had turned to serve the true God, "and to wait for His Son from heaven, whom He raised from the dead, even Jesus" (1:10).

Of the mode in which these subjects would be presented to his hearers we can form some idea from what was said at Antioch in Pisidia. The very aspect of the worshippers was the same; proselytes were equally attached to the congregations in Pisidia and Macedonia, and the "devout and honorable women" in one city found their parallel in the "chief women" in the other. (cp. Acts 13:50 with 17:4) The impression, too, produced by the address was not very different here from what it had been there. At first it was favorably received (Acts 17:4 compared with 13:42-44), the interest of novelty having more influence than the seriousness of conviction. Even from the first some of the topics must have contained matter for perplexity or caviling. Many would be indisposed to believe the fact of Christ's resurrection: and many more who, in their exile from Jerusalem, were looking intently for the restoration of an earthly kingdom, must have heard incredulously and unwillingly of the humiliation of Messiah.

That St. Paul did speak of Messiah's glorious kingdom, the kingdom foretold in the Prophetic Scriptures themselves, may be gathered by comparing together the Acts and the Epistles to the Thessalonians. The accusation brought against him (Acts 17:7) was, that he was proclaiming another king, and virtually rebelling against the Emperor. And in strict conformity to this the Thessalonians are reminded of the exhortations and entreaties he gave them, when among them, that they would "walk worthily of the God who had called them

to His kingdom and glory" (1. Thess. 2:12) and they are addressed as those who had "suffered affliction for the sake of that kingdom" (2 Thess. 1:5).

Indeed, the royal state of Christ's second advent was one chief topic which was urgently enforced, and deeply impressed, on the minds of the Thessalonian converts. This subject tinges the whole atmosphere through which the aspect of this church is presented to us. It may be said that in each of the primitive churches, which are depicted in the Apostolic Epistles, there is some peculiar feature which gives it an individual character.

In Corinth it is the spirit of party (1 Cor. 1:10), in Galatia the rapid decline into Judaism (Gal. 1:6 ff), in Philippi it is a steady and self denying generosity (Phil. 4:10 16). And if we were asked for the distinguishing characteristic of the first Christians of Thessalonica, we should point to their overwhelming sense of the nearness of the second advent, accompanied with melancholy thoughts concerning those who might die before it, and with gloomy and unpractical views of the shortness of life and the vanity of the world.

Each chapter in the first Epistle to the Thessalonians ends with an allusion to this subject; and it was evidently the topic of frequent conversations when the Apostle was in Macedonia. But St. Paul never spoke or wrote of the future as though the present was to be forgotten. When the Thessalonians were admonished of Christ's advent, he told them also of other coming events, full of practical warning to all ages, though to our eyes still they are shrouded in mystery, of "the falling away," and of "the man of sin." "These awful revelations," he said, "must precede the revelation of the Son of God. Do you not remember," he adds with emphasis in his letter, "that when I was still with you I often told you this? You know, therefore, the hindrance why he is not revealed, as he will be in his own season."

He told them, in the words of Christ himself, that "the times and the seasons" of the coming revelations were known only to God: and he warned them, as the first disciples had been warned in Judea, that the great day would come suddenly on men unprepared, "as the pangs of travail on her whose time is full," and as a thief in the night; and he showed them, by precept and example, that, though it be true that life is short and the world is vanity, yet God's work must be done diligently and to the last.

The whole demeanor of St. Paul among the Thessalonians may be traced, by means of these Epistles, with singular minuteness. We see there, not only what success he had on his first entrance among them, not only how the Gospel came "with power and with full conviction of its truth," but also "what manner of man he was among them for their sakes." We see him proclaiming the truth with unflinching courage, endeavoring to win no converts by flattering words, but warning his hearers of all the danger of the sins and pollution to which they were tempted; manifestly showing that his work was not intended to gratify any desire of self advancement, but scrupulously maintaining an honorable and unblameable character. We see him rebuking and admonishing his converts with all the faithfulness of a father to his children, and cherishing them with all the affection of a mother for the infant of her bosom. We see in this Apostle at Thessalonica all the devotion of a friend who is ready to devote his life for those whom he loves, "all the watchfulness of the faithful pastor, to whom "each one" of his flock is the separate object of individual care.

And from these Epistles we obtain further some information concerning what may be called the outward incidents of St. Paul's residence in this city. He might when there, consistently with the Lord's institution and with the practice of the other Apostles, "have been" burdensome" to those whom he taught, so as to receive from them the means of his temporal support. But that he might place his disinterestedness above all suspicion, and that he might set an example

to those who were too much inclined to live by the labor of others, he declined to avail himself of that which was an undoubted right.

He was enabled to maintain this independent position partly by the liberality of his friends at Philippi, who once and again, on this first visit to Macedonia, sent relief to his necessities (Phil. 4:15,16). And the journeys of those pious men who followed the footsteps of the persecuted Apostles along the Via Egnatia by Amphipolis and Apollonia, bringing the alms which had been collected at Philippi, are among the most touching incidents of the Apostolic history. And not less touching is that description which Paul himself gives us of that other means of support his own labor night and day, that he might not be burdensome to any of them (1 Thess. 2:9).

He did not `rob other churches," that he might do the Thessalonians service, but the trade he had learnt when a boy in Cilicia justified the old Jewish maxim; `he was like a vineyard that is fenced;" and he was able to show an example, not only to the "disorderly busybodies" of Thessalonica (1 Thess. 4:11), but to all, in every age of the Church, who are apt to neglect their proper business (2 Thess. 3:11), and ready to eat other men's bread for nought (2 Thess. 3:8). Late at night, when the sun had long set on the incessant spiritual labors of the day, the Apostle might be seen by lamp light laboring at the rough hair cloth," that he might be chargeable to none." It was an emphatic enforcement of the `commands" which he found it necessary to give when he was among them, that they should `study to be quiet, and to work with their own hands" (1 Thess. 4:11), and the stern principle he laid down, that `if a man will not work, neither should he eat." (2 Thess. 3:10)

In these same Epistles, St. Paul speaks of his work at Thessalonica as having been encompassed with afflictions, and of the Gospel as having advanced by a painful struggle. What these afflictions and struggles were, we can gather from the slight notices of events which are contained in the Acts. The Apostle's success among the Gentiles roused the enmity of his own countrymen. Even in the synagogue the

Proselytes attached themselves to him more readily than the Jews. But he did not merely obtain an influence over the Gentile mind by the indirect means of his disputations on the Sabbath in the synagogue, and through the medium of the Proselytes ; but on the intermediate days he was doubtless in frequent and direct communication with the Heathen. We need not be surprised at the results, even if his stay was limited to the period corresponding to three Sabbaths. No one can say what effects might follow from three weeks of an Apostle's teaching. But we are by no means forced to adopt the supposition that the time was limited to three weeks.

It is highly probable that Paul remained at Thessalonica for a longer period." At other cities, when he was repelled by the Jews, he became the evangelist of the Gentiles, and remained till he was compelled to depart. The Thessalonian Letters throw great light on the rupture which certainly took place with the Jews on this occasion, and which is implied in that one word in the Acts which speaks of their jealousy against the Gentiles.

The whole aspect of the Letters shows that the main body of the Thessalonian Church was not Jewish, but Gentile. The Jews are spoken of as an extraneous body, as the enemies of Christianity and of all men, not as the elements out of which the Church was composed. The ancient Jewish Scriptures are not once quoted in either of these Epistles. The converts are addressed as those who had turned, not from Hebrew fables and traditions, but from the practices of Heathen idolatry. How new and how comforting to them must have been the doctrine of the resurrection from the dead.

What a contrast must this revelation of" life and immortality" have been to the hopeless lamentations of their own pagan funerals, and to the dismal teaching which we can still read in the sepulchral inscriptions of Heathen Thessalonica, such as told the bystander that after death there is no revival, after the grave no meeting of those who have loved each other on earth. How ought the truth taught by the

Apostle to have comforted the new disciples at the thought of inevitable, though only temporary, separation from their Christian brethren. And yet how difficult was the truth to realize, when they saw those brethren sink into lifeless forms, and after they had committed them to the earth which had received all their heathen ancestors. How eagerly can we imagine them to have read the new assurances of comfort which came in the letter from Corinth, and which told them `not to sorrow like other men who have no hope”

But we are anticipating the events which occurred between the Apostle's departure from Thessalonica and the time when he wrote the letter from Corinth. We must return to the persecution that led him to undertake that journey, which brought him from the capital of Macedonia to that of Achaia.

When the Jews saw Proselytes and Gentiles, and many of the leading women of the city, convinced by St. Paul's teaching, they must have felt that his influence was silently undermining theirs. In proportion to his success in spreading Christianity, their power of spreading Judaism declined. Their sensitiveness would be increased in consequence of the peculiar dislike with which they were viewed at this time by the Roman power. Thus they adopted the tactics which had been used with some success before at Iconium and Lystra (Acts 14), and turned against St. Paul and his companions those weapons which are the readiest instruments of vulgar bigotry.

They excited the mob of Thessalonica, gathering together a multitude of those worthless idlers about the markets and landing places which abound in every such city, and are always ready for any evil work. With this multitude they assaulted the house of Jason (perhaps some Hellenistic Jew, whose name had been molded into Gentile form, and possibly one of St. Paul's relations, who is mentioned in Romans 16:21), with whom Paul and Silas seem to have been lodging. Their wish was to bring Paul and Silas out to the demos, or assembly of the people. But they were absent from the house; and Jason and

some other Christians were dragged before the city magistrates.

The accusation vociferously brought against them was to the following effect:” These Christians, who are setting the whole world in confusion, are come hither at last; and Jason has received them into his house; and they are all acting in the face of the Emperor's decrees, for they assert that there is another king, whom they call Jesus.” We have seen how some of the parts of St. Paul's teaching at Thessalonica may have given occasion to the latter phrase in this indictment; and we obtain a deeper insight into the cause why the whole indictment was brought forward with so much vehemence, and why it was so likely to produce an effect on the magistrates, if we bear in mind the circumstance alluded to in reference to Philippi, that the Jews were under the ban of the Roman authorities about this time, for having raised a tumult in the metropolis, at the instigation (as was alleged) of one Chrestus, or Christus; and that they must have been glad, in the provincial cities, to be able to show their loyalty and gratify their malice, by throwing the odium off themselves upon a sect whose very name might be interpreted to imply a rebellion against the Emperor.

Such were the circumstances under which Jason and his companions were brought before the politarchs. We use the Greek term advisedly; for it illustrates the political constitution of Thessalonica, and its contrast with that of Philippi, which has lately been noticed. Thessalonica was not a colony, like Philippi, Troas, or the Pisidian Antioch, but a free city (*Urbs libera*), like the Syrian Antioch, or like Tarsus and Athens. The privilege of what was technically called” freedom” was given to certain cities of the Empire for good service in the Civil Wars, or as a tribute of respect to the old celebrity of the place, or for other reasons of convenient policy. There were few such cities in the western provinces, as there were no municipia in the eastern. The free towns were most numerous in those parts of the Empire where the Greek language had long prevailed ;

and we are generally able to trace the reasons why this privilege was bestowed upon them. At Athens it was the fame of its ancient eminence, and the evident policy of paying a compliment to the Greeks. At Thessalonica it was the part which its inhabitants had prudently taken in the great struggle of Augustus and Antony against Brutus and Cassius. When the decisive battle had been fought, Philippi was made a military colony, and Thessalonica became free.

The privilege of such a city consisted in this, that it was entirely self governed in all its internal affairs, within the territory that might be assigned to it. The governor of the province had no right, under ordinary circumstances, to interfere with these affairs. The local magistrates had the power of life and death over the citizens of the place. No stationary garrison of Roman soldiers was quartered within its territory. No insignia of Roman office were displayed in its streets. An instance of the care with which this rule was observed is recorded by Tacitus, who tells us, that Germanicus, whose progress was usually distinguished by the presence of twelve lictors, declined to enter Athens attended with more than one. There is no doubt that the magistracies of such cities would be very careful to show their loyalty to the Emperor on all suitable occasions, and to avoid every disorder which might compromise their valued dignity, and cause it to be withdrawn. And on the other hand, the Roman State did wisely to rely on the Greek love of empty distinction; and it secured its dominion as effectually in the East by means of these privileged towns, as by the stricter political annexation of the municipia in the West.

The form of government in the free cities was very various. In some cases the old magistracies and customs were continued without any material modification. In others, a senate, or an assembly, was allowed to exist where none had existed before. Here, at Thessalonica, we find an assembly of the people (Acts 17:5) and supreme magistrates, who are called politarchs (Acts 17:8). It becomes an interesting inquiry,

whether the existence of this title of the Thessalonian magistracy can be traced in any other source of information. This question is immediately answered in the affirmative, by one of those passages of monumental history which we have made it our business to cite as often as possible in the course of this biography. An inscription which is still legible on an archway in Thessalonica gives this title to the magistrates of the place, informs us of their number, and mentions the very names of some who bore the office not long before the day of St. Paul.

A long street intersects the city from east to west. This is doubtless the very direction which the ancient road took in its course from the Adriatic to the Hellespont; for though the houses of ancient cities are destroyed and renewed, the lines of the great thoroughfares are usually unchanged. If there were any doubt of the fact at Thessalonica, the question is set at rest by two triumphal arches which still, though disfigured by time and injury, and partly concealed by Turkish houses, span the breadth of this street, and define a space which must have been one of the public parts of the city in the apostolic age. One of these arches is at the western extremity, near the entrance from Rome, and is thought to have been built by the grateful Thessalonians to commemorate the victory of Augustus and Antony.

The other is further to the east, and records the triumph of some later emperor (most probably Constantine) over enemies subdued near the Danube or beyond. The second of these arches, with its sculptured camels, has altogether an Asiatic aspect, and belongs to a period of the Empire much later than that of St. Paul. The first has the representation of consuls with the toga, and corresponds in appearance with that condition of the arts which marks the passing of the Republic into the Empire.

If erected at that epoch, it was undoubtedly existing when the Apostle was in Macedonia. The inscription in Greek letters, is engraved on this arch of marble," and informs us still of the magistracy which the Romans recognized and

allowed to subsist in the `free city" of Thessalonica. We learn from this source that the magistrates of the city were called politarchs, and that they were seven in number; and it is perhaps worth observing (though it is only a curious coincidence) that three of the names are identical with three of St. Paul's friends in this region, Sopater of Berea, Gaius the Macedonian, and Secundus of Thessalonica.

It is at least well worth our while to notice, as a mere matter of Christian evidence, how accurately St. Luke writes concerning the political characteristics of the cities and provinces which he mentions. He takes notice in the most artless and incidental manner, of minute details which a fraudulent composer would judiciously avoid, and which in the mythical result of mere oral tradition would surely be loose and inexact. Cyprus is a proconsular province. Philippi is a "colony." The magistrates of Thessalonica have an unusual title, unmentioned in ancient literature; but it appears from a monument of a different kind, that the title is perfectly correct. And the whole aspect of what happened at Thessalonica, as compared with the events at Philippi, is in perfect harmony with the ascertained difference in the political condition of the two places.

There is no mention of the rights and privileges of Roman citizenship; but we are presented with the spectacle of a mixed mob of Greeks and Jews, who are anxious to show themselves to be "Caesar's friends. No lictors, with rods and fasces, appear upon the scene; but we hear something distinctly of a demus, or free assembly of the people. Nothing is said of religious ceremonies which the citizens, "being Romans," may not lawfully adopt; all the anxiety, both of people and magistrates, is turned to the one point of showing their loyalty to the Emperor. And those magistrates by whom the question at issue is ultimately decided, are not Roman praetors but Greek politarchs.

It is evident that the magistrates were excited and unsettled as well as the multitude. No

doubt they were anxious to stand well with the Roman Government, and not to compromise themselves or the privileges of their city by a wrong decision in this dispute between the Christians and the Jews. The course they adopted was to "take security" from Jason and his companions. By this expression (Acts 17:9) it is most probably meant that a sum of money was deposited with the magistrates, and that the Christian community of the place made themselves responsible that no attempt should be made against the supremacy of Rome, and that peace should be maintained in Thessalonica itself. By these means the disturbance was allayed.

But though the magistrates had secured quiet in the city for the present, the position of Paul and Silas was very precarious. The lower classes were still excited. The Jews were in a state of fanatical displeasure. It is evident that the Apostles could not appear in public as before, without endangering their own safety, and compromising their fellow Christians who were security for their good behavior.

The alternatives before them were, either silence in Thessalonica, or departure to some other place. The first was impossible to those who bore the divine commission to preach the Gospel everywhere. They could not hesitate to adopt the second course; and, under the watchful care of "the brethren," they departed the same evening from Thessalonica, their steps being turned in the direction of those mountains which are the western boundary of Macedonia. We observe that nothing is said of the departure of Timothy.

If he was at Thessalonica at all, he stays there now, as Luke had stayed at Philippi. We can trace in all these arrangements a deliberate care and policy for the well being of the new Churches, even in the midst of the sudden movements caused by the outbreak of persecution. It is the same prudent and varied forethought which appears afterwards in the pastoral Epistles, where injunctions are given, according to circumstances, to "abide" while the Apostle goes to some other regions (1 Tim.

1:3)" hoping that he may come shortly" again (1 Tim. 3:14), to "set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders," (Tit. 1:5) or" to use all diligence" to follow and co operate again in the same work at some new place.

Passing under the Arch of Augustus and out of the Western Gate, the Via Egnatia crosses the plain and ascends the mountains which have just been mentioned, forming a communication over a very rugged country between the Hellespont and the Adriatic.

### The Jews at Berea

Just where the road strikes the mountains, at the head of a bay of level ground, the city of Edessa is situated, described as commanding a glorious view of all the country, that stretches in an almost unbroken surface to Thessalonica and the sea. This, however, was not the point to which St. Paul turned his steps. He traveled, by a less important road, to the town of Berea, which was farther to the south.

Berea, like Edessa, is on the eastern slope of the Olympian range, and commands an extensive view of the plain which is watered by the Haliacmon and Axios. It has many natural advantages, and is now considered one of the most agreeable towns in Rumili. Plane trees spread a grateful shade over its gardens. Streams of water are in every street. Its ancient name is said to have been derived from the abundance of its waters ; and the name still survives in the modern Verria, or Kara Verria. It is situated on the left of the Haliacmon, about five miles from the point where that river breaks through an immense rocky ravine from the mountains to the plain. A few insignificant ruins of the Greek and Roman periods may yet be noticed. The foundations of an ancient bridge are passed on the ascent to the city gate ; and parts of the Greek fortifications may be seen above the rocky bed of a mountain stream. The traces of repairs in the walls, of Roman and Byzantine date, are links between the early fortunes of Berea and its present condition. It still boasts of eighteen or twenty thousand

inhabitants, and is placed in the second rank of the cities of European Turkey.

In the apostolic age Berea was sufficiently populous to contain a colony of Jews (Acts 17:10). When St. Paul arrived, he went, according to his custom, immediately to the synagogue. The Jews here were of a nobler spirit than those of Thessalonica. Their minds were less narrowed by prejudice, and they were more willing to receive "the truth in the love of it." There was a contrast between two neighboring communities apparently open to the same religious influences, like that between the "village of the Samaritans," which refused to receive Jesus Christ (Luke 9), and that other "city" in the same country where "many believed" because of the word of one who witnessed of Him, and "many more because of His own word" (John 4).

In a spirit very different from the ignoble violence of the Thessalonian Jews, the Bereans not only listened to the Apostle's arguments, but they examined the Scriptures themselves, to see if those arguments were justified by prophecy. And, feeling the importance of the subject presented to them, they made this scrutiny of their holy books their "daily" occupation. This was the surest way to come to a strong conviction of the Gospel's divine origin. Truth sought in this spirit cannot long remain undiscovered. The promise that "they who seek shall find" was fulfilled at Berea ;and the Apostle's visit resulted in the conversion of "many." Nor was the blessing confined to the Hebrew community The same Lord who is "rich unto all that call upon Him," called many "not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles." Both men and women," and those of the highest rank, among the Greeks, were added to the church founded by St. Paul in that provincial city of Macedonia, which was his temporary shelter from the storm of persecution.

The length of St. Paul's stay in the city is quite uncertain. From the fact that the Bereans were occupied "daily" in searching the Scriptures for arguments to establish or confute the Apostle's doctrine, we conclude that he remained there

several days at least. From his own assertion in his first letter to the Thessalonians, that, at the time when he had been recently taken away from them, he" was very anxious, and used every effort to revisit them, we cannot doubt that he lingered as long as possible in the neighborhood of Thessalonica." This desire would account for a residence of some weeks; and there are other passages" in the same Epistle which might induce us to suppose the time extended even to months.

But when we find, on the other hand, that the cause which led him to leave Berea was the hostility of the Jews of Thessalonica, and when we remember that the two cities were separated only by a distance of sixty miles, that the events which happened in the synagogue of one city would soon be made known in the synagogue of the other, and that Jewish bigotry was never long in taking active measures to crush its opponents, we are led to the conclusion that the Apostle was forced to retreat from Berea after no long interval of time.

The Jews came like hunters upon their prey, as they had done before from Iconium to Lystra. They could not arrest the progress of the Gospel; but they I stirred up the people" there, as at Thessalonica before. They made his friends feel that his continuance in the city was no longer safe. He was withdrawn from Berea and sent to Athens, as in the beginning of his ministry (Acts 9:30) he had been withdrawn from Jerusalem and sent to Tarsus. And on this occasion, as on that, the dearest wishes of his heart were thwarted. The providence of God permitted `Satan" to hinder him from seeing his dear Thessalonian converts. whom `once and again" he had desired to revisit. The divine counsels were accomplished by means of the antagonism of wicked men; and the path of the Apostle was urged on, in the midst of trial and sorrow, in the direction pointed out in the vision at Jerusalem, `far hence unto the Gentiles"

An immediate departure was urged upon the Apostle; and the Church of Berea suddenly s

lost its teacher. But Silas and Timothy remained behind, to build it up in its holy faith, to be a comfort and support in its trials and persecutions, and to give it such organisation as might be necessary. Meanwhile some of the new converts accompanied St. Paul on his flight; thus adding a new instance to those we have already seen of the love which grows up between those who have taught and those who have learnt the way of the soul's salvation.

Without attempting to divine all the circumstances which may have concurred in determining the direction of this flight, we can mention some obvious reasons why it was the most natural course. To have returned in the direction of Thessalonica was manifestly impossible. To have pushed over the mountains, by the Via Egnatia, towards Illyricum and the western parts of Macedonia, would have taken the Apostle from those shores of the Archipelago to which his energies were primarily to be devoted. Mere concealment and inactivity were not to be thought of.

Thus the Christian fugitives turned their steps towards the sea, and from some point on the coast where a vessel was found, they embarked for Athens. In the ancient tables two roads are marked which cross the Haliacmon and intersect the plain from Berea, one passing by Pydna, and the other leaving it to the left, and both coming to the coast at Dium near the base of Mount Olympus. The Pierian level (as this portion of the plain was called) extends about ten miles in breadth from the woody falls of the mountain to the seashore, forming a narrow passage from Macedonia into Greece. Thus Dium was `the great bulwark of Macedonia on the south;" and it was a Roman colony, like that other city which we have described on the eastern frontier." No city is more likely than Dium to have been the last, as Philippi was" the first," through which St. Paul passed in his journey through the province.

Here then, where Olympus, dark with woods, rises from the plain by the shore, to the broad summit, glittering with snow, which was the

throne of the Homeric gods, at the natural termination of Macedonia, and where the first scene of classical and poetic Greece opens on our view, we take our leave, for the present, of the Apostle of the Gentiles.

## Chapter 10

### Arrival on the Coast of Attica

In the life of Apollonius of Tyana, there occurs a passage to the following effect: " Having come to anchor in the Piraeus, he went up from the Harbor to the City. Advancing onward, he met several of the Philosophers. In his first conversation, finding the Athenians much devoted to Religion, he discoursed on sacred subjects. This was at Athens, where also altars of Unknown Divinities are set up., To draw a parallel between a holy Apostle and an itinerant Magician would be unmeaning and profane: but this extract from the biography of Apollonius would be a suitable and comprehensive motto to that passage in St. Paul's biography on which we are now entering. The sailing into the Piraeus, the entrance into the city of Athens, the interviews with philosophers, the devotion of the Athenians to religious ceremonies, the discourse concerning the worship of the Deity, the ignorance implied by the altars to unknown Gods, these are exactly the subjects which are now before us.

If a summary of the contents of the seventeenth chapter of the Acts had been required, it could not have been more conveniently expressed. The city visited by Apollonius was the Athens which was visited by St. Paul: the topics of discussion the character of the people addressed the aspect of everything around, were identically the same. The difference was this, that the Apostle could give to his hearers what the philosopher could not give. The God whom Paul" declared, was worshipped by Apollonius himself as" ignorantly" as by the Athenians.

We left St. Paul on that voyage which his friends induced him to undertake on the flight from Berea. The vessel was last seen among the Thessalian islands. About that point the highest

land in Northern Macedonia began to be lost to view. Gradually the nearer heights of the snowy Olympus itself receded into the distance as the vessel on her progress approached more and more near to the centre of all the interest of classical Greece. All the land and water in sight becomes more eloquent as we advance; the lights and shadows, both of poetry and history, are on every side; every rock is a monument; every current is animated with some memory of the past. For a distance of ninety miles, from the confines of Thessaly to the middle part of the coast of Attics, the shore is protected, as it were, by the long island of Euboea.

Deep in the innermost gulf, where the waters of the Aegean retreat far within the land, over against the northern parts of this island, is the pass of Thermopylae, where a handful of Greek warriors had defied all the hosts of Asia. In the crescent like bay on the shore of Attics, near the southern extremity of the same island, is the maritime sanctuary of Marathon, where the battle was fought which decided that Greece was never to be a Persian Satrapy. When the island of Euboea is left behind, we soon reach the southern extremity of Attica Cape Colonna, Sunium's high promontory, still crowned with the white columns of that temple of Minerva, which was the landmark to Greek sailors, and which asserted the presence of Athens at the very vestibule of her country.

After passing this headland, our course turns to the westward across the waters of the Saronic Gulf, with the mountains of the Mores on our left, and the islands of Agina and Salamis in front. To one who travels in classical lands no moment is more full of interest and excitement than when he has left the Cape of Sunium behind and eagerly looks for the first glimpse of that city" built nobly on the Aegean shore," which was" the eye of Greece, mother of arts and eloquence." To the traveler in classical times its position was often revealed by the flashing of the light on the armor of Minerva's colossal statue, which stood with shield and spear on the summit of the citadel. s At the very first sight of Athens, and even from the deck of

the vessel, we obtain a vivid notion of the characteristics of its position. And the place where it stands is so remarkable its ancient inhabitants were so proud of its climate and its scenery that we may pause on our approach to say a few words on Attics and Athens, and their relation to the rest of Greece.

### Scenery Around Athens

Attica is a triangular tract of country, the southern and eastern aides of which meet in the point of Sunium; its third side is defined by the high mountain ranges of Cithaeron and Parnes, which separate it by a strong barrier from Boeotia and Northern Greece. Hills of inferior elevation connect these ranges with the mountainous surface of the south east, which begins from Sunium itself, and rises on the south coast to the round summits of Hymettus, and the higher peak of Pentelicua near Marathon on the east. The rest of Attics is a plain, one reach of which comes down to the sea on the south, at the very base of Hymettus. Here, about five miles from the shore, an abrupt rock rises from the level, like the rock of Stirling Castle, bordered on the south by some lower eminences, and commanded by a high craggy peak on the north. This rock is the Acropolis of Athens. These lower eminences are the Areopagus, the Pnyx, and the Museum, which determined the rising and falling of the ground in the ancient city. That craggy peak is the hill of Lycabettus, from the summit of which the spectator sees all Athens at his feet, and looks freely over the intermediate plain to the Piraeus and the sea.

Athens and the Piraeus must never be considered separately. One was the city, the other was its harbor. Once they were connected together by a continuous fortification. Those who looked down from Lycabettus in the time of Pericles, could follow with the eye all the long line of wall from the temples on the Acropolis to the shipping in the port. Thus we are brought back to the point from which we digressed. We were approaching the Piraeus; and, since we must land in maritime Athens before we can enter Athena itself, let us return once more to

the vessel's deck, and look round on the land and the water. The island on our left, with steep cliffs at the water's edge, is Aegina.

The distant heights beyond it are the mountains of the Mores. Before us is another island, the illustrious Salamis; though in the view it is hardly disentangled from the coast of Attics, for the strait where the battle was fought is narrow and winding. The high ranges behind stretch beyond Eleusis and Megara, to the left towards Corinth, and to the right along the frontier of Boeotia. This last ridge is the mountain line of Parnes, of which we have spoken above. Clouds" are often seen to rest on it at all seasons of the year, and in winter it is usually white with snow. The dark heavy mountain rising close to us on the right immediately from the sea, is Hymettus. Between Parnes and Hymettus is the plain; and rising from the plain is the Acropolis; distinctly visible, with Lycabettus behind, and seeming in the clear atmosphere to be nearer than it is.

The outward aspect of this scene is now what it ever was. The lights and shadows on the rocks of Aegina and Salamis, the gleams on the distant mountains, the clouds or the snow on Parties, the gloom in the deep dells of Hymettus, the temple crowned rock and the plain beneath it, are natural features, which only vary with the alterations of morning and evening, and summer and winter." Some changes indeed have taken place: but they are connected with the history of man. The vegetation is less abundant, the population is more scanty. In Greek and Roman times, bright villages enlivened the promontories of Sunium and Aegina, and all the inner reaches of the bay.

Some readers will indeed remember a dreary picture which Sulpicius gave his friend Atticus of the desolation of these coasts when Greece had ceased to be free; but we must make some allowances for the exaggerations of a poetical regret, and must recollect that the writer had been accustomed to the gay and busy life of the Campanian shore. After the renovation of Corinth, and in the reign of Claudius, there is no doubt that all the signs of a far more numerous

population than at present were evident around the Saronic Gulf, and that more white sails were to be seen in fine weather plying across its waters to the harbors of Cenchrea (see Acts 18:18; Rom. 16:1) or Piraeus.

Now there is indeed a certain desolation over this beautiful bay: Corinth is fallen, and Cenchrea is an insignificant village. The Piraeus is probably more like what it was than any other spot upon the coast. It remains what by nature it has ever been, a safe basin of deep water, concealed by the surrounding rock; and now, as in St. Paul's time, the proximity of Athens causes it to be the resort of various shipping. We know that we are approaching it at the present day, if we see, rising above the rocks, the tall masts of an English line of battle ship, side by side with the light spars of a Russian corvette or the black funnel of a French steamer.

The details were different when the Mediterranean was a Roman lake. The heavy top gear" of corn ships from Alexandria or the Euxine might then be a conspicuous mark among the small coasting vessels and fishing boats; and one bright spectacle was then pre eminent, which the lapse of centuries has made cold and dim, the perfect buildings on the summit of the Acropolis, with the shield and spear of Minerva Promachus glittering in the sun. But those who have coasted along beneath Hymettus, and past the indentations in the shore, which were sufficient harbors for Athens in the days of her early navigation, and round by the ancient tomb, which tradition has assigned to Themistocles, into the better and safer harbor of the Piraeus, require no great effort of the imagination to picture the Apostle's arrival. For a moment, as we near the entrance, the land rises and conceals all the plain. Idlers come down upon the rocks to watch the coming vessel. The sailors are all on the alert. Suddenly an opening is revealed; and a sharp turn of the helm brings the ship in between two moles, on which towers are erected. We are in smooth water; and anchor is cast in seven fathoms in the basin of the Piraeus.

The Piraeus, with its suburbs (for so, though it is not strictly accurate, we may designate the maritime city), was given to Athens as a natural advantage, to which much of her greatness must be traced. It consists of a projecting portion of rocky ground, which is elevated above the neighboring shore, and probably was originally entirely insulated in the sea. The two rivers of Athens the Cephissus and Ilissus seem to have formed, in the course of ages, the low marshy ground which now connects Athens with its port. The port itself possesses all the advantages of shelter and good anchorage, deep water, and sufficient space. Themistocles, seeing that the preeminence of his country could only be maintained by her maritime power, fortified the Piraeus as the outpost of Athens, and enclosed the basin of the harbor as a dock within the walls.

In the long period through which Athens had been losing its political power, these defenses had been neglected, and suffered to fall into decay, or had been used as materials for other buildings: but there was still a fortress on the highest point, the harbor was still a place of some resort; and a considerable number of seafaring people dwelt in the streets about. When the republic of Athens was flourishing, the sailors were a turbulent and worthless part of its population. And the Piraeus under the Romans was not without some remains of the same disorderly class, as it doubtless retained many of the outward features of its earlier appearance: the landing places and covered porticoes; the warehouses where the corn from the Black Sea used to be laid up; the stores of fish brought in daily from the Saronic Gulf and the Aegean; the gardens in the watery ground at the edge of the plain; the theatres ~ into which the sailors used to flock to hear the comedies of Menander; and the temples where they were spectators of a worship which had no beneficial effect on their characters.

Had St. Paul come to this spot four hundred years before, he would have been in Athens from the moment of his landing at the Piraeus. At that time the two cities were united together

by the double line of fortification, which is famous under the name of the "Long Walls." The space included between these two arms of stone might be considered (as, indeed it was sometimes called) a third city; for the street of five miles in length thus formed across the plain, was crowded with people, whose habitations were shut out from all view of the country by the vast wall on either side. Some of the most pathetic passages of Athenian history are associated with this "long mural" enclosure: as when, in the beginning of the Peloponnesian war, the plague broke out in the autumn weather among the miserable inhabitants, who were crowded here to suffocation; or, at the end of the same war, when the news came of the defeat on the Asiatic shore, and one long wail went up from the Piraeus," and no one slept in Athens that night."

The result of that victory was, that these long walls were rendered useless by being partially destroyed; and though another Athenian admiral and statesman restored what Pericles had first completed, this intermediate fortification remained effective only for a time. In the incessant changes which fell on Athena in the Macedonian period, they were injured and became unimportant. In the Roman siege under Sulla, the stones were used as materials for other military works. So that when Augustus was on the throne, and Athens had reached its ultimate position as a free city of the province of Achaia, Strabo, in his description of the place, speaks of the Long Walls as matters of past history; and Pausanias, a century later, says simply that "you see the ruins of the walls as you go up from the Piraeus"

Thus we can easily imagine the aspect of these defenses in the time of St. Paul, which is intermediate to these two writers. On each side of the road were the broken fragments of the rectangular masonry put together in the proudest days of Athens; more conspicuous than they are at present (for now only the foundations can be traced here and there across the plain), but still very different from what they were when two walls of sixty feet high,

with a long succession of towers, stood to bid defiance to every invader of Attica.

The consideration of the Long Walls leads us to that of the city walls themselves. Here many questions might be raised concerning the extent of the enclosure, and the positions of the gates, when Athens was under the Roman dominion. But all such inquiries must be entirely dismissed. We will assume that St. Paul entered the city by the gate which led from the Piraeus, that this gate was identical with that by which Pausanias entered, and that its position was in the hollow between the outer slopes of the Pnyx and Museum. It is no ordinary advantage that we possess a description of Athens under the Romans, by the traveler and antiquarian whose name has just been mentioned. The work of Pausanias will be our best guide to the discovery of what St. Paul saw. By following his route through the city, we shall be treading in the steps of the Apostle himself, and shall behold those very objects which excited his indignation and compassion.

Taking, then, the position of the Peiraic gate as determined, or at least resigning the task of topographical inquiries, we enter the city, and with Pausanias as our guide, look round on the objects which were seen by the Apostle. At the very gateway we are met with proofs of the peculiar tendency of the Athenians to multiply their objects both of art and devotion. Close by the building where the vestments were laid up which were used in the annual procession of their tutelary divinity Minerva, is an image of her rival Neptune, seated on horseback, and hurling his trident. We pass by a temple of Ceres, on the walls of which an archaic inscription informs us that the statues it contains were the work of Praxiteles. We go through the gate: and immediately the eye is attracted by the sculptured forms of Minerva, Jupiter, and Apollo, of Mercury and the Muses standing near a sanctuary of Bacchus.

We are already in the midst of an animated scene, where temples, statues, and altars are on every side, and where the Athenians, fond of publicity and the open air, fond of hearing and

telling what is curious and strange, are enjoying their climate, and inquiring for news. A long street is before us, with a colonnade or cloister on either hand, like the covered arcades of Bologna or Turin.

At the end of the street, by turning to the left, we might go through the whole Ceramicus, which leads by the tombs of eminent Athenians to the open inland country and the groves of the Academy. But we turn to the right into the Agora, which was the centre of a glorious public life, when the orators and statesman, the poets and the artists of Greece, found there all the incentives of their noblest enthusiasm; and still continued to be the meeting place of philosophy, of idleness, of conversation, and of business, when Athens could only be proud of her recollections of the past.

### The Agora

On the south side is the Pnyx,<sup>262</sup> a sloping hill partially leveled into an open area for political assemblies; on the north side is the more craggy eminence of the Areopagus; before us, towards the east, is the Acropolis, towering high above the scene of which it is the glory and the crown. In the valley enclosed by these heights is the Agora, which must not be conceived of as a great "market" (Acts xvii. 17), like the bare spaces in many modern towns, where little attention has been paid to artistic decoration, but is rather to be compared to the beautiful squares of such Italian cities as Verona and Florence, where historical buildings have closed in the space within narrow limits, and sculpture has peopled it with impressive figures. Among the buildings of greatest interest are the porticoes or cloisters, which were decorated with paintings and statuary, like the Campo Santo at Pisa. We think we may be excused for multiplying these comparisons: for though they

<sup>262</sup> It is remarkable that the Pnyx, the famous meeting - place of the political assemblies of Athena, is not mentioned by Pausanias. This may be because there were no longer any such assemblies, and therefore his attention was not called to it; or, perhaps, it is omitted because it was simply a level space, without any work of art to attract the notice of an antiquarian.

are avowedly imperfect, they are really more useful than any attempt at description could be, in enabling us to realize the aspect of ancient Athens.

Two of the most important of these were the Portico of the King, and the Portico of the Jupiter of Freedom. On the roof of the former were statues of Theseus and the Day: in front of the latter was the divinity to whom it was dedicated, and within were allegorical paintings illustrating the rise of the Athenian democracy. One characteristic of the Agora was, that it was full of memorials of actual history. Among the plane trees planted by the hand of Cimon, were the statues of the great men of Athens such as Solon the lawgiver, Conon the admiral, Demosthenes the orator. But among her historical men were her deified heroes, the representatives of her mythology Hercules and Theseus and all the series of the Eponymi on their elevated platform, from whom the tribes were named, and whom an ancient custom connected with the passing of every successive law.

And among the deified heroes were memorials of the older divinities, Mercuries, which gave their name to the street in which they were placed, statues dedicated to Apollo, as patron of the city, and her deliverer from plague, and, in the centre of all, the Altar of the Twelve Gods, which was to Athens what the Golden Milestone was to Rome. If we look up to the Areopagus, we see the temple of that deity from whom the eminence had received the name of "Mars" Hill" (Acts 17:22); and we are aware that the sanctuary of the Furies is only hidden by the projecting ridge beyond the atone steps and the seats of the judges. If we look forward to the Acropolis, we behold there, closing the long perspective, a series of little sanctuaries on the very ledges of the rock; shrines of Bacchus and Aesculapius, Venus, Earth, and Ceres, ending with the lovely form of that Temple of Unwinged Victory which glittered by the entrance of the Propylaea above the statues of Harmodius and Aristogeiton.

Thus, every god in Olympus found a place in the Agora. But the religiousness of the Athenians (Acts 17:22) went even further. For every public place and building was likewise a sanctuary. The Record House was a temple of the Mother of the Gods. The Council House held statues of Apollo and Jupiter, with an altar of Vesta. The Theatre at the base of the Acropolis, into which the Athenians crowded to hear the words of their great tragedians, was consecrated to Bacchus. The Pnyx, near which we entered, on whose elevated platform they listened in breathless attention to their orators, was dedicated to Jupiter on High, with whose name those of the Nymphs of the Demus were gracefully associated. And, as if the imagination of the Attic knew no bounds in this direction, abstractions were deified and publicly honored.. Altars were erected to Fame, to Modesty, to Energy, to Persuasion, and to Pity.

This last altar is mentioned by Pausanias among `those objects in the Agora which are not understood by all men: for," he adds,` the Athenians alone of all the Greeks give divine honor to Pity. It is needless to show how the enumeration which we have made (and which is no more than a selection from what is described by Pausanias) throws light on the words of St. Luke and St. Paul, and especially how the groping after the abstract and invisible, implied in the altars alluded to last, illustrates the inscription `To the unknown God," which was used by Apostolic wisdom (Acts 17:23) to point the way to the highest truth.

### The Acropolis

What is true of the Agora is still more emphatically true of the Acropolis, for the spirit which rested over Athens was concentrated here. The feeling of the Athenians with regard to the Acropolis was well, though fancifully, expressed by the rhetorician who said that it was the middle space of five concentric circles of a shield, whereof the outer four were Athens, Attics, Greece, and the world. The platform of the Acropolis was a museum of art, of history, and of religion. The whole was" one vast composition of architecture and sculpture,

dedicated to the national glory and to the worship of the gods."

By one approach only through the Propylaea built by Pericles could this sanctuary be entered. If St. Paul went up that steep ascent on the western front of the rock, past the Temple of Victory, and through that magnificent portal, we know nearly all the features of the idolatrous spectacle he saw before him. At the entrance, in conformity with his attributes, was the statue of Mercurius Propylaeus. Further on, within the vestibule of the beautiful enclosure, were statues of Venus and the Graces. The recovery of one of those who had labored among the edifices of the Acropolis was commemorated by a dedication to Minerva as the goddess of Health. There was a shrine of Diana, whose image had been wrought by Praxiteles. Intermixed with what had reference to divinities, were the memorials of eminent men and of great victories.

The statue of Pericles, to whom the glory of the Acropolis was due, remained there for centuries. Among the sculptures on the south wall was one which recorded a victory we have alluded to, that of Attalus over the Galatians. Nor was the Roman power without its representatives on this proud pedestal of Athenian glory. Before the entrance were statues of Agrippa and Augustus; and at the eastern extremity of the esplanade a temple was erected in honor of Rome and the Emperor. But the main characteristics of the place were mythological and religious, and truly Athenian. On the wide leveled area were such groups as the following: Theseus contending with the Minotaur; Hercules strangling the serpents; the Earth imploring showers from Jupiter; Minerva causing the olive to sprout while Neptune raises the waves.

The mention of this last group raises our thoughts to the Parthenon, the Virgin's House, the glorious temple which rose in the proudest period of Athenian history to the honor of Minerva, and which ages of war and decay have only partially defaced. The sculptures on one of its pediments represented the birth of the

goddess: those on the other depicted her contest with Neptune. Under the outer cornice were groups exhibiting the victories achieved by her champions. Round the inner frieze was the long series of the Panathenaic procession. Within was the colossal statue of ivory and gold, the work of Phidias, unrivalled in the world, save only by the Jupiter Olympius of the same famous artist. This was not the only statue of the Virgin Goddess within the sacred precincts; the Acropolis boasted of three Minervas. The oldest and most venerated was in the small irregular temple called the Erechtheum, which contained the mystic olive tree of Minerva and the mark of Neptune's trident. This statue, like that of Diana at Ephesus (Acts 19:35), was believed to have fallen from heaven.

The third, though less sacred than the Minerva Polias, was the most conspicuous of all. Formed from the brazen spoils of the battle of Marathon, it rose in gigantic proportions above all the buildings of the Acropolis, and stood with spear and shield as the tutelary divinity of Athens and Attica. It was the statue which may have caught the eye of St. Paul himself, from the deck of the vessel in which he sailed round Sunium to the Piraeus. Now he had landed in Attica, and beheld all the wonders of that city which divides with one other city all the glory of Heathen antiquity. Here, by the statue of Minerva Promachus, he could reflect on the meaning of the objects he had seen in his progress. His path had been among the forms of great men and deified heroes, among the temples, the statues, the altars of the gods of Greece. He had seen the creations of mythology represented to the eye, in every form of beauty and grandeur, by the sculptor and the architect. And the one overpowering result was this: "His spirit was stirred within, him, when he saw the city crowded with idols"

But we must associate St. Paul, not merely with the Religion, but with the Philosophy of Greece. And this, perhaps, is our best opportunity for doing so, if we wish to connect together, in this respect also, the appearance and the spirit of

Athens. If the Apostle looked out from the pedestal of the Acropolis over the city and the open country, he would see the places which are inseparably connected with the names of those who have always been recognized as the great teachers of the pagan world. In opposite directions he would see the two memorable suburbs where Aristotle and Plato, the two pupils of Socrates, held their illustrious schools. Their positions are defined by the courses of the two rivers to which we have already alluded. The streamless bed of the Ilissus passes between the Acropolis and Hymettus in a south westerly direction, till it vanishes in the low ground which separates the city from the Piraeus.

Looking towards the upper part of this channel, we see (or we should have seen in the first century) gardens with plane trees and thickets of agnus castus, with "others of the torrent loving shrubs of Greece." At one spot, near the base of Lycabettus, was a sacred enclosure. Here was a statue of Apollo Lycius, represented in an attitude of repose, leaning against a column, with a bow in the left hand and the right hand resting on his head. The god gave the name to the Lyceum. Here among the groves, the philosopher of Stagirus, the instructor of Alexander, used to walk. Here he founded the school of the Peripatetics. To this point an ancient dialogue represents Socrates as coming, outside the northern city wall, from the grove of the Academy. Following, therefore, this line in an opposite direction, we come to the scene of Plato's school. Those dark olive groves have revived after all the disasters which have swept across the plain. The Cephissus has been more highly favored than the Ilissus. Its waters still irrigate the suburban gardens of the Athenians. Its nightingales are still vocal among the twinkling olive branches.

The gnarled trunks of the ancient trees of our own day could not be distinguished from those which were familiar with the presence of Plato, and are more venerable than those which had grown up after Sulla's destruction of the woods, before Cicero visited the Academy in the spirit

of a pilgrim. But the Academicians and Peripatetics are not the schools to which our attention is called in considering the biography of St. Paul. We must turn our eye from the open country to the city itself, if we wish to see the places which witnessed the rise of the Stoics and Epicureans. Lucian, in a playful passage, speaks of Philosophy as coming up from the Academy, by the Ceramicus, to the Agora:" and there," he says, "we shall meet her by the Stoa Poecile." Let us follow this line in imagination, and, having followed it, let us look down from the Acropolis into the Agora. There we distinguish a cloister or colonnade, which was not mentioned before, because it is more justly described in connection with the Stoics.

The Stoa Poecile," or the "Painted Cloister," gave its name to one of those sects who encountered the Apostle in the Agora. It was decorated with pictures of the legendary wars of the Athenians, of their victories over their fellow Greeks, and of the more glorious struggle at Marathon. Originally the meeting place of the poets, it became the school where Zeno met his pupils, and founded the system of stern philosophy which found adherents both among Greeks and Romans for many generations. The system of Epicurus was matured nearly at the same time and in the same neighborhood. The site of the philosopher's Garden" is now unknown, but it was well known in the time of Cicero; and in the time of St. Paul it could not have been forgotten, for a peculiarly affectionate feeling subsisted among the Epicureans towards their founder. He left this garden as a legacy to the school, on condition that philosophy should always be taught there, and that he himself should be annually commemorated. <sup>263</sup>

<sup>263</sup> On his first visit to Athens, at the age of twenty-eight; Cicero lodged with an Epicurean. On the occasion of his second visit, the attachment of the Epicureans to the garden of their founder was brought before him in a singular manner. I There lived at this time in exile at Athens C. Memmius. ~ The figure which he had borne in Rome gave him great authority

The sect had dwindled into smaller numbers than their rivals, in the middle of the first century. But it is highly probable that, even then, those who looked down from the Acropolis over the roofs of the city, could distinguish the quiet garden, where Epicurus lived a life of philosophic contentment, and taught his disciples that the enjoyment of tranquil pleasure was the highest end of human existence.

The spirit in which Pausanias traversed these memorable places and scrutinized everything he saw, was that of a curious and rather superstitious antiquarian. The expressions used by Cicero, when describing the same objects, show that his taste was gratified, and that he looked with satisfaction on the haunts of those whom he regarded as his teachers. The thoughts and feelings in the mind of the Christian Apostle, who came to Athens about the middle of that interval of time which separates the visit of Pausanias from that of Cicero. were very different from those of criticism or admiration. He burned with zeal for that GOD whom, "as he went through the city," he saw dishonored on every side. He was melted with pity for those who, notwithstanding their intellectual greatness, were" wholly given to idolatry." His eye was not blinded to the reality of things, by the appearances either of art or philosophy.

in Athens; and the council of Areopagus had granted him a piece of ground to build upon, where Epicurus formerly lived, and where there still remained the old ruins of his walls. But this grant had given great offence to the whole body of the Epicureans, to see the remains of their master in danger of being destroyed. They had written to Cicero at Rome, to beg him to intercede with Memmius to consent to a restoration of it, and now at Athens they, renewed their instances, and prevailed on him to write about it: . . . Cicero's letter is drawn with much art and accuracy; he laughs at the trifling zeal of these philosophers for the old rubbish and paltry ruins of their founder, yet earnestly presses Memmius to indulge them in a prejudice contracted through weakness, not wickedness.' - Middleton's Life of Cicero. Sect. VII.

Forms of earthly beauty and words of human wisdom were valueless in his judgment, and far worse than valueless, if they deified vice and made falsehood attractive. He saw and heard with an earnestness of conviction which no Epicurean could have understood, as his tenderness of affection was morally far above the highest point of the Stoic's impassive dignity.

It is this tenderness of affection which first strikes us, when we turn from the manifold wonders of Athens to look upon the Apostle himself. The existence of this feeling is revealed to us in a few words in the Epistle to the Thessalonians. (1 Thess 3:1) He was filled with anxious thoughts concerning those whom he had left in Macedonia, and the sense of solitude weighed upon his spirit. Silas and Timothy were not arrived, and it was a burden and a grief to him to be" left in Athens alone."

Modern travelers have often felt, when wandering alone through the streets of a foreign city, what it is to be out of sympathy with the place and the people. The heart is with friends who are far off; and nothing that is merely beautiful or curious can effectually disperse the cloud of sadness. If, in addition to this instinctive melancholy, the thought of an irreligious world, of evil abounding in all parts of society, and of misery following everywhere in its train, if this thought also presses heavily on the spirit, a state of mind is realized which may be some feeble approximation to what was experienced by the Apostle Paul in his hour of dejection. But with us such feelings are often morbid and nearly allied to discontent. We travel for pleasure, for curiosity, for excitement. It is well if we can take such depressions thankfully, as the discipline of a worldly spirit.

Paul traveled that he might give to others the knowledge of salvation. His sorrow was only the cloud that kindled up into the bright pillar of the divine presence. He ever forgot himself in his Master's cause. He gloried that God's strength was made perfect in his weakness. It is useful, however, to us, to be aware of the human weakness of that heart which God made

strong. Paul was indeed one of us. He loved his friends, and knew the trials both of anxiety and loneliness. As we advance with the subject, this and similar traits of the man advance more into view, and with them, and personified as it were in him, touching traits of the religion which he preached come before us, and we see, as we contemplate the Apostle, that the Gospel has not only deliverance from the coarseness of vice and comfort for ruder sorrows, but sympathy and strength for the most sensitive and delicate minds.

No mere pensive melancholy, no vain regrets and desires, held sway over St. Paul, so as to hinder him in proceeding with the work appointed to him. He was" in Athens alone," but he was there as the Apostle of God. No time was lost; and, according to his custom, he sought out his brethren of the scattered race of Israel. Though moved with grief and indignation when he saw the idolatry all around him, he deemed that his first thought should be given to his own people. They had a synagogue at Athens, as at Thessalonica; and in this synagogue he first proclaimed his Master. Jewish topics, however, are not brought before us prominently here.

They are casually alluded to; and we are not informed whether the Apostle was welcomed or repulsed in the Athenian synagogue. The silence of Scripture is expressive; and we are taught that the subjects to which our attention is to be turned, are connected, not with Judaism, but with Paganism. Before we can be prepared to consider the great speech, which was the crisis and consummation of this meeting of Christianity and Paganism, our thoughts must be given for a few moments to the characteristics of Athenian Religion and Athenian Philosophy.

The mere enumeration of the visible objects with which the city of the Athenians was crowded, bears witness (to use St. Paul's own words) to their" carefulness in Religion." The judgment of the Christian Apostle agreed with that of his Jewish contemporary Josephus, with the proud boast of the Athenians themselves, exemplified in Isocrates and Plato, and with the

verdict of a multitude of foreigners, from Livy to Julian, all of whom unite in declaring that Athens was peculiarly devoted to religion. Replete as the whole of Greece was with objects of devotion, the antiquarian traveler informs us that there were more gods in Athens than in all the rest of the country; and the Roman satirist hardly exaggerates, when he says that it was easier to find a god there than a man. But the same enumeration which proves the existence of the religious sentiment in this people, shows also the valueless character of the religion which they cherished. It was a religion which ministered to art and amusement, and was entirely destitute of moral power.

Taste was gratified by the bright spectacle to which the Athenian awoke every morning of his life. Excitement was agreeably kept up by festal seasons, gay processions, and varied ceremonies. But all this religious dissipation had no tendency to make him holy. It gave him no victory over himself: it brought him no nearer to God. A religion which addresses itself only to the taste, is as weak as one that appeals only to the intellect. The Greek religion was a mere deification of human attributes and the powers of nature. It was doubtless better than other forms of idolatry which have deified the brutes: but it had no real power to raise him to a higher position than that which he occupied by nature. It could not even keep him from falling continually to a lower degradation.

### Greek Religion

To the Greek this world was everything: he hardly even sought to rise above it. And thus all his life long, in the midst of everything to gratify his taste and exercise his intellect, he remained in ignorance of God. This fact was tacitly recognized by the monuments in his own religious city. The want of something deeper and truer was expressed on the very stones. As we are told by a Latin writer that the ancient Romans, when alarmed by an earthquake, were accustomed to pray, not to any specified divinity, but to a god expressed in vague language, as avowedly Unknown: so the Athenians acknowledged their ignorance of the

True Deity by the altars" with this inscription, To THE UNKNOWN God," which are mentioned by Heathen writers, as well as by the inspired historian. Whatever the origin of these altars may have been, the true significance of the inscription is that which is pointed out by the Apostle himself. (Acts 17:23)

The Athenians were ignorant of the right object of worship. But if we are to give a true account of Athenian religion, we must go beyond the darkness of mere ignorance into the deeper darkness of corruption and sin. The most shameless profligacy was encouraged by the public works of art, by the popular belief concerning the character of the gods, and by the ceremonies of the established worship.

Authorities might be crowded in proof of this statement, both from Heathen and Christian writings. It is enough to say with Seneca, that" no other effect could possibly be produced, but that all shame on account of sin must be taken away from men, if they believe in such gods;" and with Augustine, that" Plato himself, who saw well the depravity of the Grecian gods, and has seriously censured them, better deserves to be called a god, than those ministers of sin."

It would be the worst delusion to infer any good of the Grecian religion from the virtue and wisdom of a few great Athenians whose memory we revere. The true type of the character formed by the influences which surrounded the Athenian, was such a man as Alcibiades, with a beauty of bodily form equal to that of one of the consecrated statues, with an intelligence quick as that of Apollo or Mercury, enthusiastic and fickle, versatile and profligate, able to admire the good, but hopelessly following the bad. And if we turn to the one great exception in Athenian history, if we turn from Alcibiades to the friend who nobly and affectionately warned him, who, conscious of his own ignorance, was yet aware that God was best known by listening to the voice within, yet even of Socrates we cannot say more than has been said in the following words:" His soul was certainly in some alliance with the Holy God; he certainly felt, in his demon or guardian

spirit, the inexplicable nearness of his Father in heaven; but he was destitute of a view of the divine nature in the humble form of a servant, the Redeemer with the crown of thorns; he had no ideal conception of that true holiness, which manifests itself in the most humble love and the most affectionate humility. Hence, also, he was unable to become fully acquainted with his own heart, though he so greatly desired it.

Hence, too, he was destitute of any deep humiliation and grief on account of his sinful wretchedness, of that true humility which no longer allows itself a biting, sarcastic tone of instruction; and destitute, likewise, of any filial, devoted love. These perfections can be shared only by the Christian, who beholds the Redeemer as a wanderer upon earth in the form of a servant; and who receives in his own soul the sanctifying power of that Redeemer by intercourse with Him.

When we turn from the Religion of Athens to take a view of its Philosophy, the first name on which our eye rests is again that of Socrates. This is necessarily the case, not only because of his own singular and unapproached greatness; but because he was, as it were, the point to which all the earlier schools converged, and from which the later rays of Greek philosophy diverged again. The earlier philosophical systems, such as that of Thales in Asia Minor, and Pythagoras in Italy, were limited to physical inquiries: Socrates was the first to call man to the contemplation of himself, and became the founder of ethical science.

A new direction was thus given to all the philosophical schools which succeeded; and Socrates maybe said to have prepared the way for the gospel, by leading the Greek mind to the investigation of moral truth. He gave the impulse to the two schools, which were founded in the Lyceum and by the banks of the Cephissus, and which have produced such vast results on human thought in every generation. We are not called here to discuss the doctrines of the Peripatetics and Academicians. Not that they are unconnected with the history of Christianity: Plato and Aristotle have had a

great work appointed to them, not only as the Heathen pioneers of the Truth before it was revealed, but as the educators of Christian minds in every age: the former enriched human thought with appropriate ideas for the reception of the highest truth in the highest form; the latter mapped out all the provinces of human knowledge, that Christianity might visit them and bless them: and the historian of the Church would have to speak of direct influence exerted on the Gospel by the Platonic and Aristotelian systems, in recounting the conflicts of the parties of Alexandria, and tracing the formation of the theology of the Schoolmen.

### The Stoics and Epicureans

But the biographer of St. Paul has only to speak of the Stoics and Epicureans. They only, among the various philosophers of the day, are mentioned as having argued with the Apostle; and their systems had really more influence in the period in which the Gospel was established, though, in the Patristic and Medieval periods, the older systems, in modified forms, regained their sway. The Stoic and Epicurean., moreover, were more exclusively limited than other philosophers to moral investigations, a fact which is tacitly implied by the proverbial application of the two words to moral principles and tendencies, which we recognize as hostile to true Christianity.

Zeno, the founder of the Stoic school, was a native of the same part of the Levant with St. Paul himself. He came from Cyprus to Athens at a time when patriotism was decayed and political liberty lost, and when a system, which promised the power of brave and self sustaining endurance amid the general degradation, found a willing acceptance among the nobler minds. Thus in the Painted Porch, which, as we have said, had once been the meeting place of the poets, those who, instead of yielding to the prevailing evil of the times, thought they were able to resist it, formed themselves into a school of philosophers. In the high tone of this school, and in some of its ethical language, Stoicism was an apparent approximation to Christianity; but on the

whole, it was a hostile system, in its physics, its morals, and its theology.

The Stoics condemned the worship of images and the use of temples, regarding them as nothing better than the ornaments of art. But they justified the popular polytheism, and, in fact, considered the gods of mythology as minor developments of the Great World God, which summed up their belief concerning the origin and existence of the world.

The Stoics were Pantheists; and much of their language is a curious anticipation of the phraseology of modern Pantheism. In their view, God was merely the Spirit or Reason of the Universe. The world was itself a rational soul, producing all things out of itself, and resuming it all to itself again. Matter was inseparable from the Deity. He did not create: He only organized. He merely impressed law and order on the substance, which was, in fact, Himself. The manifestation of the Universe was only a period in the development of God.

In conformity with these notions of the world, which substitute a sublime destiny for the belief in a personal Creator and Preserver, were the notions which were held concerning the soul and its relation to the body. The soul was, in fact, corporeal. The Stoics said that at death it would be burnt, or return to be absorbed in God. Thus, a resurrection from the dead, in the sense in which the Gospel has revealed it, must have appeared to the Stoics irrational. Nor was their moral system less hostile to "the truth as it is in Jesus." The proud ideal which was set before the disciple of Zeno was, a magnanimous self denial, an austere apathy, untouched by human passion, unmoved by change of circumstance. To the Wise man all outward things were alike. Pleasure was no good. Pain was no evil. All actions conformable to Reason were equally good; all actions contrary to Reason were equally evil.

The Wise man lives according to Reason: and living thus, he is perfect and self sufficing. He reigns supreme as a king, he is justified in boasting as a god. Nothing can well be imagined

more contrary to the spirit of Christianity.

Nothing could be more repugnant to the Stoic than the news of a " Savior," who has atoned for our sin, and is ready to aid our weakness.

Christianity is the School of Humility; Stoicism was the Education of Pride. Christianity is a discipline of life: stoicism was nothing better than an apprenticeship for death. And fearfully were the fruits of its principle illustrated both in its earlier and later disciples. Its first two leaders died by their own hands; like the two Romans whose names first rise to the memory, when the school of the Stoics is mentioned.

But Christianity turns the desperate resolution, that seeks to escape disgrace by death, into the anxious question, " What must I do to be saved? " " It softens the pride of stern indifference into the consolation of mutual sympathy. How great is the contrast between the Stoic ideal and the character of Jesus Christ ! How different is the acquiescence in an iron destiny from the trust in a merciful and watchful Providence! How infinitely inferior is that sublime egotism, which looks down with contempt on human weakness, to the religion which tells us that "they who mourn are blessed," and which commands us to "rejoice with them that rejoice. and to weep with them that weep!"

If Stoicism, in its full development, was utterly opposed to Christianity, the same may be said of the very primary principles of the Epicurean <sup>264</sup> school. If the Stoics were Pantheists, the Epicureans were virtually Atheists. Their philosophy was a system of materialism, in the strictest sense of the word. In their view, the world was formed by an accidental concourse of atoms, and was not in any sense created, or even modified, by the Divinity. They did indeed profess a certain belief in what were called gods; but these equivocal divinities were merely phantoms, impressions on the popular mind, dreams, which had no objective reality, or

<sup>264</sup> Epicurus, who founded this school (for its doctrines were never further developed), was born in Samos, BC 342, though his parents were natives of Attica. He dies in BC 270.

at least exercised no active influence on the physical world, or the business of life.

The Epicurean deity, if self-existent at all, dwelt apart, in serene indifference to all the affairs of the universe. The universe was a great accident, and sufficiently explained itself without any reference to a higher power. The popular mythology was derided, but the Epicureans had no positive faith in anything better. As there was no creator, so there was no moral governor. All notions of retribution and of judgment to come were of course forbidden by such a creed. The principles of the atomic theory, when applied to the constitution of man, must have caused the resurrection to appear an absurdity. The soul was nothing without the body; or rather, the soul was itself a body, composed of finer atoms, or at best an unmeaning compromise between the material and the immaterial. Both body and soul were dissolved together and dissipated into the elements; and when this occurred, all the life of man was ended.

The moral result of such a creed was necessarily that which the Apostle Paul described (1 Cor. 15:32): "If the dead rise not, let us eat and drink: for tomorrow we die." The essential principle of the Epicurean philosopher was that there was nothing to alarm him, nothing to disturb him. His furthest reach was to do deliberately what the animals do instinctively. His highest aim was to gratify himself. With the coarser and more energetic minds, this principle inevitably led to the grossest sensuality and crime; in the case of others, whose temperament was more common place, or whose taste was more pure, the system took the form of a selfishness more refined.

As the Stoic sought to resist the evil which surrounded him, the Epicurean endeavored to console himself by a tranquil and indifferent life. He avoided the more violent excitements of political and social engagements, to enjoy the seclusion of a calm contentment. But pleasure was still the end at which he aimed; and if we remove this end to its remotest distance, and

understand it to mean an enjoyment which involves the most manifold self-denial, if we give Epicurus credit for taking the largest view of consequences, and if we believe that the life of his first disciples was purer than there is reason to suppose, the end remains the same. Pleasure, not duty, is the motive of moral exertion; expediency is the test to which actions are referred; and the self-denial itself, which an enlarged view of expediency requires, will probably be found impracticable without the grace of God. Thus, the Gospel met in the Garden an opposition not less determined, and more insidious, than the antagonism of the Porch. The two enemies it has ever had to contend with are the two ruling principles of the Epicureans and Stoics: Pleasure and Pride.

Such, in their original and essential character, were the two schools of philosophy with which St. Paul was brought directly into contact. We ought, however, to consider how far these schools had been modified by the lapse of time, by the changes which succeeded Alexander and accompanied the formation of the Roman Empire, and by the natural tendencies of the Roman character. When Stoicism and Epicureanism were brought to Rome, they were such as we have described them. In as far as they were speculative systems, they found little favor: Greek philosophy was always regarded with some degree of distrust among the Romans. Their mind was alien from science and pure speculation. Philosophy, like art and literature, was of foreign introduction.

The cultivation of such pursuits was followed by private persons of wealth and taste, but was little extended among the community at large. There were no public schools of philosophy at Rome. Where it was studied at all, it was studied, not for its own sake, but for the service of the state. Thus, the peculiarly practical character of the Stoic and Epicurean systems recommended them to the notice of many. What was wanted in the prevailing misery of the Roman world was a philosophy of life. There were some who weakly yielded, and some who offered a courageous resistance, to

the evil of the times. The former, under the name of Epicureans, either spent their time in a serene tranquility, away from the distractions and disorders of political life, or indulged in the grossest sensualism, and justified it on principle.

The Roman adherents of the school of Epicurus were never numerous, and few great names can be mentioned among them, though one monument remains, and will ever remain, of this phase of philosophy, in the poem of Lucretius. The Stoical school was more congenial to the endurance of the Roman character: and it educated the minds of some of the noblest men of the time, who scorned to be carried away by the stream of vice. Three great names can be mentioned, which divided the period between the preaching of St. Paul and the final establishment of Christianity, Seneca, Epictetus, and Marcus Aurelius.

But such men were few in a time of general depravity and unbelief. And this was really the character of the time. It was a period in the history of the world, when conquest and discovery, facilities of traveling, and the mixture of races, had produced a general fusion of opinions, resulting in an indifference to moral distinctions, and at the same time encouraging the most abject credulity. The Romans had been carrying on the work which Alexander and his successors begun. A certain degree of culture was very generally diffused. The opening of new countries excited curiosity. New religions were eagerly welcomed. Immoral rites found willing votaries. Vice and superstition went hand in hand through all parts of society, and, as the natural consequence, a scornful skepticism held possession of all the higher intellects.

But though the period of which we are speaking was one of general skepticism, for the space of three centuries the old dogmatic schools still lingered on, more especially in Greece. Athens was indeed no longer what she had once been, the centre from which scientific and poetic light radiated to the neighboring shores of Asia and Europe. Philosophy had found new homes in

other cities, more especially in Tarsus and Alexandria. But Alexandria, though she was commercially great and possessed the trade of three continents, had not yet seen the rise of her greatest schools; and Tarsus could never be what Athens was, even in her decay, to those who traveled with cultivated tastes, and for the purposes of education. Thus Philosophy still maintained her seat in the city of Socrates.

The four great schools, the Lyceum and the Academy, the Garden and the Porch, were never destitute of exponents of their doctrines. When Cicero came, not long after Sulla's siege, he found the philosophers in residence. As the Empire grew, Athens assumed more and more the character of a university town. After Christianity was first preached there, this character was confirmed to the place by the embellishments and the benefactions of Hadrian. And before the schools were closed by the orders of Justinian, the city which had received Cicero and Atticus as students together, became the scene of the friendship of St. Basil and St. Gregory', one of the most beautiful episodes of primitive Christianity.

### **Paul in the Agora**

Thus, St. Paul found philosophers at Athens, among those whom he addressed in the Agora. This, as we have seen, was the common meeting place of a population always eager for fresh subjects of intellectual curiosity. Demosthenes had rebuked the Athenians for this idle tendency four centuries before, telling them that they were always craving after news and excitement, at the very moment when destruction was impending over their liberties. And they are described in the same manner, on the occasion of St. Paul's visit, as giving their whole leisure to telling and hearing something newer than the latest news (Acts 17:21).

Among those who sauntered among the plane trees of the Agora, and gathered in knots under the porticoes, eagerly discussing the questions of the day, were philosophers, in the garb of their several sects, ready for any new question, on which they might exercise their subtlety or

display their rhetoric. Among the other philosophers, the Stoics and Epicureans would more especially be encountered; for the 'Painted Porch' of Zeno was in the Agora itself, and the 'Garden' of the rival sect was not far distant. To both these classes of hearers and talkers both the mere idler and the professors of philosophy any question connected with a new religion was peculiarly welcome; for Athens gave a ready acceptance to all superstitions and ceremonies, and was glad to find food for credulity or skepticism, ridicule or debate.

To this motley group of the Agora, St. Paul made known the two great subjects he had proclaimed from city to city. He spoke aloud of 'Jesus and the Resurrection,' of that Name which is above every name, that consummation which awaits all the generations of men who have successively passed into the sleep of death. He was in the habit of conversing daily on these subjects with those whom he met. His varied experience of men, and his familiarity with many modes of thought, enabled him to present these subjects in such a way as to arrest attention. As regards the philosophers, he was providentially prepared for his collision with them. It was not the first time he had encountered them. His own native city was a city of philosophers, and was especially famous (as we have remarked before) for a long line of eminent Stoics, and he was doubtless familiar with their language and opinions.

Two different impressions were produced by St. Paul's words, according to the disposition of those who heard him. Some said that he was a mere babbler,<sup>265</sup> and received him with contemptuous derision. Others took a more serious

<sup>265</sup> The Greek word here means properly a bird that picks up seeds from the ground, and it is so used in the Birds of Aristophanes. Hence, secondarily, it may mean a pauper who prowls about the market - place, or a parasite who lives by his wits, and hence 'a contemptible and worthless person.' Or, from the perpetual chattering or chirping of such birds, the word may denote an idle 'babbler.'

view, and, supposing that he was endeavoring to introduce new objects of worship had their curiosity excited, and were desirous to hear more. If we suppose a distinct allusion, in these two classes, to the two philosophical sects which have just been mentioned, we have no difficulty in seeing that the Epicureans were those who, according to their habit, received the new doctrine with ridicule, while the Stoics, ever tolerant of the popular mythology, were naturally willing to hear of the new daemons which this foreign teacher was proposing to introduce among the multitude of Athenian gods and heroes.

Or we may imagine that the two classes denote the philosophers on the one hand, who heard with scorn the teaching of a Jewish stranger untrained in the language of the schools, and the vulgar crowd on the other, who would easily entertain suspicion (as in the case of Socrates) against anyone seeking to cast dishonor on the national divinities, or would at least be curious to hear more of this foreign and new religion. It is not, however, necessary to make any such definite distinction between those who derided and those who listened. Two such classes are usually found among those to whom truth is presented. When Paul came among the Athenians, he came not with enticing words of man's wisdom, and to some of the 'Greeks' who heard him, the Gospel was 'foolishness;' (see 1 Cor. 1:18 to 2:5) while in others there was at least that curiosity which is sometimes made the path whereby the highest truth enters the mind; and they sought to have a fuller and more deliberate exposition of the mysterious subjects, which now for the first time had been brought before their attention.

### The Areopagus

The place to which they took him was the summit of the hill of Areopagus, where the most awful court of judicature had sat from time immemorial, to pass sentence on the greatest criminals, and to decide the most solemn questions connected with religion. The judges sat in the open air, upon seats hewn out in the rock, on a platform which was ascended by a

flight of stone steps immediately from the Agora.<sup>266</sup> On this spot a long series of awful causes, connected with crime and religion, had been determined, beginning with the legendary trial of Mars, which gave to the place its name of "Mars" Hill." A temple of the god," as we have seen, was on the brow of the eminence; and an additional solemnity was given to the place by the sanctuary of the Furies, in a broken cleft of the rock, immediately below the judges' seats.

Even in the political decay of Athens, this spot and this court were regarded by the people with superstitious reverence. It was a scene with which the dread recollections of centuries were associated. It was a place of silent awe in the midst of the gay and frivolous city. Those who withdrew to the Areopagus from the Agora, came, as it were, into the presence of a higher power. No place in Athens was so suitable for a discourse upon the mysteries of religion. We are not, however, to regard St. Paul's discourse on the Areopagus as a formal defense, in a trial before the court." The whole aspect of the narrative in the Acts, and the whole tenor of the discourse itself, militate against this supposition.

The words, half derisive, half courteous, addressed to the Apostle before he spoke to his audience," May we know what this new

<sup>266</sup> The number of steps is sixteen. See Wordsworth's Athens and Attics, p. 73. "Sixteen stone steps cut in the rock, at its south-east angle, lead up to the hill of the Areopagus from the valley of the Agora, which lies between it and the Pnyx. This angle seems to be the point of the hill on which the council of the Areopagus sat. Immediately above the steps, on the level of the hill, is a bench of stone excavated in the limestone rock, forming three sides of a quadrangle, like a triclinium it faces the south: on its east and west side is a raised block: the former may, perhaps, have been the tribunal, the two latter the rude atones which Pausanias saw here, and which are described by Euripides as assigned, the one to the accuser, the other to the criminal, in the causes which were tried in this court: The stone seats are intermediate in position to the sites of the Temple of Mars and the Sanctuary of the Eumenides.

doctrine is?" are not like the words which would have been addressed to a prisoner at the bar; and still more unlike a judge's sentence are the words with which he was dismissed at the conclusion," We will hear thee again of this matter." Nor is there anything in the speech itself of a really apologetic character, as anyone may perceive, on comparing it with the defense of Socrates. Moreover, the verse 4 which speaks so strongly of the Athenian love of novelty and excitement is so introduced, as to imply that curiosity was the motive of the whole proceeding.

We may, indeed, admit that there was something of a mock solemnity in this adjournment from the Agora to the Areopagus. The Athenians took the Apostle from the tumult of public discussion, to the place which was at once most convenient and most appropriate. There was everything in the place to incline the auditors, so far as they were seriously disposed at all, to a reverent and thoughtful attention. It is probable that Dionysius," with other Areopagites, were on the judicial seats. And a vague recollection of the dread thoughts associated by poetry and tradition with the Hill of Mars, may have solemnized the minds of some of those who crowded up the stone steps with the Apostle, and clustered round the summit of the hill, to hear his announcement of the new divinities.

There is no point in the annals of the first planting of Christianity which seizes so powerfully on the imagination of those who are familiar with the history of the ancient world. Whether we contrast the intense earnestness of the man who spoke, with the frivolous character of those who surrounded him, or compare the certain truth and awful meaning of the Gospel he revealed, with the worthless polytheism which had made Athens a proverb in the earth, or even think of the mere words uttered that day in the clear atmosphere, on the summit of Mars' Hill, in connection with the objects of art, temples, statues, and altars, which stood round on every side, we feel that the moment was, and was intended to be, full of

the most impressive teaching for every age of the world.

Close to the spot where he stood was the Temple of Mars. The sanctuary of the Eumenides was immediately below him; the Parthenon of Minerva facing him above. Their presence seemed to challenge the assertion in which he declared here, that "in temples made with hands the Deity does not dwell." In front of him, towering from its pedestal on the rock of the Acropolis, as the Borromean Colossus, which at this day, with outstretched hand, gives its benediction to the low village of Arona; or as the brazen statue of the armed angel, which from the summit of the Castel S. Angelo spreads its wings over the city of Rome, was the bronze Colossus of Minerva, armed with spear, shield, and helmet, as the champion of Athens. Standing almost beneath its shade, he pronounced that the Deity was not to be likened either to that, the work of Phidias, or to other forms in gold, silver, or stone, graven by art, and man's device, which peopled the scene before him.

Wherever his eye was turned, it saw a succession of such statues and buildings in every variety of form and situation. On the rocky ledges on the south side of the Acropolis, and in the midst of the hum of the Agora, were the "objects of devotion" already described. And in the northern parts of the city, which are equally visible from the Areopagus, on the level spaces, and on every eminence, were similar objects, to which we have made no allusion, and especially that Temple of Theseus, the national hero, which remains in unimpaired beauty, to enable us to imagine what Athens was when this temple was only one among the many ornaments of that city, which was "crowded with idols"

### Paul's Speech

In this scene St. Paul spoke, probably in his usual attitude, "stretching out his hand;" his bodily aspect still showing what he had suffered from weakness, toil, and pain; and the traces of sadness and anxiety mingled on his

countenance with the expression of unshaken faith. Whatever his personal appearance may have been, we know the words which he spoke. And we are struck with the more admiration, the more narrowly we scrutinize the characteristics of his address. To defer for the present all consideration of its manifold adaptations to the various characters of his auditors, we may notice how truly it was the outpouring of the emotions which, at the time, had possession of his soul.

The mouth spoke out of the fullness of the heart. With an ardent and enthusiastic eloquence he gave vent to the feelings which had been excited by all that he had seen around him in Athens. We observe, also, how the whole course of the oration was regulated by his own peculiar prudence. He was placed in a position, when he might easily have been ensnared into the use of words which would have brought down upon him the indignation of all the city. Had he begun by attacking the national gods in the midst of their sanctuaries and with the Areopagites on the seats near him, he would have been in almost as great danger as Socrates before him. Yet he not only avoids the snare, but uses the very difficulty of his position to make a road to the convictions of those who heard him. He becomes a Heathen to the Heathen. He does not say that he is introducing new divinities. He rather implies the contrary, and gently draws his hearers away from polytheism by telling them that he was making known the God whom they themselves were ignorantly endeavoring to worship.

And if the speech is characterized by St. Paul's prudence, it is marked by that wisdom of his Divine Master, which is the pattern of all Christian teaching. As our Blessed Lord used the tribute money for the instruction of His disciples, and drew living lessons from the water in the well of Samaria, so the Apostle of the Gentiles employed the familiar objects of Athenian life to tell them of what was close to them, and yet they knew not. He had carefully observed the outward appearance of the city. He had seen an altar with an expressive, though

humiliating, inscription. And, using this inscription as a text," he spoke to them, as follows, the Words of Eternal Wisdom.

**22 Ye men of Athens, all things which. I behold bear witness to your carefulness in religion.** <sup>267</sup>

**23 For as I passed through your city, and beheld the objects of your worship I found amongst them an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom, therefore, ye worship, though ye know Him not, Him declare I unto you.**

**24 God who made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwells not in temples made with hands.**

**25 Neither is He served by the hands of men, as though He needed service of anything; for it is He that giveth unto all life, and breath, and all things.**

**26 And He made of one blood all the nations of mankind, to dwell upon the face of the whole earth; and ordained to each the appointed seasons of their existence, and the bounds of their habitation.**

**27 That they should seek God, if haply they might feel after Him and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us, for in Him we live and move and have our being;**

**28 as certain also of your own poets have said." For we are also His offspring."** <sup>268</sup>

<sup>267</sup> The mistranslation of this verse in the Authorized Version is much to be regretted, because it entirely destroys the graceful courtesy of Paul's opening address, and represents him as beginning his speech by offending his audience.

<sup>268</sup> The quotation is from Aratus, a Greek poet, who was a native of Cilicia, a circumstance which would perhaps account for Paul's familiarity with his writings. His astronomical poems were so celebrated, that Ovid declares his fame will live as long as the sun and moon endure. How little did the Athenian audience imagine that the poet's immortality would really be owing to the quotation made by the despised provincial who

**29 Forasmuch, then, as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by the art and device of man.**

**30 Howbeit, those past times of ignorance God hath overlooked, but now He commands all men everywhere to repent,**

**31 because He hath appointed a day wherein He will judge the world in righteousness, by that Man whom He hath ordained; whereof He hath given assurance unto all, He hath raised Him from the dead.**

St. Paul was here suddenly interrupted, as was no doubt frequently the case with his speeches both to Jews and Gentiles. Some of those who listened broke out into laughter and derision. The doctrine of the "resurrection" was to them ridiculous, as the notion of equal religious rights with the "Gentiles" was offensive and intolerable to the Hebrew audience at Jerusalem." Others of those who were present on the Areopagus said, with courteous indifference, that they would "hear him again on the subject." The words were spoken in the spirit of Felix, who had no due sense of the importance of the matter, and who waited for "a convenient season." Thus, amidst the derision of some, and the indifference of others, St. Paul was dismissed, and the assembly dispersed.

But though the Apostle "departed" thus "from among them," and though most of his hearers appeared to be unimpressed, yet many of them may have carried away in their hearts the seeds of truth, destined to grow up into the maturity of Christian faith and practice. We cannot fail to notice how the sentences of this interrupted speech are constructed to meet the cases in

addressed them. The opening lines of Aratus' hymn have been thus translated, 'Thou, who amid the Immortals art throned the highest in glory, Giver and Lord of life, who by law disposest of all things, Known by many a name, yet One Almighty for ever, Hail, O Zeus! for to Thee should each mortal voice be uplifted; Offspring are we too of thine, we and all that is mortal around us.'

succession of every class of which the audience was composed. Each word in the address is adapted at once to win and to rebuke.

The Athenians were proud of everything that related to the origin of their race and the home where they dwelt. St. Paul tells them that he was struck by the aspect of their city; but he shows them that the place and the time appointed for each nation's existence are parts of one great scheme of Providence; and that one God is the common Father of all nations of the earth. For the general and more ignorant population, some of whom were doubtless listening, a word of approbation is bestowed on the care they gave to the highest of all concerns; but they are admonished that idolatry degrades all worship, and leads men away from true notions of the Deity. That more educated and more imaginative class of hearers, who delighted in the diversified mythology which personified the operations of nature, and localized the divine presence in sanctuaries adorned by poetry and art, are led from the thought of their favorite shrines and customary sacrifices, to views of that awful Being who is the Lord of heaven and earth, and the one Author of universal life.

Up to a certain point in this high view of the Supreme Being, the philosopher of the Garden, as well as of the Porch, might listen with wonder and admiration. It soared, indeed, high above the vulgar religion; but in the lofty and serene Deity, who disdained to dwell in the earthly temple, and needed nothing from the hand of man, the Epicurean might almost suppose that he heard the language of his own teacher. But the next sentence, which asserted the providence of God as the active, creative energy, as the conservative, the ruling, the ordaining principle, annihilated at once the atomic theory, and the government of blind chance, to which Epicurus ascribed the origin and preservation of the universe.

And when the Stoic heard the Apostle say that we ought to rise to the contemplation of the Deity without the intervention of earthly objects, and that we live and move and have our

being in Him it might have seemed like an echo of his own thought until the proud philosopher learnt that it was no pantheistic diffusion of power and order of which the Apostle spoke, but a living centre of government and love that the world was ruled, not by the iron necessity of Fate, but by the providence of a personal God and that from the proudest philosopher repentance and meek submission were sternly exacted.

Above all, we are called upon to notice how the attention of the whole audience is centered at the last upon JESUS CHRIST, though His name is not mentioned in the whole speech. Before Paul was taken to the Areopagus, he had been preaching 'Jesus and the resurrection;' (Acts 17:18) and though his discourse was interrupted, this was the last impression he left on the minds of those who heard him. And the impression was such as not merely to excite or gratify an intellectual curiosity, but to startle and search the conscience. Not only had a revival from the dead been granted to that man whom God had ordained but a day had been appointed on which by Him the world must be judged in righteousness.

Of the immediate results of this speech we have no further knowledge, than that Dionysius, a member of the Court of Areopagus, and a woman whose name was Damaris, with some others, were induced to join themselves to the Apostle, and became converts to Christianity.

How long St. Paul stayed in Athens, and with what success, cannot possibly be determined. He does not appear to have been driven away by any tumult or persecution. We are distinctly told that he waited for some time at Athens, till Silas and Timothy should join him; and there is some reason for believing that the latter of these companions did rejoin him in Athens, and was dispatched again forthwith to Macedonia. The Apostle himself remained in the province of Achaia, and took up his abode at its capital on the Isthmus. He inferred, or it was revealed to him, that the Gospel would meet with a more cordial reception there than at Athens. And it is a serious and instructive fact that the

mercantile populations of Thessalonica and Corinth received the message of God with greater readiness than the highly educated and polished Athenians.

Two letters to the Thessalonians; and two to the Corinthians, remain to attest the flourishing state of those Churches. But we possess no letter written by St. Paul to the Athenians; and we do not read that he was ever in Athens again.

Whatever may have been the immediate results of St. Paul's sojourn at Athens, its real fruits are those which remain to us still. That speech on the Areopagus is an imperishable monument of the first victory of Christianity over Paganism. To make a sacred application of the words used by the Athenian historian, Thucydides, it was 'no mere effort for the moment,' but it is a 'perpetual possession,' wherein the Church finds ever fresh supplies of wisdom and guidance. It is in Athens we learn what is the highest point to which unassisted human nature can attain; and here we learn also the language which the Gospel addresses to a man on his proudest eminence of unaided strength.

God, in His providence, Has preserved to us, in fullest profusion, the literature which unfolds to us all the life of the Athenian people, in its glory and its shame; and He has ordained that one conspicuous passage in the Holy Volume should be the speech, in which His servant addressed that people as ignorant idolaters, called them to repentance, and warned them of judgment. And it can hardly be deemed profane, if we trace to the same Divine Providence the preservation of the very imagery which surrounded the speaker not only the sea, and the mountains, and the sky, which change not with the decay of nations but even the very temples, which remain, after wars and revolutions, on their ancient pedestals in astonishing perfection. We are thus provided with a poetic and yet a truthful commentary on the words that were spoken once for all at Athens; and Art and Nature have been commissioned from above to frame the portrait of that Apostle, who stands

for ever on the Areopagus as the teacher of the Gentiles.

## Chapter 11

WHEN St. Paul went from Athens to Corinth, he entered on a scene very different from that which he had left. It is not merely that his residence was transferred from a free Greek city to a Roman colony; as would have been the case had he been moving from Thessalonica to Philippi. His present journey took him from a quiet provincial town to the busy metropolis of a province, and from the seclusion of an ancient university to the seat of government and trade.

<sup>269</sup> Once there had been a time, in the flourishing age of the Greek republics, when Athens had been politically greater than Corinth; but now that the little territories of the Levantine cities were fused into the larger political divisions of the empire, Athens had only the memory of its pre eminence, while Corinth held the keys of commerce and swarmed with a crowded population. Both cities had recently experienced severe vicissitudes, but a spell was on the fortunes of the former, and its character remained more entirely Greek than that of any other place, while the latter rose from its ruins, a new and splendid city, on the Isthmus between its two seas, where a multitude of Greeks and Jews gradually united themselves with the military colonists sent by Julius Caesar from Italy, <sup>270</sup> and were kept in order by the presence of a Roman proconsul.

The connection of Corinth with the life of St. Paul and the early progress of Christianity, is so

<sup>269</sup> A journey in the first century from Athens to Corinth might almost be compared to a journey, in the eighteenth, from Oxford to London.

<sup>270</sup> At the close of the Republic Corinth was entirely destroyed. Thus we find Cicero travelling, not by Corinth, but by Athens. But Julius Caesar established the city on the Isthmus, in the form of a colony; and the mercantile population flocked back to their old place; so that Corinth rose with great rapidity, till it was a city of the second rank in the Empire. The historical details will be given in the next chapter.

close and eventful, that no student of Holy Writ ought to be satisfied without obtaining as correct and clear an idea as possible of its social condition, and its relation to other parts of the Empire. This subject will be considered in the succeeding chapter. At present another topic demands our chief attention. We are now arrived at that point in the life of St. Paul when his first Epistles were written. This fact is ascertained, not by any direct statements either in the Acts or the Epistles themselves, but by circumstantial evidence derived from a comparison of these documents with one another.

Such a comparison enables us to perceive that the Apostle's mind, on his arrival at Corinth, was still turning with affection and anxiety towards his converts at Thessalonica. In the midst of all his labors at the Isthmus, his thoughts were continually with those whom he had left in Macedonia; and though the narrative tells us only of his tent making and preaching in the metropolis of Achaia, we discover, on a closer inquiry, that the Letters to the Thessalonians were written at this particular crisis.

It would be interesting, in the case of any man whose biography has been thought worth preserving, to find that letters full of love and wisdom had been written at a time when no traces would have been discoverable, except in the letters themselves, of the thoughts which had been occupying the writer's mind. Such unexpected association of the actions done in one place with affection retained towards another, always seems to add to our personal knowledge of the man whose history we may be studying, and to our interest in the pursuits which were the occupation of his life. This is peculiarly true in the case of the first Christian correspondence, which has been preserved to the Church. Such has ever been the influence of letter writing, its power in bringing those who are distant near to one another, and reconciling those who are in danger of being estranged; such especially has been the influence of Christian letters in developing the growth of

faith and love, and binding together the dislocated members of the body of Our Lord, and in making each generation in succession the teacher of the next, that we have good reason to take these Epistles to the Thessalonians as the one chief subject of the present chapter. The earliest occurrences which took place at Corinth must first be mentioned: but for this a few pages will suffice.

The reasons which determined St. Paul to come to Corinth (over and above the discouragement he seems to have met with in Athens) were, probably, twofold. In the first place, it was a large mercantile city, in immediate connection with Rome and the West of the Mediterranean, with Thessalonica and Ephesus in the Aegean, and with Antioch and Alexandria in the East. The Gospel once established in Corinth, would rapidly spread everywhere. And, again, from the very nature of the city, the Jews established there were numerous. Communities of scattered Israelites were found in various parts of the province of Achaia, in Athens, as we have recently seen, in Argos, as we learn from Philo, in Boeotia and Euboea. But their chief settlement must necessarily have been in that city, which not only gave opportunities of trade by land along the Isthmus between the Morea and the Continent, but received in its two harbors the ships of the Eastern and Western seas. A religion which was first to be planted in the synagogue, and was thence intended to scatter its seeds over all parts of the earth, could nowhere find a more favorable soil than among the Hebrew families at Corinth.

At this particular time there was a greater number of Jews in the city than usual; for they had lately been banished from Rome by command of the Emperor Claudius.<sup>271</sup> The history of this edict is involved in some obscurity. But there are abundant passages in the cotemporary Heathen writers which show the suspicion and dislike with which the Jews were regarded. Notwithstanding the general

---

<sup>271</sup> Acts 18:2

toleration, they were violently persecuted by three successive Emperors<sup>272</sup> and there is good reason for identifying the edict mentioned by St. Luke with that alluded to by Suetonius, who says that Claudius drove the Jews from Rome because they were incessantly raising tumults at the instigation of a certain Chrestus.

Much has been written concerning this sentence of the biographer of the Caesars. Some have held that there was really a Jew called Chrestus, who had excited political disturbances, others that the name is used by mistake for Christus, and that the disturbances had arisen from the Jewish expectations concerning the Messiah, or Christ. It seems to us that the last opinion is partially true; but that we must trace this movement not merely to the vague Messianic idea entertained by the Jews, but to the events which followed the actual appearance of the Christ.

We have seen how the first progress of Christianity had been the occasion of tumult among the Jewish communities in the provinces<sup>273</sup>; and there is no reason why the same might not have happened in the capital itself.<sup>274</sup> Nor need we be surprised at the inaccurate form in which the name occurs, when we remember how loosely more careful writers than Suetonius express themselves concerning the affairs of the Jews. Chrestus was a common name; Christus was not: and we have a distinct statement by Tertullian and Lactantius<sup>275</sup> that in their day the

<sup>272</sup> Four thousand Jews, or Jewish proselytes, were sent as convicts by Tiberius to the Island of Sardinia. The more directly religious persecution of Caligula has been mentioned in Chapter 4.

<sup>273</sup> In Asia Minor (Chapter 6) and more especially in Thessalonica and Berea (Chapter 9).

<sup>274</sup> Christianity must have been more or less known in Rome since the return of the Italian Jews from Pentecost (Acts 2).

<sup>275</sup> See the passages quoted by Dean Milman (Hist. of Christianity, I, p. 430), who remarks that these tumults at Rome, excited by the mutual hostility of

former was often used for the latter.

Among the Jews who had been banished from Rome by Claudius and had settled for a time at Corinth, were two natives of Pontus, whose names were Aquila and Priscilla.<sup>276</sup> We have seen before (Chapter 8) that Pontus denoted a province of Asia Minor on the shores of the Euxine, and we have noticed some political facts which tended to bring this province into relations with Judea. Though, indeed, it is hardly necessary to allude to this: for there were Jewish colonies over every part of Asia Minor, and we are expressly told that Jews from Pontus heard St. Peter's first sermon (Acts 2:9) and read his first Epistle.<sup>277</sup> Aquila and Priscilla were, perhaps, of that number. Their names have a Roman form;<sup>278</sup> and we may conjecture that they were brought into some connection with a Roman family, similar to that which we have supposed to have existed in the case of St. Paul himself. We find they were on the present occasion forced to leave Rome; and we notice that they are afterwards addressed (Rom. 16:3) as residing there again; so that it is reasonable to suppose that the metropolis was their stated residence. Yet we observe that they frequently traveled; and we trace them on the Asiatic coast on two distinct occasions, separated by a wide interval of time. First, before their return to Italy (Acts 18:18, 26; 1 Cor. 16:19), and again,

---

Jews and Christians, imply that Christianity must already have made considerable progress there.

<sup>276</sup> Acts 18:2

<sup>277</sup> 1 Peter 1:1

<sup>278</sup> From the mention of Priscilla as St. Paul's 'fellow-labourer,' and as one of the instructors of Apollos, we might naturally infer that she was a woman of good education. Her name appears in 2 Tim. 4:19 (also, according to the best MSS., in Rom. 16:3), under the form 'Prisca.' So, in Latin authors, 'Livia' and 'Livilla,' 'Drusa' and 'Drusilla,' are used of the same person. Prisca is well known as a Roman name. It is well worthy of notice that in both cases St. Paul mentions the name of Priscilla before that of Aquila. This conveys the impression that she was the more energetic character of the two.

shortly before the martyrdom of St. Paul (2 Tim. 4:19), we find them at Ephesus. From the manner in which they are referred to as having Christian meetings in their houses, both at Ephesus and Rome, we should be inclined to conclude that they were possessed of some considerable wealth. The trade at which they labored, or which at least they superintended, was the manufacture of tents,<sup>279</sup> the demand for which must have been continual in that age of traveling, while the *cilicium*, or hair cloth, of which they were made, could easily be procured at every large town in the Levant.

A question has been raised as to whether Aquila and Priscilla were already Christians, when they met with St. Paul. Though it is certainly possible that they may have been converted at Rome, we think, on the whole, that this was probably not the case. They are simply classed with the other Jews who were expelled by Claudius ; and we are told that the reason why St. Paul came and attached himself to them (Acts 18:2) was not because they had a common religion, but because they had a common trade. There is no doubt, however, that the connection soon resulted in their conversion to Christianity.<sup>280</sup> The trade which St. Paul's father had taught him in his youth was thus the means of procuring him invaluable associates in the noblest work in which man was ever engaged. No higher example can be found of the possibility of combining diligent labor in the common things of life with the utmost spirituality of mind. Those who might have visited Aquila at Corinth in the working hours, would have found St. Paul quietly

<sup>279</sup> Many meanings have been given by the commentators to the word – weavers of tapestry, saddlers, mathematical instrument makers, rope makers. But nothing is so probable as that they were simply makers of those hair-cloth tents, which are still in constant use in the Levant [19<sup>th</sup> Century. wd]. That they were manufacturers of the cloth itself is less likely.

<sup>280</sup> They were Christians, and able to instruct others, when Paul left them at Ephesus on his voyage from Corinth to Syria.

occupied with the same task as his fellow laborers. Though he knew the Gospel to be a matter of life and death to the soul, he gave himself to an ordinary trade with as much zeal as though he had no other occupation. It is the duty of every man to maintain an honorable independence; and this, he felt, was peculiarly incumbent on him, for the sake of the Gospel he came to proclaim.

He knew the obloquy to which he was likely to be exposed, and he prudently prepared for it. The highest motives instigated his diligence in the commonest manual toil. And this toil. was no hindrance to that communion with God, which was his greatest joy, and the source of all his peace. While he” labored, working with his own hands,” among the Corinthians, as he afterwards reminded them, in his heart he was praying continually, with thanksgiving, on behalf of the Thessalonians, as he says to them himself (1 Thess. 1:2; 2:13; 2 Thess. 1:11) in the letters which he dictated in the intervals of his labor.

This was the first scene of St. Paul's life at Corinth. For the second scene we must turn to the synagogue. The Sabbath was a day of rest. On that day the Jews laid aside their tent making and their other trades, and, amid the derision of their Gentile neighbors, assembled in the house of prayer to worship the God of their ancestors. There St. Paul spoke to them of the” mercy promised to their forefathers,” and of the” oath sworn to Abraham,” being” performed.” There his countrymen listened with incredulity or conviction; and the tent maker of Tarsus” reasoned” with them and” endeavored to persuade both the Jews and the Gentiles who were present, to believe in Jesus Christ as the promised Messiah and the Savior of the World.

While these two employments were proceeding, the daily labor in the workshop, and the weekly discussions in the synagogue,

Timothy and Silas returned from Macedonia. <sup>281</sup>  
The effect produced by their arrival seems to have been an instantaneous increase of the zeal and energy with which St. Paul resisted the opposition, which was even now beginning to hem in the progress of the truth. <sup>282</sup>

<sup>281</sup> Acts 18:5. We may remark here that Silas and Timothy were probably the "brethren" who brought the collection mentioned, 2 Cor. 11:9, cf. Phil. 4:15.

<sup>282</sup> There are some difficulties and differences of opinion, with regard to the movements of Silas and Timothy, between the time when St. Paul left them in Macedonia and their rejoining him in Achaia.

The facts which are distinctly stated are as follows.

(1.) Silas and Timothy were left at Berea (Acts 17:14) when St. Paul went to Athens. We are not told why they were left there, or what commissions they received; but the Apostle sent a message from Athens (Acts 17:15) that they should follow him with all speed, and (Acts 17:16) he waited for them there.

(2.) The Apostle was rejoined by them when at Corinth (Acts 18:5). We are not informed how they had been employed in the interval, but they came from Macedonia. It is not distinctly said that they came together, but the impression at first sight is that they did.

(3.) St. Paul informs us (1 Thess. 3:1), that he was 'left in Athens alone,' and that this solitude was in consequence of Timothy having been sent to Thessalonica (1 Thess. 3:2). Though it is not expressly stated that Timothy was sent from Athens, the first impression is that he was.

Thus there is a seeming discrepancy between the Acts and Epistles; a journey of Timothy to Athens, previous to his arrival with Silas at Corinth, appearing to be mentioned by St. Paul, and to be quite unnoticed by St. Luke.

Paley, in the *Horae Paulinae*, says that the Epistle 'virtually asserts that Timothy came to the Apostle at Athens,' and assumes that it is 'necessary' to suppose this, in order to reconcile the history with the Epistle. And he points out three intimations in the history, which make the arrival, though not expressly mentioned, extremely probable: first, the message that they should come with all speed; secondly, the fact of his waiting for them; thirdly, the absence of any appearance of haste in his departure from Athens to Corinth. 'Paul had ordered Timothy to follow him

without delay: he waited at Athens on purpose that Timothy might come up with him, and he stayed there as long as his own choice led him to continue.'

This explanation is satisfactory. But two others might be suggested, which would equally remove the difficulty. It is not expressly said that Timothy was sent from Athens to Thessalonica. St. Paul was anxious, as we have seen, to revisit the Thessalonians; but since he was hindered from doing so, it is highly probable that he may have sent Timothy to them from Berea. Silas might be sent on some similar commission, and this would explain why the two companions were left behind in Macedonia. This would necessarily cause St. Paul to be 'left alone in Athens.'

Such solitude was doubtless painful to him; but the spiritual good of the new converts was at stake. The two companions, after finishing the work entrusted to them, finally rejoined the Apostle at Corinth. [We should observe that the phrase is "from Macedonia," not "from Berea." That he 'waited for them' at Athens need cause us no difficulty, for in those days the arrival of travellers could not confidently be known beforehand. When he left Athens and proceeded to Corinth, he knew that Silas and Timothy could easily ascertain his movements, and follow his steps, by help of information obtained at the synagogue.

But, again, we may reasonably suppose, that in the course of St. Paul's stay at Corinth, he may have paid a second visit to Athens, after the first arrival of Timothy and Silas from Macedonia; and that during some such visit he may have sent Timothy to Thessalonica. This view may be taken without our supposing that the First Epistle to the Thessalonians was written at Athens. Schrader and others imagine a visit to that city at a later period of his life; but this view cannot be admitted without deranging the arguments for the date of 1 Thess., which was evidently written soon after leaving Macedonia.

Two further remarks may be added:

(1.) If Timothy did rejoin St. Paul at Athens, we need not infer that Silas was not with him, from the fact that the name of Silas is not mentioned. It is usually taken for granted that the second arrival of Timothy (1 Thess. 3:6) is identical with the coming of Silas and Timothy to Corinth (Acts 18:5); but here we see that only Timothy is mentioned, doubtless because he was most recently and familiarly known at Thessalonica, and perhaps, also, because the mission of Silas was to some other place.

The remarkable word which is used to describe the "pleasure" which he experienced at this moment in the course of his teaching at Corinth, is the same which is employed of our Lord Himself in a solemn passage of the Gospels, (Luke 12:50) when He says, "I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished." He who felt our human difficulties has given us human help to aid us in what He requires us to do. When St. Paul's companions rejoined him, he was reinforced with new earnestness and vigor in combating the difficulties which met him. He acknowledges himself that he was at Corinth "in weakness, and in fear and much trembling (1 Cor. 2:3) but" God, who comforteth those that are cast down, comforted him by the arrival " (2 Cor. 7:6) of his friends. It was only one among many instances we shall be called to notice, in which, at a time of weakness," he saw the brethren and took courage." (Acts 28:15)

But this was not the only result of the arrival of St. Paul's companions. Timothy had been sent, while St. Paul was still at Athens, to revisit and establish the Church of Thessalonica. The news he brought on his return to St. Paul caused the latter to write to these beloved converts; and, as we have already observed, the letter which he sent them is the first of his Epistles which has been preserved to us. It seems to have been occasioned partly by his wish to express his earnest affection for the Thessalonian

---

(2.) On the other hand, it is not necessary to assume, because Silas and Timothy are mentioned together that they came together. All conditions are satisfied if they came about the same time. If they were sent on missions to two different places, the times of their return would not necessarily coincide. [Something may be implied in the form of the Greek phrase, 'Silas as well as Timothy.')

In considering all these journeys, it is very needful to take into account that they would be modified by the settled or unsettled state of the country with regard to banditti, and by the various opportunities of travelling, which depend on the season and the weather, and the sailing of vessels. Hindrances connected with some such considerations may be referred to in Phil. 4:10.

Christians, and to encourage them under their persecutions; but it was also called for by some errors into which they had fallen. Many of the new converts were uneasy about the state of their relatives or friends, who had died since their conversion. They feared that these departed Christians would lose the happiness of witnessing their Lord's second coming, which they expected soon to behold. In this expectation others had given themselves up to a religious excitement, under the influence of which they persuaded themselves that they need not continue to work at the business of their callings, but might claim support from the richer members of the Church. Others, again, had yielded to the same temptations which afterwards influenced the Corinthian Church, and despised the gift of prophesying (1 Thess. 5:20) in comparison with those other gifts which afforded more opportunity for display. These reasons, and others which will appear in the letter itself, led St. Paul to write to the Thessalonians as follows:

**First Epistle to the Thessalonians.** <sup>283</sup>**I Thess. 1**

**Salutation. PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timothy,  
TO THE CHURCH OF THE  
THESSALONIANS, in God our Father, and  
our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Grace be to you and peace.**

**I give <sup>284</sup> continual thanks to God for you all,  
and make mention of you in my prayers without**

---

<sup>283</sup> The correctness of the date here assigned to this Epistle may be proved as follows : (1.) It was written not long after the conversion of the Thessalonians (1 Thess. 1: 8, 9), while the tidings of it were still spreading (the verb is in the present tense) through Macedonia and Achaia, and while St. Paul could speak of himself as only taken from them for a short season (1 Thess. 2:17); (2.) St. Paul had been recently at Athens (3:1), and had already preached in Achaia (1:7,8); (3.) Timothy and Silas were just returned (3:6) from Macedonia, which happened (Acts 18:5). soon after St. Paul's first arrival at Corinth. We have observed that the character of these Epistles to the Thessalonians proves how predominant was the Gentile element in that church, and that they are among the very few letters of St. Paul in which not a single quotation from the Old Testament is to be found. The use, however, of the word 'Satan' (1 Thess. 2:18, and 2 Thess. 2:9) might be adduced as implying some previous knowledge of Judaism in those to whom the letter was addressed. See also the note on 2 Thess. ii.8.

<sup>284</sup> It is important to observe in this place, once for all, that St. Paul uses 'we,' according to the idiom of many ancient writers, where a modern writer would use 'I,' Great confusion is caused in many passages by not translating, according to his true meaning, in the first person singular; for thus it often happens, that what he spoke of himself individually, appears to us as if it were meant for a general truth. Instances will occur repeatedly of this in the Epistles to the Corinthians, especially the Second. It might have been supposed, that when St. Paul associated others with himself in the salutation at the beginning of an Epistle, he meant to indicate that the Epistle proceeded from them as well as from himself; but an examination of the body of the Epistle will always convince us that such was not the case, but that he was the sole author. For example, in the present Epistle, Silvanus and Timothy are

ceasing; remembering, in the presence of our God and Father, the working of your faith, and the labors of your love, and the steadfastness of your hope of our Lord Jesus Christ. <sup>285</sup>

**Brethren, beloved by God, I know how God has chosen you; for my Glad tidings came to you, not only in word, but also in power; with the might of the Holy Spirit, and with the full assurance of belief. As you, likewise, know the manner in which I behaved myself among you, for your sakes.**

**Moreover, you followed in my steps, and in the steps of the Lord; and you received the word in great tribulation, with joy which came from the Holy Spirit.**

**And thus you have become patterns to all the believers in Macedonia and in Achaia. For from you the word of the Lord has been sounded forth, and not only has its sound been heard in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place the tidings of your faith towards God have been spread abroad, so that I have no need to speak of it at all. For others are telling of their own accord, concerning me, what welcome you gave me, and how you forsook your idols, and turned to serve God, the living and the true; and to**

---

joined with him in the salutation; but yet we find (ch. 3:1,2)-' we thought it good to be left in Athens alone. and sent Timothy our brother.' Now, who was it who thought fit to be left at Athens alone? Plainly St. Paul himself, and he only; neither Timothy (who is here expressly excluded) nor Silvanus (who probably did not rejoin St. Paul till afterwards at Corinth, Acts 18:5) being included. Chapter 3:6 is not less decisive- 'but now that Timothy is just come to us from you' when we remember that Silvanus came with Timothy. Several other passages in the Epistle prove the same thing, but these may suffice.

It is true, that sometimes the ancient idiom in which a writer spoke of himself in the plural is more graceful, and seems less egotistical, than the modern usage; yet (the modern usage being what it is) a literal translation very often conveys a confused idea of the meaning; and it appears better, therefore, to translate according to the modern idiom.

<sup>285</sup> St. Paul is referring to the time when he first visited and converted the Thessalonians, the "hope" spoken of was the hope of our Lord's coming.

wait for His Son from the heavens, whom He raised from the dead, even Jesus our deliverer from the coming wrath.

### I Thess 2

For, YOU know yourselves, brethren, that my coming amongst you was not fruitless; but after I had borne suffering and outrage (as you know) at Philippi, I trusted in my God, and boldly declared to you God's Glad tidings, in the midst of great contention. For my exhortations are not prompted by imposture, nor by lasciviousness, nor do I speak in guile.<sup>286</sup>

But as God has proved my fitness for the charge of the Glad tidings, so I speak, not seeking to please men but God, who proves our hearts. For never did I use flattering words, as you know; nor hide covetousness under fair pretences (God is witness); nor did I seek honour from men, either from you or others; although I might have been burdensome, as Christ's apostle.<sup>287</sup> But I behaved myself among you with gentleness; and as a nurse cherishes her own children, so in my fond affection it was my joy to give you not only the Glad tidings of God, but my own life also, because you were dear to me. For you remember, brethren, my toilsome labors; how I worked both night and day, that I might not be burdensome to any of you,

<sup>286</sup> In this and the following verses we have allusions to the accusations brought against St. Paul by his Jewish opponents. He would of course have been accused of imposture, as the preacher of a miraculous revelation; the charge of impurity might also have been suggested to impure minds, as connected with the conversion of female proselytes; the charge of seeking to please men, was repeated by the Judaisers in Galatia (cf. Gal. 1:10).

<sup>287</sup> One of the grounds upon which St. Paul's Judaizing opponents denied his apostolic authority, was the fact that he (in general) refused to be maintained by his converts, whereas, our Lord had given to His apostles the right of being so maintained. St. Paul fully explains his reasons for not availing himself of that right in several passages, especially 1 Cor. 9; and he here takes care to allude to his possession of the right, while mentioning his renunciation of it. Cf. 2 Thess. 3:9.

while I proclaimed to you the message which I bore, the Glad tidings of God. Ye are yourselves witnesses, and God also is witness, how holy, and just, and unblameable, were my dealings towards you that believe. You know how earnestly, as a father his own children, I exhorted, and entreated, and adjured each one among you to walk worthy of God, by whom you are called into His own kingdom and glory.

Wherefore I also give continual thanks to God, because, when you heard from me the spoken word of God, you received it not as the word of man, but, as it is in truth, the word of God; who Himself works effectually in you that believe. For you, brethren, followed in the steps of the churches of God in Judea, which are in Christ Jesus, inasmuch as you suffered the like persecution from your own countrymen, which they endured from the Jews; who killed both the Lord Jesus, and the prophets, and who have driven me forth [from city to city]<sup>288</sup>; a people displeasing to God, and enemies to all mankind, who would hinder me from speaking to the Gentiles for their salvation: continuing always to fill up the measure of their sins; but the wrath [of God] has overtaken them to destroy them.

But I, brethren, having been torn from you for a short season (in presence, not in heart), sought very earnestly, to behold you [again] face to face. Wherefore I, Paul (for my own part), desired to visit you once and again; but Satan hindered me. For what is my hope or joy? what is the crown wherein I glory? what but your own selves, in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His appearing. Yea, you are my glory and my joy.

### I Thess 3

Therefore, when I was no longer able to forbear, I determined willingly to be left at Athens alone; and I sent Timothy, my brother, and God's fellow worker in the Glad tidings of Christ, that he might strengthen your constancy, and exhort you concerning

<sup>288</sup> Referring to his recent expulsion from Thessalonica and Berea.

your faith, that none of you should waver in these afflictions; since you know yourselves that such is our appointed lot, for when I was with you, I forewarned you that affliction awaited us, as you know that it befell. For this cause, I also, when I could no longer forbear, sent to learn tidings of your faith; fearing lest perchance the tempter had tempted you, and lest my labor should be in vain. But now that Timothy has returned from you to me, and has brought me the glad tidings of your faith and love, and that you still keep an affectionate remembrance of me, longing to see me, as I to see you I have been comforted, brethren, on your behalf, and all my own tribulation and distress has been lightened by your faith. For now I live, if you be steadfast in the Lord. What thanksgiving can I render to God for you, for all the joy which you cause me in the presence of my God? Night and day, I pray exceeding earnestly to see you face to face, and to complete what is yet wanting in your faith. Now, may our God and Father Himself, and our Lord Jesus,<sup>289</sup> direct my path towards you. Meantime, may the Lord cause you to increase and abound in love to one another and to all men; even as I to you. And so may He keep your hearts steadfast and unblameable in holiness, in the presence of our God and Father, at the appearing of our Lord Jesus, with all his saints.

#### I Thess 4

Furthermore, brethren, I beseech and exhort you in the name of the Lord Jesus, that, as I taught you how to walk that you might please God, you would do so more and more. For you know what commands I delivered to you by the authority of the Lord Jesus. This, then, is the will of God, even your sanctification; that you should keep yourselves from fornication, that each of you should learn to master his body,<sup>290</sup> in

<sup>289</sup> The word for "Christ" is omitted by the best manuscripts, both here and in verse 15.

<sup>290</sup> The original means, to gain possession of; to acquire for one's own use. The use of 'vessel' for body is common, and found 2 Cor. 4:7. Now a man may be said to gain possession of his own body when he

sanctification and honour; not in lustful passions, like the Heathen who know not God; that no man wrong his brother in this matter by transgression. All such the Lord will punish, as I forewarned you by my testimony. For God called us not to uncleanness, but His calling is a holy calling. Wherefore, he that despises these my words, despises not man but God, who also has given unto me His Holy Spirit.

Concerning brotherly love it is needless that I should write to you; for ye yourselves are taught by God to love one another; as you show by deeds towards all the brethren through the whole of Macedonia. But I exhort you, brethren, to abound still more; and be it your ambition to live quietly, and to mind your own concerns; and to work with your own hands (as I commanded you); that the seemly order of your lives may be manifest to those without, and that you may need help from no man.

But I would not have you ignorant, brethren, concerning those who are asleep, that you sorrow not like other men who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, so also will God, through Jesus,<sup>291</sup> bring back those who sleep, together with Him. This I declare to you, in the word of the Lord, that we who are living, who survive to the appearing of the Lord, shall not come before those who sleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with the shout of war, the Archangel's voice, and the trumpet of God; and first the dead in Christ shall rise; then we the living, who remain, shall be caught up with them among the clouds to meet the Lord in the air; and so we shall be for ever with the Lord. Wherefore comfort<sup>292</sup> one another with these words.

---

subdues those lusts which tend to destroy his mastery over it. Hence the interpretation which we have adopted.

<sup>291</sup> This connection is more natural than that of the Authorized Version.

<sup>292</sup> This verb, originally "to call to one's side," thence "to comfort," more usually "to exhort," must be translated according to the context.

## I Thess 5

But of the times and seasons, brethren, you need not that I should write to you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord will come as a robber in the night; and while men say Peace and Safety, destruction shall come upon them in a moment, as the pangs of travail upon a woman with child; and they shall find no escape. But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that The Day should come upon you as the robber on sleeping men;<sup>293</sup> for you are all the children of the light and of the day. We are not of the night, nor of darkness; therefore let us not sleep as do others, but let us watch and be sober; for they who slumber, slumber in the night; and they who are drunken, are drunken in the night; but let us, who are of the day, be sober; putting on faith and love for a breastplate; and for a helmet, the hope of salvation. For not to abide His wrath, but to obtain salvation, hath God ordained us, through our Lord Jesus Christ, who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep we should live together with Him. Wherefore exhort one another, and build one another up, 1 even as you already do.<sup>294</sup>

I beseech you, brethren, to acknowledge those who are laboring among you; who preside over you in the Lord's name, and give you admonition. I beseech you to esteem them very highly in love, for their

<sup>293</sup> There is some authority for the accusative plural – “as the daylight surprises robbers;” and this sort of transition, where a word suggests a rapid change from one metaphor to another, is not unlike the style of St. Paul. We may add that the AV, in translating the word “thief”, both here and elsewhere, gives an inadequate conception of the word. It is in fact the modern Greek which denotes a “bandit”, who comes to murder as well as to steal.

<sup>294</sup> The full meaning is, “build one another up, that you may all together grow into a temple of God.” The word is frequently used by St. Paul in this sense, which is fully explained in 1 Cor. 3:10-17. It is very difficult to express the meaning by any single word in English, and yet it would weaken the expression too much if it were diluted into a periphrasis fully expressing its meaning.

work's sake. And maintain peace among yourselves.

POSTSCRIPT [ADDRESSED TO THE PRESBYTERS (?)].<sup>295</sup>

But you, brethren, I exhort; admonish the disorderly, encourage the timid, support the weak, be patient with all. Take heed that none of you return evil for evil, but strive to do good always, both to one another and to all men. Rejoice evermore; pray without ceasing; continue to give thanks whatever be your lot; for this is the will of God, in Christ Jesus concerning you. Quench not [the manifestation of] the Spirit; think not meanly of prophesyings;<sup>296</sup> try all [which the prophets utter]; reject the false, but keep the good; hold yourselves aloof from every form of evil.<sup>297</sup>

2a Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you wholly; and may your spirit and soul and body together be preserved blameless, at the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. Faithful is He who calls you; He will fulfill my prayer.

Brethren, pray for me. Greet all the brethren with the kiss of holiness. I adjure you, in the name of the Lord, to see that this letter be read to all the brethren.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

=====

<sup>295</sup> It appears probably, as Chrysostom thought, that those who are here directed “to admonish” are the same who are described immediately before (verse 12) as “giving admonition.” Also they are very solemnly directed (verse 27) to see that the letter is read to all the Christians in Thessalonica; which seems to imply that they presided over the Christian assemblies. At the same time it must be admitted that many of the duties here enjoined are duties of all Christians.

<sup>296</sup> We know, from 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians, that this warning was not unneeded in the early church. (see 1 Cor. 14). The gift of prophesying (i.e., inspired preaching) had less the appearance of a supernatural gift than several of the other charismas; and hence it was thought little of by those who sought more for display than edification.

<sup>297</sup> Not “appearance,” but *species* under a *genus*.

The strong expressions used in this letter concerning the malevolence of the Jews, lead us to suppose that the Apostle was thinking not only of their past opposition at Thessalonica, but of the difficulties with which they were beginning to surround him at Corinth. At the very time of his writing, that same people who had "killed the Lord Jesus and their own prophets," and had already driven Paul "from city to city," were showing themselves "a people displeasing to God, and enemies to all mankind," by endeavoring to hinder him from speaking to the Gentiles for their salvation (1 Thess. 2:15, 16). Such expressions would naturally be used in a letter written under the circumstances described in the Acts (18:6), when the Jews were assuming the attitude of an organized and systematic resistance, and assailing the Apostle in the language of blasphemy, (cf. Matt. 12:24 31) like those who had accused our Savior of casting out devils by Beelzebub.

Now, therefore, the Apostle left the Jews, and turned to the Gentiles. He withdrew from his own people with one of those symbolical actions, which, in the East, have all the expressiveness of language, and which, having received the sanction of our Lord Himself (Mark 6:2), are equivalent to the denunciation of woe. He shook the dust off his garments, (Acts 18:6) and proclaimed himself innocent of the blood of those who refused to listen to the voice which offered them salvation. A proselyte, whose name was Justus,<sup>298</sup> opened his door to the rejected Apostle; and that house became thenceforward the place of public teaching. While he continued doubtless to lodge with Aquila and Priscilla (for the Lord had said (Luke 10:6,7) that His Apostle should abide in the house where the "Son of peace" was), he met his flock in the house of Justus. Some place convenient for general meeting was evidently necessary for the continuance of St. Paul's work in the cities where he resided. So long as possible, it was the synagogue. When he was

exiled from the Jewish place of worship, or unable from other causes to attend it, it was such a place as providential circumstances might suggest. At Rome it was his own hired lodging (Acts 28:30); at Ephesus it was the School of Tyrannus (Acts 19:9). Here at Corinth it was a house "contiguous to the synagogue," offered on the emergency for the Apostle's use by one who had listened and believed. It may readily be supposed that no convenient place could be found in the manufactory of Aquila and Priscilla. There, too, in the society of Jews lately exiled from Rome, he could hardly have looked for a congregation of Gentiles; whereas Justus, being a proselyte, was exactly in a position to receive under his roof indiscriminately, both Hebrews and Greeks.

Special mention is made of the fact, that the house of Justus was "contiguous to the synagogue." We are not necessarily to infer from this that St. Paul had any deliberate motive for choosing that locality. Though it might be that he would show the Jews, as in a visible symbol, that "by their sin salvation had come to the Gentiles, to provoke them to jealousy," (Rom. 11:11) while at the same time he remained as near to them as possible, to assure them of his readiness to return at the moment of their repentance. Whatever we may surmise concerning the motive of this choice, certain consequences must have followed from the contiguity of the house and the synagogue, and some incident resulting from it may have suggested the mention of the fact. The Jewish and Christian congregations would often meet face to face in the street; and all the success of the Gospel would become more palpable and conspicuous. And even if we leave out of view such considerations as these, there is a certain interest attaching to any phrase which tends to localize the scene of Apostolic labors. When we think of events that we have witnessed, we always reproduce in the mind, however dimly, some image of the place where the events have occurred. This condition of human thought is common to us and to the Apostles. The house of John's mother at Jerusalem (Acts 12.), the

<sup>298</sup> Nothing is known of Justus; his name is Latin.

*proseucha* by the water side at Philippi (Acts 16.), were associated with many recollections in the minds of the earliest Christians. And when St. Paul thought, even many years afterwards, of what occurred on his first visit to Corinth, the images before the "inward eye" would be not merely the general aspect of the houses and temples of Corinth, with the great citadel overtopping them, but the synagogue and the house of Justus, the incidents which happened in their neighborhood, and the gestures and faces of those who encountered each other in the street.

If an interest is attached to the places, a still deeper interest is attached to the persons, referred to in the history of the planting of the Church. In the case of Corinth, the names both of individuals and families are mentioned in abundance. The family of Stephanas is the first that occurs to us; for they seem to have been the earliest Corinthian converts. St. Paul himself speaks of that household, in the first Epistle to the Corinthians (16:15), as "the first fruits of Achaia. Another Christian of Corinth, well worthy of the recollection of the Church of after ages, was Caius (1 Cor. 1:14), with whom St. Paul found a home on his next visit (Rom. 16:23), as he found one now with Aquila and Priscilla. We may conjecture, with reason, that his present host and hostess had now given their formal adherence to St. Paul, and that they left the synagogue with him. After the open schism had taken place, we find the Church rapidly increasing. Many of the Corinthians began to believe, when they heard, and came to receive baptism. (Acts 18:8.) We derive some information from St. Paul's own writings concerning the character of those who became believers. Not many of the philosophers, not many of the noble and powerful (1 Cor. 1:26) but many of those who had been profligate and degraded (1 Cor. 6:11) were called. The ignorant of this world were chosen to confound the wise; and the weak to confound the strong. From St. Paul's language we infer that the Gentile converts were more numerous than the Jewish. Yet one signal victory of the Gospel over

Judaism must be mentioned here, the conversion of Crispus (Acts 18:8), who, from his position as "ruler of the synagogue," may be presumed to have been a man of learning and high character, and, who now, with all his family, joined himself to the new community. His conversion was felt to be so important, that the Apostle deviated from his usual practice (1 Cor. 1:14 16), and baptized him, as well as Caius and the household of Stephanas, with his own hand.

Such an event as the baptism of Crispus must have had a great effect in exasperating the Jews against St. Paul. Their opposition grew with his success. As we approach the time when the second letter to the Thessalonians was written, we find the difficulties of his position increasing. In the first Epistle the writer's mind is almost entirely occupied with the thought of what might be happening at Thessalonica: in the second, the remembrance of his own pressing trial seems to mingle more conspicuously with the exhortations and warnings addressed to those who are absent. He particularly asks for the prayers of the Thessalonians, that he may be delivered from the perverse and wicked men around him, who were destitute of faith (see notes on 2 Thess. 3:2). It is evident that he was in a condition of fear and anxiety. This is further manifest from the words which were heard by him in a vision vouchsafed at this critical period (Acts 18:9,10). We have already had occasion to observe, that such timely visitations were granted to the Apostle, when he was most in need of supernatural aid. In the present instance, the Lord, who spoke to him in the night, gave him an assurance of His presence, <sup>299</sup> and a promise of safety, along with a prophecy of good success at Corinth, and a command to speak boldly without fear, and not to keep silence. From this we may infer that his faith in Christ's presence was failing, that fear was beginning to produce hesitation, and that the work of extending the Gospel was in danger of being

<sup>299</sup> Compare Matt. 28:20.

arrested.<sup>300</sup> The servant of God received conscious strength in the moment of trial and conflict; and the divine words were fulfilled in the formation of a large and flourishing church at Corinth, and in a safe and continued residence in that city, through the space of a year and six months.

Not many months of this period had elapsed when St. Paul found it necessary to write again to the Thessalonians. The excitement which he had endeavored to allay by his first Epistle was not arrested, and the fanatical portion of the church had availed themselves of the impression produced by St. Paul's personal teaching to increase it. It will be remembered that a subject on which he had especially dwelt while he was at Thessalonica,<sup>301</sup> and to which he had also alluded in his first Epistle (1 Thess. 5:1 11), was the second advent of Our Lord. We know that our Savior Himself had warned His disciples that "of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but the Father only;" and we find these words remarkably fulfilled by the fact that the early Church, and even the Apostles themselves, expected their Lord to come again in that very generation. St. Paul himself shared in that expectation, but being under the guidance of the Spirit of Truth, he did not deduce there from any erroneous practical conclusions. Some of his disciples, on the other hand, inferred that, if indeed the present world were so soon to come to an end, it was useless to pursue their common earthly employments any longer. They forsook their work, and gave themselves up to dreamy expectations of the future; so that the whole framework of society in the Thessalonian Church was in danger of dissolution. Those who encouraged this delusion, supported it by imaginary revelations of the Spirit (2 Thess. 2:2): and they even had recourse to forgery, and

<sup>300</sup> Observe the strong expressions which St. Paul himself uses (1 Cor. 2:3) of his own state of mind during this stay at Corinth.

<sup>301</sup> As he himself reminds his readers (2 Thess. 2:5), and as we find in Acts 17:7.

circulated a letter purporting to be written by St. Paul, in confirmation of their views. To check this evil, St. Paul wrote his second Epistle. In this he endeavors to remove their present erroneous expectations of Christ's immediate coming, by reminding them of certain signs which must precede the second advent. He had already told them of these signs when he was with them; and this explains the extreme obscurity of his description of them in the present Epistle; for he was not giving new information, but alluding to facts which he had already explained to them at an earlier period. It would have been well if this had been remembered by all those who have extracted such numerous and discordant prophecies and anathemas from certain passages in the following Epistle.

## Second Epistle to the Thessalonians.<sup>302</sup>

### 2 Thess 1

**PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timothy, TO THE CHURCH OF THE THESSALONIANS, in God our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**I am bound to give thanks to God continually on your behalf, brethren, as is fitting, because of the abundant increase of your faith, and the overflowing love wherewith you are filled, and every one of you, towards each other. So that I myself boast of you among the churches of God, for your**

<sup>302</sup> It is evident that this Epistle was written at the time here assigned to it, soon after the first, from the following considerations:

(1) The state of the Thessalonian Church described in both Epistles is almost exactly the same. (a) The same excitement prevailed concerning the expected advent of Our Lord, only in a greater degree; (b) The same party continued fanatically to neglect their ordinary employments. Compare 2 Thess. 3:6-14 with 1 Thess. 4:10-12, and 1 Thess. 2:9.

(2) Silas and Timothy were still with St. Paul. 2 Thess. 2:1. It should be observed that Timothy was next with St. Paul at Ephesus; and that, before then, Silas disappears from the history.

steadfastness and faith, in all the persecutions and afflictions which you are bearing. And these things are a token that the righteous judgment of God will count you worthy of His kingdom, for which you are even now suffering. For doubtless God's righteousness cannot but render back trouble to those who trouble you, and give to you, who now are troubled, rest with me, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with the angels of His might, in flames of fire, taking vengeance on those who know not God, and will not hearken to the Glad tidings of our Lord Jesus Christ. And from <sup>303</sup> the presence of the Lord, and from the brightness of His glorious majesty, they shall receive their righteous doom, even an everlasting destruction; in that day, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and to be admired in all believers; [and you are of that number], for you believed my testimony. To this end I pray continually on your behalf, that our God may count you worthy of the calling wherewith He has called you, and mightily perfect within you all the content of goodness <sup>304</sup> and the work of faith. That the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you, and that you may be glorified <sup>305</sup> in Him, according to the grace of our God, and of our Lord Jesus Christ.

## 1 Thess 2

But concerning the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together to meet Him, I beseech you, brethren, not rashly to be shaken from your soberness of mind, nor

<sup>303</sup> The preposition here has the sense of *proceeding from*.

<sup>304</sup> The same word is used in the sense of *good will, good pleasure, satisfaction*, in Luke 2:14 and Rom. 10:1. The AV here would require a word to be supplied.

<sup>305</sup> The glory of our Lord at His coming will be manifested in His people (see v. 10); that is, they, by virtue of their union with Him, will partake of His glorious likeness. (Cf. Rom. 8:17-19) And, even in this world, this glorification takes place partially, by their moral conformity to His image. See Rom. 8:30 and 2 Cor. 3:18.

to be agitated either by spirit <sup>306</sup>, or by rumor, or by letter attributed to me, saying that the day of the Lord is come. Let no one deceive you, by any means; for before that day, the falling away must first have come, and the man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; who opposes himself and exalts himself against all that is called God, and against all worship; even to seat himself in the temple of God, and openly declare himself a God. Do you not remember that when I was still with you, I often told you this? And now you know the hindrance why he is not yet revealed, in his own season. For the mystery of lawlessness <sup>307</sup> is already working, only he, who now hinders, will hinder till he be taken out of the way; and then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the breath of His mouth, <sup>308</sup> and shall destroy with the brightness of His appearing. But the appearing of that lawless one shall be in the strength of Satan's working, with all the might and signs and wonders of falsehood, and all the delusions of unrighteousness, for those who are in the way of perdition; because they received not the love of the truth, whereby they might be saved. For this cause, God will send upon them an inward working of delusion, making them believe in lies, that all should be condemned who have not believed the truth, but have taken pleasure in unrighteousness.

But for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, I am bound to thank God continually, because He chose you from the first unto salvation, in

<sup>306</sup> I.e., any pretended revelation of those who claimed inspiration.

<sup>307</sup> The proper meaning of the Greek here is *one unrestrained by law*; hence it is often used as *a transgressor*, or, generally *a wicked man*; but in this passage it seems best to keep to the original meaning of the word.

<sup>308</sup> This appears to be an allusion to (although not an exact quotation of) Isaiah 11:4, "With the breath of His lips He shall destroy the impious man." Some of the Rabbinical commentators applied this prophecy (which was probably in St. Paul's thoughts) to the Messiah's coming, and interpreted "the impious" to mean an individual opponent of the Messiah.

sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth. And to this He called you through my Glad tidings, that you might obtain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, brethren, be steadfast, and hold fast the teaching which has been delivered to you, whether by my words or by my letters. And may our Lord Jesus Christ Himself, and our God and Father, who has loved us, and has given us in His grace a consolation that is eternal, and a hope that cannot fail, comfort your hearts, and establish you in all goodness both of word and deed.

## 2 Thess 3

Finally, brethren, pray for me, that the word of the Lord Jesus may hold its onward course, and that its glory may be shown forth towards others as towards you; and that I may be delivered from the perverse and wicked; for not all men have faith. But the Lord is faithful, and He will keep you steadfast, and guard you from evil. And I rely upon you in the Lord, that you are following and will follow my precepts. And may the Lord guide your hearts to the love of God, and to the stedfastness of Christ.

I charge you, brethren, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ to withdraw yourselves from every brother who walks disorderly, and not according to the rules which I delivered. For you know yourselves the way to follow my example; you know that my life among you was not disorderly, nor was I fed by any man's bounty, but earned my bread by my own labor, toiling night and day, that I might not be burdensome to any of you, And this I did, not because I am without the right [of being maintained by those to whom I minister], but that I might make myself a pattern for you to imitate. For when I was with you I often gave you this rule: "If any man will not work, neither let him eat." Whereas I hear that some among you are walking disorderly, neglecting their own work, and meddling with that of others. Such, therefore, I charge and exhort, by the authority of our Lord Jesus Christ, to work in quietness, and eat their own bread. But you, brethren, notwithstanding, be not weary of doing good. If any man be disobedient to my written word, mark that man, and cease

from intercourse with him, that he may be brought to shame. Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother. And may the Lord of peace Himself give you peace in all ways and at all seasons. The Lord be with you all.

The salutation of me Paul with my own hand, which is my token in every letter. Thus I write.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.

=====

Such was the second of the two letters which St. Paul wrote to Thessalonica during his residence at Corinth. Such was the Christian correspondence now established, in addition to the political and commercial correspondence existing before, between the two capitals of Achaia and Macedonia. Along with the official documents which passed between the governors of the contiguous provinces <sup>309</sup>, and the communications between the merchants of the Northern and Western Aegean, letters were now sent, which related to the establishment of a "kingdom not of this world," and to "riches" beyond the discovery of human enterprise.

The influence of great cities has always been important on the wider movements of human life. We see St. Paul diligently using this influence, during a protracted residence at Corinth, for the spreading and strengthening of the Gospel in Achaia and beyond. As regards the province of Achaia, we have no reason to suppose that he confined his activity to its metropolis. The expression used by St. Luke (Acts 18:11) need only denote that it was his headquarters, or general place of residence. Communication was easy and frequent, by land or by water, with other parts of the province. Two short days' journey to the south were the Jews of Argos, who might be to those of Corinth what the Jews of Berea had been to those of Thessalonica. About the same distance to the

<sup>309</sup> Cicero's *Cilician Correspondence* furnishes many specimens of the letters which passed between the governors of neighboring provinces.

east was the city of Athens, which had been imperfectly evangelized, and could be visited without danger. Within a walk of a few hours, along a road busy with traffic, was the sea port of Cenchrea, known to us as the residence of a Christian community. (Rom 16:1) These were the "Churches of God" (2 Thess. 1:4), among whom the Apostle boasted of the patience and the faith of the Thessalonians, the homes of "the saints in all Achaia" (2 Cor. 1:1), saluted at a later period, with the Church of Corinth, in a letter written from Macedonia. These Churches had alternately the blessings of the presence and the letters, the oral and the written teaching of St. Paul. The former of these blessings is now no longer granted to us; but those long and wearisome journeys, which withdrew the teacher so often from his anxious converts, have resulted in our possession of inspired Epistles, in all their freshness and integrity, and with all their lessons of wisdom and love.

## Chapter 12

Now that we have entered upon the first part of the long series of St. Paul's letters, we seem to be arrived at a new stage of the Apostle's biography. The materials for a more intimate knowledge are before us. More life is given to the picture. We have advanced from the field of geographical description and general history to the higher interest of personal detail. Even such details as relate to the writing materials employed in the Epistles, and the mode in which these Epistles were transmitted from city to city, all stages in the history of an Apostolic letter, from the hand of the amanuensis who wrote from the author's inspired dictation, to the opening and reading of the document in the public assembly of the church to which it was addressed, have a sacred claim on the Christian's attention. For the present we must defer the examination of such particulars. We remain with the Apostle himself, instead of following the journeys of his letters to Thessalonica, and tracing the effects which the last of them produced. We have before us a protracted residence in Corinth (Acts 18:11-18),

a voyage by sea to Syria (Acts 18:18-22), and a journey by land from Antioch to Ephesus (Acts 18:23), before we come to the next group of St. Paul's Epistles.

We must linger first for a time in Corinth, the great city where he stayed a longer time than at any point on his previous journeys, and from which, or to which, the most important of his letters were written.<sup>310</sup> And, according to the plan we have hitherto observed, we proceed to elucidate its geographical position, and the principal stages of its history.

### The Isthmus and Acrocorinthus

The Isthmus is the most remarkable feature in the geography of Greece; and the peculiar relation which it established between the land and the water and between the Morea and the Continent had the utmost effect on the whole course of the History of Greece. When we were considering the topography and aspect of Athens, all the associations which surrounded us were Athenian. Here at the Isthmus, we are, as it were, at the center of the activity of the Greek race in general. It has the closest connection with all their most important movements, both military and commercial.

In all the periods of Greek history, from the earliest to the latest, we see the military importance of the Isthmus. The phrase of Pindar is, that it was "the bridge of the sea", it formed the only line of march for an invading or retreating army. Xenophon speaks of it as "the gate of the Peloponnesus," the closing of which would make all ingress and egress impossible. And we find that it was closed at various times, by being fortified and re-fortified by a wall, some traces of which remain to the present day. In the Persian war, when consternation was spread amongst the Greeks by the death of Leonidas, the wall was first built. In the Peloponnesian war, when the Greeks turned fratricidal arms against each other, the Isthmus was often the point of the conflict between the

<sup>310</sup> The Epistles to the Thessalonians, Corinthians, and Romans.

Athenians and their enemies. In the time of the Theban supremacy, the wall again appears as a fortified line from sea to sea. When Greece became Roman, the provincial arrangements neutralized, for a time, the military importance of the Isthmus. But when the barbarians poured in from the North, like the Persians of old, its wall was repaired by Valerian. Again it was rebuilt by Justinian, who fortified it with a hundred and fifty towers. And we trace its history through the later period of the Venetian power in the Levant, from the vast works of 1463, to the peace of 1699, when it was made the boundary of the territories of the Republic.<sup>311</sup>

Conspicuous, both in connection with the military defenses of the Isthmus, and in the prominent features of its scenery, is the Acrocorinthus, or citadel of Corinth, which rises in form and abruptness like the rock of Dumbarton. But this comparison is quite inadequate to express the magnitude of the Corinthian citadel. It is elevated two thousand feet ~ above the level of the sea; it throws a vast shadow across the plain at its base; the ascent is a journey involving some fatigue; and the space of ground on the summit is so extensive, that it contained a whole town,<sup>312</sup> which, under the Turkish dominion, had several mosques. Yet, notwithstanding its colossal dimensions, its sides are so precipitous, that a few soldiers are enough to guard it.<sup>313</sup> The possession of this fortress has been the object of repeated struggles in the latest wars between the Turks and the Greeks, and again between the Turks and the Venetians. It was said to Philip, when he wished

<sup>311</sup> The wall was not built in a straight line, but followed the sinuosities of the ground. The remains of square towers are visible in some places. The eastern portion abutted on the Sanctuary of Neptune, where the Isthmian games are held.

<sup>312</sup> The city, according to Xenophon, was forty stadia in circumference without the Acropolis, and eighty-five with it.

<sup>313</sup> Plutarch says that it was guarded by 400 soldiers, 50 dogs, and as many keepers.

to acquire possession of the Morea, that the Acrocorinthus was one of the *horns* he must seize, in order to secure the heifer. Thus Corinth might well be called "the eye of Greece" in a military sense, as Athens has often been so called in another sense. If the rock of Minerva was the Acropolis of the Athenian people, the mountain of the Isthmus was truly named "the Acropolis of the Greeks."

It will readily be imagined that the view from the summit is magnificent and extensive.<sup>314</sup> A sea is on either hand. Across that which lies on the east, a clear sight is obtained of the Acropolis of Athens, at a distance of forty five miles.<sup>315</sup> The mountains of Attica and Boeotia, and the islands of the Archipelago, close the prospect in this direction. Beyond the western sea, which flows in from the Adriatic, are the large masses of the mountains of north eastern Greece, with Parnassus towering above Delphi. Immediately

<sup>314</sup> Wheeler's description is as follows: We mounted to the top of the highest point, and had one of the most agreeable prospects in the world. On the right hand of us the Saronic Gulf, with an its little islands strewn up and down it, to Cape Colonne on the Promontory Sunium. Beyond that the islands of the Archipelago seemed to close up the mouth of the Gulf. On the left hand of us we had the Gulf of Lepanto or Corinth, as far as beyond Sicyon, bounded northward with all these famous mountains of old times, with the Isthmus, even to Athens, lying in a row, and presenting themselves orderly to our view. The plain of Corinth towards Sicyon or Basilico is well watered by two rivulets, well-tilled, well-planted with olive-yards and vineyards, and, having many little villages scattered up and down it, is none of the least of the ornaments of this prospect. The town also that lies north of the castle, in little knots of houses, surrounded with orchards and gardens of oranges, lemons, citrons, and cypress-trees, and mixed with cornfields between, is a sight not less delightful. So that it is hard to judge whether this plain is more beautiful to the beholders or profitable to the inhabitants. This was in 1675, before the last conflicts of the Turks and Venetians.

<sup>315</sup> "As from the Parthenon at Athens we had seen the citadel of Corinth, so now we had a commanding view, across the Saronic Gulf, of Salamis and the Athenian Acropolis." Dr. Clarke.

beneath us is the narrow plain which separates the seas. The city itself is on a small table land of no great elevation, connected with the northern base of the Acrocorinthus. At the edge of the lower level are the harbors which made Corinth the emporium of the richest trade of the East and the West.

We are thus brought to that which is really the characteristic both of Corinthian geography and Corinthian history, its close relation to the commerce of the Mediterranean. Plutarch says, that there was a want of good harbors in Achaia; and Strabo speaks of the circumnavigation of the Morea as dangerous.

<sup>316</sup> Cape Malea was proverbially formidable, and held the same relation to the voyages of ancient days, which the Cape of Good Hope does to our own. <sup>317</sup> Thus, a narrow and level isthmus, across which smaller vessels could be dragged from gulf to gulf was of inestimable value to the early traders of the Levant. And the two harbors which received the ships of a more maturely developed trade, Cenchrea <sup>318</sup> on the Eastern Sea, and Lecheum <sup>319</sup> on the western, with a third and smaller port, called Schoenus, <sup>320</sup> where the isthmus was narrowest, form an essential part of our idea of Corinth. Its common title in the poets is "the city of the two seas."<sup>321</sup> It is allegorically represented in art as a female figure on a rock, between two other figures, each of whom bears

<sup>316</sup> He adds that the Sicilian sea was avoided by mariners as much as possible.

<sup>317</sup> A proverb said of this south-eastern point of the Morea; "When you are round Cape Malea, forget all you have at home."

<sup>318</sup> It was seventy stadia distant from the city.

<sup>319</sup> Lecheum was united to Corinth by long walls. It was about twelve stadia distant from the city.

<sup>320</sup> Schamus was at the point where the Isthmus was narrowest, close to the Sanctuary of Neptune and the eastern portion of the Isthmian wall. The ship is described as sailing to this port in the early times when Athens had the presidency of the games.

<sup>321</sup> One phrase which was used is that which we find in Acts 27:41.

a rudder, the symbol of navigation and trade. It is the same image which appears under another form in the words of the rhetorician, who said that it was "the prow and the stern of Greece."

As we noticed above a continuous fortress which was carried across the Isthmus, in connection with its military history, so here we have to mention another continuous work, which was attempted, in connection with its mercantile history. This was the ship canal; which, after being often projected, was about to be begun again near the very time of St. Paul's visit. <sup>322</sup> Parallels often suggest themselves between the relation of the parts of the Mediterranean to each other, and those of the Atlantic and Pacific: for the basins of the "Midland Sea" were to the Greek and Roman trade, what the Oceanic spaces are to ours. And it is difficult, in speaking of a visit to the Isthmus of Corinth in the year 52, which only preceded by a short interval the work of Nero's engineers, not to be reminded of the Isthmus of Panama in the year 1852, during which active progress was made in an undertaking often projected, but never yet carried into effect. <sup>323</sup>

### Early History of Corinth

There is this difference, however, between the Oceanic and the Mediterranean Isthmus, that one of the great cities of the ancient world always existed at the latter. What some future Darien may be destined to become, we cannot prophesy: but, at a very early date, we find Corinth celebrated by the poets for its wealth. This wealth must inevitably have grown up,

<sup>322</sup> Demetrius Poliorcetes, Julius Caesar, and Caligula had all entertained the notion of cutting through the Isthmus. Nero really began the undertaking in the year 52, but soon desisted. The portion of the trench which remains is at the narrowest part, near the shore of the Corinthian Gulf. Dodwell came upon it, after crossing Mount Geraneia from Attica.

<sup>323</sup> The first edition of this work was published in 1852. At that time the various plans for an inter-ocean canal were very much before the public. Now at least the railway is open for traffic from ocean to ocean.

from its mercantile relations, even without reference to its two seas, if we attend to the fact on which Thucydides laid stress, that it was the place through which all ingress and egress took place between Northern and Southern Greece, before the development of commerce by water. But it was its conspicuous position on the narrow neck of land between the Aegean and Ionian Seas, which was the main cause of its commercial greatness. The construction of the ship *Argo* is assigned by mythology to Corinth. The Samians obtained their shipbuilders from her. The first Greek triremes, the first Greek sea fights, are connected with her history. Neptune was her god. Her colonies were spread over distant coasts in the East and West; and ships came from every sea to her harbors. Thus she became the common resort and the universal market of the Greeks.<sup>324</sup> Her population and wealth were further augmented by the manufactures in metallurgy, dyeing, and porcelain, which grew up in connection with the import and export of goods. And at periodical intervals the crowding of her streets and the activity of her trade received a new impulse from the strangers who flocked to the Isthmian games, a subject to which our attention will often be called hereafter, but which must be passed over here with a simple allusion. If we add all these particulars together, we see ample reason why the wealth, luxury, and profligacy of Corinth were proverbial<sup>325</sup> in the ancient world.

In passing from the fortunes of the earlier, or Greek Corinth, to its history under the Romans, the first scene that meets us is one of disaster and ruin. The destruction of this city by Mummius, about the same time that Carthage was destroyed by Scipio, was so complete, that, like its previous wealth, it passed into a proverb. Its

<sup>324</sup> One writer in another place compares Corinth to a ship loaded with merchandise, and says that a perpetual fair was held yearly and daily at the Isthmus.

<sup>325</sup> "*Non cuivis homini contingit adire Corinthum.*" Horace, Epigrams i.17,36. The word "Corinthianize" was used proverbially for an immoral life.

works of skill and luxury were destroyed or carried away. Polybius, the historian, saw Roman soldiers playing at draughts on the pictures of famous artists; and the exhibition of vases and statues that decorated the triumph of the Capitol, introduced a new era in the habits of the Romans. Meanwhile, the very place of the city from which these works were taken remained desolate for many years.<sup>326</sup> The honour of presiding over the Isthmian games was given to Sicyon; and Corinth ceased even to be a resting place of travelers between the East and the West. But a new Corinth rose from the ashes of the old. Julius Caesar, recognizing the importance of the Isthmus as a military and mercantile position, sent thither a colony of Italians, who were chiefly freedmen.<sup>327</sup> This new establishment rapidly increased by the mere force of its position. Within a few years it grew, as Singapore has grown in our days, from nothing to an enormous city. The Greek merchants, who had fled on the Roman conquest to Delos and the neighboring coasts, returned to their former home. The Jews settled themselves in a place most convenient both for the business of commerce and for communication with Jerusalem. Thus, when St. Paul arrived at Corinth after his sojourn at Athens, he found himself in the midst of a numerous population of Greeks and Jews. They were probably far more numerous than the Romans, though the city had the constitution of a colony, and was the metropolis of a province.

<sup>326</sup> "Nevertheless," says Colonel Leake, "the site, I conceive, cannot have been quite uninhabited, as the Romans neither destroyed the public buildings nor persecuted the religion of the Corinthians. And as many of those buildings were still perfect in the time of Pausanias, there must have been some persons who had the care of them during the century of desolation."

<sup>327</sup> Professor Stanley notices the great number of names of Corinthian Christians (Gaius, Quartus, Fortunatus, Achaicus, Crispus, Justus), which indicate "either a Roman or servile origin." *Preface to Corinthians.*

### Province of Achaia

It is commonly assumed that Greece was constituted as a province under the name of Achaia, when Corinth was destroyed by Mummius. But this appears to be a mistake. There seems to have been an intermediate period, during which the country had a nominal independence, as was the case with the contiguous province of Macedonia. The description which has been given of the political limits of Macedonia (Chapter 9) defines equally the extent of Achaia. It was bounded on all other sides by the sea, and was nearly co extensive with the kingdom of Modern Greece. The name of Achaia was given to it, in consequence of the part played by the Achaean league in the last independent struggles of ancient Greece; and Corinth, the head of that league, became the metropolis. The province experienced changes of government, such as those which have been alluded to in the case of Cyprus. At first it was proconsular. Afterwards it was placed by Tiberius under a procurator of his own. But in the reign of Claudius it was again reckoned among the "unarmed provinces,"<sup>328</sup> and governed by a proconsul.

### Gallio

One of the proconsuls who were sent out to govern the province of Achaia in the course of St. Paul's second missionary journey was Gallio.<sup>329</sup> His original name was Anneus Novatus, and he was the brother of Anneus Seneca the philosopher. The name under which he is known to us in sacred and secular history was due to his adoption into the family of Junius Gallio the rhetorician. The time of his government at Corinth, as indicated by the sacred historian, must be placed between the years 52 and 54, if the dates we have assigned to St. Paul's movements be correct. We have no exact information on this subject from any secular source, nor is he mentioned by any Heathen writer as having been proconsul of

<sup>328</sup> A phrase applied to those provinces which were proconsular and required the presence of no army.

<sup>329</sup> Acts 28:12

Achaia. But there are some incidental notices of his life, which give rather a curious confirmation of what is advanced above. We are informed by Tacitus and Dio that he died in the year 65. Pliny says that after his consulship he had a serious illness, for the removal of which he tried a sea voyage: and from his brother Seneca we learn that it was in Achaia that he went on shipboard for the benefit of his health.

If we knew the year of Gallio's consulship, our chronological result would be brought within narrow limits. We do not possess this information; but it has been reasonably conjectured that his promotion, if due to his brother's influence, would be subsequent to the year 49, in which the philosopher returned from his exile in Corsica, and had the youthful Nero placed under his tuition. The interval of time thus marked out between the restoration of Seneca and the death of Gallio, includes the narrower period assigned by St. Luke to the proconsulate in Achaia.

The coming of a new governor to a province was an event of great importance. The whole system of administration, the general prosperity, the state of political parties, the relative position of different sections of the population, were necessarily affected by his personal character. The provincials were miserable or happy, according as a Verres or a Cicero was sent from Rome. As regards the personal character of Gallio, the inference we should naturally draw from the words of St. Luke closely corresponds with what we are told by Seneca. His brother speaks of him with singular affection; not only as a man of integrity and honesty, but as one who won universal regard by his amiable temper and popular manners. His conduct on the occasion of the tumult at Corinth is quite in harmony with a character so described. He did not allow himself, like Pilate, to be led into injustice by the clamor of the Jews (Acts 18:14); and yet he overlooked, with easy indifference, an outbreak of violence which a sterner and more imperious governor would at once have arrested. (Acts 18:17) The details of this transaction were as

follows : The Jews, anxious to profit by a change of administration, and perhaps encouraged by the well known compliance of Gallio's character, took an early opportunity of accusing St. Paul before him. They had already set themselves in battle array against him, and the coming of the new governor was the signal for a general attack. (Acts 18:12) It is quite evident that the act was preconcerted and the occasion chosen. Making use of the privileges they enjoyed as a separate community, and well aware that the exercise of their worship was protected by the Roman State,<sup>330</sup> they accused St. Paul of violating their own religious law. They seem to have thought, if this violation of Jewish law could be proved, that St. Paul would become amenable to the criminal law of the Empire; or, perhaps, they hoped, as afterwards at Jerusalem, that he would be given up into their hands for punishment.

Had Gallio been like Festus or Felix, this might easily have happened; and then St. Paul's natural resource would have been to appeal to the Emperor, on the ground of his citizenship. But the appointed time of his visit to Rome was not yet come, and the continuance of his missionary labors was secured by the character of the governor, who was providentially sent at this time to manage the affairs of Achaia.

The scene is set before us by St. Luke with some details which give us a vivid notion of what took place. Gallio is seated on that proconsular chair<sup>331</sup> from which judicial sentences were pronounced

<sup>330</sup> Compare Josephus, *Wars of the Jews*, ii.14,4 on Caesarea. In Alexandria, there were four distinct classes of population, among which the Jews were citizens under their Ethnarch, like the Romans under their Juridicus. We need not discuss here the later position of the Jews, after Caracalla had made all freemen citizens.

<sup>331</sup> This chair, or tribunal, "the indispensable symbol of the Roman judgment-seat," as it has been called, is mentioned three times in the course of this narrative. It was of two kinds: (1) fixed in some open and public place; (2) movable, and taken by the Roman magistrates to be placed wherever they might sit in a

by the Roman magistrates. To this we must doubtless add the other insignia of Roman power, which were suitable to a colony and the metropolis of a province. Before this Heathen authority the Jews are preferring their accusation with eager clamor. Their chief speaker is Sosthenes, the successor of Crispus, or (it may be) the ruler of another synagogue. The Greeks are standing round, eager to hear the result, and to learn something of the new governor's character, and, at the same time, hating the Jews, and ready to be the partisans of St. Paul. At the moment when the Apostle is "about to open his mouth" (Acts 18:14), Gallio will not even hear his defense, but pronounces a decided and peremptory judgment.

His answer was that of a man who knew the limits of his office, and felt that he had no time to waste on the religious technicalities of the Jews. Had it been a case in which the Roman law had been violated by any breach of the peace or any act of dishonesty, then it would have been reasonable and right that the matter should have been fully investigated; but, since it was only a question of the Jewish law, relating to the disputes of Hebrew superstition, and to names of no public interest, he utterly refused to attend to it. They might excommunicate the offender, or inflict on him any of their ecclesiastical punishments; but he would not meddle with trifling quarrels, which were beyond his jurisdiction. And without further delay he drove the Jews away "from before his judicial chair." (Acts 18:16)

The effect of this proceeding must have been to produce the utmost rage and disappointment among the Jews. With the Greeks and other bystanders the result was very different. Their dislike of a superstitious and misanthropic nation was gratified. They held the forbearance of Gallio as a proof that their own religious liberties would be respected under the new administration; and, with the disorderly impulse of a mob which has been kept for some

judicial character. Probably here and in the case of Pilate (John 19:13) the former kind of seat is intended.

time in suspense, they rushed upon the ruler of the synagogue, and beat him in the very presence of the proconsular tribunal. Meanwhile, Gallio took no notice of the injurious punishment thus inflicted on the Jews, and with characteristic indifference left Sosthenes to his fate.

Thus the accusers were themselves involved in disgrace; Gallio obtained a high popularity among the Greeks, and St. Paul was enabled to pursue his labors in safety. Had he been driven away from Corinth, the whole Christian community of the place might have been put in jeopardy. But the result of the storm was to give shelter to the infant Church, with opportunity of safe and continued growth. As regards the Apostle himself, his credit rose with the disgrace of his opponents. So far as he might afterwards be noticed by the Roman governor or the Greek inhabitants of the city, he would be regarded as an injured man. As his own discretion had given advantage to the holy cause at Philippi, by involving his opponents in blame, so here the most imminent peril was providentially turned into safety and honour.

Thus the assurance communicated in the vision was abundantly fulfilled. Though bitter enemies had "set on" Paul (Acts 18:10), no one had "hurt" him. The Lord had been "with him," and "much people" had been gathered into His Church. At length the time came when the Apostle deemed it right to leave Achaia and revisit Judea, induced (as it would appear) by a motive which often guided his journeys, the desire to be present at the great gathering of the Jews at one of their festivals, and possibly also influenced by the movements of Aquila and Priscilla, who were about to proceed from Corinth to Ephesus. Before his departure, he took a solemn farewell of the assembled Church.

### **Voyage by Ephesus to Caesarea**

How touching St. Paul's farewells must have been, especially after a protracted residence among his brethren and disciples, we may infer from the affectionate language of his letters;

and one specimen is given to us of these parting addresses, in the Acts of the: Apostles. From the words spoken at Miletus (Acts 20), we may learn what was said and felt at Corinth. He could tell his disciples here, as he told them there, that he had taught them "publicly and from house to house;" that he was "pure from the blood of all men;" that by the space of a year and a half he had "not ceased to warn everyone night and day with tears." And doubtless he forewarned them of "grievous wolves entering in among them, of men speaking perverse things arising of themselves, to draw away disciples after them." And he could appeal to them, with the emphatic gesture of "those hands" which had labored at Corinth, in proof that he had "coveted no man's gold or silver," and in confirmation of the Lord's words, that "it is more blessed to give than to receive." Thus he departed, with prayers and tears, from those who "accompanied him to the ship" with many misgivings that they might "see his face no more."

The three points on the coast to which our attention is called in the brief notice of this voyage contained in the Acts 3 are Cenchrea, the harbor of Corinth; Ephesus, on the western shore of Asia Minor; and Caesarea Stratonis, in Palestine. More suitable occasions will be found hereafter for descriptions of Caesarea and Ephesus. The present seems to require a few words to be said concerning Cenchrea.

After descending from the low table land on which Corinth was situated, the road which connected the city with its eastern harbor extended a distance of eight or nine miles across the Isthmian plain. Cenchrea has fallen with Corinth; but the name still remains to mark the place of the port, which once commanded a large trade with Alexandria and Antioch, with Ephesus and Thessalonica, and the other cities of the Aegean. That it was a town of some magnitude may be inferred from the attention which Pausanias devotes to it in the description of the environs of Corinth; and both its mercantile character, and the pains which had been taken in its embellishment, are

well symbolized in the coin which represents the port with a temple on each enclosing promontory, and a statue of Neptune on a rock between them.

From this port St. Paul began his voyage to Syria. But before the vessel sailed, one of his companions performed a religious ceremony which must not be unnoticed, since it is mentioned in Scripture. Aquila <sup>332</sup> had bound himself by one of those vows, which the Jews often voluntarily took, even when in foreign countries, in consequence of some mercy received, or some deliverance from danger, or other occurrence which had produced a deep religious impression on the mind. The obligations of these vows were similar to those in the case of Nazarites, as regards abstinence from strong drinks and legal pollutions, and the wearing of the hair uncut till the close of a definite length of time. Aquila could not be literally a Nazarite; for, in the case of that greater vow, the cutting of the hair, which denoted that the legal time was expired, could only take place at the Temple in Jerusalem, or at least in Judea. In this case the ceremony was performed at Cenchrea. Here Aquila, who had been for some time conspicuous, even among the Jews and Christians at Corinth, for the long hair which denoted that he was under a peculiar religious restriction came to the close of the period of obligation; and, before accompanying the Apostle to Ephesus, laid aside the tokens of his vow.

From Corinth to Ephesus, the voyage was among the islands of the Greek Archipelago. The Isles of Greece, and the waters which break on their shores, or rest among them in spaces of

---

<sup>332</sup> This is left as it stood in the earlier editions. It must be admitted that the arguments from the structure of the original are rather in favor of referring the vow, not to Aquila, but to St. Paul. The difficulty lies not so much in supposing that Paul took a Jewish vow (see Acts 21:26), as in supposing that he made himself conspicuous for Jewish peculiarities while he was forming a mixed church at Corinth. But we are ignorant of the circumstances of the case.

calm repose, always present themselves to the mind as the scenes of interesting voyages, whether we think of the stories of early Legend, or the stirring life of Classical times, of the Crusades in the middle ages, or of the movements of Modern travelers, some of whom seldom reflect that the land and water round them were hallowed by the presence and labors of St. Paul. One great purpose of this book will be gained, if it tends to associate the Apostle of the Gentiles with the coasts which are already touched by so many other historical recollections.

No voyage across the Aegean was more frequently made than that between Corinth and Ephesus. They were the capitals of the two flourishing and peaceful provinces of Achaia and Asia, and the two great mercantile towns on opposite sides of the sea. If resemblances may again be suggested between the Ocean and the Mediterranean, and between ancient and modern times, we may say that the relations of these cities of the Eastern and Western Greeks to each other was like that between New York and Liverpool. Even the time taken up by the voyages constitutes a point of resemblance. Cicero says that, on his eastward passage, which was considered a long one, he spent fifteen days, and that his return was accomplished in thirteen.

A fair wind, in much shorter time than either thirteen or fifteen days, would take the Apostle across, from Corinth to the city on the other side of the sea. It seems that the vessel was bound for Syria, and stayed only a short time in harbor at Ephesus. Aquila and Priscilla remained there while he proceeded. (Acts 18:19) But even during the short interval of his stay, Paul made a visit to his Jewish fellow countrymen, and (the Sabbath being probably one of the days during which he remained) he held a discussion with them in the synagogue concerning Christianity. Their curiosity was excited by what they heard, as it had been at Antioch in Pisidia; and perhaps that curiosity would speedily have been succeeded by opposition, if their visitor had stayed longer

among them. But he was not able to grant the request which they urgently made. He was anxious to attend the approaching festival at Jerusalem ; and, had he not proceeded with the ship, this might have been impossible. He was so far, however, encouraged by the opening which he saw, that he left the Ephesian Jews with a promise of his return. This promise was limited by an expression of that dependence on the divine will which is characteristic of a Christian's life, whether his vocation be to the labors of an Apostle, or to the routine of ordinary toil. We shall see that St. Paul's promise was literally fulfilled, when we come to pursue his progress on his third missionary circuit.

The voyage to Syria lay first by the coasts and islands of the Aegean to Cos and Cnidus, which are mentioned on subsequent voyages,<sup>333</sup> and then across the open sea by Rhodes and Cyprus to Caesarea.<sup>334</sup> This city has the closest connection with some of the most memorable events of early Christianity. We have already had occasion to mention it, in alluding to St. Peter and the baptism of the first Gentile convert. We shall afterwards be required to make it the subject of a more elaborate notice, when we arrive at the imprisonment which was suffered by St. Paul under two successive Roman governors.

The country was now no longer under native kings. Ten years had elapsed since the death of Herod Agrippa, the last event alluded to (Chapter 4) in connection with Caesarea. Felix had for some years already been procurator of Judea.<sup>335</sup> If the aspect of the country had become in any degree more national under the reign of the Herods, it had now resumed all the appearance of a Roman province. Caesarea was its military capital, as well as the harbor by which it was approached by all travelers from the West. From this city roads had been made to the Egyptian frontier on the south, and northwards

<sup>333</sup> Acts 21:1 and 27:7.

<sup>334</sup> See Acts 21:1-3

<sup>335</sup> Tacitus, *Annals*... and Josephus

along the coast by Ptolemais, Tyre, and Sidon, to Antioch, as well as across the interior by Neapolis or Antipatris to Jerusalem and the Jordan.

The journey from Caesarea to Jerusalem is related by St. Luke in a single word.<sup>336</sup> No information is given concerning the incidents which occurred there: no meetings with other Apostles, no controversies on disputed points of doctrine, are recorded or inferred. We are not even sure that St. Paul arrived in time for the festival at which he desired to be present. The contrary seems rather to be implied; for he is said simply to have "saluted the Church," and then to have proceeded to Antioch. It is useless to attempt to draw aside the veil which conceals the particulars of this visit of Paul of Tarsus to the city of his forefathers. As if it were no longer intended that we should view the Church in connection with the center of Jerusalem, our thoughts are turned immediately to that other city (Acts 18:22), where the name Christian was first conferred on it.

### Antioch

From Jerusalem to Antioch it is likely that the journey was accomplished by land. It is the last time we shall have occasion to mention a road which was often traversed, at different seasons of the year, by St. Paul and his companion. Two of the journeys along this Phoenician coast must have been long ago mentioned. Many years had intervened since the charitable mission which brought relief from Syria to the poor in Jerusalem (Chapter 4), and since the meeting of the council at Jerusalem, and the joyful return at a time of anxious controversy (Chap. 7). When we allude to these previous

<sup>336</sup> "When he had gone up," Acts 18:22. Some commentators think that St. Paul did not go to Jerusalem at all, but that this participle merely denotes his going up from the ship into the town of Caesarea; but, independently of his intention to visit Jerusalem, it is hardly likely that such a circumstance would have been specified in a narrative so briefly given.

visits to the Holy City, we feel how widely the Church of Christ had been extended in the space of very few years. The course of our narrative is rapidly carrying us from the East towards the West. We are now for the last time on this part of the Asiatic shore. For a moment the associations which surround us are all of the primeval past. The monuments which still remain along this coast remind us of the ancient Phoenician power, and of Baal and Ashtaroth,<sup>337</sup> of the Assyrian conquerors, who came from the Euphrates to the West, and have left forms like those in the palaces of Nineveh sculptured on the rocks of the Mediterranean,<sup>338</sup> rather than of anything connected with the history of Greece and Rome. The mountains which rise above our heads belong to the characteristic imagery of the Old Testament: the cedars are those of the forests which were hewn by the workmen of Hiram and Solomon; the torrents which cross the roads are the waters from the "sides of Lebanon."<sup>339</sup> But we are taking our last view of this scenery; and, as we leave it, we feel that we are passing from the Jewish infancy of the Christian Church to its wider expansion among the Heathen.

Once before we had occasion to remark that the Church had no longer now its central point in Jerusalem, but in Antioch, a city of the Gentiles. The progress of events now carries us still more remotely from the land which was first visited by the tidings of salvation. The world through which our narrative takes us begins to be European rather than Asiatic. So far as we know, the present visit which St. Paul paid to Antioch was his last.<sup>340</sup> We have already seen how new centers of Christian life had been

<sup>337</sup> The ruins of Tortosa and Aradus.

<sup>338</sup> The sculptures of Assyrian figures on the coast road near Beirut are noticed in the works of many travelers.

<sup>339</sup> These torrents are often flooded, so as to be extremely dangerous; so that St. Paul may have encountered "perils of rivers" in this district.

<sup>340</sup> Antioch is not mentioned in the Acts after 18:22.

established by him in the Greek cities of the Aegean. The course of the Gospel is further and further towards the West; and the inspired part of the Apostle's biography, after a short period of deep interest in Judea, finally centers in Rome.

## Chapter 13

### The Spiritual Gifts

We are now arrived at a point in St. Paul's history when it seems needful, for the full understanding of the remainder of his career, and especially of his Epistles, to give some description of the internal condition of those churches which looked to him as their father in the faith. Nearly all of these had now been founded, and regarding the early development of several of them, we have considerable information from his letters and from other sources. This information we shall now endeavor to bring into one general view; and in so doing (since the Pauline churches were only particular portions of the universal Church), we shall necessarily have to consider the distinctive peculiarities and internal condition of the primitive Church generally, as it existed in the time of the Apostles.

The feature which most immediately forces itself upon our notice, as distinctive of the Church in the Apostolic age, is its possession of supernatural gifts. Concerning these, our whole information must be derived from Scripture, because they appear to have vanished with the disappearance of the Apostles themselves, and there is no authentic account of their existence in the Church in any writings of a later date than the books of the New Testament. This fact gives a more remarkable and impressive character to the frequent mention of them in the writings of the Apostles, where the exercise of such gifts is spoken of as a matter of ordinary occurrence. Indeed, this is so much the case, that these miraculous powers are not even mentioned by the Apostolic writers as a class apart (as we should now consider them), but are joined in the same classification with other gifts, which we are wont to term natural endowments or "talents." Thus St. Paul tells us

(1 Cor. 12:11) that all these *gifts*, or spiritual gifts, were wrought by one and the same Spirit, who distributed them to each severally according to His own will; and among these he classes the gift of Healing, and the gift of tongues, as falling under the same category with the talent for administrative usefulness, and the faculty of Government. But though we learn from this to refer the ordinary natural endowments of men, not less than the supernatural powers bestowed in the Apostolic age, to a divine source, yet, since we are treating of that which gave a distinctive character to the Apostolic Church, it is desirable that we should make a division between the two classes of gifts, the extraordinary and the ordinary; although this division was not made by the Apostles at the time when both kinds of gifts were in ordinary exercise.

The most striking manifestation of divine interposition was the power of working what are commonly called Miracles, that is, changes in the usual operation of the laws of nature. This power was exercised by St. Paul himself very frequently (as we know from the narrative in the Acts), as well as by the other Apostles; and in the Epistles we find repeated allusions to its exercise by ordinary Christians.<sup>341</sup> As examples of the operation of this power, we need only refer to St. Paul's raising Eutychus from the dead, his striking Elymas with blindness, his healing the sick at Ephesus;<sup>342</sup> and his curing the father of Publius at Melita., 3

The last mentioned examples are instances of the exercise of the gift of healing, which was a peculiar branch of the gift of miracles, and sometimes apparently possessed by those who had not the higher gift. The source of all these miraculous powers was the gift of faith; namely, that peculiar kind of wonder-working faith spoken of in Matt. 17:20; 1 Cor. 12:9, and 13:2, which consisted in an intense belief that all obstacles would vanish before the power given.

<sup>341</sup> Gal. 3:5 is one of many examples.

<sup>342</sup> Acts 19:11,12

This must of course be distinguished from that disposition of faith which is essential to the Christian life.

We have remarked that the exercise of these miraculous powers is spoken of both in the Acts and Epistles as a matter of ordinary occurrence; and in that tone of quiet (and often incidental) allusion, in which we mention the facts of our daily life. And this is the case, not in a narrative of events long past (where unintentional exaggeration might be supposed to have crept in), but in the narrative of a cotemporary, writing immediately after the occurrence of the events which he records, and of which he was an eyewitness; and yet further, this phenomenon occurs in letters which speak of those miracles as wrought in the daily sight of the readers addressed. Now the question forced upon every intelligent mind is, whether such a phenomenon can be explained except by the assumption that the miracles did really happen. Is this assumption more difficult than that of Hume (which has been revived with an air of novelty by modern infidels), who cuts the knot by assuming that whenever we meet with an account of a miracle, it is ipso facto to be "ejected as incredible, no matter by what weight of evidence it may be supported?"

Besides the power of working miracles, other supernatural gifts of a less extraordinary character were bestowed upon the early Church. The most important were the gift of tongues, and the gift of prophecy. With regard to the former there is much difficulty, from the notices of it in Scripture, in fully comprehending its nature. But from the passages where it is mentioned,<sup>343</sup> we may gather thus much concerning it: first, that it was not a knowledge of foreign languages, as is often supposed; we never read of its being exercised for the conversion of foreign nations, nor (except

<sup>343</sup> Mark 16:17; Acts ii. 4, &c., Acts x. 4(j), Acts xi. 15-17, Acts xix. 6; 1 Cor. xii., and 1 Cor. xi.'. We must refer to the notes all these two last-named chapters for some further discussion of the difficulties connected with this gift,

on the day of Pentecost alone) for that of individual foreigners; and even on that occasion the foreigners present were all Jewish proselytes, and most of them understood the Hellenistic <sup>344</sup> dialect.

Secondly, we learn that this gift was the result of a sudden influx of supernatural inspiration, which came upon the new believer immediately after his baptism, and recurred afterwards at uncertain intervals. Thirdly, we find that while under its influence the exercise of the understanding was suspended, while the spirit was rapt into a state of ecstasy by the immediate communication of the Spirit of God. In this ecstatic trance the believer was constrained by an irresistible power to pour forth his feelings of thanksgiving and rapture in words; yet the words which issued from his mouth were not his own; he was even (usually) ignorant of their meaning. St. Paul desired that those who possessed this gift should not be suffered to exercise it in the congregation, unless some one present possessed another gift (subsidiary to this), called the interpretation of tongues, by which the ecstatic utterance of the former might be rendered available for general edification. Another gift, also, was needful for the checking of false pretensions to this and some other gifts, viz. the gift of discerning of spirits, the recipients of which could distinguish between the real and the imaginary possessors of spiritual gifts. I

From the gift of tongues we pass, by a natural transition, to the gift of prophecy. <sup>345</sup> It is needless to remark that, in the Scriptural sense of the term, a prophet does not mean a foreteller of future events, but a revealer of God's Will to man; though the latter sense may (and sometimes

<sup>344</sup> This must probably have been the case with all the foreigner~ mentioned, except the Parthians, Medes, Elamites, and Arabians, and the Jews from these latter countries would probably understand the Aramaic of Palestine.

<sup>345</sup> If it be asked why we class this as among the supernatural, or extraordinary gifts, it will be sufficient to refer to such passages as Acts 19:27,28.

does) include the former. The gift of prophecy was that gift which enabled its possessors to utter, with the authority of inspiration, divine strains of warning, exhortation, encouragement, or rebuke; and to teach and enforce the truths of Christianity with supernatural energy and effect. The wide diffusion among the members of the Church of this prophetic inspiration was a circumstance which is mentioned by St. Peter as distinctive of the Gospel dispensation; <sup>346</sup> in fact, we find that in the family of Philip the Evangelist alone, <sup>347</sup> there were four daughters who exercised this gift; and the general possession of it is in like manner implied by the directions of St. Paul to the Corinthians. <sup>348</sup> The latter Apostle describes the marvelous effect of the inspired addresses thus spoken. <sup>349</sup> He looks upon the gift of prophecy as one of the great instruments for the conversion of unbelievers; and far more serviceable in this respect than the gift of tongues, although by some of the new converts it was not so highly esteemed, because it seemed less strange and wonderful.

Thus far we have mentioned the extraordinary gifts of the Spirit which were vouchsafed to the Church of that age alone; yet (as we have before said) there was no strong line of division, no "great gulf fixed" between these, and what we now should call the ordinary gifts, or natural endowments of the Christian converts. Thus the gift of prophecy cannot easily be separated by any accurate demarcation from another gift often mentioned in Scripture, which we should now consider an ordinary talent, namely, the gift of teaching. The distinction between them appears to have been that the latter was more habitually and constantly exercised by its possessors than the former: we are not to suppose, however, that it was necessarily given to different persons; on the contrary an excess of divine inspiration might at any moment

<sup>346</sup> Acts 2:17,18

<sup>347</sup> Acts 21:9

<sup>348</sup> 1 Cor. 9:4 and 1 Cor. 14:24,31,34.

<sup>349</sup> 1 Cor. 14:25.

cause the teacher to speak as a prophet; and this was constantly exemplified in the case of the Apostles, who exercised the gift of prophecy for the conversion of their unbelieving hearers, and the gift of teaching for the building up of their converts in the faith.

Other gifts specially mentioned as gifts are the gift of government and the gift of ministration. By the former, certain persons were specially fitted to preside over the Church and regulate its internal order; by the latter its possessors were enabled to minister to the wants of their brethren, to manage the distribution of relief among the poorer members of the Church, to tend the carry out other practical works of piety.

### Constitution and Ordinances

The mention of these latter gifts leads us naturally to consider the offices which at that time existed in the Church, to which the possessors of these gifts were severally called, according as the endowment which they had received fitted them to discharge the duties of the respective functions. We will endeavor, therefore, to give an outline of the constitution and government of the primitive Christian churches, as it existed in the time of the Apostles, so far as we can ascertain it from the information supplied to us in the New Testament.

Amongst the several classifications which are there given of church officers, the most important (from its relation to subsequent ecclesiastical history) is that by which they are divided into Apostles,<sup>350</sup> Presbyters, and Deacons. The monarchical, or (as it would be now called) the episcopal element of church government was, in this first period, supplied by the authority of the Apostles. This title was probably at first confined to "the Twelve," who were immediately nominated to their office (with the exception of Matthias) by our Lord

<sup>350</sup> Apostles and Presbyters are mentioned in Acts 15:2 and elsewhere; and the two classes of "Presbyters and Deacons" are mentioned in Phil 1:1.

Himself. To this body the title was limited by the Judaizing section of the Church; but St. Paul vindicated his own claim to the Apostolic name and authority as resting upon the same commission given him by the same Lord; and his companion, St. Luke, applies the name to Barnabas also. In a lower sense, the term was applied to all the more eminent Christian teachers; as, for example, to Andronicus and Junias (Rom. 16:7). And it was also sometimes used in its simple etymological sense of emissary, which had not yet been lost in its other and more technical meaning. Still those only were called emphatically the Apostles who had received their commission from Christ Himself, including the eleven who had been chosen by Him while on earth, with St. Matthias and St. Paul, who had been selected for the office by their Lord (though in different ways) after His ascension.

In saying that the Apostles embodied that element in church government, which has since been represented by episcopacy, we must not, however, be understood to mean that the power of the Apostles was subject to those limitations to which the authority of bishops has always been subjected. The primitive bishop was surrounded by his council of presbyters, and took no important step without their sanction; but this was far from being the case with the Apostles. They were appointed by Christ Himself, with absolute power to govern His Church; to them He had given the keys of the kingdom of Heaven, with authority to admit or to exclude; they were also guided by His perpetual inspiration, so that all their moral and religious teaching was absolutely and infallibly true; they were empowered by their solemn denunciations of evil, and their inspired judgments on all moral questions, to bind and to loose, to remit and to retain the sins of men.

This was the essential peculiarity of their office, which can find no parallel in the after history of the Church. But, so far as their function was to govern, they represented the monarchical element in the constitution of the early Church, and their power was a full counterpoise to that

democratic tendency which has sometimes been attributed to the ecclesiastical arrangements of the Apostolic period. Another peculiarity which distinguishes them from all subsequent rulers of the Church is, that they were not limited to a sphere of action defined by geographical boundaries: the whole world was their diocese, and they bore the Glad tidings, east or west, north or south, as the Holy Spirit might direct their course at the time, and governed the churches which they founded wherever they might be placed. Moreover, those gifts which were possessed by other Christians singly and severally, were collectively given to the Apostles, because all were needed for their work. The gift of miracles was bestowed upon them in abundant measure, that they might strike terror into the adversaries of the truth; and win, by outward wonders, the attention of thousands whose minds were closed by ignorance against the inward and the spiritual. They had the gift of prophecy as the very characteristic of their office, for it was their especial commission to reveal the truth of God to man; they were consoled in the midst of their labors by heavenly visions, and rapt in supernatural ecstasies, in which they "spoke in tongues" to God. and not to man " They had the " gift of government," for that which came upon them daily was " the care of all the Churches;" the " gift of teaching," for they must build up their converts in the faith; even the " gift of ministration" was not unneeded by them, nor did they think it beneath them to undertake the humblest offices of a deacon for the good of the Church. When needful, they could " serve tables" and collect alms, and work with their own hands at the mechanical trades, "that so laboring they might support the weak;" inasmuch as they were the servants of Him who came not to be ministered unto, but to minister.

Of the offices concerned with Church government, the next in rank to that of the Apostles was the office of Overseer or Elder, more usually known (by their Greek designations) as Bishops or Presbyters. These

terms are used in the New Testament as equivalent,<sup>351</sup> the former denoting (as its meaning of *overseer* implies) the duties, the latter the rank, of the office. The history of the Church leaves us no room for doubt that on the death of the Apostles, or perhaps at an earlier period (and, in either case, by their directions), one amongst the Presbyters of each Church was selected to preside of the rest, and to him was applied emphatically the title of *the* bishop or overseer, which had previously belonged equally to all; thus he became in reality (what he was sometimes called) the successor of the Apostles, as exercising (though in a lower degree) that function of government which had formerly belonged to them.<sup>352</sup>

But in speaking of this change we are anticipating; for at the time of which we are now writing, at the foundation of the Gentile churches, the Apostles themselves were the chief governors of the Church, and the Presbyters of each particular society were co ordinate with one another. We find that they existed at an early period in Jerusalem, and likewise that they were appointed by the Apostles upon the first formation of a church in every city. The same name "Elder" was attached to an office of a corresponding nature in the Jewish synagogue, whence both title and office were probably derived. The name of the Bishop was afterwards given to this office in the Gentile churches, at a somewhat later period, as

<sup>351</sup> Thus, in the address at Miletus, the same persons are called Bishops (Acts 20:28) who had just before been named Presbyters (Acts 20:17).

<sup>352</sup> Baron Bunsen (whom no one can suspect of hierarchical tendencies) expressed his concurrence in this view. He says, "St. John established or sanctioned the institution of single Rectors, called Overseers, as presidents of the Presbytery. This form of government, as being the more perfect and practical, particularly in such difficult times, soon spread over the Christian world." Bunsen's *Hippolytus*, 2<sup>nd</sup> ed., ii.360.

expressive of its duties, and as more familiar than the other title to Greek ears.<sup>353</sup>

The office of the Presbyters was to watch over the particular church in which they ministered, in all that regarded its external order and internal purity; they were to instruct the ignorant (1 Tim. 3:2), to exhort the faithful, to confute the gainsayers (Tit. 1:9), to “warn the unruly, to comfort the feeble minded, to support the weak, to be patient towards all.” (1 Thess. 5:14) They were to “take heed to the flock over which the Holy Ghost had made them overseers, to feed the Church of God which He had purchased with His own blood.” (Acts 20:28) In one word, it was their duty (as it has been the duty of all who have been called to the same office during the nineteen centuries which have succeeded) to promote to the utmost of their ability, and by every means within their reach, the spiritual good of all those committed to their care.<sup>354</sup>

The last of the three orders, that of Deacons, did not take its place in the ecclesiastical organisation till towards the close of St. Paul's life; or, at least, this name was not assigned to those who discharged the functions of the Diaconate till a late period; the Epistle to the Philippians being the earliest in which the term occurs<sup>355</sup> in its

<sup>353</sup> **episkopo~** was the title of the Athenian commissioners to their subject allies.

<sup>354</sup> Other titles, denoting their office, are applied to the presbyters in some passages, e.g. Rom. 12:8; and 1 Thess. 5:12; Heb. 13:7; Eph. 4:11; 1 Cor. 12:28. It is, indeed, possible (as Neander thinks) that the 'teachers' may at first have been sometimes different from the 'presbyters,' as the 'gift of teaching' was distinct from the 'gift of governing; 'but those who possessed both gifts would surely have been chosen presbyters from the first, if they were to be found; and, at all events, in the time of the Pastoral Epistles we find the offices united. (1 Tim. 3:2.) See, however, the note on 1 Tim. 5:17.

<sup>355</sup> In Rom. 16:1, it is applied to a woman; and we cannot confidently assert that it is there used technically to denote an office, especially as the word **diakono~** is so constantly used in its non-technical sense of one who ministers in any way to others.

technical sense. In fact the word **diakono~** occurs thirty times in the New Testament, and only three times (or at most four) is it used as an official designation; in all the other passages it is used in its simple etymological sense of a ministering servant. It is a remarkable fact, too, that it never once occurs in the Acts as the title of those seven Hellenistic Christians who are generally (though improperly) called the seven deacons, and who were only elected to supply a temporary emergency. But although the title of the Diaconate does not occur till afterwards, the office seems to have existed from the first in the Church of Jerusalem (see Acts 5:6, 10); those who discharged its duties were then called the young men, in contradistinction to the presbyters or elders; and it was their duty to assist the latter by discharging the mechanical services requisite for the well being of the Christian community. Gradually, however, as the Church increased, the natural division of labor would suggest a subdivision of the ministrations performed by them; those which only required bodily labor would be entrusted to a less educated class of servants, and those which required the work of the head as well as the hands (such, for example, as the distribution of alms), would form the duties of the deacons; for we may now speak of them by that name, which became appropriated to them before the close of the Apostolic epoch.

There is not much information given us, with regard to their functions, in the New Testament: but, from St. Paul's directions to Timothy concerning their qualifications, it is evident that their office was one of considerable importance. He requires that they should be men of grave character, and “not greedy of filthy lucre;” the latter qualification relating to their duty in administering the charitable fund of the Church. He desires that they should not exercise the office till after their character had been first subjected to an examination, and had been found free from all imputation against it. If (as is reasonable) we explain these intimations by what we know of the Diaconate in the succeeding century, we may assume that its

duties in the Apostolic Churches (when their organisation was complete), were to assist the presbyters in all that concerned the outward service of the Church, and in executing the details of those measures, the general plan of which was organized by the presbyters. And, doubtless, those only were selected for this office who had received the gift of ministration previously mentioned.

It is a disputed point whether there was an order of Deaconesses to minister among the women in the Apostolic Church; the only proof of their existence is the epithet attached to the name of Phoebe,<sup>356</sup> which may be otherwise understood. At the same time, it must be acknowledged that the almost Oriental seclusion in which the Greek women were kept, would render the institution of such an office not unnatural in the churches of Greece, as well as in those of the East.

Besides the three orders of Apostles, Presbyters, and Deacons, we find another classification of the ministry of the Church in the Epistle to the Ephesians, (Eph. 4:11) where they are divided under four heads, viz., 1st, Apostles; 2nd, Prophets; 3rd, Evangelists; 4th, Pastors and Teachers. By the fourth class we must understand the Presbyters to be denoted, and we then have two other names interpolated between these and the Apostles; viz. Prophets and Evangelists. By the former we must understand those on whom the gift of prophecy was bestowed in such abundant measure as to constitute their peculiar characteristic; and whose work it was to impart constantly to their brethren the revelations which they received from the Holy Spirit. The term "Evangelist" is applied to those missionaries, who, like Philip, and Timothy, (2 Tim. 4:5) traveled from place to place, to bear the Glad tidings of Christ to unbelieving nations or individuals. Hence it follows that the Apostles were all Evangelists,

<sup>356</sup> Rom. 16:1. It should be observed, however, that the "widows" mentioned in 1 Tim. 5:9 were practically deaconesses, although they do not seem, at the time of the Pastoral Epistles, to have been called by that name.

although there were also Evangelists who were not Apostles. It is needless to add that our modern use of the word Evangelist (as meaning *writer of a Gospel*) is of later date, and, has no place here.

All these classes of Church officers were maintained (so far as they required it) by the contributions of those in whose service they labored. St. Paul lays down, in the strongest manner, their right to such maintenance; 1 Cor. 9:7 14 yet, at the same time, we find that he very rarely accepted the offerings, which, in the exercise of this right he might himself have claimed. He preferred to labor with his own hands for his own support, that he might put his disinterested motives beyond the possibility of suspicion; and he advises the presbyters of the Ephesian Church to follow his example in this respect, that so they might be able to contribute, by their own exertions, to the support of the helpless.

The mode of appointment to these different offices varied with the nature of the office. The Apostles, as we have seen, received their commission directly from Christ Himself; the Prophets were appointed by that inspiration which they received from the Holy Spirit, yet their claims would be subjected to the judgment of those who had received the gift of discernment of spirits. The Evangelists were sent on particular missions from time to time, by the Christians with whom they lived (but not without a special revelation of the Holy Spirit's will to that effect), as the Church of Antioch sent away Paul and Barnabas to evangelize Cyprus. The Presbyters and Deacons were appointed by the Apostles themselves (as at Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch in Pisidia 1), or by their deputies, as in the case of Timothy and Titus; yet, in all such instances, it is not improbable that the concurrence of the whole body of the Church was obtained; and it is possible that in other cases, as well as in the appointment of the seven Hellenists, the officers of the Church may have been elected by the Church which they were to serve.

In all cases, so far as we may infer from the recorded instances in the Acts, those who were selected for the performance of Church offices were solemnly set apart for the duties to which they devoted themselves. This ordination they received, whether the office to which they were called was permanent or temporary. The Church, of which they were members, devoted a preparatory season to fasting and prayer, and then those who were to be set apart were consecrated to their work by that solemn and touching symbolical act, the laying on of hands, which has been ever since appropriated to the same purpose and meaning. And thus, in answer to the faith and prayers of the Church, the spiritual gifts necessary for the performance of the office were bestowed 2 by Him who is "the Lord and Giver of Life"

Having thus briefly attempted to describe the Offices of the Apostolic Church, we pass to the consideration of its Ordinances. Of these, the chief were, of course, those two sacraments ordained by Christ Himself, which have been the heritage of the Universal Church throughout all succeeding ages. The sacrament of Baptism was regarded as the door of entrance into the Christian Church, and was held to be so indispensable that it could not be omitted even in the case of St. Paul. We have seen that although he had been called to the Apostleship by the direct intention of Christ Himself, yet he was commanded to receive baptism at the hands of a simple disciple. In ordinary cases, the sole condition required for baptism was, that the persons to be baptized should acknowledge Jesus as the Messiah,<sup>357</sup> declared

---

<sup>357</sup> This condition would (at first sight) appear as if only applicable to Jews or Jewish proselytes, who already were looking for a Messiah; yet, since the acknowledgment of Jesus as the Messiah involves in itself, when rightly understood, the whole of Christianity, it was a sufficient foundation for the faith of Gentiles also. In the case both of Jews and Gentiles, the thing required, in the first instance, was a belief in the testimony of the Apostles, that 'this Jesus had God raised up,' and thus had 'made that same Jesus, whom they had crucified, both Lord and Christ.' The most

to be the Son of God with power, by His resurrection from the dead." In this acknowledgment was virtually involved the readiness of the new converts to submit to the guidance of those whom Christ had appointed as the Apostles and teachers of His Church; and we find that they were subsequently instructed in the truths of Christianity, and were taught the true spiritual meaning of those ancient prophecies, which (if Jews) they had hitherto interpreted of a human conqueror and an earthly kingdom.

This instruction, however, took place after baptism, not before it; and herein we remark a great and striking difference from the subsequent usage of the Church. For, not long after the time of the Apostles, the primitive practice in this respect was completely reversed; in all cases the convert was subjected to a long course of preliminary instruction before he was admitted to baptism, and in some instances the catechumen remained unbaptized till the hour of death; for thus he thought to escape the strictness of a Christian life, and fancied that a deathbed baptism would operate magically upon his spiritual condition, and ensure his salvation. The Apostolic practice of immediate baptism would, had it been retained, have guarded the Church from so baneful a superstition.

It has been questioned whether the Apostles baptized adults only, or whether they admitted infants also into the Church; yet we cannot but think it probable that infant baptism<sup>358</sup> was

---

important passages, as bearing on this subject, are the baptism and confirmation of the Samaritan converts (Acts 8.), the account of the baptism of the Ethiopian eunuch (Acts 8.), of Cornelius (Acts 10), of the Philippian gaoler (Acts 16) (the only case where the baptism of a non-proselyte Heathen is recorded), of John's disciples at Ephesus (Acts 19), and the statement in Rom. 10:9, 10.

<sup>358</sup> It is at first startling to find Neander, with his great learning and candor, taking an opposite view. Yet the arguments on which he grounds his opinion, both in the *Planting and Leading* and in the *Church History*, seem plainly inconclusive. He himself acknowledges

their practice. This appears, not merely because (had it been otherwise) we must have found some traces of the first introduction of infant baptism afterwards, but also because the very idea of the Apostolic baptism, as the entrance into Christ's kingdom, implies that it could not have been refused to infants without violating the command of Christ: , Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of heaven." Again, St. Paul expressly says that the children of a Christian parent were to be looked upon as consecrated to God by virtue of their very birth; (1 Cor. 7:14) and it would have been most inconsistent with this view, as well as with the practice in the case of adults, to delay the reception of infants into the Church till they had been fully instructed in Christian doctrine.

We know from the Gospels that the new converts were baptized" in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." And after the performance <sup>359</sup> of the sacrament, an outward sign was given that God was indeed present with His Church, through the mediation of the Son, in the person of The Spirit; for the baptized converts, when the Apostles had laid their hands on them, received some spiritual gift, either the power of working miracles, or of speaking in tongues, bestowed upon each of them by Him who "divides to every man. severally as He will." It is needless to add that baptism was

---

that the principles laid down by St. Paul (1 Cor. 7:1414) contain a justification of infant baptism, and he admits that it was practiced in the time of Irenaeus. His chief reason against thinking it an Apostolical practice is, that Tertullian opposed it; but Tertullian does not pretend to call it an innovation. It is needless here to do more than refer to the well-known passages of Origen which prove that infant baptism prevailed in the church of Alexandria as early as the close of the second century. Surely if infant baptism had not been sanctioned by the Apostles, we should have found some one at least among the many churches of primitive Christendom resisting its introduction.

<sup>359</sup> The case of Cornelius, in which the gifts of the Holy Spirit were bestowed before baptism, was an exception to the ordinary rule.

(unless in exceptional cases) administered by immersion, the convert being plunged beneath the surface of the water to represent his death to the life of sin, and then raised from this momentary burial to represent his resurrection to the life of righteousness. It must be a subject of regret that the general discontinuance of this original form of baptism (though perhaps necessary in our northern climates) has rendered obscure to popular apprehension some very important passages of Scripture.

With regard to the other sacrament, we know both from the Acts and the Epistles how constantly the Apostolic Church obeyed their Lord's command:" Do this in remembrance of me." Indeed it would seem that originally their common meals were ended, as that memorable feast at Emmaus had been, by its celebration; so that, as at the first to those two disciples, their Lord's presence was daily" made known unto them in the breaking of bread." 4 Subsequently the Communion was administered at the close of the public feasts of love at which the Christians met to realize their fellowship one with another, and to partake together, rich and poor, masters and slaves, on equal terms, of the common meal. But this practice led to abuses, as we see in the case of the Corinthian Church, where the very idea of the ordinance was violated by the providing of different food for the rich and poor, and where some of the former were even guilty of intemperance. Consequently a change was made, and the communion administered before instead of after the meal, and finally separated from it altogether.

The festivals observed by the Apostolic Church were at first the same with those of the Jews; and the observance of these was continued, especially by the Christians of Jewish birth, for a considerable time. A higher and more spiritual meaning, however, was attached to their celebration; and particularly the Paschal feast was kept, no longer as a shadow of good things to come, but as the commemoration of blessings actually bestowed in the death and resurrection of Christ. Thus we already see the germ of our

Easter festival in the exhortation which St. Paul gives to the Corinthians concerning the manner in which they should celebrate the Paschal feast. Nor was it only at this annual feast that they kept in memory the resurrection of their Lord; every Sunday likewise was a festival in memory of the same event; the Church never failed to meet for common prayer and praise on that day of the week; and it very soon acquired the name of the "Lord's Day," which it has since retained.

But the meetings of the first converts for public worship were not confined to a single day of the week; they were always frequent, often daily. The Jewish Christians met at first in Jerusalem in some of the courts of the temple, there to join in the prayers and hear the teaching of Peter and John. Afterwards the private houses of the more opulent Christians were thrown open to furnish their brethren with a place of assembly; and they met for prayer and praise in some "upper chamber," with the "door shut for fear of the Jews." The outward form and order of their worship differed very materially from our own, as indeed was necessarily the case where so many of the worshippers were under the miraculous influence of the Holy Spirit. Some were filled with prophetic inspiration; some constrained to pour forth their ecstatic feelings in the exercise of the gift of tongues," as the Spirit gave them utterance."

We see, from St. Paul's directions to the Corinthians, that there was danger even then lest their worship should degenerate into a scene of confusion, from the number who wished to take part in the public ministrations; and he lays down rules which show that even the exercise of supernatural gifts was to be restrained, if it tended to violate the orderly celebration of public worship. He directs that not more than two or three should prophesy in the same assembly; and that those who had the gift of tongues should not exercise it, unless some one present had the gift of interpretation, and could explain their utterances to the congregation. He also forbids women (even though some of them might be prophetesses)

(Acts 21:9) to speak in the public assembly; and desires that they should appear veiled, as became the modesty of their sex.

In the midst of so much diversity, however, the essential parts of public worship were the same then as now, for we find that prayer was made, and thanksgiving offered up, by those who officiated, and that the congregation signified their assent by a unanimous Amen. (1 Cor. 14:6) Psalms also were chanted, doubtless to some of those ancient Hebrew melodies which have been handed down, not improbably, to our own times in the simplest form of ecclesiastical music; and addresses of exhortation or instruction were given by those whom the gift of prophecy, or the gift of teaching, had fitted for the task.

But whatever were the other acts of devotion in which these assemblies were employed, it seems probable that the daily worship always concluded with the celebration of the Holy Communion.<sup>360</sup> And as in this the members of the Church expressed and realized the closest fellowship, not only with their risen Lord, but also with each other, so it was customary to symbolize this latter union by the interchange of the kiss of peace before the sacrament, a practice to which St. Paul frequently alludes.

### **Divisions and Heresies in the Church During the Lifetime of St. Paul**

It would have been well if the inward love and harmony of the Church had really corresponded

---

<sup>360</sup> This seems proved by 1 Cor. 11:20, where St. Paul appears to assume that the very object of "coming together in Church" was 'to eat the Lord's Supper.' As the Lord's Supper was originally the conclusion of the Agape, it was celebrated in the evening; and probably, therefore, evening was the time, on ordinary occasions, for the meeting of the Church. This was certainly the case in Acts 20:8; a passage which Neander must have overlooked when he says (*Church History*, sect. 3) that the church service in the time of the Apostles was held early in the morning. There are obvious reasons why the evening would have been the most proper time for a service which was to be attended by those whose day was spent in working with their hands.

with the outward manifestation of it in this touching ceremony. But this was not the case, even" while the Apostles themselves poured out the wine and broke the bread which symbolized the perfect union of the members of Christ's body. The kiss of peace sometimes only veiled the hatred of warring factions. So St. Paul expresses to the Corinthians his grief at hearing that there were" divisions among them," which showed themselves when they met together for public worship. The earliest division of the Christian Church into opposing parties was caused by the Judaizing teachers, of whose factious efforts in Jerusalem and elsewhere we have already spoken. Their great object was to turn the newly converted Christians into Jewish proselytes, who should differ from other Jews only in the recognition of Jesus as the Messiah. In their view the natural posterity of Abraham were still as much as ever the theocratic nation, entitled to God's exclusive favor, to which the rest of mankind could only be admitted by becoming Jews. Those members of this party who were really sincere believers in Christianity, probably expected that the majority of their countrymen, finding their own national privileges thus acknowledged and maintained by the Christians, would on their part more willingly acknowledge Jesus as their Messiah; and thus they fancied that the Christian Church would gain a larger accession of members than could ever accrue to it from isolated Gentile converts: so that they probably justified their opposition to St. Paul on grounds not only of Jewish but of Christian policy; for they imagined that by his admission of uncircumcised Gentiles into the full membership of the Church, he was repelling far more numerous converts of Israelitish birth, who would otherwise have accepted the doctrine of Jesus.

This belief (which in itself, and seen from their point of view, in that age, was not unreasonable) might have enabled them to excuse to their consciences, as Christians, the bitterness of their opposition to the great Christian Apostle. But in considering them as a

party, we must bear in mind that they felt themselves more Jews than Christians. They acknowledged Jesus of Nazareth as the promised Messiah, and so far they were distinguished from the rest of their countrymen; but the Messiah himself, they thought, was only a " Savior of His people Israel;" and they ignored that true meaning of the ancient prophecies, which St. Paul was inspired to reveal to the Universal Church, teaching us that the" excellent things" which are spoken of the people of God, and the city of God, in the Old Testament, are to be by us interpreted of the" household of faith," and" the heavenly Jerusalem."

We have seen that the Judaisers at first insisted upon the observance of the law of Moses, and especially of circumcision, as an absolute requisite for admission into the Church," saying, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved."

But after the decision of the" Council of Jerusalem" it was impossible for them to require this condition; they therefore altered their tactics, and as the decrees of the Council seemed to assume that the Jewish Christians would continue to observe the Mosaic Law, the Judaisers took advantage of this to insist on the necessity of a separation between those who kept the whole Law and all others; they taught that the uncircumcised were in a lower condition as to spiritual privileges, and at a greater distance from God; and that only the circumcised converts were in a state of full acceptance with Him: in short, they kept the Gentile converts who would not submit to circumcision on the same footing as the proselytes of the gate, and treated the circumcised alone as proselytes of righteousness. When we comprehend all that was involved in this, we can easily understand the energetic opposition with which their teaching was met by St. Paul.

It was no mere question of outward observance, no matter of indifference (as it might at first sight appear), whether the Gentile converts were circumcised or not; on the contrary, the

question at stake was nothing less than this, whether Christians should be merely a Jewish sect under the bondage of a ceremonial law, and only distinguished from other Jews by believing that Jesus was the Messiah, or whether they should be the Catholic Church of Christ, owing no other allegiance but to Him, freed from the bondage of the letter, and bearing the seal of their inheritance no longer in their bodies, but in their hearts. We can understand now the full truth of his indignant remonstrance, "If ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing." And we can understand also the exasperation which his teaching must have produced in those who held the very antithesis of this, namely, that Christianity without circumcision was utterly worthless. Hence their long and desperate struggle to destroy the influence of St. Paul in every church which he founded or visited: in Antioch, in Galatia, in Corinth, in Jerusalem, and in Rome. For as he was in truth the great prophet divinely commissioned to reveal the catholicity of the Christian Church, so he appeared to them the great apostate, urged by the worst motives to break down the fence and root up the hedge, which separated the heritage of the Lord from a godless world.

We shall not be surprised at their success in creating divisions in the Churches to which they came, when we remember that the nucleus of all those Churches was a body of converted Jews and proselytes. The Judaizing emissaries were ready to flatter the prejudices of this influential body; nor did they abstain (as we know both from tradition and from his own letters) from insinuating the most scandalous charges against their great opponent.<sup>361</sup> And thus, in every Christian church established by St. Paul, there sprang up, as we shall see, a schismatic party, opposed to his teaching and hostile to his person.

<sup>361</sup> We learn from Epiphanius that the Ebionites accused St. Paul of renouncing Judaism because he was a rejected candidate for the hand of the High Priest's daughter.

This great Judaizing party was of course subdivided into various sections, united in their main object, but distinguished by minor shades of difference. Thus, we find at Corinth that it comprehended two factions, the one apparently distinguished from the other by a greater degree of violence. The more moderate called themselves the followers of Peter, or rather of Cephas, for they preferred to use his Hebrew name. These dwelt much upon Our Lord's special promises to Peter, and the necessary inferiority of St. Paul to him who was divinely ordained to be the rock whereon the Church should be built. They insinuated that St. Paul felt doubts about his own Apostolic authority, and did not dare to claim the right of maintenance, which Christ had expressly given to His true Apostles. They also depreciated him as a maintainer of celibacy, and contrasted him in this respect with the great Pillars of the Church," the brethren of the Lord and Cephas," who were married. (1 Cor. 9:5) And no doubt they declaimed against the audacity of a converted persecutor," born into the Church out of due time," in "withstanding to the face" the chief of the Apostles. A still more violent section called themselves, by a strange misnomer, the party of Christ.<sup>362</sup>

These appear to have laid great stress upon the fact, that Paul had never seen or known Our Lord while on earth; and they claimed for themselves a peculiar connection with Christ, as having either been among the number of His disciples, or at least as being in close connection with the "brethren of the Lord," and especially with James, the head of the Church at Jerusalem. To this subdivision probably belonged the emissaries who professed to come "from James," (Gal. 2:12) and who created a schism in

<sup>362</sup> Such appears the most natural explanation of the "Christ" party (1 Cor. 1:12). As to the views held by some eminent commentators on the passage, it is a question whether they are consistent with 2 Cor. 10:7. Surely St. Paul would never have said, "As those who claim some *imaginary communion* with Christ belong to Christ, *so also do I* belong to Christ."

the Church of Antioch. Connected to a certain extent with the Judaizing party, but yet to be carefully distinguished from it, were those Christians who are known in the New Testament as the "weak brethren." (Rom. 14:1,2; Rom. 15:1; 1 Cor. 8:1,7; 9:22) These were not a factious or schismatic party; nay, they were not, properly speaking, a party at all. They were individual converts of Jewish extraction, whose minds were not as yet sufficiently enlightened to comprehend the fullness of "the liberty with which Christ had made them free." Their conscience was sensitive, and filled with scruples, resulting from early habit and old prejudices; but they did not join in the violence of the Judaizing bigots, and there was even a danger lest they should be led, by the example of their more enlightened brethren, to wound their own conscience, by joining in acts which they, in their secret hearts, thought wrong.

Nothing is more beautiful than the tenderness and sympathy which St. Paul shows towards these weak Christians. While he plainly sets before them their mistake, and shows that their prejudices result from ignorance, yet he has no sterner rebuke for them than to express his confidence in their further enlightenment: "If in anything ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal this also unto you." (Phil. 3:15) So great is his anxiety lest the liberty which they witnessed in others should tempt them to blunt the delicacy of their moral feeling, that he warns his more enlightened converts to abstain from lawful indulgences, lest they cause the weak to stumble. "If meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no meat while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend." 1 Cor. 8:13), "Brethren, ye have been called unto liberty, only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another." (Gal. 5:13) "Destroy not him with thy meat for whom Christ died." (Rom. 14:15)

These latter warnings were addressed by St. Paul to a party very different from those of whom we have previously spoken; a party who called themselves (as we see from his epistle to

Corinth) by his own name and professed to follow his teaching, yet were not always animated by his spirit. There was an obvious danger lest the opponents of the Judaizing section of the Church should themselves imitate one of the errors of their antagonists, by combining as partisans rather than as Christians; St. Paul feels himself necessitated to remind them that the very idea of the Catholic Church excludes all party combinations from its pale, and that adverse factions, ranging themselves under human leaders, involve a contradiction to the Christian name. "Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were you baptized into the name of Paul?" "Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed?" (1 Cor. 1:13 and 3:5)

The Pauline party (as they called themselves) appear to have ridiculed the scrupulosity of their less enlightened brethren, and to have felt for them a contempt inconsistent with the spirit of Christian love. (Rom. 14:10) And in their opposition to the Judaisers, they showed a bitterness of feeling and violence of action, <sup>363</sup> too like that of their opponents. Some of them, also, were inclined to exult over the fall of God's ancient people, and to glory in their own position, as though it had been won by superior merit. These are rebuked by St. Paul for their "boasting," and warned against its consequences. "Be not high minded, but fear; for if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not thee." (Rom 11:17-22)

One section of this party seems to have united these errors with one still more dangerous to the simplicity of the Christian faith; they received Christianity more in an intellectual than a moral aspect; not as a spiritual religion, so much as a new system of philosophy. This was a phase of error most likely to occur among the disputatious reasoners (1 Cor. 1:20) who abounded in the great Greek cities; and, accordingly, we find the first trace of its

<sup>363</sup> See the admonitions addressed to the "spiritual" in Gal. 5:13,14,26, and 6:1-5.

existence at Corinth. There it took a peculiar form, in consequence of the arrival of Apollos as a Christian teacher, soon after the departure of St. Paul. He was a Jew of Alexandria, and as such had received that Grecian cultivation, and acquired that familiarity with Greek philosophy, which distinguished the more learned Alexandrian Jews. Thus he was able to adapt his teaching to the taste of his philosophizing hearers at Corinth far more than St. Paul could do; and, indeed, the latter had purposely abstained from even attempting this at Corinth. (1 Cor. 2:1)

Accordingly, the School which we have mentioned called themselves the followers of Apollos, and extolled his philosophic views, in opposition to the simple and unlearned simplicity which they ascribed to the style of St. Paul. It is easy to perceive in the temper of this portion of the Church the germ of that rationalizing tendency which afterwards developed itself into the Greek element of Gnosticism. Already, indeed, although that heresy was not yet invented, some of the worst opinions of the worst Gnostics found advocates among those who called themselves Christians: there was, even now, a party in the Church which defended fornication (see 1 Cor. 6:9-20) on theory, and which denied the resurrection of the dead. (see 1 Cor. 15:12) These heresies probably originated with those who (as we have observed) embraced Christianity as new philosophy; some of whom attempted, with a perverted ingenuity, to extract from its doctrines a justification of the immoral life to which they were addicted. Thus, St. Paul had taught that the law was dead to true Christians: meaning thereby, that those who were penetrated by the Holy Spirit, and made one with Christ, worked righteousness, not in consequence of a law of precepts and penalties, but through the necessary operation of the spiritual principle within them. For, as the law against theft might be said to be dead to a rich man (because he would feel no temptation to break it), so the whole moral law would be dead

to a perfect Christian; <sup>364</sup> hence, to a real Christian, it might in one sense be truly said that prohibitions were abolished. But the heretics of whom we are speaking took this proposition in a sense the very opposite to that which it really conveyed; and whereas St. Paul taught that prohibitions were abolished for the righteous, they maintained that all things were lawful to the wicked." "The law is dead" (1 Cor. 6:12) was their motto, and their practice was what the practice of Antinomians in all ages has been." "Let us continue in sin, that grace may abound," was their horrible perversion of the Evangelical revelation that God is love." "In Christ Jesus, neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision." (Gal. 5:6) "The letter killeth, but the Spirit giveth life." (2 Cor. 3:6) "Meat commendeth us not to God; for neither if we eat are we the better, nor if we eat not are we the worse; (1 Cor. 8:8) the kingdom of God is not meat and drink." (Rom. 14:17) Such were the words in which St. Paul expressed the great truth, that religion is not a matter of outward ceremonies, but of inward life. But these heretics caught up the words, and inferred that all outward acts were indifferent, and none could be criminal. They advocated the most unrestrained indulgence of the passions, and took for their maxim the worst precept of Epicurean atheism, "let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die." It is in the wealthy and vicious cities of Rome and Corinth that we find these errors first manifesting themselves; and in the voluptuous atmosphere of the latter it was not unnatural that there should be some who would seek in a new religion an excuse for their old vices, and others who would easily be led astray by those "evil communications" whose corrupting influence the Apostle himself mentions as the chief source of this mischief.

The Resurrection of the Dead was denied in the same city and by the same party; nor is it

---

<sup>364</sup> This state would be perfectly realized if the renovation of heart were complete; and it is practically realized in proportion as the Christian's spiritual union with Christ approaches its theoretic standard.

strange that, as the sensual Felix trembled when Paul preached to him of the judgment to come, so these profligate cavaliers shrank from the thought of that tribunal before which account must be given of the things done in the body.

Perhaps, also (as some have inferred from St. Paul's refutation of these heretics), they had misunderstood the Christian doctrine, which teaches us to believe in the resurrection of a spiritual body, as though it had asserted the reanimation of "this vile body" of "flesh and blood," which "cannot inherit the kingdom of God;" or it is possible that a materialistic philosophy<sup>365</sup> led them to maintain that when the body had crumbled away in the grave, or been consumed on the funeral pyre, nothing of the man remained in being. In either case, they probably explained away the doctrine of the Resurrection as a metaphor, similar to that employed by St. Paul when he says that baptism is the resurrection of the new convert; (Col. 2:12) thus they would agree with those later heretics (of whom were Hymeneus and Philetus) who taught "that the Resurrection was past already.

Hitherto we have spoken of those divisions and heresies which appear to have sprung up in the several churches founded by St. Paul at the earliest period of their history, almost immediately after their conversion. Beyond this period we are not yet arrived in St. Paul's life; and from his conversion even to the time of his imprisonment, his conflict was mainly with Jews or Judaisers. But there were other forms of error which harassed his declining years; and these we will now endeavor (although anticipating the course of our biography) shortly to describe, so that it may not be necessary afterwards to revert to the subject, and at the same time that particular cases, which will meet us in the Epistles, may be

<sup>365</sup> If this were the case, we must suppose them to have been of Epicurean tendencies, and so far different from the later Platonizing Gnostics who denied the Resurrection.

understood in their relation to the general religious aspect of the time.

We have seen that, in the earliest epoch of the Church, there were two elements of error which had already shown themselves; namely, the bigoted, exclusive, and superstitious tendency, which was of Jewish origin; and the pseudo philosophic, or rationalizing tendency, which was of Grecian birth. In the early period of which we have hitherto spoken, and onwards till the time of St. Paul's imprisonment at Rome, the first of these tendencies was the principal source of danger; but after this, as the Church enlarged itself, and the number of Gentile converts more and more exceeded that of Jewish Christians, the case was altered. The catholicity of the Church became an established fact, and the Judaizers, properly so called, ceased to exist as an influential party anywhere except in Palestine. Yet still, though the Jews were forced to give up their exclusiveness, and to acknowledge the uncircumcised as "fellow heirs and of the same body," their superstition remained, and became a fruitful source of mischief. On the other hand, those who sought for nothing more in Christianity than a new philosophy, were naturally increased in number, in proportion as the Church gained converts from the educated classes; the lecturers in the schools of Athens, the "wisdom seekers" of Corinth, the Antinomian perverters of St. Paul's teaching, and the Platonizing rabbis of Alexandria, all would share in this tendency. The latter, indeed, as represented by the learned Philo, had already attempted to construct a system of Judaic Platonism, which explained away almost all the peculiarities of the Mosaic theology into accordance with the doctrines of the Academy. And thus the way was already paved for the introduction of that most curious amalgam of Hellenic and Oriental speculation with Jewish superstition, which was afterwards called the Gnostic heresy. It is a disputed point at what time this heresy made

its first appearance in the Church; some <sup>366</sup> think that it had already commenced in the Church of Corinth when St. Paul warned them to beware of the knowledge (Gnosis) which puffeth up; others maintain that it did not originate till the time of Basilides, long after the last Apostle had fallen asleep in Jesus. Perhaps, however, we may consider this as a difference rather about the definition of a term than the history of a sect. If we define Gnosticism to be that combination of Orientalism and Platonism held by the followers of Basilides or Valentinus, and refuse the title of Gnostic to any but those who adopted their systems, no doubt we must not place the Gnostics among the heretics of the Apostolic age. But if, on the other hand (as seems most natural), we define a Gnostic to be one who claims the possession of a peculiar "Gnosis" (i.e. a deep and philosophic insight into the mysteries of theology, unattainable by the vulgar), then it is indisputable that Gnosticism had begun when St. Paul warned Timothy against those who laid claim to a knowledge (Gnosis) <sup>367</sup> falsely so called. And, moreover, we find that, even in the Apostolic age, these arrogant speculators had begun to blend with their Hellenic philosophy certain fragments of Jewish superstition, which afterwards were

---

<sup>366</sup> This is the opinion of Dr. Burton, the great English authority on the Gnostic heresy (*Lectures*, pp. 84,85) We cannot refer to this eminent theologian without expressing our obligation to his writings, and our admiration for that union of profound learning with clear good sense and candor which distinguishes him. His premature death robbed the Church of England of a writer who, had his life been spared, would have been inferior to none of its brightest ornaments.

<sup>367</sup> Neander well observes that the essential feature in Gnosticism is its re-establishing an *aristocracy of knowledge* in religion, and rejecting the Christian principle which recognizes no religious distinctions between rich and poor, learned and ignorant. (*Church History*, sect. 4) So in Hippolytus's recently discovered *Refutation of Heresies* we find that some of the earlier Gnostics are represented as interpreting the "good ground" in the parable of the Sower to mean the higher order of intellects.

incorporated into the Cabbala. <sup>368</sup> In spite, however of the occurrence of such Jewish elements, those heresies which troubled the later years of St. Paul, and afterwards of St. John were essentially rather of Gentile than of Jewish origin. So far as they agreed with the later Gnosticism, this must certainly have been the case, for we know that it was a characteristic of all the Gnostic sects to despise the Jewish Scriptures. Moreover, those who laid claims to "Gnosis" at Corinth (as we have seen) were a Gentile party, who professed to adopt St. Paul's doctrine of the abolition of the law, and perverted it into Antinomianism : in short, they were the opposite extreme to the Judaizing party. Nor need we be surprised to find that some of these philosophizing heretics adopted some of the wildest superstitions of the Jews; for these very superstitions were not so much the natural growth of Judaism as engrafted upon it by its Rabbinical corrupters and derived from Oriental sources. And there was a strong affinity between the neoPlatonic philosophy of Alexandria and the Oriental theosophy which sprang from Buddhism and other kindred systems, and which degenerated into the practice of magic and incantations.

It is not necessary, however, that we should enter into any discussion of the subsequent development of these errors; our subject only requires that we give an outline of the forms which they assumed during the lifetime of St. Paul; and this we can only do very imperfectly, because the allusions in St. Paul's writings are so few and so brief, that they give us but little information. Still, they suffice to show the main features of the heresies which he condemns, especially when we compare them with notices in other parts of the New Testament, and with the history of the Church in the succeeding century.

---

<sup>368</sup> Thus the genealogies mentioned in the Pastoral Epistles were probably those speculations about the emanations of spiritual beings found in the Cabbala, at least, such is Burton's opinion. And the angel worship at Colosse belonged to the same class of superstitions.

We may consider these heresies, first, in their doctrinal, and, secondly, in their practical, aspect. With regard to the former, we find that their general characteristic was the claim to a deep philosophical insight into the mysteries of religion. Thus the Colossians are warned against the false teachers who would deceive them by a vain affectation of "Philosophy," and who were "puffed up by a fleshly mind." (Col. ii. 8, 18.) So, in the Epistle to Timothy, St. Paul speaks of these heretics as falsely claiming "knowledge" (gnosis). And in the Epistle to the Ephesians (so called) he seems to allude to the same boastful assumption, when he speaks of the love of Christ as surpassing "knowledge," in a passage which contains other apparent allusions to Gnostic doctrine. Connected with this claim to a deeper insight into truth than that possessed by the uninitiated, was the manner in which some of these heretics explained away the facts of revelation by an allegorical interpretation. Thus we find that Hymeneus and Philetus maintained that "the Resurrection was past already. We have seen that a heresy apparently identical with this existed at a very early period in the Church of Corinth, among the free thinking, or pseudo philosophical, party there; and all the Gnostic sects of the second century were united in denying the resurrection of the dead.

Again, we find the Colossian heretics introducing a worship of angels," intruding into those things which they have not seen:" and so, in the Pastoral Epistles, the "self styled Gnostics" (1 Tim. vi. 20) are occupied with "endless genealogies," which were probably fanciful myths, concerning the origin and emanation of spiritual beings.<sup>369</sup> This latter is one of the points in which Jewish superstition was blended with Gentile speculation; for we

---

<sup>369</sup> According to the Cabbala, there were ten Sephiroth, or emanations proceeding from God, which appear to have suggested the Gnostic eons. Upon this theory was grafted a system of magic, consisting mainly of the use of Scriptural words to produce supernatural effects.

find in the Cabbala,<sup>370</sup> or collection of Jewish traditional theology, many fabulous statements concerning such emanations. It seems to be a similar superstition which is stigmatized in the Pastoral Epistles as consisting of "profane and old wives" fables;" (1 Tim. 4:7) and, again, of "Jewish fables and commandments of men." (Tit. 1:14) The Gnostics of the second century adopted and systematized this theory of emanations, and it became one of the most peculiar and distinctive features of their heresy. But this was not the only Jewish element in the teaching of these Colossian heretics; we find also that they made a point of conscience of observing the Jewish Sabbaths<sup>371</sup> and festivals, and they are charged with clinging to outward rites (Col. 2:3, 20), and making distinctions between the lawfulness of different kinds of food.

In their practical results, these heresies which we are considering had a twofold direction. On one side was an ascetic tendency, such as we find at Colosse, showing itself by an arbitrarily invented worship of God, an affectation of self humiliation and mortification of the flesh. So, in the Pastoral Epistles, we find the prohibition of marriage,<sup>372</sup> the enforced abstinence from food, and other bodily mortifications, mentioned as characteristics of heresy.<sup>373</sup> If this asceticism

---

<sup>370</sup> St. Paul denounces the tradition of men (Col. 2:8) as the source of these errors; and the word Cabbala means tradition. Dr. Burton says, the Cabbala had certainly grown into a system at the time of the destruction of Jerusalem; and there is also evidence that it had been cultivated by the Jewish doctors long before.

<sup>371</sup> This does not prove them, however, to have been Jews, for the superstitious heathen were also in the habit of adopting some of the rites of Judaism, under the idea of their producing some magical effect upon them; as we find from the Roman satirists. See also some remarks on the Colossian heretics in our introductory remarks on the Epistle to the Colossians.

<sup>372</sup> Which certainly was the reverse of the Jewish exaltation of marriage.

<sup>373</sup> St. Paul declares that these errors shall come "in the last days" (2 Tim. 3:1); but St. John says "the last

originated from the Jewish element which has been mentioned above, it may be compared with the practice of the Essenes, whose existence shows that such asceticism was not inconsistent with Judaism, although it was contrary to the views of the Judaizing party properly so called. On the other hand, it may have arisen from that abhorrence of matter, and anxiety to free the soul from the dominion of the body, which distinguished the Alexandrian Platonists, and which (derived from them) became a characteristic of some of the Gnostic sects.

But this asceticism was a weak and comparatively innocent form, in which the practical results of this incipient Gnosticism exhibited themselves. Its really dangerous manifestation was derived, not from its Jewish, but from its Heathen element. We have seen how this showed itself from the first at Corinth; how men sheltered their immoralities under the name of Christianity, and even justified them by a perversion of its doctrines. Such teaching could not fail to find a ready audience wherever there were found vicious lives and hardened consciences. Accordingly it was in the luxurious and corrupt population of Asia Minor, <sup>374</sup> that this early Gnosticism assumed its worst form of immoral practice defended by Antinomian

---

days" were come in his time (1 John 2:18); and it is implied by St. Paul's words that the evils he denounces were already in action; just as he had said before to the Thessalonians, "the mystery of lawlessness is already working" (2 Thess. 2:7), where the peculiar expressions "lawlessness" and "the lawless one" seem to point to the Antinomian character of these heresies.

<sup>374</sup> Both at Colosse and in Crete it seems to have been the Jewish form of these heresies which predominated. At Colosse they took an ascetic direction; in Crete, among a simpler and more provincial population, the false teachers seem to have been hypocrites, who encouraged the vices to which their followers were addicted, and inoculated them with foolish superstitions (Tit. 1:14; 3:9); but we do not find in these Epistles any mention of the theoretic Antinomianism which existed in some of the great cities.

doctrine. Thus, in the Epistle to the Ephesians, St. Paul warns his readers against the sophistical arguments by which certain false teachers strove to justify the sins of impurity, and to persuade them that the acts of the body could not contaminate the soul, "Let no man deceive you with vain words; for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience." (Eph. 5:6) Hymeneus and Philetus are the first leaders of this party mentioned by name: we have seen that they agreed with the Corinthian Antinomians in denying the Resurrection, and they agreed with them no less in practice than in theory. Of the first of them it is expressly said that he (1 Tim. 1:19,20) had "cast away a good conscience," and of both we are told that they showed themselves not to belong to Christ, because they had not His seal: this seal being described as twofold "The Lord knoweth them that are His," and "Let everyone that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity." (2 Tim. 2:19) St. Paul appears to imply that though they boasted their "knowledge of God," yet the Lord had no knowledge of them; as our Savior had Himself declared that to the claims of such false disciples He would reply, "I never knew you; depart from me, ye workers of iniquity." But in the same Epistle where these heresiarchs are condemned, St. Paul intimates that their principles were not yet fully developed; he warns Timothy (2 Tim. 3) that an outburst of immorality and lawlessness must be shortly expected within the Church beyond anything which had yet been experienced. The same anticipation appears in his farewell address to the Ephesian presbyters, and even at the early period of his Epistle to the Thessalonians; and we see from the Epistles of St. Peter and St. Jude, and from the Apocalypse of St. John, all addressed (it should be remembered) to the Churches of Asia Minor, that this prophetic warning was soon fulfilled. We find that many Christians used their liberty as a cloak of maliciousness; (1 Pet. 2:16)" promising their hearers liberty, yet themselves the slaves of corruption;" (2 Pet. 2:19)" turning the grace of God into lasciviousness;" (Jude 4) that they

were justly condemned by the surrounding Heathen for their crimes, and even suffered punishment as robbers and murderers. (1 Pet. 4:15) They were also infamous for the practice of the pretended arts of magic and witchcraft, (Rev. 2:20; cf. Rev. 9:21; 21:8; 22:15) which they may have borrowed either from the Jewish soothsayers and exorcisers, (see Acts 19:13) or from the Heathen professors of magical arts who so much abounded at the same epoch. Some of them, who are called the followers of Balaam in the Epistles of Peter and Jude, and the Nicolaitans (an equivalent name) in the Apocalypse, taught their followers to indulge in the sensual impurities, and even in the idol feasts of the Heathen.<sup>375</sup> We find, moreover, that

<sup>375</sup> Such, at least, seems the natural explanation of the words in Rev. 2:20; for we can scarcely suppose so strong a condemnation if the offence had been only eating meat which had once formed part of a sacrifice. It is remarkable how completely the Gnostics of the second century resembled these earlier heretics in all the points here mentioned. Their immorality is the subject of constant animadversion in the writings of the Fathers, who tell us that the calumnies which were cast upon the Christians by the Heathen were caused by the vices of the Gnostics. Irenaeus asserts that they said, 'as gold deposited in mud does not lose its beauty, so they themselves, whatever may be their outward immorality, cannot be injured by it, nor lose their spiritual substance.' And so Justin Martyr speaks of heretics, who said 'that though they live sinful lives, yet, if they know God, the Lord will not impute to them sin.' And Epiphanius gives the most horrible details of the enormities which they practiced. Again, their addiction to magical arts was notorious. And their leaders, Basilides and Valentinus, are accused of acting like the Nicolaitans of the Apocalypse, to avoid persecution. Such accusations may, no doubt, be slanders, as far as those leaders were individually concerned. The increased knowledge of them which we have lately derived from the publication of Hippolytus's 'Refutation of Heresies' leads us to think of them as bold speculators, but not as bad men. Yet we cannot doubt that their philosophical speculations degenerated into the most superstitious theosophy in the hands of their followers. And the details furnished by Hippolytus prove that many of the Gnostics fully deserved the charges of immorality commonly brought against them.

these false disciples, with their licentiousness in morals, united anarchy in politics, and resistance to law and government. They" walked after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despised governments." And thus they gave rise to those charges against Christianity itself, which were made by the Heathen writers of the time, whose knowledge of the new religion was naturally taken from those amongst its professors who rendered themselves notorious by falling under the judgment of the Law.

When thus we contemplate the true character of these divisions and heresies which beset the Apostolic Church, we cannot but acknowledge that it needed all those miraculous gifts with which it was endowed, and all that inspired wisdom which presided over its organisation, to ward off dangers which threatened to blight its growth and destroy its very existence. In its earliest infancy, two powerful and venomous foes twined themselves round its very cradle; but its strength was according to its day; with a supernatural vigor it rent off the coils of Jewish bigotry and stifled the poisonous breath of Heathen licentiousness; but the peril was mortal, and the struggle was for life or death.

Had the Church's fate been subjected to the ordinary laws which regulate the history of earthly commonwealths, it could scarcely have escaped one of two opposite destinies, either of which must have equally defeated (if we may so speak) the world's salvation. Either it must have been cramped into a Jewish sect, according to the wish of the majority of its earliest members, or (having escaped this immediate extinction) it must have added one more to the innumerable schools of Heathen philosophy, subdividing into a hundred branches, whose votaries would some of them have sunk into Oriental superstitions, others into Pagan voluptuousness. If we need any proof how narrowly the Church escaped this latter peril, we have only to look at the fearful power of Gnosticism in the succeeding century. And, indeed, the more we consider the elements of which every Christian community was originally composed, the more must we wonder

how the little flock of the wise and good could have successfully resisted the overwhelming contagion of folly and wickedness.

In every city the nucleus of the Church consisted of Jews and Jewish proselytes; on this foundation was superadded a miscellaneous mass of Heathen converts, almost exclusively from the lowest classes, baptized, indeed, into the name of Jesus, but still with all the habits of a life of idolatry and vice clinging to them. How was it, then, that such a society could escape the two temptations which assailed it just at the time when they were most likely to be fatal? While as yet the Jewish element preponderated, a fanatical party, commanding almost necessarily the sympathies of the Jewish portion of the society, made a zealous and combined effort to reduce Christianity to Judaism, and subordinate the Church to the synagogue.

Over their great opponent, the one Apostle of the Gentiles, they won a temporary triumph, and saw him consigned to prison and to death. How was it that the very hour of their victory was the epoch from which we date their failure? Again, this stage is passed, the Church is thrown open to the Gentiles, and crowds flock in, some attracted by wonder at the miracles they see, some by hatred of the government under which they live, and by hopes that they may turn the Church into an organized conspiracy against law and order; and even the best, as yet unsettled in their faith, and ready to exchange their new belief for a newer, "carried about with every wind of doctrine." At such an epoch, a systematic theory is devised, reconciling the profession of Christianity with the practice of immorality; its teachers proclaim that Christ has freed them from the law, and that the man who has attained true spiritual enlightenment is above the obligations of outward morality; and with this seducing philosophy for the Gentile they readily combine the Cabbalistic superstitions of Rabbinical tradition to captivate the Jew.

Who could wonder if, when such incendiaries applied their torch to such materials, a flame

burst forth which well nigh consumed the fabric? Surely that day of trial was "revealed in fire," and the building which was able to abide the flame was nothing less than the temple of God.

It is painful to be compelled to acknowledge among the Christians of the Apostolic Age the existence of so many forms of error and sin. It was a pleasing dream which represented the primitive Church as a society of angels; and it is not without a struggle that we bring ourselves to open our eyes and behold the reality. But yet it is a higher feeling which bids us thankfully recognize the truth that "there is no partiality with God;" (Acts 10:34) that He has never supernaturally coerced any generation of mankind into virtue, nor rendered schism and heresy impossible in any age of the Church. So St. Paul tells his converts (1 Cor. 11:19) that there must needs be heresies among them, that the good may be tried and distinguished from the bad; implying that, without the possibility of a choice, there would be no test of faith or holiness. And so Our Lord Himself compared His Church to a net cast into the sea, which gathered fish of all kinds, both good and bad; nor was its purity to be attained by the exclusion of evil, till the end should come.

Therefore, if we sigh, as well we may, for the realization of an ideal which Scripture paints to us and imagination embodies, but which our eyes seek for and cannot find; if we look vainly and with earnest longings for the appearance of that glorious Church, "without spot or wrinkle or any such thing," the fitting bride of a heavenly spouse if it may calm our impatience to recollect that no such Church has ever existed upon earth, while yet we do not forget that it has existed and does exist in heaven. In the very lifetime of the Apostles, no less than now, "the earnest expectation of the creature waited for the manifestation of the sons of God;" miracles did not convert; inspiration did not sanctify; then, as now, imperfection and evil clung to the members, and clogged the energies, of the kingdom of God; now, as then, Christians are fellow heirs, and of the same body with the spirits of just men made perfect; now, as then,

the communion of saints unites into one family the Church militant with the Church triumphant.

## Chapter 14

### Departure from Antioch

The next period of St. Paul's life opens with a third journey through the interior of Asia Minor. (Acts 18:23) In the short stay which he had made at Ephesus on his return from his second journey, he had promised to come again to that city, if the providence of God should allow it. This promise he was enabled to fulfill, after a hasty visit to the metropolis of the Jewish nation, and a longer sojourn in the first metropolis of the Gentile Church.

It would lead us into long and useless discussions, if we were to speculate on the time spent at Antioch, and the details of the Apostle's occupation in the scene of his early labors. We have already stated our reasons for believing that the discussions which led to the Council at Jerusalem, took place at an earlier period, as well as the quarrel between St. Peter and St. Paul concerning the propriety of concession to the Judaizers. But without knowing the particular form of the controversies brought before him, or the names of those Christian teachers with whom he conferred, we have seen enough to make us aware that imminent dangers from the Judaizing party surrounded the Church, and that Antioch was a favorable place for meeting the machinations of this party, as well as a convenient starting point for a journey undertaken to strengthen those communities that were likely to be invaded by false teachers from Judea.

It is evident that it was not St. Paul's only object to proceed with all haste to Ephesus: nor indeed is it credible that he could pass through the regions of Cilicia and Lycaonia, Phrygia and Galatia, without remaining to confirm those Churches which he had founded himself, and some of which he had visited twice. We are plainly told that his journey was occupied in this work, and the few words which refer to this subject imply a systematic visitation. He would

be the more anxious to establish them in the true principles of the Gospel, in proportion as he was aware of the widely spreading influence of the Judaizers.

Another specific object, not unconnected with the healing of divisions, was before him during the whole of this missionary journey, a collection for the relief of the poor Christians in Judea.<sup>376</sup> It had been agreed, at the meeting of the Apostolic Council (Gal. 2:9, 10), that while some should go to the Heathen, and others to the Circumcision, the former should carefully, remember the poor; and this we see St. Paul, on the present journey among the Gentile Churches," forward to do." We even know the "order which he gave to the Churches of Galatia" (1 Cor. xvi. 1, 2). He directed that each person should lay by in store, on the first day of the week, according as God had prospered him, that the collection should be deliberately made, and prepared for an opportunity of being taken to Jerusalem.

### St. Paul's Companions

We are not able to state either the exact route which St. Paul followed, or the names of the companions by whom he was attended. As regards the latter subject, however, two points may be taken for granted, that Silas ceased to be, and that Timothy continued to be, an associate of the Apostle. It is most probable that Silas remained behind in Jerusalem, whence he had first accompanied Barnabas with the Apostolic letter, and where, on the first mention of his name, he is stated to have held a leading position in the Church. (Acts 15:22) He is not again mentioned in connection with the Apostle of the Gentiles. The next place in Scripture where his name occurs, is in the letter of the Apostle of the Circumcision (1 Pet. 5:12), which is addressed to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia,

<sup>376</sup> The steady pursuit of this object in the whole course of this journey may be traced through the following passages: 1 Cor. 16:1-4; 2 Cor. 8 and 9; Rom. 15:25,26; Acts 24:17.

and Bithynia. There, Silvanus is spoken of as one not unknown to the persons addressed, but as "a faithful brother unto them;" by him the letter was sent which "exhorted" the Christians in the north and west of Asia Minor, and "testified that that was the true grace of God wherein they stood;" and the same disciple is seen, on the last mention of his name, as on the first, to be co operating for the welfare of the Church, both with St. Peter and St. Paul. <sup>377</sup>

It may be considered, on the other hand, probable, if not certain, that Timothy was with the Apostle through the whole of this journey. Abundant mention of him is made, both in the Acts and the Epistles, in connection with St. Paul's stay at Ephesus, and his subsequent movements. <sup>378</sup> Of the other companions who were undoubtedly with him at Ephesus, we cannot say with confidence whether they attended him from Antioch, or joined him afterwards at some other point. But Erastus (Acts 19: may have remained with him since the time of his first visit to Corinth, and Caius and Aristarchus (Acts 19: since the still earlier period of his journey through Macedonia. Perhaps we have stronger reasons for concluding that Titus, who, though not mentioned in the Acts, was certainly of great service in the second missionary journey, traveled with Paul and Timothy through the earlier part of it. In the frequent mention which is made of him in the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, he appears as the Apostle's laborious minister, and as a source of his consolation and support, hardly less strikingly, than the disciple whom he had taken on the previous journey from Lystra and Iconium. <sup>379</sup>

<sup>377</sup> Compare again the account of the Council of Jerusalem and the mission of Silas and Barnabas.

<sup>378</sup> See Acts 19:22; 1 Cor. 4:17; 16:10; 2 Cor. 1:1; Rom. 16:21; Acts 20:4.

<sup>379</sup> If we compare 2 Cor. 12:18 with 1 Cor. 16:11, 12, it is natural to infer that the bearers of the First Epistle (from Ephesus to Corinth) were Titus, and some brother, who is unnamed, but probably identical with one of the two brethren sent on the subsequent mission (2 Cor. 8:16-24), and with the Second Epistle (from

### Journey through Phrygia and Galatia

Whatever might be the exact route which the Apostle followed from Antioch to Ephesus, he would certainly, as we have said, revisit those Churches, which twice <sup>380</sup> before had known him as their teacher. He would pass over the Cilician plain on the warm southern shore, and the high table land of Lycaonia on the other side of the Pass of Taurus. He would see once more his own early home on the banks of the Cydnus ; and Timothy would be once more in the scenes of his childhood at the base of the Kara Dagh. After leaving Tarsus, the cities of Derbe, Lystra, and Iconium, possibly also Antioch in Pisidia, would be the primary objects in the Apostle's progress. Then we come to Phrygia and Galatia, both vague and indeterminate districts, which he had visited once, (Acts 16:6) and through which, as before, we cannot venture to lay down a route. Though the visitation of the Churches was systematic, we need not conclude that the same exact course was followed. Since the order in which the two districts are mentioned is different from that in the former instance, <sup>381</sup> we are at liberty to suppose that he traveled first from Lycaonia through Cappadocia into Galatia, and then by Western Phrygia to the coast of the Aegean. In this last part of his progress we are in still greater doubt as to the route, and one question of interest is involved in our opinion concerning it. The great road from Ephesus by Iconium to the Euphrates

---

Macedonia to Corinth). See also 2 Cor. 8:6. This view is advocated by Prof Stanley in his recently published Commentary; but it has been put forth independently, and more fully elaborated by Mr. Lightfoot in the Cambridge Journal of Classical and Sacred Philology (June 1855).

<sup>380</sup> He had been in Lycaonia on the first and second missionary journeys, in Cilicia on the second; but he had previously been there at least once since his conversion.

<sup>381</sup> Compare Acts 16:6 with 18:23. In both cases we should observe that the phrase "*region* (or *country*) of Galatia" is used. The Greek in each passage is the same.

passed along the valley of the Meander, and near the cities of Laodicea, Colosse, and Hierapolis; and we should naturally suppose that the Apostle would approach the capital of Asia along this well traveled line. But the arguments are so strong for believing that St. Paul was never personally at Colosse,<sup>382</sup> that it is safer to imagine him following some road further to the north, such as that, for instance, which, after passing near Thyatira, entered the valley of the Hermus at Sardis.

### Apollos at Ephesus and Corinth

Thus, then, we may conceive the Apostle arrived at that region, where he was formerly in hesitation concerning his future progress; (Acts 16:6 8) the frontier district of Asia and Phrygia,; the mountains which contain the upper waters<sup>383</sup> of the Hermus and Meander. And now our attention is suddenly called away to another preacher of the Gospel whose name, next to that of the Apostles, is perhaps the most important in the early history of the Church. There came at this time to Ephesus, either directly from Egypt by sea, as Aquila or Priscilla from Corinth, or by some route through the intermediate countries, like that of St. Paul himself, a "disciple" named Apollos, a native of Alexandria. This visit occurred at a critical time, and led to grave consequences in reference to the establishment of Christian truth, and the growth of parties in the Church; while the religious community (if so it may be called) to which he belonged at the time of his arrival, furnishes us with one of the most interesting links between the Gospels and the Acts.

Apollos, along with twelve others, (see Acts 19:1 7) who are soon afterwards mentioned at Ephesus, was acquainted with Christianity only

<sup>382</sup> From Col. 2:1 we should naturally infer that St. Paul had never been personally among the Colossians.

<sup>383</sup> This part of the table-land of the interior is what is meant by "the higher districts," Acts 19:1. It is needless to say that the word "coasts" in the Authorized Version has no reference to the sea. Herodotus uses a similar expression of this region.

so far as it had been made known by John the Baptist. They" knew only the baptism of John." (Acts 28:25) From the great part which was acted by the forerunner of Christ in the first announcement of the Gospel, and from the effect produced on the Jewish nation by his appearance, and the number of disciples who came to receive at his hands the baptism of repentance, we should expect some traces of his influence to appear in the subsequent period, during which the Gospel was spreading beyond Judea. Many Jews from other countries received from the Baptist their knowledge of the Messiah, and carried with them this knowledge on their return from Palestine. We read of a heretical sect, at a much later period, who held John the Baptist to have been himself the Messiah.<sup>384</sup>

### Disciples of John the Baptist

But in a position intermediate between this deluded party, and those who were traveling as teachers of the full and perfect Gospel, there were doubtless many, among the floating Jewish population of the Empire, whose knowledge of Christ extended only to that which had been preached on the banks of the Jordan. That such persons should be found at Ephesus, the natural meeting place of all religious sects and opinions, is what we might have supposed *a priori*. Their own connection with Judea, or the connection of their teachers with Judea, had been broken before the day of Pentecost. Thus their Christianity was at the same point at which it had stood at the commencement of our Lord's ministry. They were ignorant of the full meaning of the death of Christ; possibly they did not even know the fact of His resurrection; and they were certainly ignorant of the mission of the Comforter. (Acts 19:2)

But they knew that the times of the Messiah were come, and that one had appeared in whom

<sup>384</sup> The Zabeans. So in the *Clementine Recognitions* are mentioned some "of John's disciples, who preached their master as though he were Christ."

the prophecies were fulfilled. That voice had reached them, which cried, "Prepare ye the way of the Lord" (Isa. 50:3). They felt that the axe was laid to the root of the tree, that "the kingdom of Heaven was at hand," that "the knowledge of Salvation was come to those that sit in darkness" (Luke 1:77), and that the children of Israel were everywhere called to "repent." Such as were in this religious condition were evidently prepared for the full reception of Christianity, so soon as it was presented to them; and we see that they were welcomed by St. Paul and the Christians at Ephesus as fellow disciples of the same Lord and Master.

In some respects Apollos was distinguished from the other disciples of John the Baptist, who are alluded to at the same place, and nearly at the same time. There is much significance in the first fact that is stated, that he was "born at Alexandria." Something has been said by us already concerning the Jews of Alexandria, and their theological influence in the age of the Apostles. 5 In the establishment of a religion which was intended to be the complete fulfillment of Judaism, and to be universally supreme in the Gentile world, we should expect Alexandria to bear her part, as well as Jerusalem. The Hellenistic learning fostered by the foundations of the Ptolemies might be made the handmaid of the truth, no less than the older learning of Judea and the schools of the Hebrews. As regards Apollos, he was not only an Alexandrian Jew by birth, but he had a high reputation for an eloquent and forcible power of speaking, and had probably been well trained in the rhetorical schools on the banks of the Nile. <sup>385</sup>

But though he was endued with the eloquence of a Greek orator, the subject of his study and teaching were the Scriptures of his forefathers. The character which he bore in the synagogues was that of a man "mighty in the Scriptures." In addition to these advantages of birth and

<sup>385</sup> The AV is probably correct in rendering the word "eloquent" rather than "learned," inasmuch as in the same verse he is called "mighty in the Scriptures."

education, he seems to have had the most complete and systematic instruction in the Gospel which a disciple of John could possibly receive. <sup>386</sup> Whether from the Baptist himself, or from some of those who traveled into other lands with his teaching as their possession, Apollos had received full and accurate instruction in the "way of the Lord." We are further told that his character was marked by a fervent zeal (Acts 18:25) for spreading the truth. Thus we may conceive of him as, traveling, like a second Baptist, beyond the frontiers of Judea, expounding the prophecies of the Old Testament, announcing that the times of the Messiah were come, and calling the Jews to repentance in the spirit of Elias. <sup>387</sup> Hence he was, like his great teacher, diligently "preparing the way of the Lord." Though ignorant of the momentous facts which had succeeded the Resurrection and Ascension, he was turning the hearts of the "disobedient to the wisdom of the just," and "making ready a people for the Lord," (Luke 1:16,17) whom he was soon to know "more perfectly." Himself "a burning and a shining light," he bore witness to "that Light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world," as, on the other hand, he was a "swift witness" against those Israelites whose lives were unholy, and came among them "to purify the sons of Levi, that they might offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness," and to proclaim that, if they were unfaithful, God was still able "to raise up children unto Abraham."

### Apollos in Ephesus

Thus burning with zeal, and confident of the truth of what he had learnt, he spoke out boldly in the synagogue. An intense interest must have been excited about this time concerning the

<sup>386</sup> Literally, "he was catechetically instructed in the way of the Lord."

<sup>387</sup> He was probably able to go further in Christian teaching than John the Baptist could do, by giving an account of the life of Jesus Christ. So far his knowledge was *accurate*. Further instruction from Aquila and Priscilla made it *more accurate*.

Messiah in the synagogue at Ephesus. Paul had recently been there, and departed with the promise of return. Aquila and Priscilla, though taking no forward part as public teachers, would diligently keep the subject of the Apostle's instruction before the mind of the Israelites. And now an Alexandrian Jew presented himself among them, bearing testimony to the same Messiah with singular eloquence, and with great power in the interpretation of Scripture. Thus an unconscious preparation was made for the arrival of the Apostle, who was even now traveling towards Ephesus through the uplands of Asia Minor.

The teaching of Apollos, though eloquent, learned, and zealous, was seriously defective. But God had provided among his listeners those who could instruct him more perfectly. Aquila and Priscilla felt that he was proclaiming the same truth in which they had been instructed at Corinth. They could inform him that they had met with one who had taught with authority far more concerning Christ than had been known even to John the Baptist; and they could recount to him the miraculous gifts, which attested the outpouring of the Holy Ghost. Thus they attached themselves closely to Apollos; and gave him complete instruction in that "way of the Lord," which he had already taught accurately, though imperfectly: and the learned Alexandrian obtained from the tentmakers a knowledge of that "mystery" which the ancient Scriptures had only partially revealed.

This providential meeting with Aquila and Priscilla in Asia became the means of promoting the spread of the Gospel in Achaia. Now that Apollos was made fully acquainted with the Christian doctrine, his zeal urged him to go where it had been firmly established by an Apostle. (Acts 18:27) It is possible, too, that some news received from Corinth might lead him to suppose that he could be of active service there in the cause of truth. The Christians of Ephesus encouraged him in this intention, and gave him "letters of commendation" to their brethren across the

Aegean. On his arrival at Corinth, he threw himself at once among those Jews who had rejected St. Paul, and argued with them publicly and zealously on the ground of their Scriptures, and thus became "a valuable support to those who had already believed through the grace of God;" for he proved with power that that Jesus who had been crucified at Jerusalem, and whom Paul was proclaiming throughout the world, was indeed the Christ. Thus he watered where Paul had planted, and God gave an abundant increase. (1 Cor. 3:6.) And yet evil grew up side by side with the good. For while he was a valuable aid to the Christians, and a formidable antagonist to the Jews, and while he was honestly co-operating in Paul's great work of evangelizing the world, he became the occasion of fostering party spirit among the Corinthians, and was unwillingly held up as a rival of the Apostle himself. In this city of rhetoricians and sophists, the erudition and eloquent speaking of Apollos were contrasted with the unlearned simplicity with which St. Paul had studiously presented the Gospel to his Corinthian hearers. Thus many attached themselves to the new teacher, and called themselves by the name of Apollos, while others ranged themselves as the party of Paul (1 Cor. 1:12), forgetting that Christ could not be "divided," and that Paul and Apollos were merely "ministers by whom they had believed." (1 Cor. 3:5.) We have no reason to imagine that Apollos himself encouraged or tolerated such unchristian divisions. A proof of his strong feeling to the contrary, and of his close attachment to St. Paul, is furnished by that letter to the Corinthians, which will soon be brought under our notice, where, after vehement rebukes of the schismatic spirit prevailing among the Corinthians, it is said, "touching our brother Apollos," that he was unwilling to return to them at that particular time, though St. Paul himself had "greatly desired it"

### Arrival of St. Paul at Ephesus

But now the Apostle himself is about to arrive in Ephesus. His residence in this place, like his residence in Antioch and Corinth, is a subject to

which our attention is particularly called. Therefore, all the features of the city its appearance, its history, the character of its population, its political and mercantile relations possess the utmost interest for us. We shall defer such description to a future chapter, and limit ourselves here to what may set before the reader the geographical position of Ephesus, as the point in which St. Paul's journey from Antioch terminated for the present.

We imagined him about the frontier of Asia and Phrygia, on his approach from the interior to the sea. From this region of volcanic mountains, a tract of country extends to the Aegean, which is watered by two of the long western rivers, the Hermus and the Meander, and which is celebrated through an extended period of classical history, and is sacred to us as the scene of the Churches of the Apocalypse.<sup>388</sup> Near the mouth of one of these rivers is Smyrna; near that of the other is Miletus.

The islands of Chios and Samos are respectively opposite the projecting portions of coast, where the rivers flow by these cities to the sea.<sup>389</sup>

Between the Hermus and the Meander is a smaller river, named the Cayster, separated from the latter by the ridge of Messogis, and from the former by Mount Tmolus. Here, in the level valley of the Cayster, is the early cradle of the Asiatic name, the district of primeval "Asia," not as understood in its political or ecclesiastical sense, but the Asia of old poetic legend.

And here, in a situation pre eminent among the excellent positions which the Ionians chose for their cities, Ephesus was built, on some hills near the sea. For some time after its foundation

<sup>388</sup> Rev. 1, 2, 3. Laodicea is in the basin of the Meander. Smyrna, Thyatira, Sardis and Philadelphia are in that of the Hermus; Pergamus is further to the north on the Caicus. For a description of this district, see Arundell's *Visit to the Seven Churches*, and Fellows' *Asia Minor*.

<sup>389</sup> In the account of St. Paul's return we shall have to take particular notice of this coast. He sailed between these islands and the mainland, touching at Miletus (Acts 20).

by Androclus the Athenian, it was inferior to Miletus ; but with the decay of the latter city, in the Macedonian and Roman periods, it rose to greater eminence, and in the time of St. Paul it was the greatest city of Asia Minor, as well as the metropolis of the province of Asia.

Though Greek in its origin, it was half oriental in the prevalent worship, and in the character of its inhabitants; and being constantly visited by ships from all parts of the Mediterranean, and united by great roads with the markets of the interior, it was the common meeting place of various characters and classes of men.

Among those whom St. Paul met on his arrival, was the small company of Jews above alluded to, (see Acts 19:1 7) who professed the imperfect Christianity of John the Baptist. By this time Apollos had departed to Corinth.

Those "disciples" who were now at Ephesus were in the same religious condition in which he had been, when Aquila and Priscilla first spoke to him, though doubtless they were inferior to him both in learning and in zeal.<sup>390</sup>

St. Paul found on inquiry, that they had only received John's baptism, and that they were ignorant of the great outpouring of the Holy Ghost, in which the life and energy of the Church consisted. They were even perplexed by his question. He then pointed out, in conformity with what had been said by John the Baptist himself, that that prophet only preached repentance to prepare men's minds for Christ, who is the true object of faith. On this they received Christian baptism; and after they were baptized, the laying on of the Apostle's hands resulted, as in all other Churches, in the miraculous gifts of Tongues and of Prophecy.

After this occurrence has been mentioned as an isolated fact, our attention is called to the great teacher's labors in the synagogue. Doubtless, Aquila and Priscilla were there. Though they

<sup>390</sup> It is impossible to know whether these men were connected with Apollos. The whole narrative seems to imply that they were in a lower state of religious knowledge than he was.

are not mentioned here in connection with St. Paul, we have seen them so lately instructing Apollos (Acts 18), and we shall find them so soon again sending salutations to Corinth in the Apostle's letter from Ephesus (1 Cor. 16), that we cannot but believe he met his old associates, and again experienced the benefit of their aid. It is even probable that he again worked with them at the same trade: for in the address to the Ephesian elders at Miletus (Acts 20:34) he stated that "his own hands had ministered to his necessities, and to those who were with him;" and in writing to the Corinthians he says (1 Cor. 4:11, 12), that such toil had continued "even to that hour." There is no doubt that he "reasoned" in the synagogue at Ephesus with the same zeal and energy with which his spiritual labors had been begun at Corinth. (Acts 18:4) He had been anxiously expected, and at first he was heartily welcomed. A preparation for his teaching had been made by Apollos and those who instructed him. "For three months" Paul continued to speak boldly in the synagogue, "arguing and endeavoring to convince his hearers of all that related to the kingdom of God." (Acts 19:8) The hearts of some were hardened, while others repented and believed; and in the end the Apostle's doctrine was publicly calumniated by the Jews before the people.<sup>391</sup> On this he openly separated himself, and withdrew the disciples from the synagogue; and the Christian Church at Ephesus became a distinct body, separated both from the Jews and the Gentiles.

### The School of Tyrannus

As the house of Justus at Corinth (Acts 18:7) had afforded St. Paul a refuge from calumny, and an opportunity of continuing his public instruction, so here he had recourse to "the school of Tyrannus," who was probably a teacher of philosophy or rhetoric, converted by the Apostle to Christianity.<sup>392</sup> His labors in

<sup>391</sup> "Before the multitude," verse 9.

<sup>392</sup> Those who are apt to see a Jewish or Talmudical reference almost everywhere, think that Tyrannus may

spreading the Gospel were here continued for two whole years. For the incidents which occurred during this residence, for the persons with whom the Apostle became acquainted, and for the precise subjects of his teaching, we have no letters to give us information supplementary to the Acts, as in the cases of Thessalonica and Corinth:<sup>393</sup> inasmuch as that which is called the "Epistle to the Ephesians," enters into no personal or incidental details. But we have, in the address to the Ephesian elders at Miletus, an affecting picture of an Apostle's labors for the salvation of those whom his Master came to redeem. From that address we learn, that his voice had not been heard within the school of Tyrannus alone, but that he had gone about among his converts, instructing them "from house to house," and warning "each one" of them affectionately "with tears! (Acts 20:20,31) The subject of his teaching was ever the same, both for Jews and Greeks," repentance towards God, and faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ." (Acts 20:21) Labors so incessant, so disinterested, and continued through so long a time, could not fail to produce a great result at Ephesus. A large Church was formed over which many presbyters were called to preside. (Acts 20:17) Nor were the results confined to the city. Throughout the province of "Asia" the name of Christ became generally known, both to the Jews and the Gentiles;<sup>394</sup> and doubtless, many daughter churches were founded," whether in the course of journeys undertaken by the Apostle himself,<sup>395</sup> or by means of those with whom he became acquainted, as for instance by Epaphras, Archippus, and Philemon, in connection with

---

have been a Jew, and his "school" a place for theological teaching.

<sup>393</sup> See the chapters containing the two Epistles to the Thessalonians and the two Epistles to the Corinthians.

<sup>394</sup> "So that all they which dwelt in Asia ...", Acts 19:10. There must have been many Jews in various parts of the province.

<sup>395</sup> What is said of his continued residence at Ephesus by no means implies that he did not make journeys in the province.

Colosse, and its neighbor cities Hierapolis and Laodicea.<sup>396</sup>

### Ephesian Magic

It is during this interval, that one of the two characteristics of the people of Ephesus comes prominently into view. This city was renowned throughout the world for the worship of Diana, and the practice of magic. Though it was a Greek city, like Athens or Corinth, the manners of its inhabitants were half Oriental. The image of the tutelary goddess resembled an Indian idol rather than the beautiful forms which crowded the Acropolis of Athens: and the enemy which St. Paul had to oppose was not a vaunting philosophy, as at Corinth; but a dark and Asiatic superstition. The worship of Diana and the practice of magic were closely connected together. Eustathius says that the mysterious symbols, called "Ephesian Letters," were engraved on the crown, the girdle, and the feet of the goddess. These Ephesian letters or monograms have been compared by a Swedish writer to the Runic characters of the North. When pronounced, they were regarded as a charm; and were directed to be used, especially by those who were in the power of evil spirits. When written, they were carried about as amulets. Curious stories are told of their influence. Croesus is related to have repeated the mystic syllables when on his funeral pile; and an Ephesian wrestler is said to have always struggled successfully against an antagonist from Miletus until he lost the scroll, which before had been like a talisman. The study of these symbols was an elaborate science: and books, both numerous and costly, were compiled by its professors.<sup>397</sup>

<sup>396</sup> It is thought by many that Epaphras was converted by St. Paul at Ephesus and founded the church at Colosse. See Col. 1:7; 4:12-17; Philemon 23.

<sup>397</sup> The lives of Alexander of Tralles in Smith's *Dictionary of Biography* and in the biography of the U. K. Society, contain some important illustrations of Ephesians magic.

### Miracles

This statement throws some light on the peculiar character of the miracles wrought by St. Paul at Ephesus. We are not to suppose that the Apostles were always able to work miracles at will. An influx of supernatural power was given to them, at the time, and according to the circumstances, that required it. And the character of the miracles was not always the same. They were accommodated to the peculiar forms of sin, superstition, and ignorance they were required to oppose.<sup>398</sup> Here, at Ephesus, St. Paul was in the face of magicians, like Moses and Aaron before Pharaoh; and it is distinctly said that his miracles were "not ordinary wonders;" (Acts 19:11) from which we may infer that they were different from those which he usually performed. We know, in the case of our Blessed Lord's miracles, that though the change was usually accomplished on the speaking of a word, intermediate agency was sometimes employed; as when the blind man was healed at the pool of Siloam. (John 9:6,7)

A miracle which has a closer reference to our present subject, is that in which the hem of Christ's garment was made effectual to the healing of a poor sufferer, and the conviction of the bystanders. (Matt. 9:20) So on this occasion garments<sup>399</sup> were made the means of

<sup>398</sup> The narrative of what was done by St. Paul at Ephesus should be compared with St. Peter's miracles at Jerusalem, when "many signs and wonders were wrought among the people ... insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them." Acts 5:12-16.

<sup>399</sup> Both the words used here are Latin. The former, *sudarium*, is that which occurs in Luke 19:20; John 11:44; 20:7, and is translated "napkin." The latter, *semicinctium*, denotes some article of dress – shawl, handkerchief, or apron – as is easily laid aside. Baumgarten's remarks on the significance of these miracles are well worthy of consideration. He connects the *sudaria* and the *semicinctia* with St. Paul's daily labor in his own support.

communicating a healing power to those who were at a distance, whether they were possessed with evil spirits, or afflicted with ordinary diseases. (Acts 19:12) Such effects, thus publicly manifested, were a signal refutation of the charms and amulets and mystic letters of Ephesus. Yet was this no encouragement to blind superstition. When the suffering woman was healed by touching the hem of the garment, the Savior turned round and said, "Virtue is gone out of me." (Luke 8:46) And here at Ephesus we are reminded that it was God who, wrought miracles by the hands of Paul" (verse 11), and that "the name," not of Paul, but "of the Lord Jesus, was magnified" (verse 17).

These miracles must have produced "a great effect upon the minds of those who practiced curious arts in Ephesus. Among the magicians who were then in this city, in the course of their wanderings through the East, were several Jewish exorcists. (Acts 19:13) This is a circumstance which need not surprise us. The stern severity with which sorcery was forbidden in the Old Testament <sup>400</sup> attests the early tendency of the Israelites to such practices: the Talmud bears witness to the continuance of these practices at a later period; <sup>401</sup> and we have already had occasion, in the course of this history, to notice the spread of Jewish magicians through various parts of the Roman Empire.

It was an age of superstition and imposture an age also in which the powers of evil manifested themselves with peculiar force. Hence we find St. Paul classing witchcraft among the works of the flesh (Gal. 5:20), and solemnly warning the

<sup>400</sup> See Exod. 22:18; Lev. 20:27; Deut. 18:10,11; 1 Sam. 28:8,9.

<sup>401</sup> A knowledge of magic was a requisite qualification of a member of the Sanhedrin, that he might be able to try those who were accused of such practices. Josephus (Ant. xx. 7, 2) speaks of a Cyprian Jew, a sorcerer, who was a friend and companion of Felix, and who is identified by some with Simon Magus. Again (Ant. viii. 2, 5), he mentions certain forms of incantation used by Jewish magicians which they attributed to King Solomon.

Galatians both in words <sup>402</sup> and by his letters, that they who practice it cannot inherit the kingdom of God; and it is of such that he writes to Timothy (2 Tim. 3:13), that "evil men and seducers <sup>403</sup> shall wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived." This passage in St. Paul's latest letter had probably reference to that very city in which we see him now brought into opposition with Jewish sorcerers. These men, believing that the name of Jesus acted as a charm, and recognizing the Apostle as a Jew like themselves, attempted his method of casting out evil spirits. But He to whom the demons were subject, and who had given to His servant power and authority over them (Luke 9:1), had shame and terror in store for those who presumed thus to take His Holy Name in vain.

### The Exorcists

One specific instance is recorded, which produced disastrous consequences to those who made the attempt, and led to wide results among the general population. In the number of those who attempted to cast out evil spirits by the "name of Jesus," were seven brothers, sons of Sceva, who is called a high priest, either because he had really held this office at Jerusalem, or because he was chief of one of the twenty four courses of priests. But the demons, who were subject to Jesus, and by His will subject to those who preached His Gospel, treated with scorn those who used His Name without being converted to His truth. "Jesus I recognize, and Paul I know; but who are ye?" was the answer of the evil spirit. And straightway the man who was possessed sprang upon them, with frantic violence, so that they were utterly discomfited, and "fled out of the house naked and wounded."

This fearful result of the profane use of that Holy Name which was proclaimed by the

<sup>402</sup> Observe the phrase in verse 21, "as I told you in time past," perhaps on the very journey through Galatia which we have just had occasion to mention.

<sup>403</sup> The word here used is the customary term for these wandering magicians.

Apostles for the salvation of all men, soon became notorious, both among the Greeks and the Jews. Consternation and alarm took possession of the minds of many; and in proportion to this alarm the name of the Lord Jesus began to be revered and honored. Even among those who had given their faith to St. Paul's preaching, some appear to have retained their attachment to the practice of magical arts. Their conscience was moved by what had recently occurred, and they came and made a full confession to the Apostle, and publicly acknowledged and forsook their deeds of darkness.

### Burning of the Books

The fear and conviction seem to have extended beyond those who made a profession of Christianity. A large number of the sorcerers themselves openly renounced the practice which had been so signally condemned by a higher power; and they brought together the books that contained the mystic formularies, and burnt them before all the people. When the volumes were consumed, they proceeded to reckon up the price at which these manuals of enchantment would be valued. Such books, from their very nature, would be costly; and all books in that age bore a value which is far above any standard with which we are familiar. Hence we need not be surprised that the whole cost thus sacrificed and surrendered amounted to as much as two thousand pounds of English money.<sup>404</sup> This scene must have been long remembered at Ephesus. It was a strong proof of honest conviction on the part of the sorcerers, and a striking attestation of the triumph of Jesus Christ over the powers of darkness. The workers of evil were put to scorn, like the priests of Baal by Elijah on Mount Carmel; (1 Kings 18) and the teaching of the doctrine of Christ" increased mightily and grew strong."

<sup>404</sup> The "piece of silver" mentioned here was doubtless the *drachma*, the current Greek coin of the Levant: the value was about ten pence. There can be no reason to suppose with Grotius that the shekel is meant.

With this narrative of the burning of the books, we have nearly reached the term of St. Paul's three years' residence at Ephesus. Before his departure, however, two important subjects demand our attention, each of which may be treated in a separate chapter: the First Epistle to the Corinthians, with the circumstances in Achaia which led to the writing of it, and the uproar in the Ephesian Theatre, which will be considered in connection with a description of the city, and some notice of the worship of Diana.

## Chapter 15

### St. Paul pays a short Visit to Corinth

We have hitherto derived such information as we possess, concerning the proceedings of St. Paul at Ephesus, from the narrative in the Acts; but we must now record an occurrence which St. Luke has passed over in silence, and which we know only from a few incidental allusions in the letters of the Apostle himself. This occurrence, which probably took place not later than the beginning of the second year of St. Paul's residence at Ephesus, was a short visit which he paid to the Church at Corinth.<sup>405</sup>

<sup>405</sup> The occurrence of this visit is proved by the following passages:

- (1) 2 Cor. 12:14
- (2) 2 Cor. 13:1, If the visit after leaving Ephesus was the third, there must have been a second before it;
- (3) 2 Cor. 12:21. He fears lest he should again be humbled on visiting them, and again to have to mourn their sins. Hence there must have been a former visit, in which he was thus humbled and made to mourn.

Paley in the *Horae Paulinae*, and other commentators since, have shown that these passages (though they acknowledge their most natural meaning to be in favor of an intermediate visit) may be explained away; in the first two St. Paul might perhaps only have meant 'this is the third time I have intended to come to you;' and in the third passage we may take again with come in the sense of 'on my return.' But we think that no-thing but the hypothesis of an intermediate visit can explain the following passages :

- (4) 2 Cor. 2:1, "I decided not to come again in grief to you" (which is the reading of every one of the Uncial

If we had not possessed any direct information that such a visit had been made, yet in itself it would have seemed highly probable that St. Paul would not have remained three years at Ephesus without revisiting his Corinthian converts. We have already remarked on the facility of communication existing between these two great cities, which were united by a continual reciprocity of commerce, and were the capitals of two peaceful provinces. And examples of the intercourse which actually took place between the Christians of the two Churches have occurred, both in the case of Aquila and Priscilla, who had migrated from the one to the other (Acts 18:18,19), and in that of Apollos, concerning whom, "when he was disposed to pass into Achaia," "the brethren [at Ephesus] wrote, exhorting the disciples [at Corinth] to receive him" (Acts 27:27). In the last chapter, some of the results of this visit of Apollos to Corinth have been noticed; he was now probably returned to Ephesus, where we know (1 Cor. 16:12) that he was remaining (and, it would seem, stationary) during the third year of St. Paul's residence in that capital. No doubt, on his return, he had much to tell of the Corinthian converts to their father in the

manuscripts). Here it would be exceedingly unnatural to join *again* with *come*; and the feeling of this probably led to the error of the Textus Receptus.

(5) 2 Cor. 13:2 (according to the reading of the best MSS.). I have: warned you formerly, and I now forewarn you, as when I was present the second time, so now while I am absent, saying to those who had sinned before that time, and to all the rest, 'If I come again, I will not spare.'

Against these arguments Paley sets (1st) St. Luke's silence, which, however, is acknowledged by all to be inconclusive, considering that so very many of St. Paul's travels and adventures are left confessedly unrecorded in the Acts. (2nd) The passage, 2 Cor. 1:15, 16, in which St. Paul tells the Corinthians he did not wish now to give them a second benefit; whence he argues that the visit then approaching would be his second visit. But a more careful examination of the passage shows that St. Paul is speaking of his original intention of paying them a double visit, on his way to Macedonia, and on his return from Macedonia.

faith, much of joy and hope, but also much of pain, to communicate; for there can be little doubt that those tares among the wheat, which we shall presently see in their maturer growth; had already begun to germinate, although neither Paul had planted, nor Apollos watered them.

One evil at least, we know, prevailed extensively, and threatened to corrupt the whole Church of Corinth. This was nothing less than the addiction of many Corinthian Christians to those sins of impurity which they had practiced in the days of their Heathenism, and which disgraced their native city, even among the Heathen. We have before mentioned the peculiar licentiousness of manners which prevailed at Corinth. So notorious was this, that it had actually passed into the vocabulary of the Greek tongue; and the very word "to Corinthianize," meant to play the wanton; <sup>406</sup> nay, the bad reputation of the city had become proverbial, even in foreign languages, and is immortalized by the Latin poets. Such being the habits in which many of the Corinthian converts had been educated, we cannot wonder if it proved most difficult to root out immorality from the rising Church. The offenders against Christian chastity were exceedingly numerous; at this period; and it was especially with the object of attempting to reform them, and to check the growing mischief, that St. Paul now determined to visit Corinth.

He has himself described this visit as a painful one; (2 Cor. 2:1) he went in sorrow at the tidings he had received, and when he arrived, he found the state of things even worse than he had expected; he tells us that it was a time of personal humiliation (2 Cor. 12:21) to himself, occasioned by the flagrant sins of so many of his own converts; he reminds the Corinthians, afterwards, how he had "mourned" over those who had dishonored the name of Christ by "the uncleanness and fornication and wantonness which they had committed." (2 Cor. 12:21)

<sup>406</sup> It is so used by Aristophanes.

But in the midst of his grief he showed the greatest tenderness for the individual offenders; he warned them of the heinous guilt which they were incurring; he showed them its inconsistency with their Christian calling; <sup>407</sup> he reminded them how, at their baptism, they had died to sin, and risen again unto righteousness; but he did not at once exclude them from the Church which they had defiled. Yet he was compelled to threaten them with this penalty, if they persevered in the sins which had now called forth his rebuke. He has recorded the very words which he used." If I come again," he said, "I will not spare." 2 Cor. 13:2.

It appears probable that, on this occasion, St. Paul remained but a very short time at Corinth. When afterwards, in writing to them, he says that he does not wish "*now* to pay them a passing visit," he seems <sup>408</sup> to imply, that his last visit had deserved that epithet. Moreover, had it occupied a large portion of the "space of three years," which he describes himself to have spent at Ephesus (Acts 20:31), he would probably have expressed himself differently in that part of his address to the Ephesian presbyters; <sup>409</sup> and a long visit could scarcely have failed to furnish more allusions in the Epistles so soon after written to Corinth. The silence of St. Luke also, which is easily explained on the supposition of a short visit, would be less natural had St. Paul been long absent from Ephesus, where he appears, from the narrative in the Acts, to be stationary during all this period.

---

<sup>407</sup> There can be no doubt that he urged upon them the same arguments which he was afterwards obliged to repeat at I Cor. 6:15.

<sup>408</sup> I Cor. 16:7. Yet this admits of another explanation; for perhaps he only meant to say, "I will not *now* (at once) come to you (by the direct route) on my way to Macedonia for a passing visit,"

<sup>409</sup> Wieseler, however, gets over this, by supposing that when St. Paul mentions three years spent among his hearers, he means to address not only the Ephesian presbyters whom he had summoned, but also the companions of his voyage (Acts 20:4) who had been with him in Macedonia and Achaia.

On these grounds, we suppose that the Apostle, availing himself of the constant maritime intercourse between the two cities, had gone by sea to Corinth; and that he now returned to Ephesus by the same route (which was very much shorter than that by land), after spending a few days or weeks at Corinth.

But his censures and warnings had produced too little effect upon his converts; his mildness had been mistaken for weakness; his hesitation in punishing had been ascribed to a fear of the offenders; and it was not long before he received new intelligence that the profligacy which had infected the community was still increasing. Then it was that he felt himself compelled to resort to harsher measures; he wrote an Epistle (which has not been preserved to us) <sup>410</sup> in which, as we learn from himself, he ordered the Christians of Corinth, by virtue of his Apostolic authority, "to cease from all intercourse with fornicators." By this he meant, as he subsequently explained his injunctions, to direct the exclusion of all profligates from the Church. The Corinthians, however, either did not understand this, or (to excuse themselves) they affected not to do so, for they asked, how it was possible for them to abstain from all intercourse with the profligate, unless they entirely secluded themselves from all the business of life, which they had to transact with their Heathen neighbors. Whether the lost Epistle contained any other topics, we cannot know with certainty; but we may conclude with some probability that it was very short, and directed to this" one subject; <sup>411</sup> otherwise it is not easy to understand why it should not have been preserved together with the two subsequent Epistles.

---

<sup>410</sup> In proof of this, see the note on I Cor. 5:9-12.

This lost Epistle must have been written *after* his second visit; otherwise he need not have explained it in the passage referred to.

<sup>411</sup> Probably it was in this lost letter that he gave them notice of his intention to visit them on his way to Macedonia; for altering which he was so much blamed by his opponents.

Soon after this short letter had been dispatched, Timothy, accompanied by Erastus,<sup>412</sup> left Ephesus for Macedonia. St. Paul desired him, if possible, to continue his journey to Corinth; but did not feel certain that it would be possible for him to do so consistently with the other objects of his journey, which probably had reference to the great collection now going on for the poor Hebrew Christians at Jerusalem.

Meantime, some members of the household of Chloe, a distinguished Christian family at Corinth, arrived at Ephesus; and from them St. Paul received fuller information than he before possessed of the condition of the Corinthian Church. The spirit of party had seized upon its members and well nigh destroyed Christian love. We have already seen in our general view of the divisions of the Apostolic Church, that the great parties which then divided the Christian world had ranked themselves under the names of different Apostles, whom they attempted to set up against each other as rival leaders. At Corinth, as in other places, emissaries had arrived from the Judaizers of Palestine, who boasted of their "letters or commendation" from the metropolis of the faith; they did not, however, attempt, as yet, to insist upon circumcision, as we shall find them doing successfully among the simpler population of Galatia. This would have been hopeless in a great and civilized community like that of Corinth, imbued with Greek feelings of contempt for what they would have deemed a barbarous superstition.

Here, therefore, the Judaizers confined themselves, in the first instance, to personal attacks against St. Paul, whose apostleship they denied, whose motives they calumniated, and whose authority they persuaded the Corinthians to repudiate. Some of them declared themselves the followers of "Cephas," whom the Lord Himself had selected to be the

<sup>412</sup> Erastus was probably the "treasurer" of the city of Corinth, mentioned in Rom. 16:23 and 2 Tim. 4:20, and therefore was most likely proceeding at any rate to Corinth.

chief Apostle; others (probably the more extreme members of the party) boasted of their own immediate connection with Christ Himself, and their intimacy with "the brethren of the Lord," and especially with James, the head of the Church at Jerusalem. The endeavors of these agitators to undermine the influence of the Apostle of the Gentiles met with undeserved success; and they gained over a strong party to their side. Meanwhile, those who were still steadfast to the doctrines of St. Paul, yet were not all unshaken in their attachment to his person: a portion of them preferred the Alexandrian learning with which Apollos had enforced his preaching, to the simple style of their first teacher, who had designedly abstained, at Corinth, from anything like philosophical argumentation. (1 Cor. 2:15)

This party, then, who sought to form for themselves a philosophical Christianity, called themselves the followers of Apollos; although the latter, for his part, evidently disclaimed the rivalry with St. Paul which was thus implied, and even refused to revisit Corinth, (1 Cor. 16:12) lest he should seem to countenance the factious spirit of his adherents.

It is not impossible that the Antinomian Free thinkers, whom we have already seen to form so dangerous a portion of the Primitive Church, attached themselves to this last named party; at any rate, they were, at this time, one of the worst elements of evil at Corinth: they put forward a theoretic defense of the practical immorality in which they lived; and some of them had so lost the very foundation of Christian faith as to deny the resurrection of the dead, and thus to adopt the belief as well as the sensuality of their Epicurean neighbors, whose motto was "Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die"

A crime recently committed by one of these pretended Christians, was now reported to St. Paul, and excited his utmost abhorrence: a member of the Corinthian Church was openly living in incestuous intercourse with his step-mother, and that, during his father's life; yet

this audacious offender was not excluded from the Church.

Nor were these the only evils: some Christians were showing their total want of brotherly love by bringing vexatious actions against their brethren in the Heathen courts of law; others were turning even the spiritual gifts which they had received from the Holy Ghost into occasions of vanity and display, not unaccompanied by fanatical delusion; the decent order of Christian worship was disturbed by the tumultuary claims of rival ministrations; women had forgotten the modesty of their sex, and came forward, unveiled (contrary to the habit of their country), to address the public assembly; and even the sanctity of the Holy Communion itself was profaned by scenes of reveling and debauch.

About the same time that all this disastrous intelligence was brought to St. Paul by the household of Chloe, other messengers arrived from Corinth, bearing the answer of the Church to his previous letter, of which (as we have mentioned above) they requested an explanation; and at the same time referring to his decision several questions which caused dispute and difficulty.

These questions related, 1st, To the controversies respecting meat which had been offered to idols; 2nd, To the disputes regarding celibacy and matrimony; the right of divorce; and the perplexities which arose in the case of mixed marriages, where one of the parties was an unbeliever: 3rd, To the exercise of spiritual gifts in the public assemblies of the Church.

St. Paul hastened to reply to these questions, and at the same time to denounce the sins which had polluted the Corinthian Church, and almost annulled its right to the name of Christian. The letter which he was thus led to write is addressed, not only to this metropolitan Church, but also to the Christian communities established in other places in the same province, which might be regarded as dependencies of that in the capital city; hence

we must infer that these Churches also had been infected by some of the errors or vices which had prevailed at Corinth.

The letter is, in its contents, the most diversified of all St. Paul's Epistles; and in proportion to the variety of its topics, is the depth of its interest for ourselves. For by it we are introduced, as it were, behind the scenes of the Apostolic Church, and its minutest features are revealed to us under the light of daily life. We see the picture of a Christian congregation as it met for worship in some upper chamber, such as the house of Aquila, or of Gaius, could furnish. We see that these seasons of pure devotion were not unalloyed by human vanity and excitement; yet, on the other hand, we behold the Heathen auditor pierced to the heart by the inspired eloquence of the Christian prophets, the secrets of his conscience laid bare to him, and himself constrained to fall down on his face and worship God; we hear the fervent thanksgiving echoed by the unanimous Amen; we see the administration of the Holy Communion terminating the feast of love. Again we become familiar with the perplexities of domestic life, the corrupting proximity of Heathen immorality, the lingering superstition, the rash speculation, the lawless perversion of Christian liberty; we witness the strife of theological factions, the party names, the sectarian animosities. We perceive the difficulty of the task imposed upon the Apostle, who must guard from so many perils, and guide through so many difficulties, his children in the faith, whom else he had begotten in vain; and we learn to appreciate more fully the magnitude of that laborious responsibility under which he describes himself as almost ready to sink," the care of all the Churches"

But while we rejoice that so many details of the deepest historical interest have been preserved to us by this Epistle, let us not forget to thank God who so inspired His Apostle, that in his answers to questions of transitory interest he has laid down principles of eternal obligation.

<sup>413</sup> Let us trace with gratitude the providence of Him, who "out of darkness calls up light;" by whose mercy it was provided that the unchastity of the Corinthians should occasion the sacred laws of moral purity to be established for ever through the Christian world; that their denial of the resurrection should cause those words to be recorded whereon repose, as upon a rock that cannot be shaken, our sure and certain hope of immortality.

### First Epistle to the Corinthians <sup>414</sup>

<sup>413</sup> The contrast between the short-lived interest of the questions referred to him for solution, and the eternal principles by which they must be solved, was brought prominently before the mind of the Apostle himself by the Holy Spirit, under whose guidance he wrote; and he has expressed it in those sublime words which might serve as a motto for the whole Epistle (1 Cor. 7:29-31).

<sup>414</sup> The date of this Epistle can be fixed with more precision than that of any other. It gives us the means of ascertaining, not merely the year, but even (with great probability) the month and week, in which it was written.

(1) Apollos had been working at Corinth, and was now with St. Paul at Ephesus (1 Cor. 1:12; 3:4, 22; 4:6; 16:12). This was the case during St. Paul's residence at Ephesus (Acts 19:1).

(2) He wrote during *the days of unleavened bread*, i.e. at Easter (1 Cor. 5:7, see the note on that passage), and intended to remain at Ephesus till Pentecost (16:8, cf. 15:32). After leaving Ephesus, he purposed to come by Macedonia to Achaia (16:5-7). This was the route he took (Acts 10:1, 2) on leaving Ephesus after the tumult in the theatre.

(3) Aquila and Priscilla were with him at Ephesus (16:19). They had taken up their residence at Ephesus before the visit of St. Paul (Acts 18:26).

(4) The Great Collection was going on in Achaia (16:1-3). When he wrote to the Romans from Corinth during his three months' visit there (Acts 20:3), the collection was completed in Macedonia and Achaia (Rom. 15:26).

(5) He hopes to go by Corinth to Jerusalem, and thence to Rome (16:4, and 15:25-28.) Now the time when he entertained this very purpose was towards the conclusion of his long Ephesian residence (Acts 19:21).

## 1 Corinthians 1

**PAUL, a called Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Sosthenes the Brother, TO THE CHURCH OF GOD AT CORINTH, hallowed in Christ Jesus, called Saints; <sup>415</sup> together with <sup>416</sup> who can upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord in every place which is their home and our home also. <sup>417</sup>**

**Grace be unto you and peace, from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**I thank my God continually on your behalf, for the grace of God given unto you in Christ Jesus. Because, in Him, you were every wise enriched; with all the gifts of speech and knowledge, (for thus my testimony to Christ was confirmed among you), so that you come**

(6) He had sent Timothy towards Corinth (4:17), but not direct (16:10). Now it was at the close of his Ephesian residence (Acts 19:22) that he sent Timothy with Erastus (the Corinthian) from Ephesus to Macedonia, which was one way to Corinth, but not the shortest.

<sup>415</sup> The sense of the word for 'Saints' in the New Testament is nearly equivalent to the modern 'Christians;' but it would be an anachronism so to translate it here, since (in the time of St. Paul) the word 'Christian' was only used as a term of reproach. The objection to translating it 'saints' is, that the idea now often conveyed by that term is different from the meaning of the Greek word as used by St. Paul. Yet as no other English word represents it better, either the old rendering must be retained, or an awkward periphrasis employed. The English reader should bear in mind that St. Paul applies the term to all members of the Church.

<sup>416</sup> This is added to comprehend those Christians of the Church of Achaia who were not resident at Corinth, but in the neighboring places of the same province.

<sup>417</sup> The Authorized Version here appears scarcely reconcilable with the order of the Greek, though it is defended by the opinions of Chrysostom, Billroth, Olshausen, etc. The translation of Meyer, "in every place under their and our dominion," seems more like a Papal than an Apostolic rescript; and that of De Wette, "in every place both of their and our abode," is frigid, and adds nothing to the idea of 'every place.' St. Paul means to say that he feels the home of his converts to be also his own. Both sentiment and expression are the same as in Rom. 16:13: 'His mother and mine.'

behind no other church in any gift; looking earnestly for the time when our Lord Jesus Christ shall be revealed to sight.

And He also will confirm you unto the end, that you may be without reproach at the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. For God is faithful, by whom you were called into fellowship with His Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord.

I exhort you brethren by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to shun disputes, and have no divisions among you, but to be knit together in the same mind, and the same judgment.<sup>418</sup> For I have been

informed concerning you, my brethren, by the members of Chloe's household, that there are contentions among you. I mean, that one of you says, "I am a follower of Paul;" another, "I of Apollos;" another, "I of Cephas;" 7 another, "I of Christ." Is Christ divided? Was Paul crucified for you? or were you baptized unto the name of Paul? I thank God that I baptized none of you except Crispus and Gaius (lest anyone should say that I baptized unto my own name); and I baptized also the household of Stephanas; besides these I know not that I baptized any other. For Christ sent me forth as His Apostle, not to baptize, but to publish the Glad tidings; and that, not with wisdom of word, lest thereby the cross of Christ should be made void. For the word of the cross,<sup>419</sup> to those in the way of perdition, is folly; but to us in the way of salvation,<sup>420</sup> it is the power of God. And so it is written, "I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent."<sup>421</sup>

Where is the Philosopher? Where is the Rabbi? Where is the reasoner of this world? Has not God turned the world's wisdom into folly?

<sup>418</sup> "Mind" refers to the view taken by the understanding; "judgment" to the practical decision arrived at.

<sup>419</sup> I.e., the tidings of a crucified Messiah.

<sup>420</sup> For the present participle we may refer to Acts 2:47, and to 2:6, below.

<sup>421</sup> (Isa. 29:14, not quite literally quoted from the LXX).

for when the world had failed to gain by its wisdom the knowledge of God in the wisdom of God, it pleased God, by the folly of our preaching, to save those who believe. For the Jews require a sign [from heaven], and the Greeks demand philosophy; but we proclaim a Messiah crucified, to the Jews a stumbling block, and to the Greeks a folly; but to the called<sup>422</sup> themselves, whether they be Jews or Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. For the folly of God is wiser than man's wisdom, and the weakness of God is stronger than man's strength. For you see, brethren, how God has called you; how few of you are wise in earthly wisdom, how few are powerful, how few are noble,

But the world's folly, God has chosen, to confound its wisdom; and the world's weakness God has chosen, to confound its strength; and the world's base things, and things despised, yea, things that have no being, God has chosen, to bring to nought the things that be; that no flesh should glory in His presence. But you are His children in Christ Jesus, whom God sent unto us as our wisdom,<sup>423</sup> and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption; that it might be according as it is written, "He that boasteth, let him boast in the Lord. (Jer. 9:23,24)

## 1 Corinthians 2

So, brethren, when I myself came among you, and declared to you the testimony of God, I came not with surpassing skill of speech or wisdom. For no knowledge did I purpose to display among you, but the knowledge of Jesus Christ along, and Him crucified. And in my intercourse with you, I was filled with weakness and fear and much trembling.<sup>424</sup>

<sup>422</sup> All who make an outward profession of Christianity are, in St. Paul's language, the "called." They have received a message from God which has called them to enter into His church.

<sup>423</sup> Literally, "who became wisdom to use from God," the preposition implying "sent from."

<sup>424</sup> St. Paul appears, on his first coming to Corinth, to have been suffering under great depression, perhaps caused by the bodily malady to which he was subject

And when I proclaimed my message, I used not persuasive words of human wisdom, but showed forth the working of God's Spirit and power, that your faith might have its foundation not in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

Nevertheless, among those who are ripe in understanding, I speak wisdom; albeit not the wisdom of this world, nor of its rulers, who will soon be nought.<sup>425</sup> But it is God's wisdom that I speak, whereof the secret is made known to His people;<sup>426</sup> even the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the ages, that we might be glorified thereby. But the rulers of this world knew it not; for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of Glory. But as it is written, "Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him."<sup>427</sup> Yet to us God has revealed them by His Spirit. For the Spirit fathoms all things, even the depths of God. For who can know what belongs to man but the spirit of man which is within him? even so none can know what belongs to God, but the Spirit of God alone. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might understand those things which have been freely given us by God.

These are the things whereof we speak, in words not taught by man's wisdom, but by

---

(cf. 2 Cor. 12:8), perhaps by the ill success of his efforts at Athens.

The expression "fear and trembling," is peculiarly Pauline, being used in four of St. Paul's Epistles and by no other writer in the New Testament. It does not mean "fear of personal danger," but a "trembling anxiety to perform a duty." Thus, in Eph. 6:5, slaves are charged to obey their masters thus, and this "anxious conscientiousness" is opposed to "eye-service."

<sup>425</sup> Literally, "passing away into nothingness."

<sup>426</sup> "Wisdom in a mystery," is a wisdom revealed to the *initiated*, to Christians, but hidden from the rest of the world.

<sup>427</sup> Isa. 64:4 is the nearest passage to this in the Old Testament. The quotation is not to be found anywhere exactly.

the Spirit; explaining spiritual things to spiritual men. But the natural<sup>428</sup> man rejects the teaching of God's Spirit, for to him it is folly; and he cannot comprehend it because it is spiritually discerned. But the spiritual man judges all things truly, yet cannot himself be truly judged by others. For "Who hath known the mind of the Lord that he should instruct Him?" (Isa. 40:13, LXX) but we have the mind of the Lord<sup>429</sup> [within us].

### 1 Corinthians 3

And I, brethren, could not speak to you as spiritual men, but as carnal, yea, as babes in Christ. I fed you with milk, and not with meat; for you were not able to bear it; nay, you are not yet able, for you are still carnal. For while you are divided amongst yourselves by jealousy, and strife, and factious parties, is it not evident that you are carnal, and walking in the ways of men? When one says, "I follow Paul," and another "I follow Apollos," can you deny that you are carnal?

Who then is Paul, or who is Apollos? what are they but servants, by whose ministration you believed? and was it not the Lord who gave to each of them the measure of his success? I planted, Apollos watered; but it was God who made the seed to grow.

So that he who plants is nothing, nor he who waters, but God alone who gives the growth. But the planter and the waterer are one together; and each will receive his own wages according to his work. For we are God's fellow laborers, and you are God's husbandry. You are God's building; God gave me the gift of grace whereby like a skilful architect I laid a foundation; and on this foundation another builds; but let each take heed what he builds thereon, [thereon, I say,] for other foundation can no man lay, than that already laid, which is Jesus Christ.

---

<sup>428</sup> Properly, man considered as endowed with the *anima* (the living principle), as distinguished from the spiritual impulse.

<sup>429</sup> The best manuscripts are divided between the readings of "Christ" and "Lord" here.

<sup>430</sup> But on this foundation one may raise gold, and silver, and precious stones; another, wood, hay, and stubble. <sup>431</sup> But each man's work will be made manifest; for The Day <sup>432</sup> will make it known; because that day will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test each builder's work. He whose building stands unharmed, shall receive payment for his labor; he whose work is burned down, shall forfeit his reward: yet he shall not himself be destroyed; but shall be saved as it were through the flames.

Know ye not that you are God's temple, and that you form a shrine wherein God's Spirit dwells? If any man ruin the temple of God, God shall ruin <sup>433</sup> him; for the temple of God is holy; and holy therefore are ye.

Let none deceive himself; if any man is held wise among you in the wisdom of this world, let him make himself a fool [in the world's judgment], that so he may become wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God, as it is written, "He taketh the wise in their own craftiness." (Job 5:13, from the LXX) And again, "The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise that they are vain." (Psalm 94:11) Therefore let none of you make his boast in men; <sup>434</sup> for all things are yours; both Paul and Apollos, and Cephas, and the whole world itself; both life and death, things present and things to

---

<sup>430</sup> The MSS vary here, but the same sense is virtually involved in all three readings, namely that the Messiahship of Jesus was the foundation of the teaching of the Apostles.

<sup>431</sup> The image becomes much more vivid, if we remember the contrasted buildings of an ancient city, the sumptuous edifices of granite and marble, with ornaments of gold and silver, on the one hand, and the hovels of the poor on the other, with walls of wood and roof of thatch, and interstices stuffed with straw. See the description of Rome below, Chapter 22.

<sup>432</sup> The Day of Christ's coming; cf. I Thess. 5:4.

<sup>433</sup> The verbal link is lost in the AV.

<sup>434</sup> The meaning is "Boast not of having this man or that as your leader; for all the Apostles, nay, all things in the universe, are ordained by God to co-operate for your good."

come all are yours but <sup>435</sup> you are Christ's; and Christ is God's.

#### 1 Corinthians 4

Let us be accounted as servants of Christ, and Christ's and stewards of the mysteries of God." Moreover, it is required in a steward to be found faithful. <sup>436</sup> Yet to me it matters nothing that I be judged by you or by the doom of man; nay, I judge not even myself. For although I know not that I am guilty of unfaithfulness, yet this does not justify me; but I must be tried by the judgment of the Lord. Therefore judge nothing hastily, until the coming of the Lord; for He shall bring to light the secrets of darkness, and make manifest the counsels of men's hearts; and then shall each receive his due praise from God.

But these things, brethren, I have represented under the persons of myself and Apollos, for your sakes; that by considering us you might learn not to think of yourselves above that which has been written, 9 and that you may cease to puff yourselves up in the cause <sup>437</sup> of one against another. For who makes thee to differ from another? what hast thou that thou didst not receive? and how then canst thou boast, as if thou hadst won it for thyself? But ye forsooth have already eaten to the full [of spiritual food], ye are already rich, ye have seated yourselves upon your throne, and have no need of me. Would that you were indeed enthroned, that I too might reign with you. For, I think, God has set forth us the Apostles last of all, like criminals condemned to die, to be gazed at in a theatre <sup>438</sup> by the whole

---

<sup>435</sup> All things work together for the good of Christians; all things conspire to do them service; but their work is to do Christ's service, even as He Himself came to do the will of His Father.

<sup>436</sup> Or rather, "Inquiry is made into a steward's conduct in order that he may be proved faithful."

<sup>437</sup> St. Paul probably means "in the cause of your party leaders;" but speaks with intentional indistinctness.

<sup>438</sup> Literally, because we have been made a theatrical spectacle. Compare Heb. 10:33. The spectacle to which

world, both men and angels. We for Christ's sake are fools, while you are wise in Christ; we are weak, while you are strong; you are honorable, while we are outcasts; even to the present hour we bear hunger and thirst, and nakedness and stripes, and have no certain dwelling place, and toil with our own hands; curses we meet with blessings, persecution with patience, railings with good works. We have been made as it were the refuse of the earth, the off scouring of all things, unto this day. I write not thus to reproach you, but as a father I chide the children whom I love. For though you may have ten thousand guardians<sup>439</sup> to lead you towards the school of Christ, you can have but one father; and it was I who begat you in Christ Jesus, by the Glad tidings which I brought. I beseech you, therefore, become followers of me.

For this cause I have sent to you Timotheus, my beloved son, a faithful servant of the Lord, who shall put you in remembrance of my ways in Christ, as I teach everywhere in all the churches. Now some have been filled with arrogance, supposing that I am not coming to you. But I shall be with you shortly, if the Lord will; and then I shall learn, not the word of these boasters, but their might. For mighty deeds, not empty words, are the tokens of God's kingdom. What is your desire? Must I come to you with the rod, or in love and the spirit of meekness?

## 1 Corinthians 5

**It is reported that there is fornication generally among you, and such fornication, as is not known even among the Heathen, so**

---

St. Paul here alludes was common in those times. Criminals condemned to death were exhibited for the amusement of the populace on the arena of the amphitheatre, and forced to fight with wild beasts, or to slay one another as gladiators. These criminals were exhibited at the end of the spectacle as an exciting termination to the entertainment ("set forth last of all"). So Tertullian paraphrases the passage, *Nus Deus Apostolos novissimos elegit velut bestiarior.*

<sup>439</sup> This is the same word used in Gal 3:24 referring to "The guardian slave who led the child to school"

**that one among you has his father's wife. And you forsooth have been puffed up when you should have mourned, that the doer of this deed might be put away from the midst of you.**

For me being present with you in spirit, although absent in body, I have already passed sentence, as though present, on him who has done this thing; [and I decree] in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you convene an assembly, and when you, and my spirit with you, are gathered together, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you deliver over to Satan<sup>3</sup> the man who has thus sinned, for the destruction of his fleshly lusts, that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. Unseemly is your boasting; know ye not that "a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?"<sup>440</sup> Cast out therefore the old leaven, that you may be an untainted mass, even as now<sup>441</sup> you are

---

<sup>440</sup> The same proverb is quoted in Gal. 5:9.

<sup>441</sup> In spite of the opinion of some eminent modern commentators, which is countenanced by Chrysostom, we must adhere to the interpretation which considers these words as written at the Paschal season, and suggested by it. The words *leaven*, *lump*, *Paschal Lamb*, and *feast* all agree most naturally with this view. It has been objected, that St. Paul would not address the Corinthians as engaged in a feast which he, at Ephesus, was celebrating; because it would be over before his letter could reach them. Anyone who has ever written a birthday letter to a friend in India will see the weakness of this objection. It has also been urged that he would not address a mixed church of Jews and Gentiles as engaged in the celebration of a Jewish feast. Those who urge this objection must have forgotten that St. Paul addresses the Galatians (undoubtedly a mixed church) as if they had all been formerly idolaters (Gal. 4:8); and addresses the Romans, sometimes as if they were all Jews (Rom. 7:1), sometimes as if they were Gentiles (Rom. 11:18). If we take 'as ye are unleavened' in a metaphorical sense, it is scarcely consistent with the previous 'cast out the old leaven;' for the passage would then amount to saying, 'Be free from leaven (metaphorically) as you are free from leaven (metaphorically)'; whereas, on the other view, St. Paul says, 'Be free from leaven (metaphorically) as you are free from leaven (literally).' There seems no difficulty in supposing that the Gentile Christians joined with the

**without taint of leaven; for our Paschal Lamb is Christ, who was slain for us; therefore let us keep the feast, not with the old leaven, nor the leaven of vice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of purity and truth.**

**I enjoined you in my letter<sup>442</sup> to keep no company with fornicators: not that you should utterly forego all intercourse with the men of this world who may be fornicators, or lascivious, or extortioners, or idolaters; for so you would need to go utterly out of the**

Jewish Christians in celebrating the Paschal feast after the Jewish manner, at least to the extent of abstaining from leaven in the love-feasts. And we see that St. Paul still observed the 'days of unleavened bread' at this period of his life, from Acts 20:6. Also, from what follows, we perceive how naturally this greatest of Jewish feasts changed into the greatest of Christian festivals.

<sup>442</sup> Literally, 'I wrote to you in the letter,' viz. the letter which I last wrote, or the letter to which you refer in your questions; for they had probably mentioned their perplexity about this direction in it. So in 2 Cor. 7:8 the present letter (1 Cor.) is referred to in the same phrase (I grieved you in the letter). There are two decisive reasons why these words must refer to a previous letter, not to the letter St. Paul is actually writing. (1.) No such direction as 'Keep no company with fornicators' occurs in what has gone before. (2.) If St. Paul had meant to say 'I have just written,' he could not have added the words 'in the letter,' which would have been then worse than superfluous. Prof. Stanley (who has recently supported the view here opposed) urges that the aorist might be used of the present epistle as at I Cor. 9:15, which is obviously true. He also urges that 'the letter' may sometimes refer to the present letter; which may also be admitted in cases where the letter is referred to as a whole in its postscript.; e.g. 'I Tertius, who wrote the letter' (Rom. 16:22). 'I charge you that the letter be read' (1 Thess. 5:27). 'When the letter has been read among you, cause it to be read at Laodicea' (Col. 4:16). But none of these instances gives any support to the view that a writer could refer to his own words, just uttered, by such a phrase as 'I wrote to you in the letter.' We are forced, therefore, to conclude that these words refer to a preceding letter, which has not been preserved. And this view receives a strong confirmation from the words of St. Paul's Corinthian opponents (spoken before 2 Cor. was written): 'His letters are weighty,' etc. (2 Cor. 10:10).

**world. But my meaning was, that you should keep no company with any man who, bearing the name of a Brother, is either a fornicator, or a wanton,<sup>443</sup> or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such a man, I say, you must not so much as eat. For what need have I to judge those also that are without? Is it not your part to judge those that are within? But those without are for God's judgment. "From amongst yourselves ye shall cast out the evil one." (Deut. 24:7)**

## 1 Corinthians 6

**Can there be any of you who dare to bring their private differences into the courts of law, before the wicked and not rather bring them before the saints? Know ye not that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world is subjected to your judgment, are you unfit to decide the most trifling matters? Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more the affairs of this life? If, therefore, you have disputes to settle which concern the affairs of this life, give the arbitration of them to the very least esteemed in your Church. I speak to your shame.**

**Can it be that amongst you there is not so much as one man wise enough to arbitrate between his brethren, but must brother go to law with brother, and that in the courts of the unbelievers? Nay, farther, you are in fault, throughout, in having such disputes at all. Why do you not rather submit to wrong? Why not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded? Nay, you are yourselves wronging and defrauding, and that your**

<sup>443</sup> The Greek word has the meaning of a concupiscent man in some passages of St. Paul's writings. Compare Eph. 5:5 (where it is coupled with *unclean*). So the corresponding substantive, in St. Paul, almost invariably means lasciviousness. See Eph. 4:19, 5:3, and Col. 3:5. The only places where the word is used by St. Paul in the sense of *covetousness* are 2 Cor. 9:5, and I Thess. 2:5, in the latter of which passages the other meaning would not be inadmissible. How the word contracted its Pauline meaning may be inferred from the similar use of concupiscence in English. Since the above was first published, Prof. Stanley and Prof. Jowett have both expressed their concurrence in this rendering of the word.

brethren. Know ye not that wrongdoers shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived – neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor self defilers, nor sodomites, nor robbers, nor wantons, nor drunkards, nor railers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you; but you have washed away your stains, you have been hallowed, you have been justified, in the name of the Lord Jesus, and in the Spirit of our God.

All things are lawful for me.<sup>444</sup> But not all things are good for me. Though all things are in my power, they shall not bring me under their power. “Meat is for the belly, and the belly for meat,” though God will soon put an end to both; but the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body;<sup>445</sup> and as God raised the Lord from the grave, so He will raise us also by His mighty power.<sup>446</sup>

Know ye not that your bodies are members of Christ’s body? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid. Know ye not, that he who

<sup>444</sup> See the explanation of this in Chapter 13; and compare (for the true side of the phrase) Gal. 5:23, ‘Against such there is no law.’ Probably St. Paul had used the very words ‘All things are lawful for me’ in this true sense, and the immoral party at Corinth had caught them up, and used them as their watchword. It is also probable that this fact was mentioned in the letter which St. Paul had just received from Corinth (1 Cor. 7:1). Also see chapter 8:1 below. From what follows it is evident that these Corinthian freethinkers argued that the existence of bodily appetites proved the lawfulness of their gratification.

<sup>445</sup> The body is for the Lord Jesus, to be consecrated by His indwelling to His service; and the Lord Jesus is for the body, to consecrate it by dwelling therein in the person of His Spirit.

<sup>446</sup> St.. Paul’s argument here is that sins of unchastity, though bodily acts, yet injure a part of our nature (compare the phrase ‘spiritual body,’ I Cor. 15:11) which will not be destroyed by death, and which is closely connected with our moral well-being. And it is a fact no less certain than mysterious, that moral and spiritual ruin is caused by such sins, which human wisdom (when untaught by Revelation) held to be actions as blameless as eating and drinking.

joins himself to an harlot becomes one body with her? For it is said “They twain shall be one flesh.” (Gen. 2:24) But he who joins himself to the Lord, becomes one spirit with Him. Flee fornication. The root of sin is not in the body,<sup>447</sup> [but in the soul]; yet the fornicator sins against his own body. Know ye not that your bodies are temples of the Holy Spirit which dwells within you, which ye have received from God? And you are not your own, for you were bought with a price.<sup>448</sup> Glorify God, therefore, not in your spirit only, but in your body also, since both are His.

### 1 Corinthians 7

As to the questions which you have asked me in your letter, this is my answer. It is good for a man to remain unmarried.

Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and every woman her own husband. Let the husband live in the intercourse of affection with his wife, and like wise the wife with her husband. The wife has not dominion over her own body, but the husband; and so also the husband has not dominion over his own body, but the wife. Do not separate one from the other, unless it be with mutual consent for a time, that you may give yourselves without disturbance to prayer, and then return to one another, lest, through your fleshly passions, Satan should tempt you to sin. Yet this I say by way of permission, not of command. Nevertheless I would that all men were as I myself am; but men have different gifts from God, one this, another that. But to the unmarried and to the widows, I say that it would be good for them if they should remain in the state wherein I myself also am; yet if they are incontinent, let them marry; for it is better to marry than to burn. To the

<sup>447</sup> Literally, “every sin which a man commits is without (external to) the body.” The Corinthian freethinkers probably used this argument also; and perhaps availed themselves of our Lord’s words, Mark 7:18: ‘Do ye not perceive that whatsoever thing from without enters into the man, it cannot defile him, because it enters not into his heart.’

<sup>448</sup> The “price” is the blood of Christ. Compare Acts 20:28 and Col. 1:14.

married, not I, but the Lord gives commandment, 3 that the wife part not from her husband; (but if she be already parted, let her remain single, or else be reconciled with him;) and also that the husband put not away his wife.

But to the rest, speak I, not the Lord. If any Brother be married to an unbelieving wife let him not put her away, if she be content to live with him; neither let a believing wife put away an unbelieving husband who is willing to live with her; for the unbelieving husband is hallowed by union with his believing wife, and the unbelieving wife by union with her believing husband; for otherwise your children would be unclean, but now they are holy. But if the unbelieving husband or wife seeks for separation, let them be separated: for in such cases the believing husband or wife is not bound to remain under the yoke. But the call whereby God has called us, is a call of peace.<sup>449</sup> For thou who art the wife of an unbeliever, how knowest thou whether thou mayest save thy husband? or thou who art the husband, whether thou mayest save thy wife?

Only<sup>450</sup> let each man walk in the same path which God allotted to him, wherein the Lord has called him. This rule I give in all the churches. Thus, if any man, when he was called, bore the mark of circumcision, let him not efface it; if any man was uncircumcised at the time of his calling, let him not receive circumcision. Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing; but obedience to the commands of God. Let each abide in the condition wherein he was called. Wast thou in slavery at the time of thy calling? Care not for it. Nay, though thou have power to gain thy freedom,<sup>451</sup> rather

<sup>449</sup> The inference is, "therefore, the profession of Christianity ought not to lead the believer to quarrel with the unbelieving members of his family."

<sup>450</sup> Literally, "only, as God allotted to each, as the Lord has called each, so let him walk."

<sup>451</sup> The Greek here is ambiguous, and might be so rendered as to give directly opposite precepts; but the version given in the text (which is that advocated by Chrysostom, Meyer, and De Wette) agrees best with the

make use of thy condition. For the slave who has been called in the Lord is the Lord's freedman; and so also, the freeman who has been called, is Christ's slave. He has bought you all; beware lest you make yourselves the slaves of man.<sup>452</sup> Brethren, in the state wherein he was called, let each abide with God.

Concerning your virgin daughters<sup>453</sup> I have no command from the Lord, but I give my judgment, as one who has been moved by the Lord's mercy to be faithful. I think, then, that it is good, by marriage. reason of the present necessity, for all to be unmarried. Art thou bound to a wife? seek not separation; art thou free? seek not marriage; yet if thou marry, thou sinnest not.<sup>454</sup> And if your virgin daughters marry, they sin not; but the married will have sorrows in the flesh, and these I would spare you.<sup>455</sup> But this I say, brethren, the

---

order of the Greek words, and also with the context. We must remember, with regard to this and other precepts here given, that they were given under the immediate anticipation of our Lord's coming.

<sup>452</sup> Alluding to their servile adherence to part leaders. Compare 2 Cor. 11:20.

<sup>453</sup> We cannot help remarking, that the manner in which a recent infidel writer has spoken of this passage, is one of the most striking proofs how far a candid and acute mind may be warped by a strong bias. In this case the desire of the writer is to disparage the moral teaching of Christianity; and he brings forward this passage to prove his case, and blames St. Paul because he assumes these Corinthian daughters to be disposable in marriage at the will of their father; as if any other assumption had been possible, in the case of Greek or Jewish daughters in that age. We must suppose that this writer would (on the same grounds) require a modern missionary to Persia to preach the absolute incompatibility of despotic government with sound morality.

<sup>454</sup> Literally, "though thou shalt have married, thou hast not sinned;" the aorist used for the perfect, as constantly by St. Paul.

<sup>455</sup> "I" is emphatic, *I, if you followed my advice*, also observe the *present*, "*I am sparing you* [by this advice]," or, in other words, *I would spare you*.

time is short; <sup>456</sup> that henceforth both they that have wives be as though they had none; and they that weep as though they wept not, and they that rejoice as though they rejoiced not, and they that buy as though they possessed not, and they that use this world as not abusing <sup>457</sup> it; for the outward show of this world is passing away. But I would have you free from earthly care. The cares of the unmarried man are fixed upon the Lord, and he strives to please the Lord. But the cares of the husband are fixed upon worldly things, striving to please his wife. The wife also has this difference <sup>458</sup> from the virgin; the cares of the virgin are fixed upon the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit; but the cares of the wife are fixed upon worldly things, striving to please her husband.

Now this I say for your own profit; not that I may entangle you in a snare; but that I may help you to serve the Lord with a seemly and undivided service.

But if any man think that he is treating his virgin daughter in an unseemly manner, by leaving her unmarried beyond the flower of her age, and if need so require, let him act according to his will; he may do so without sin; let them marry. But he who is firm in his resolve, and is not constrained to marry his daughter, but has the power of carrying out his will, and has determined to keep her unmarried, does well. Thus he who gives his

<sup>456</sup> We adopt Lachmann's reading, "The object of this contraction of your earthly life is that you may henceforth set your affections on things above.

<sup>457</sup> Literally, the verb appears to mean *to use up*, as distinguished from *to use*. Compare 9:18. It thus acquired the sense of *to abuse*, in which it is sometimes employed by Demosthenes and by the grammarians.

<sup>458</sup> The reading of Lachmann makes a considerable difference in the translation, which would thus run: 'The husband strives to please his wife, and is divided [in mind]. Both the unmarried wife [i.e. the widow] and the virgin care for the things of the Lord,' &c. This reading gives a more natural sense to 'divided' (cf. 1:13, so Stanley); but on the other hand, the use of 'unmarried wife' for widow is unprecedented; and in this very chapter (verse 8) the word widows is opposed to unmarried.

daughter in marriage does well, but he who gives her not in marriage does better.

The wife is bound by the law of wedlock so long as her husband lives; but after his death she is free to marry whom she will; provided that she choose one of the brethren in the Lord. Yet she is happier if she remain a widow, in my judgment; and I think that I, no less than others, have the Spirit of God.

## 1 Corinthians 8

As to the meats which have been sacrificed to idols, we know (for we all have knowledge) <sup>459</sup> but knowledge puffs up, while love builds. If any man prides himself on his knowledge, he knows nothing yet as he ought to know; but whosoever loves God, of him God hath knowledge as to eating the meats sacrificed to idols, we know (I say) that an idol has no true being, and that there is no other God but one. For though there be some who are called gods, either celestial or terrestrial, and though men worship many gods and many lords, yet to us there is but one God, the Father, from whom are all things, and we for Him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by Him. <sup>460</sup> But "all" have not this "knowledge;" on the contrary, there are some who still have a conscientious fear of the idol, and think the meat an idolatrous sacrifice, so that, if they eat it, their conscience being weak is defiled. Now our food cannot change our place in God's sight; with Him we gain nothing by eating, nor lose by not eating. But beware lest, perchance, this exercise of your rights

<sup>459</sup> It is necessary, for the understanding of this Epistle, that we should remember that it is an answer to a letter received from the Corinthian Church (1 Cor. 7:1) and therefore constantly alludes to topics in that letter. It seems probable, from the way in which they are introduced, that these words 'We all have knowledge,' are quoted from that letter.

<sup>460</sup> That is, by whom the life of all things, and our life also, is originated and sustained. So Col. 1:16: 'By Him and for Him were all created, and in Him all things subsist,' where it should be remarked that the 'for Him' is predicated of the Son, as in the present passage of the Father. Both passages show how fully St. Paul taught the doctrine of the Logos.

<sup>461</sup> should become a stumbling block to the weak. For if one of them see thee, who boastest of thy knowledge, <sup>2</sup> feasting in an idol's temple, will not he be encouraged to eat the meat offered in sacrifice, notwithstanding the weakness of his conscience? And thus, through thy knowledge, will thy weak brother perish, for whom Christ died. Nay, when you sin thus against your brethren, and wound their weak conscience, you sin against Christ. Wherefore, if my food cast a stumbling block in my brother's path, I will eat no flesh while the world stands, lest thereby I cause my brother's fall. <sup>462</sup>

### 1 Corinthians 9

Is it denied that I am an apostle? Is it denied that I am free from man's authority? Is it denied that you are the fruits of my labor in the Lord. If to others I am no apostle, yet at least I am such to you; for you are yourselves the seal which stamps the reality of my apostleship, in the Lord; this is my answer to those who question my authority. Do they deny my right to be maintained [by my converts]? Do they deny my right to carry a believing wife with me on my journeys, like the rest of the apostles, and the brothers of the Lord, and Cephas? Or do they think that I and Barnabas alone have no right to be maintained, except by the labor of our own hands? What soldier <sup>463</sup> ever serves at his private cost? What husbandman plants a vineyard without sharing in its fruit? What

<sup>461</sup> This liberty of yours. Observe again the reference to the language of the self-styled Pauline party at Corinth. Compare 'all things are lawful for me' (6:12). The decrees of the Council of Jerusalem might seem to have a direct bearing on the question discussed by St. Paul in this passage; but he does not refer to them as deciding the points in dispute, either here or elsewhere. Probably the reason of this is, that the decrees were meant only to be of temporary application; and in their terms they applied originally only to the churches of Syria and Cilicia (see Acts 15:23; also Chapter 7.).

<sup>462</sup> The whole of this 8<sup>th</sup> chapter is parallel to Romans 14.

<sup>463</sup> He means to say that to have this right of maintenance, a man need not be an Apostle.

shepherd tends a flock without partaking of their milk? Say I this on Man's judgment only, or says not the Law the same? Yea, in the Law of Moses it is written "Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn." (Deut. 25:4) Is it for oxen that God is caring, or speaks he altogether for our sake? For our sake, doubtless, it was written; because the ploughman ought to plough, and the thresher to thresh, with hope to share in the produce of his toil. If I have sown for you the seed of spiritual gifts, would it be much if I were to reap some harvest from your carnal gifts? If others share this right over you, how much more should I? Yet I have not used my right, but forego every claim, lest I should by any means hinder the course of Christ's Glad tidings. Know ye not that they <sup>464</sup> who perform the service of the temple, live upon the revenues of the temple, and they who minister at the altar share with it in the sacrifices? So also the Lord commanded (Matt. 10:9,10) those who publish the Glad tidings to be maintained thereby. But I have not exercised any of these rights, nor do I write this that it may be practiced in my own case. For I had rather die than suffer any man to make void my boasting. For, although I proclaim the Glad tidings, yet this gives me no ground of boasting; for I am compelled to do so by order of my <sup>465</sup> master. Yea, woe is me if I proclaim it not. For were my service of my own free choice, I might claim wages to reward my labor; but since I serve by compulsion, I am a slave entrusted with a stewardship. <sup>466</sup>

**What then is my wage? It is to make the Glad tidings free of cost where I carry it, that I may forego my right as an Evangelist. Therefore, although free from the authority of all men, I made myself the slave of all that I might gain the most. To the Jews I became**

<sup>464</sup> Numbers 7 and Deut. 18>

<sup>465</sup> "Necessity" here is the compulsion exercised by a master over a slave. In calling his service compulsory, St. Paul refers to the miraculous character of his conversion.

<sup>466</sup> This "stewardship" consisted in dispensing his Master's goods to his fellow-slaves.

as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to those under the law as though I were under the law (not that I was myself subject to the law), that I might gain those under the law; to those without the law as one without the law (not that I was without law before God, but under the law of Christ), that I might gain those who were without the law. To the weak, I became weak, that I might gain the weak. I am become all things to all men, that by all means I might save some.

And this I do for the sake of the Glad tidings, that I myself may share therein with those who hear me. Know ye not that in the races of the stadium, though all run, yet but one can win the prize? (so run that you may win) and every man who strives in the matches, trains himself by all manner of self restraint. Yet they do it to win a fading crown,<sup>467</sup> we, a crown that cannot fade. I, therefore, run not like the racer who is uncertain of his goal; I fight, not as the pugilist who strikes out against the air; but I bruise my body and force it into bondage; lest, perchance, having called others to the contest, I should myself fail shamefully of the prize.

## 1 Corinthians 10

For I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that our forefathers all were guarded by the cloud, and all passed safely through the sea. And all, in the cloud, and in the sea, were baptized unto Moses. And all of them alike ate the same spiritual food; and all drank of the same spiritual stream; for they drank from the spiritual rock which followed them;<sup>468</sup> but that rock was Christ.

<sup>467</sup> This was the crown made of the leaves of the pine, groves of which surrounded the Isthmian Stadium: the same tree still grows plentifully on the Isthmus of Corinth. It was the prize of the great Isthmian games. Throughout the passage St. Paul alludes to these contests, which were so dear to the pride and patriotism of the Corinthians. Compare also 2 Tim. 2:5. And see the beginning of Chapter 20 on the same subject.

<sup>468</sup> St. Paul's meaning is, that, under the allegorical representation of the Manna, the Water, and the Rock, are shadowed forth spiritual realities: for the Rock is Christ, the only source of living water (John 4), and the

Yet most of them lost God's favor, yea, they were struck down and perished in the wilderness. Now, these things were shadows of our own case, that we might learn not to lust after evil, as they lusted. Nor be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, "The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play." (Exo. 32:6) Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. (Num. 25:9) Neither let us try the longsuffering of Christ, as did some of them, who were destroyed by the serpents. (Num. 21:6) Nor murmur as some of them murmured, and were slain by the destroyer.<sup>469</sup> Now all these things befell them as shadows of things to come; and they were written for our warning, on whom the ends of the ages are come.<sup>470</sup> Wherefore, let him who thinks that he stands firm, beware lest he fall. No trial has come upon you beyond man's power to bear; and God is faithful to His promises, and will not suffer you to be tried beyond your strength, but will with every trial provide the way of escape, that you may be able to sustain it.

Wherefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry. I speak as to men of understanding; use your own judgment upon my words. When we drink the cup of blessing, which we bless, are we not all partakers in the blood of Christ? When we break the bread, are we not all partakers in the body of Christ?<sup>471</sup>

For as the bread is one, so we, the many, are one body; for of that one bread we all partake. If

---

Manna also is Christ, the true bread from Heaven (John 6).

<sup>469</sup> See Num. 16:41. The murmuring of the Corinthians against the Apostle is compared to the murmuring of Korah against Moses.

<sup>470</sup> The coming of Christ was the "end of the ages," i.e. the commencement of a new period of the world's existence. So nearly the same phrase is used in Heb. 9:26. A similar expression occurs five times in St. Matthew, signifying *the coming of Christ to judgment*.

<sup>471</sup> Literally, *The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not a common participation in the blood of Christ/ The bread which we break, is it not a common participation in the body of Christ?*

---

you look to the carnal Israel, do you not see that those who eat of the sacrifices are in partnership with the altar? What would I say then? that an idol has any real being? or that meat offered to an idol is really changed thereby? Not so; but I say, that when the heathen offer their sacrifices, "They sacrifice to demons, and not to God." (Deut. 32:17) and I would not have you become partners <sup>472</sup> with the demons. You cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of demons; you cannot eat at the table of the Lord, and at the table of demons. Would we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than He?

"All things are lawful," <sup>473</sup> but not all things are expedient; "all things are lawful," but not all things build up the church. Let no man seek his own, but every man his neighbor's good. Whatever is sold in the market, you may eat, nor need you ask for conscience sake whence it came: "For the earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof." (Psalm 24:1) And if any unbeliever invites you to a feast, and you are disposed to go, eat of all that is set before you, asking no questions for conscience sake; but if anyone should say to you, "This has been offered to an idol," eat not of that dish, for the sake of him who pointed it out, and for the sake of conscience. Thy neighbor's conscience, I say, not thine own; for [thou mayest truly say] "why is my freedom condemned by the conscience of another? and if I thankfully partake, why am I called a sinner for that which I eat with thanksgiving?" <sup>474</sup>

Therefore, whether you eat or drink, or whatsoever you do, do all for the glory of God.

<sup>472</sup> This is addressed to those who were in the habit of accepting invitations to feasts celebrated in the temples of heathen gods, "sitting in the idol's temple" (8:10). These feasts were, in fact, acts of idolatrous worship; the wine was poured in libation to the gods ("the cup of demons", verse 21), and the feast was given in honor of the gods.

<sup>473</sup> See 6:12 and note.

<sup>474</sup> Compare Rom 14:16: "Let not your good be evil spoken of." Here again the hypothesis is that St. Paul is quoting from the letter of the Corinthians removes all difficulty.

<sup>475</sup> Give no cause of stumbling, either to Jews or Gentiles, or to the Church of God. For so I also strive to please all men in all things, not seeking my own good, but the good of all, <sup>476</sup> that they may be saved. I beseech you follow my example, as I follow the example of Christ.

## 1 Corinthians 11

I Praise you brethren, that <sup>477</sup> "you are always mindful of my teaching, and keep unchanged the rules which I delivered to you." But I would have you know that Christ is the head of every man, and the man is the head of the woman, as God is the head of Christ. If a man should pray or prophesy <sup>478</sup> in the congregation with a veil over his head, he would bring shame upon his head [by wearing the token of subjection]. But if a woman prays or prophesies with her head unveiled, she brings shame upon her head, as much as she that is shaven. I say, if she cast off her veil, let her shave her head at once; but if it is shameful for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her keep a veil upon her head. For a man ought not to veil his head, since he is the likeness of God, and the manifestation of God's glory. But the woman's part is to manifest her husband's glory. For the man was not made from the woman, but the woman from the man. Nor was the man created for the sake of the woman, but the woman for the sake of

<sup>475</sup> i.e. that the glory of God may be manifested to men.

<sup>476</sup> The phrase denotes not *many*, but *the many*, *the whole mass of mankind*.

<sup>477</sup> This statement was probably made in the letter sent by the Corinthian Church to St. Paul.

<sup>478</sup> It appears from this passage that the Tallith which the Jews put over their heads when they enter their synagogues was in the apostolic age removed by them when they officiated in the public worship. Otherwise, St. Paul could not, while writing to a church containing so many born again Jews as the Corinthian, assume it as evidently disgraceful to a man to officiate in the congregation with veiled head. It is true that the Greek practice was to keep the head uncovered at their religious rites, but this custom would not have affected the Corinthian synagogue, nor have influenced the feelings of its members.

the man. Therefore, the woman ought to wear a sign of subjection upon her head, because of the angels. Nevertheless, in their fellowship with the Lord, man and woman may not be separated the one from the other.<sup>479</sup> For as woman was made from man, so is man also borne by woman; and all things spring from God. Judge of this matter by your own feeling. Is it seemly for a woman to offer prayers to God unveiled? Or does not even nature itself teach you that long hair is a disgrace to a man, but a glory to a woman? for her hair has been given her for a veil. But if anyone thinks to be contentious in defense of such a custom, let him know that it is disallowed by me,<sup>480</sup> and by all the Churches of God.

[I said that I Praised you, for keeping the rules which were delivered to you; but while I give you this commandment I praise you not; your solemn assemblies are for evil rather than for good. For first, I hear that there are divisions among you, when your congregation assembles; and this I partly believe. For there must needs be not divisions only, but also adverse sects among you, that so the good may be tested and made known. Moreover, when you assemble yourselves together, it is not to eat the Lord's Supper; for each begins to eat [what he has brought for] his own supper, before anything has been given to others; and while some are hungry, others are drunken.<sup>481</sup> Have you then no houses to eat and drink in? or do you come to show contempt for the congregation of God's people, and to shame the

<sup>479</sup> In their relation to Christ, man and woman are not to be severed the one from the other. Compare Gal. 3:28. St. Paul means to say that the distinction between the sexes is one which only belongs to this life.

<sup>480</sup> Literally, *that neither I, nor the churches of God, admit of such a custom.*

<sup>481</sup> For the explanation of this, see Chapter 13. It should be observed that a common meal, to which each of the guests contributed his own share of the provisions, was a form of entertainment of frequent occurrence among the Greeks, and known by the name of **eranos**.

poor?<sup>482</sup> What can I say to you? Shall I praise you in this? I praise you not. For I myself received from the Lord that which I delivered to you, that the Lord Jesus, in the night when He was betrayed, took bread, and when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said, "Take, eat; this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me." In the same manner also, He took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup, is the new covenant in my blood: this to ye, as often as ye drink it, in remembrance of me." For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you openly show forth the Lord's death until He shall come again. Therefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, or drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of profaning the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of this bread and drink of this cup. For he who eats and drinks of it unworthily, eats and drinks judgment against himself, not duly judging of the Lord's body. For this cause many of you are weak and sickly, and many sleep. For if we had duly judged ourselves, we should not have been judged. But now that we are judged, we are chastened by the Lord, that we may not be condemned together with the world. Therefore, my brethren, when you are assembling to eat, wait for one another; and if anyone is hungry, let him eat at home, lest your meetings should bring judgment upon you. The other matters I will set in order when I come.

## 1 Corinthians 12

Concerning those who exercise Spiritual Gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. You know that in the days of your heathenism you were blindly led astray to worship dumb and senseless idols [by those who pretended to gifts from heaven]. This therefore I call to your remembrance; that no man who is inspired by the Spirit of God can say "Jesus is accursed;" and no man can say "Jesus is the Lord," unless he be inspired

<sup>482</sup> Literally, *Those who have no houses to eat in,* and who therefore ought to have received their portion at the love-feasts from their wealthier brethren.

by the Holy Spirit. Moreover, there are varieties of Gifts, but the same Spirit gives them all; and [they are given for] various ministrations, but all to serve the same Lord; and the working whereby they are wrought is various, but all are wrought in all by the working of the same God. But the gift whereby the Spirit becomes manifest, is given to each for the profit of all. To one is given by the Spirit the utterance of Wisdom, to another the utterance of Knowledge<sup>483</sup> according to the working of the same Spirit. To another Faith through the same Spirit. To another gifts of Healing through the same Spirit. To another the powers which work Miracles; to another Prophecy; to another the discernment of Spirits; to another varieties of Tongues; to another the Interpretation of Tongues.

But all these gifts are wrought by the working of that one and the same Spirit, who distributes them to each according to His will. For as the body is one, and has many members, and as all the members, though many, 7 are one body; so also is Christ. For in the communion of one Spirit we all were baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, 9 whether slaves or freemen, and were all made to drink of the same Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot should say, "I am not the hand, therefore I belong not to the body," does it thereby sever itself from the body? Or if the ear should say, "I am not the eye, therefore I belong not to the body," does it thereby sever itself from the body? If the whole body were an eye, where would be the hearing? If the whole body were an ear, where would be the smelling? But now God has placed the members severally in the body according to His will. If all were one member, where would be the body? But now, though the members are many, yet the body is one. And the eye cannot say to the hand, "I have no need of thee;" nor again the head to the feet, "I have no need of you." Nay,

<sup>483</sup> Knowledge (*gnosis*) is the term used throughout this epistle for a *deep insight into divine truth*; Wisdom is a more general term, but here (as being opposed to *gnosis*) probably means *practical wisdom*.

those parts of the body which are reckoned the feeblest are the most necessary, and those parts which we hold the least honorable, we clothe with the more abundant honor, and the less beautiful parts are adorned with the greater beauty; whereas the beautiful need no adornment. But God has tempered the body together, and given to the lowlier parts the higher honor, that there should be no division in the body, but that all its parts should feel, one for the other, a common sympathy. And thus, if one member suffer, every member suffers with it; or if one member be honored, every member rejoices with it. Now ye are together the body of Christ, and each one of you a separate member. And God has set the members in the Church, some in one place, and some in another: first, Apostles; secondly, Prophets; thirdly, Teachers; afterwards :Miracles ; then gifts of Healing; Serviceable Ministrations; gifts of Government; varieties of Tongues. Can all be Apostles? Can all be Prophets ? Can all be Teachers? Can all work Miracles? Have all the gifts of Healing? Do all speak with Tongues? Can all interpret the Tongues? But I would have you delight in the best gifts; and moreover, beyond them all, I will show you a path wherein to walk.

### 1 Corinthians 13

Though I speak all the tongues of men and angels, if I have not love, I am no better than sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all the mysteries, and all the depths of knowledge; and though I have the fullness of faith, so that I could remove mountains; if I have not love, I am nothing. And though I sell all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, <sup>484</sup> if I have not love, it profits me nothing. Love is long suffering; love is kind; love envies not; love speaks no vaunts; love swells not with vanity; love offends not by rudeness; love seeks not her own; is not

<sup>484</sup> Some MSS have "give my body that I may boast," which gives a satisfactory sense.

easily provoked ; bears no malice; 485 rejoices not over 486 iniquity, but rejoices in the victory of truth; 487 foregoes all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love shall never pass away; but Prophecies shall vanish, and Tongues shall cease, and Knowledge shall come to nought. For our Knowledge is imperfect, and our prophesying is imperfect. But when the perfect is come, the imperfect shall pass away. When I was a child, my words were childish, my desires were childish, my judgments were childish; but being grown a man, I have done with the things of childhood. So now we see darkly, 488 by a mirror, 489 but then face to face; now I know in part, but then shall I know, even as I now am known. Yet while other gifts shall pass away, these three, Faith, Hope, and Love, abide; and the greatest of these is Love.

#### 1 Corinthians 14

Follow earnestly after Love; yet delight in the spiritual gifts, but especially in the gift of Prophecy. For he who speaks in a Tongue, speaks not to men but to God, for no man understands him, but with his spirit he utters mysteries. But he who prophesies speaks to men, and builds them up, with

<sup>485</sup> Literally, *does not reckon the evil [against the evildoer]*. Compare 2 Cor. 5:19, “not reckoning their sins.” The Authorized Version here, “thinketh no evil,” is so beautiful that one cannot but wish it had been a correct translation. The same disposition, however, is implied by the “believes all things” below.

<sup>486</sup> This verb sometimes means *to rejoice in the misfortune* of another, and the characteristic of love here mentioned may be that it does not exult in the punishment of iniquity; or may simply mean that it does not delight in the contemplation of wickedness.

<sup>487</sup> Literally, *rejoices when the Truth rejoices*.

<sup>488</sup> Literally, *in an enigma*. Thus we see God in nature, while even revelation only shows us His reflected likeness. There is, no doubt, an allusion to Numbers 12:8.

<sup>489</sup> *Not through a glass, but by means of a mirror*.

exhortation and with comfort. He who speaks in a Tongue builds up himself alone; but he who prophesies builds up the Church. I wish that you all had the gift of Tongues, but rather that you had the gift of Prophecy; for he who prophesies is above him who speaks in Tongues, unless he interpret, that the Church may be built up thereby.

Now, brethren, if when I came to you I were to speak in Tongues, what should I profit you, unless I should [also] speak either in Revelation or in Knowledge, either in Prophecy or in Teaching? Even if the lifeless instruments of sound, the flute or the harp, give no distinctness to their notes, how can we understand their music? If the trumpet utter an uncertain note, how shall the soldier prepare himself for the battle? So also if you utter unintelligible words with your tongue, how can your speech be understood? you will but be speaking to the air. Perhaps there may be as many languages in the world [as the Tongues in which you speak], and none of them is unmeaning. If, then, I know not the meaning of the language, I shall be as a foreigner to him that speaks it, and he will be accounted a foreigner by me.

Therefore, in your own case (since you delight in spiritual gifts) strive that your abundant possession of them may build up the Church. Therefore, let him who speaks in a Tongue, pray that he may be able to interpret what he utters. For if I utter prayers in a Tongue, my spirit indeed prays, but my understanding bears no fruit. What follows, then? I will pray indeed with my spirit, but I will pray with my understanding also; I will sing praises with my spirit, but I will sing with my understanding also. For if thou, with thy spirit, offer thanks and praise, how shall the Amen be said to thy thanksgiving by those worshippers who take no part in the ministrations, while they are ignorant of the meaning of thy words?

Thou indeed fitly offerest thanksgiving, but thy neighbors are not built up. I offer

thanksgiving to God in private,<sup>490</sup> speaking in Tongues [to Him], more than any of you. Yet in the congregation I would rather speak five words with my understanding so as to instruct others, than ten thousand words in a Tongue. Brethren, be not children in understanding; but in malice be children, and in understanding be men. It is written in the Law, "With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that they will not hear me, saith the Lord." So that the gift of Tongues is a sign<sup>491</sup> given rather to unbelievers than to believers; whereas the gift of Prophecy belongs to believers.

When, therefore, the whole congregation is assembled, if all the speakers speak in Tongues, and if any who take no part in your ministrations, or who are unbelievers, should enter your assembly, will they not say that you are mad?<sup>492</sup> But if all exercise the gift of Prophecy, then if any man who is an unbeliever, or who takes no part in your ministrations, should enter the place of meeting, he is convicted in conscience by every speaker, he feels himself judged by all, and the secret depths of his heart are laid open; and so he will fall upon his face and worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth. What follows then, brethren? If, when you meet together, one is prepared to

sing a hymn of praise, another to exercise his gift of Teaching, another his gift of Tongues, another to deliver a Revelation, 6 another an Interpretation; let all be so done as to build up the Church.

If there be any who speak in Tongues, let not more than two, or at the most three, speak [in the same assembly]; and let them speak in turn; and let the same interpreter explain the words of all. But if there be no interpreter, let him who speaks in Tongues keep silence in the congregation, and speak in private to himself and God alone. Of those who have the gift of Prophecy, let two or three speak [in each assembly], and let the rest<sup>493</sup> judge; but if another of them, while sitting as hearer, receives a revelation [calling him to prophesy], let the first cease to speak. For so you can each prophesy in turn, that all may receive teaching and exhortation; and the gift of Prophecy does not take from the prophets the control over their own spirits. For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace.

In your congregation, as in all the congregations of the Saints the women must keep silence for they are not permitted to speak in public, but to show submission, as saith also the Law. (Gen. 3:16) And if they wish to ask any question, let them ask it of their own husbands at home; for it is disgraceful to women to speak in the congregation. [Whence is your claim to change the rules delivered to you?] Was it from you that the word of God went forth; or, are you the only Church which it has reached? Nay, if any think that he has the gift of Prophecy, or that he is a spiritual<sup>494</sup> man, let him acknowledge the words which I write for commands of the Lord. But if any man refuse this acknowledgment, let him refuse it at his peril.

<sup>490</sup> This is evidently the meaning of the verse. Compare verse 2, "He who speaks in a tongue speaks not to himself but to God," and verse 28, "Let him speak in private to himself and God alone."

<sup>491</sup> That is, a condemnatory sign.

<sup>492</sup> We must not be led, from any apparent analogy, to confound the exercise of the gift of Tongues in the primitive Church with modern exhibitions of fanaticism, which bear a superficial resemblance to it. We must remember that such modern pretensions to this gift must of course resemble the manifestations of the original gift in external features, because these - very features have been the objects of intentional imitation. If, however, the inarticulate utterances of ecstatic joy are followed (as they were in some of Wesley's converts) by a life of devoted holiness, we should hesitate to say that they might not bear some analogy to those of the Corinthian Christians.

<sup>493</sup> i.e. let the rest of the prophets judge whether those who stand up to exercise the gift have really received it. This is parallel to the direction in I Thess. 5:21.

<sup>494</sup> "Spiritual," the epithet on which the part of Apollos (the ultra-Pauline party) especially prided themselves.

**Therefore, brethren, delight in the gift of Prophecy, and hinder not the gift of Tongues. And let all be done with decency and order.**

### 1 Corinthians 15

Moreover, brethren, I call to your remembrance the Glad tidings which I brought you, which also you received, wherein also you stand firm, whereby also you are saved, if you still hold fast the words wherein I declared it to you; unless indeed you believed in vain. For the first thing I taught you was that which I had myself been taught, that Christ died for our sins, according to the Scriptures;<sup>495</sup> and that He was buried, and that He rose the third day from the dead, according to the Scriptures; and that he was seen by Cephas, and then by The Twelve; after that He was seen by about five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part are living at this present time, but some are fallen asleep.<sup>496</sup> Next He was seen by James, and then by all the Apostles; and last of all he was seen by me also, who am placed among the rest as it were by an untimely birth; for I am the least of the Apostles, and am not worthy to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God. But by the grace of God, I am what I am; and His grace which was bestowed upon me was not fruitless; but I labored more abundantly than all the rest; yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. So then, whether preached by me, or them, this is what we preached, and this is what you believed.

**If then this be our tidings, that Christ is risen from the dead, how is it that some among you say, there is no resurrection of the dead? But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then Christ is not risen; and, if Christ be not risen, vain is the message we proclaim, and,**

<sup>495</sup> So our Lord quotes Isa. 53:12, in Luke 22:37.

<sup>496</sup> Can we imagine it possible that St. Paul should have said this without knowing it to be true? or without himself having seen some of these, 'five hundred brethren,' of whom the 'greater part' were alive when he wrote these words? The skeptical (but candid and honest) De Wette acknowledges this testimony as conclusive.

**vain the faith with which you heard it. Moreover, we are found, guilty of false witness against God; because we bore witness of God that He raised Christ from the dead, whom He did not raise, if indeed the dead rise not. For if there be no resurrection of the dead, Christ himself<sup>497</sup> is not risen. And if Christ be not risen, your faith is vain, you are still in your sins. Moreover, if this be so, they who have fallen asleep in Christ, perished when they died. If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. But now, Christ is risen from the dead; the first fruits<sup>498</sup> of all who sleep.**

For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as, in Adam, all men die, so, in Christ, shall all be raised to life. But each in his own order; Christ, the first fruits; afterwards they who are Christ's at His appearing; finally, the end shall come, when He shall give up His kingdom to God His Father, having destroyed all other dominion, and authority, and power.<sup>499</sup> For He must reign "till He hath put all enemies under His feet." (Psalm 110:1)

And last of His enemies, Death also shall be destroyed. For "He hath put all things under His feet." (Psalm 8:6) But in that saying, "All things are put under Him," it is manifest that God is excepted, who put all things under Him. And when all things are made subject to Him, then shall the Son also subject Himself to Him who made them subject, that God may be all in all.

<sup>497</sup> This argument is founded on the union between Christ and His members; they so share His life, that because He lives forever, they must live also, if we deny their immortality, we deny His.

<sup>498</sup> On the second day of the feast of Passover a sheaf of ripe corn was offered upon the altar as a consecration of the whole harvest. Till this was done it was considered unlawful to begin reaping. See Lev. 23:10, 11. The metaphor there is, "as the single sheaf of first fruits represents and consecrates all the harvest, so Christ's resurrection represents and involves that of all who sleep in Him."

<sup>499</sup> Compare Col. 2:15 and Eph. 1:21.

Again, what will become of those who cause themselves to be baptized for the Dead,<sup>500</sup> if the dead never rise again? Why then do they submit to baptism for the dead?

And I too, why do I put my life to hazard every hour? I protest by my I boasting (which I have [not in myself, but] in Christ Jesus our Lord) I die daily. If I have fought (so to speak) with beasts at Ephesus, what am I profited if the dead rise not? "Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die." (Isa. 22:13) Beware lest you be led astray; "Converse with evil men corrupts good manners."<sup>501</sup> Change your drunken raveling into the sobriety of righteousness, and live no more in sin; for some

of you know not God; I speak this to your shame.

But some one will say," How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?"<sup>502</sup>

Thou fool, the seed thou sowest is not quickened into life till it hath partaken of death. And that which thou sowest has not the same body with the plant which will spring from it, but it is mere grain, of wheat, or whatever else it may chance to be. God gives it a body according to His will; and to every seed the body of its own proper plant. For all flesh is not the same flesh; [but each body is fitted to the place it fills]; the bodies of men, and of beasts, of birds, and of fishes, differ the one from the other.

And there are bodies which belong to heaven, and bodies which belong to earth; but in glory the heavenly differ from the earthly. The sun is more glorious than the moon, and the moon is more glorious than the stars, and one star excels another in glory. So likewise is the resurrection of the dead; [they will be clothed with a body fitted to their lot]; it is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown in a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body; for as there are natural bodies, so there are also spiritual bodies.

And so it is written, "The first man Adam was made a living soul," (Gen. 2:7) the last Adam was made a life giving spirit. But the spiritual comes not till after the natural. The first man was made of earthly clay, the second man was the Lord from heaven. As is the earthly, such are they also that are earthly; and as is the heavenly, such are they

<sup>500</sup> The only meaning which the Greek seems to admit here is a reference to the practice of submitting to baptism instead of some person who had died unbaptized. Yet this explanation is liable to very great difficulties. (1) How strange that St. Paul should refer to such a superstition without rebuking it? Perhaps, however, he may have censured it in a former letter, and now only refers to it as an *argumentum ad homines*. It has, indeed, been alleged that the present mention of it implies a censure; that this is far from evident. (2) If such a practice did exist in the Apostolic Church, how can we account for its being discontinued in the period which followed, when a magical efficacy was more and more ascribed to the material act of baptism? Yet the practice was never adopted except by some obscure sects of Gnostics, who seem to have founded their custom on this very passage.

The explanations which have been adopted to avoid the difficulty, such as "over the graves of the dead," or "in the name of the dead (meaning Christ)," etc, are all inadmissible, as being contrary to the analogy of the language. On the whole, therefore, the passage must be considered to admit of no satisfactory explanation. It alludes to some practice of the Corinthians which has not been recorded elsewhere, and of which every other trace has perished.

<sup>501</sup> St. Paul here quotes a line from *The Thais*, a comedy of Menander's. The line had probably passed into a proverbial expression. We from this passage that the free-thinking party at Corinth joined immoral practices with their licentious doctrine; and that they were corrupted by the evil example of their heathen neighbors.

<sup>502</sup> The form of this objection is conclusive against the hypothesis of those who suppose that these Corinthians only disbelieved the Resurrection of the body; and that they believed the Resurrection of the dead. St. Paul asserts the Resurrection of the dead; to which they reply, 'How can the dead rise to life again, when their body has perished?' This objection he proceeds to answer, by showing that individual existence may continue, without the continuance of the material body.

**also that are heavenly; and as we have borne the image of the earthly, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. But this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood<sup>503</sup> cannot**

<sup>503</sup> The importance of the subject justifies our quoting at some length the admirable remarks of Dr. Burton (formerly Regius Professor of Divinity at Oxford) on this passage, in the hope that his high reputation for learning and for unblemished orthodoxy may lead some persons to reconsider the loose and unscriptural language which they are in the habit of using. After regretting that some of the early Fathers have (when treating of the Resurrection of the Body) appeared to contradict these words of St. Paul, Dr. Burton continues as follows:

“It is nowhere asserted in the New Testament that we shall rise again *with our bodies*. Unless a man will say that the stalk, the blade, and the ear of corn are actually the same thing with the single grain which is put into the ground, he cannot quote St. Paul as saying that we shall rise again with the same bodies; or at least he must allow that the future body may only be like to the present one, inasmuch as both come under the same genus, i.e. we speak of human *bodies*, and we speak of heavenly *bodies*. But St. Paul’s words do not warrant us in saying that the resemblance between the present and future body will be greater than between a man and a star, or between a bird and a fish. Nothing can be plainer than the expression which he uses in the first of these two analogies, *Thou sowest not that body that shall be* (15:37). He says also with equal plainness, of the body, *It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body; there is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body* (15:44). These words require to be examined closely, and involve remotely a deep metaphysical question. In common language, the terms *Body* and *Spirit* are accustomed to be opposed, and are used to represent two things which are totally distinct. But St. Paul here brings the two expressions together, and speaks of a *spiritual body*. St. Paul, therefore did not oppose *Body* to *Spirit*; and though the looseness of modern language may allow us to do so, and yet to be correct in our ideas it may save some confusion if we consider *Spirit* as opposed to *Matter*, and if we take *Body* to be a generic term, which comprises both. A *body* therefore, in the language of St. Paul, is something which has a distinct individual existence...

“St. Paul tells us that every individual, when he rises again, will have a spiritual body; but the remarks which I have made may show how different is the idea

**inherit the kingdom of God, neither can corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I declare to you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the sound of the last trumpet; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.**

**But when this corruptible is clothed with incorruption, and this mortal is clothed with immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying, which is written, “Death is swallowed up in victory.” (Isa. 25:8) “O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?” (Hosea 13:14) The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law;<sup>504</sup> but thanks be to God, who giveth us the victory, through Our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**58 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord; knowing that your labor is not in vain, in the Lord.**

## 1 Corinthians 16

**Concerning the collection for the saints [at Jerusalem] I would have you do as I have enjoined upon Christian the churches of Galatia. Upon the first day of the week, let each of you set apart whatever his gains may enable him to spare; that there may be no collections when I come. And when I am with you, whomsoever you shall judge to be fitted for the trust, I will furnish, with letters, and send them to carry your benevolence to Jerusalem ; or if there shall seem sufficient reason for me also to go thither, they shall go**

conveyed by these words from the notions which some persons entertain, that we shall rise again with the *same identical body*. St. Paul appears effectually to preclude this notion, when he says, *Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God* (15:30).” Burton’s *Lectures*, pp. 429-431.

<sup>504</sup> Why is the law called “the strength of sin”? Because the Law of Duty, being acknowledged, gives to sin its power to wound the conscience; in fact, a moral law of precepts and penalties announces the fatal consequences of sin, without giving us any power on conquering sin. Compare Romans 7:7-11.

with me. But I will visit you after I have passed through Macedonia (for through Macedonia I shall pass), and perhaps I shall remain with you, or even winter with you, that you may forward me on my farther journey, whithersoever I go. For I do not wish to see you now for a passing I visit; since I hope to stay some time with you, if the Lord permit. But I shall remain at Ephesus until Pentecost, for a door is opened to me both great and effectual; and there are many adversaries [against whom I must contend]. If Timothy come to you, be careful to give him no cause of fear in your intercourse with him, for he is laboring, as I am, in the Lord's work. Therefore, let no man despise him, but forward him on his way in peace, that he may come hither to me; for I expect him, and the brethren with him.

As regards the brother Apollos, I urged him much to visit you with the brethren [who bear this letter] ; nevertheless, he was resolved not to come to you at this time, but he will visit you at a more convenient season.

Be watchful, stand firm in faith, be manful and stout hearted. Let all you do be done in love.

You know, brethren, that the house of Stephanas were the first fruits of Achaia, and that they have taken on themselves the task of ministering to the saints. I exhort you, therefore, on your part, to show submission towards men like these, and towards all who work laboriously with them. I rejoice in the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, because they I have supplied all which you needed; for they have lightened my spirit and yours. To such render due acknowledgment.

The Churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla send their loving salutation in the Lord, together with the Church which assembles at their house. All the brethren here salute you. Salute one another with the kiss of holiness.

The salutation of me, Paul, with my own hand. Let him who loves not the Lord Jesus Christ be accursed. The Lord cometh.

### **The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. My love be with you all in Christ Jesus.**

In the concluding part of this letter we have some indication of the Apostle's plans for the future. He is looking forward to a journey through Macedonia (16:5), to be succeeded by a visit to Corinth, and after this he thinks it probable he may proceed to Jerusalem. In the Acts of the Apostles the same intentions are expressed, with a stronger purpose of going to Jerusalem (16:21), and with the additional conviction that after passing through Macedonia and Achaia, and visiting Palestine, he must also see Rome'. He had won many of the inhabitants of Asia Minor and Ephesus to the faith: and now, after the prospect of completing his charitable exertions for the poor Christians of Judea, his spirit turns towards the accomplishment of remoter conquests. Far from being content with his past achievements, or resting from his incessant labors, he felt that he was under a debt of perpetual obligation to all the Gentile world. Thus he expresses himself, soon after this time, in the Epistle to the Roman Christians, whom he had long ago desired to see (Rom. 1:10 15), and whom he hopes at length to visit, now that he is on his way to Jerusalem, and is looking forward to a still more distant and hazardous journey to Spain. The path thus dimly traced before him, as he thought of the future at Ephesus, and made more clearly visible, when he wrote the letter at Corinth, was made still more evident as he proceeded on his course. Yet not without forebodings of evil, and much discouragement, and mysterious delays, did the Apostle advance on his courageous career. But we are anticipating many subjects which will give a touching interest to subsequent passages of this history. Important events still detain us in Ephesus. Though St. Paul's companions had been sent before in the direction of his contemplated journey (Acts 19:22), he still resolved to stay till Pentecost (1 Cor. 16:8). A "great door" was open to him, and there were "many adversaries," against whom he had yet to contend.

## Chapter 16

### Description of Ephesus

Tm; boundaries of the province of Asia, and the position of its chief city Ephesus, have already been placed before the reader. It is now time that we should give some description of the city itself, with its notice of its characteristic religious institutions, and its political arrangements under the Empire.

No cities were ever more favorably placed for prosperity and growth than those of the colonial Greeks in Asia Minor. They had the advantage of a coast line full of convenient harbors and of a sea, which was favorable to the navigation of that day; and, through the long approaches formed by the plains of the great western rivers, they had access to the inland trade of the East. Two of these rivers have been more than once alluded to, the Hermus and the Meander. The valley of the first was bounded on the south by the ridge of Tmolus; that of the second was bounded on the north by Messogis.

In the interval between these two mountain ranges was the shorter course of the river Cayster. A few miles from the sea, a narrow gorge is formed by Mount Pactyas on the south, which is the western termination of Messogis, and by the precipices of Gallesus on the north, the pine clad summits<sup>505</sup> of which are more

---

<sup>505</sup> Our road lay at the foot of Gallesus, beneath precipices of a stupendous height, abrupt and inaccessible. In the rock are many holes inhabited by eagles; of which several were soaring high in the air, with crows clamoring about them, so far above us as hardly to be discernible.'-Chandler, p. lli. Of another journey he says: 'We rode among the roots of Gallesus, or the Aleman, through pleasant thickets abounding with goldfinches. The aerial summits of this immense mountain towered above us, clad with pines. Steep succeeded steep, as we advanced, and the path became more narrow slippery, and uneven. . . . the known sureness of foot of our horses being our confidence and security by fearful precipices and giddy heights.'-p. 103. The approach from Sardis, by which we suppose St. Paul to have come, was on this side: and part of the pavement of the road still remains.

remotely connected with the heights of Tmolus. This gorge separates the Upper Caystrian Meadows" from a small alluvial plain<sup>506</sup> by the sea. Partly on the long ridge of Coressus, which is the southern boundary of this plain, partly on the detached circular eminence of Mount Prion, and partly on the plain itself, near the windings of the Cayster, and about the edge of the harbor, were the buildings of the city. Ephesus was not so distinguished in early times as several of her Ionian sisters;<sup>507</sup> and some of them outlived her glory. But, though Phocrea and Miletus sent out more colonies, and Smyrna has ever remained a flourishing city, yet Ephesus had great natural advantages, which were duly developed in the age of which we are writing.

Having easy access through the defiles of Mount Tmolus to Sardis, and thence up the valley of the Hermus far into Phrygia,<sup>508</sup> and again, by a similar pass through Messogis to the Meander, being connected with the great road through Iconium to the Euphrates,<sup>509</sup> it became the metropolis of the province of Asia under the Romans, and the chief emporium of trade on the nearer side of Taurus. The city built by Androclus and his Athenian followers was on the slope of

---

<sup>506</sup> The plain is said by Mr. Arundell to be about five miles long-; and the morass has advanced considerably into the sea since the flourishing times of Ephesus.

<sup>507</sup> The Ephesian Diana, however, was the patroness of the Phoccan navigators, even when the city of Ephesus was unimportant.

<sup>508</sup> In this direction we imagine St. Paul to have traveled.

<sup>509</sup> 3 We have frequently had occasion to mention this great road. See pp. ~06-208, 363. It was the principal line of communication with the eastern provinces; but we have conjectured that St. Paul did not travel by it, because it seems probable that he never was at Colosse. A description of the route by Colosse and Laodicea will be found in Arundell's *Asia*. The view he gives of the cliffs of Colosse should be noticed. Though St. Paul may never have seen them, they are interesting as connected with Epaphras and his other converts.

Coressus; but gradually it descended into the plain, in the direction of the Temple of Diana. The Alexandrian age produced a marked alteration in Ephesus, as in most of the great towns in the East; and Lysimachus extended his new city over the summit of Prion as well as the heights of Coressus. The Roman age saw, doubtless, a still further increase both of the size and magnificence of the place. To attempt to reconstruct it from the materials which remain, would be a difficult task, far more difficult than in the case of Athens, or even Antioch; but some of the more interesting sites are easily identified. Those who walk over the desolate site of the Asiatic metropolis see piles of ruined edifices on the rocky sides and among the thickets of Mount Prion:<sup>510</sup> they look out from its summit over the confused morass which once was the harbor, where Aquila and Priscilla landed; and they visit in its deep recesses the dripping marble quarries, where the marks of the tools are visible still.

On the outer edge of the same hill they trace the enclosure of the Stadium, which may have suggested to St. Paul many of those images with which he enforces Christian duty, in the first letter written from Ephesus to Corinth. Farther on, and nearer Coressus, the remains of the vast Theatre<sup>511</sup> (the outline of the enclosure is still distinct, though the marble seats are removed)

<sup>510</sup> Even the sea has retired from the scene of desolation, and a pestilential morass, covered with mud and rushes, has succeeded to the waters which brought up the ships laden with merchandise from every country.'-Arundell's Seven Churches, p. 27. Another occasion will occur for mentioning the harbor which was very indifferent. Some attempts to improve it were made about this time.

<sup>511</sup> Of the site of the theater, the scene of the tumult raised by Demetrius, there can be no doubt, its ruins being a wreck of immense grandeur. I think it must have been larger than the one at Miletus, and that exceeds any I have elsewhere seen in scale, although not in ornament. Its form alone can now be spoken of, for every seat is removed.. The Theatre of Ephesus is said to be the largest known of any that have remained to us from antiquity.

show the place where the multitude, roused by Demetrius, shouted out, for two hours, in honor of Diana. Below is the Agora,<sup>512</sup> through which the mob rushed up to the well known place of meeting. And in the valley between Prion and Coressus is one of the Gymnasia, (where the athletes were trained for transient honors and a perishable garland. Surrounding and crowning the scene, are the long Hellenic walls of Lysimachus, following the ridge of Coressus.<sup>513</sup> On a spur of the hill, they descend to an ancient tower, which is still called the Prison of St. Paul. The name is doubtless legendary: but St. Paul may have stood here, and looked over the city and the plain, and seen the Cayster winding towards him from the base of Galleus.<sup>514</sup> Within his view was another eminence, detached from the city of that day, but which became the Mohammedan town when ancient Ephesus was destroyed, and nevertheless preserves in its name a record of another Apostle, the "disciple" St. John.

### Temple of Diana. Her Image and Worship

But one building at Ephesus surpassed all the rest in magnificence and in fame. This was the Temple of Artemis or Diana, which glittered in brilliant beauty at the head of the harbor, and

<sup>512</sup> The Agora, with its public buildings, would naturally be between the hill-side on which the theatre and stadium stood, and the harbor. For the general notion of a Greek Agora, see the description of Athens.

<sup>513</sup> An interesting feature in these ruins is the Hellenic wall of Lysimachus, ranging along the heights of Coressus. It extends for nearly a mile and three quarters, in a S.E. and N.W. direction, from the heights immediately to the S. of the gymnasium to the tower called the Prison of St. Paul, but which is in fact one of the towers of the ancient wall. . . . It is defended and strengthened by numerous square towers of the same character at unequal distances.'-Hamilton's Researches, vol. ii. p. 26.

<sup>514</sup> "This eminence (a root of Coressus running out towards the plain) command, a lovely prospect of the river Cayster, which there crosses the plain from near Galleus, with a small but full stream, and with many luxuriant meanders."-Chandler.

was reckoned by the ancients as one of the wonders of the world. The sun, it was said, saw nothing in his course more magnificent than Diana's Temple. Its honor dated from a remote antiquity. Leaving out of consideration the earliest temple, which was cotemporaneous with the Athenian colony under Androclus, or even yet more ancient, we find the great edifice, which was anterior to the Macedonian period, begun and continued in the midst of the attention and admiration both of Greeks and Asians. The foundations were carefully laid, with immense substructions, in the marshy ground.<sup>515</sup>

Architects of the highest distinction were employed.<sup>516</sup> The quarries of Mount Prion supplied the marble. All the Greek cities of Asia contributed to the structure; and Croesus, the king of Lydia, himself lent his aid. The work thus begun before the Persian war, was slowly continued even through the Peloponnesian war; and its dedication was celebrated by a poet cotemporary with Euripides. But the building, which had been thus rising through the space of many years, was not destined to remain long in the beauty of its perfection. The fanatic Herostratus set fire to it on the same night in which Alexander was born. This is one of the coincidences of history, on which the ancient world was fond of dwelling: and it enables us, with more distinctness, to pursue the annals of Diana of the Ephesians." The temple was rebuilt with new and more sumptuous magnificence. The ladies of Ephesus contributed their jewelry to the expense of the restoration. The national pride in the sanctuary was so great, that, when Alexander offered the spoils of his eastern campaign if he might inscribe his name on the building, the honor was declined. The Ephesians never ceased to embellish the shrine

<sup>515</sup> Pliny says that it was built in marshy ground, lest it should be injured by earthquakes.

<sup>516</sup> The first architect was Theodorus of Samos. He was succeeded by Chersiphon of Knossos, then by his son Metagenes. The building was completed by Demetrius and Preonius.

of their goddess, continually adding new decorations and subsidiary buildings, with statues and pictures by the most famous artists. This was the temple that kindled the enthusiasm of St. Paul's opponents (Acts 19), and was still the rallying point of Heathenism in the days of St. John and Polycarp. In the second century we read that it was united to the city by a long colonnade. But soon afterwards it was plundered and laid waste by the Goths, who came from beyond the Danube in the reign of Gallienus. It sank entirely into decay in the age when Christianity was overspreading the Empire; and its remains are to be sought for in medieval buildings, in the columns of green jasper which support the dome of St. Sophia, or even in the naves of Italian cathedrals.

Thus the Temple of Diana of Ephesus saw all the changes of Asia Minor, from Croesus to Constantine. Though nothing now remains on the spot to show us what or even where it was, there is enough in its written memorials to give us some notion of its appearance and splendor. The reader will bear in mind the characteristic style which was assumed by Greek architecture, and which has suggested many of the "images of the New Testament."<sup>517</sup> It was quite different from the lofty and ascending form of those buildings which have since arisen in all parts of Christian Europe, and essentially consisted in horizontal entablatures resting on vertical columns. In another respect, also, the temples of the ancients may be contrasted with our churches and cathedrals. They were not roofed over for the reception of a large company of worshippers, but were in fact colonnades<sup>518</sup> erected as subsidiary decorations, round the cell which contained the idol, and were, through a great part of their space, open to the sky. The

<sup>517</sup> See, for instance, Gal. 2:9, Rev. 3:12, also 1 Tim. 3:15.

<sup>518</sup> A friend suggests one parallel in Christian architecture, viz. the Atrium, western court of St., Ambrogio at Milan, which is a colonnade west of the Church, itself enclosing a large oblong space not roofed over.

colonnades of the Ephesian Diana really constituted an epoch in the history of Art, for in them was first matured that graceful Ionic style, the feminine beauty of which was more suited to the genius of the Asiatic Greek than the sterner and plainer Doric, in which the Parthenon and Propylea of Athens were built.

The scale on which the Temple was erected was magnificently extensive. It was 425 feet in length and 220 in breadth, and the columns were 60 feet high. The number of columns was 127, each of them the gift of a king; and 36 of them were enriched with ornament and color. The folding doors were of cypress wood; the part which was not open to the sky was roofed over with cedar; and the staircase was formed of the wood of one single vine from the island of Cyprus. The value and fame of the Temple were enhanced by its being the treasury, where a large portion of the wealth of Western Asia was stored up. It is probable that there was no religious building in the world in which was concentrated a greater amount of admiration, enthusiasm, and superstition.

If the Temple of Diana at Ephesus was magnificent, the image enshrined within the sumptuous enclosure was primitive and rude. We usually conceive of this goddess, when represented in art, as the tall huntress, eager in pursuit, like the statue in the Louvre. Such was not the form of the Ephesian Diana, though she was identified by the Greeks with their own mountain goddess, whose figure we often see represented on the coins of this city.<sup>519</sup> What amount of fusion took place, in the case of this worship, between Greek and Oriental notions, we need not inquire. The image may have been intended to represent Diana in one of her customary characters, as the deity of fountains; but it reminds us rather of the idols of the far East, and of the religions which love to represent the life of all animated beings fed and supported by the many breasts of nature. The

<sup>519</sup> Hence she is frequently represented as the Greek Diana on coins of Ephesus. Some of these are given in the larger editions.

figure which assumed this emblematic form above, was terminated below in a shapeless block. The material was wood. A bar of metal was in each hand. The dress was covered with mystic devices, and the small shrine, where it stood within the temple, was concealed by a curtain in front. Yet, rude as the image was, it was the object of the utmost veneration. Like the Palladium of Troy, like the most ancient Minerva of the Athenian Acropolis, like the Paphian Venus or Cybele of Pessinus, to which allusion has been made, like the Ceres in Sicily mentioned by Cicero, "it was believed to have" fallen down from the sky" (Acts 19:35).

Thus it was the object of the greater veneration from the contrast of its primitive simplicity with the modern and earthly splendor which surrounded it; and it was the model on which the images of Diana were formed for worship in other cities. One of the idolatrous customs of the ancient world was the use of portable images or shrines, which were little models of the more celebrated objects of devotion. They were carried in processions, on journeys and military expeditions, and sometimes set up as household gods in private dwellings. Pliny says that this was the case with the Temple of the Cnidian Venus; and other Heathen writers make allusion to the "shrines" of the Ephesian Diana, which are mentioned in the Acts (19:24). The material might be wood, or gold, or "silver." The latter material was that which employed the hands of the workmen of Demetrius. From the expressions used by St. Luke, it is evident that an extensive and lucrative trade grew up at Ephesus, from the manufacture and sale of these shrines. Few of those who came to Ephesus would willingly go away without a memorial of the goddess, and a model of her temple; and, from the wide circulation of these works of art over the shores of the Mediterranean, and far into the interior, it might be said, with little exaggeration, that her worship was recognized by the "whole world" (Acts 19:27).

The ceremonies of the actual worship at Ephesus were conducted by the members of a

twofold hierarchy. And here again we see the traces of Oriental, rather than Greek, influences. The Megabyzi, the priests of Diana, were eunuchs from the interior, under one at their head, who bore the title of high priest, and ranked among the leading and most influential personages of the city. Along with these priests were associated a swarm of virgin priestesses consecrated, under the name of Melissae<sup>520</sup>, to the service of the deity, and divided into three classes, and serving, like the priests, under one head. And with the priests and priestesses would be associated (as in all the great temples of antiquity) a great number of slaves, who attended to the various duties connected with the worship, down to the care of sweeping and cleaning the Temple. This last phrase leads us to notice an expression used in the Acts of the Apostles, concerning the connection of Ephesus with the Temple of Diana.

The "Temple sweeper", originally an expression of humility, and applied to the lowest menials engaged in the care of the sacred edifice,<sup>521</sup> became afterwards a title of the highest honor, and was eagerly appropriated by the most famous cities.<sup>522</sup> This was the case with Ephesus in reference to her national goddess. The city was personified as Diana's devotee. Thus, the town clerk could with good reason begin his speech by the question, "What man is there that knows not that the city of the Ephesians is neocoros of

<sup>520</sup> These priestesses belonged to the class of 'sacred slaves.' This class of devotees was common in the great temples of the Greeks. Different opinions have been expressed on the character of those at Ephesus: but, knowing what we do of Heathenism, it is difficult to have a favorable view of them.

<sup>521</sup> The term properly denotes 'sweeper of the temple,' and is nearly synonymous with the Latin 'redituus,' or the French 'sacristan.'

<sup>522</sup> Primarily the term was applicable to persons, but afterwards it was applied to communities, and more especially in the Roman period. A city might be so called with respect to several divinities, and frequently the title had regard to the deified emperor.

the great goddess Diana, and of the image which came down from heaven."

The Temple and the Temple services remained under the Romans as they had been since the period of Alexander. If any change had taken place, greater honor was paid to the goddess, and richer magnificence added to her sanctuary, in proportion to the wider extent to which her fame had been spread. Asia was always a favored province, and Ephesus must be classed among those cities of the Greeks, to which the conquerors were willing to pay distinguished respect. Her liberties and her municipal constitution were left untouched, when the province was governed by an officer from Rome. To the general remarks which have been made before in reference to Thessalonica, concerning the position of free or autonomous cities under the Empire, something more may be added here, inasmuch as certain political characters of Ephesus appear on the scene which is described in the sacred narrative.

### Political Constitution of Ephesus

We have said, in the passage above alluded to, that free cities under the Empire had frequently their senate and assembly. There is abundant proof that this was the case at Ephesus. Its old constitution was democratic, as we should expect in a city of the Ionians, and as we are distinctly told by Xenophon: and this constitution continued to subsist under the Romans. The senate, of which Josephus speaks, still met in the Senate house, which is noticed by another writer (Tacitus), and the position of which was probably in the Agora below the Theatre. We have still more frequent notices of the demos or people, and its assembly. Wherever its customary place of meeting might be when legally and regularly convoked (Acts 19:39), the theater would be an obvious place of meeting, in the case of a tumultuary gathering like that which will presently be brought before our notice.

Again, like other free cities, Ephesus had its magistrates, as Thessalonica had its politarchs, and Athens its archons. Among those which our

sources of information bring before us, are several with the same titles and functions as in Athens. One of these was that officer who is described as "town clerk" in the authorized version of the Bible (Acts 19: 35). Without being able to determine his exact duties, or to decide whether another term, such as "Chancellor," or "Recorder," would better describe them to us, we may assert, from the parallel case of Athens, and from the Ephesian records themselves, that he was a magistrate of great authority, in a high and very public position. He had to do with state papers; he was keeper of the archives; he read what was of public moment before the senate and assembly; he was present when money was deposited in the Temple; and when letters were sent to the people of Ephesus, they were officially addressed to him. Thus, we can readily account for his name appearing so often on the coins of Ephesus. He seems sometimes to have given the name to the year, like the archons at Athens, or the consuls at Rome. Hence no magistrate was more before the public at Ephesus. His very aspect was familiar to all the citizens; and no one was so likely to be able to calm and disperse an angry and excited multitude. (See Acts 19:35 41).

If we turn now from the city to the province of which it was the metropolis, we are under no perplexity as to its relation to the imperial government. From coins and from inscriptions, from secular writers and Scripture itself (Acts xix. 38), we learn that Asia was a proconsular province.<sup>523</sup> We shall not stay to consider the question which has been raised concerning the usage of the plural in this passage of the Acts; for it is not necessarily implied that more than one proconsul was in Ephesus at the time.

But another subject connected with the provincial arrangements requires a few words of explanation. The Roman citizens in a province were, in all legal matters, under the jurisdiction of the proconsul; and for the

<sup>523</sup> See the account of this province in Chap. 8.

convenient administration of justice, the whole country was divided into districts, each of which had its own assize town. The proconsul, at stated seasons, made a circuit through these districts, attended by his interpreter (for all legal business in the Empire was conducted in Latin), and those who had subjects of litigation, or other cases requiring the observance of legal forms, brought them before him or the judges whom he might appoint. Thus Pliny, after the true Roman spirit, in his geographical description of the Empire, is always in the habit of mentioning the assize towns, and the extent of the shires which surrounded them. In the province of Asia he takes especial notice of Sardis, Smyrna, and Ephesus, and enumerates the various towns which brought their causes to be tried at these cities. The official visit of the proconsul to Ephesus was necessarily among the most important; and the town clerk, in referring to the presence of the proconsuls, could remind his fellow citizens in the same breath that it was the very time of the assizes. (Acts 19:38).

We have no information as to the time of the year at which the Ephesian assizes were held. If the meeting took place in spring, they might then be coincident with the great gathering which took place at the celebration of the national game!<sup>524</sup> It seems that the ancient festival of the United Ionians had merged into that which was held in honor of the Ephesian Diana.<sup>524</sup> The whole month of May was consecrated to the glory of the goddess; and the month itself received from her the name of Artemision. The Artemisian festival was not simply an Ephesian ceremony, but was fostered by the sympathy and enthusiasm of all the surrounding neighborhood. As the Temple of Diana was called "the Temple of Asia," so this

<sup>524</sup> What the festival of Delos was for the islands, the Pan Ionian festival was for the mainland. But Ephesus seems ultimately to have absorbed and concentrated this celebration. These games were called Artemisia, Ephesia, and Ecumenica.

gathering was called” the common meeting of Asia.”

### The Asiarchs

From the towns on the coast and in the interior, the Ionians came up with their wives and children to witness the gymnastic and musical contests, and to enjoy the various amusements, which made the days and nights of May one long scene of revelry. To preside over these games, to provide the necessary expenses, and to see that due order was maintained, annual officers were appointed by election from the whole province. About the time of the vernal equinox each of the principal towns within the district called Asia chose one of its wealthiest citizens, and, from the whole number thus returned, ten were finally selected to discharge the duty of Asiarchs.<sup>525</sup>

We find similar titles in use in the neighboring provinces, and read, in books or on inscriptions and coins, of Bithyniarchs, Galatarchs, Lyciarchs, and Syriatarchs. But the games of Asia and Ephesus were pre eminently famous; and those who held there the office of” Presidents of the Games” were men of high distinction and extensive influence. Receiving no emolument from their office, but being required rather to expend large sums for the amusement of the people and their own credit, they were necessarily persons of wealth. Men of consular rank were often willing to receive the appointment, and it was held to enhance the honor of any other magistracies with which they might be invested. They held for the time a kind of sacerdotal position; and, when robed in mantles of purple and crowned with garlands, they assumed the duty of regulating the great gymnastic contests, and controlling the

<sup>525</sup> Acts 19., translated, “Chief of Asia” in the A. V. From what is said in Eusebius of one Asiarch presiding at the martyrdom of Polycarp. it has been needlessly supposed that in this passage of the Acts we are to consider all but one to have been assessors of the chief Asiarch, or else those to be meant who had held the office in previous years and retained the title, like the High Priest at Jerusalem.

tumultuary crowd in the theatre, they might literally be called the” Chief of Asia” (Acts 19:31).

### Demetrius and the Silversmiths

These notices of the topography and history of Ephesus, of its religious institutions, and political condition under the Empire, may serve to clear the way for the narrative which we must now pursue. We resume the history at the twenty second verse of the nineteenth chapter of the Acts, where we are told of a continued stay in Asia after the burning of the books of the magicians. St. Paul was indeed looking forward to a journey through Macedonia and Achaia, and ultimately to Jerusalem and Rome (verse. 21); and in anticipation of his departure he had sent two of his companions into Macedonia before him (verse. 22). The events which had previously occurred have already shown us the great effects which his preaching had produced both among the Jews and Gentiles. And those which follow show us still more clearly how wide a door had been thrown open to the progress of the Gospel. The idolatrous practices of Ephesus were so far endangered, that the interests of one of the prevalent trades of the place was seriously affected; and meanwhile St. Paul's character had risen so high, as to obtain influence over some of the wealthiest and most powerful personages in the province. The scene which follows is entirely connected with the religious observances of the city of Diana. The Jews fall into the background. Both the danger and safety of the Apostle originate with the Gentiles,

It seems to have been the season of spring when the occurrences took place which are related by St. Luke at the close of the nineteenth chapter. We have already seen that he purposed to stay at Ephesus” till Pentecost;” and it has been stated that May was the month of Diana, in which the great religious gathering took place to celebrate the games. If this also was the season of the provincial assize (which, as we have seen, is by no means improbable), the city would be crowded with various classes of people. Doubtless those who employed

themselves in making the portable shrines of Diana expected to do a brisk trade at such a time; and when they found that the sale of these objects of superstition was seriously diminished, and that the preaching of St. Paul was the cause of their merchandise being depreciated, they objected strenuously concerning that way in which the new teacher was teaching his disciples (verse. 23). A certain Demetrius, ;1 master manufacturer in the craft, summoned together his workmen, along with other artisans who were occupied in trades of the same kind (among whom we may perhaps reckon Alexander the Coppersmith) , against whom the apostle warned Timothy at a later period),and addressed to them an inflammatory speech. It is evident that St. Paul, though he had made no open calumnious attack on the divinities of the place, as was admitted below (verse. :37), had said something like what he had said at Athens, that we ought not to suppose that the deity is" like gold or silver carved with the art and device of man" (Acts 17:29), and that" they are no gods that are made with hands" (verse. 26).

Such expressions, added to the failure in the profits of those who were listening, gave sufficient materials for an adroit and persuasive speech. Demetrius appealed first to the interest of his hearers, and then to their fanaticism. He told them that their gains were in danger of being lost and, besides this, that the temple of the great goddess Diana (to which we can imagine him pointing as he spoke)<sup>526</sup> was in danger of being despised, and that the honor of their national divinity was in jeopardy, whom not only" all Asia," but" all the civilized world," had hitherto held in the highest veneration. Such a speech could not be lost, when thrown like fire on such inflammable materials. The infuriated feeling of the crowd of assembled artisans broke out at once into a cry in honor of the

<sup>526</sup> See what is said above on the position of the Temple. It would probably be visible from the neighborhood of the Agora, where we may suppose Demetrius to have harangued the workmen.

divine patron of their city and their craft, "Great is Diana of the Ephesians."

The excitement among this important and influential class of operatives was not long in spreading through the whole city. The infection seized upon the crowds of citizens and strangers; and a general rush was made to the theatre, the most obvious place of assembly. On their way, they seem to have been foiled in the attempt to lay hold of the person of Paul,<sup>527</sup> though they hurried with them into the theatre two of the companions of his travels, Caius and Aristarchus, whose home was in Macedonia. A sense of the danger of his companions, and a fearless zeal for the truth, urged St. Paul, so soon as this intelligence reached him, to hasten to the theatre and present himself before the people; but the Christian disciples used all their efforts to restrain him. Perhaps their anxious solicitude might have been unavailing on this occasion, as it was on one occasion afterwards, (Acts 21:13) had not other influential friends interposed to preserve his safety. And now was seen the advantage which is secured to a righteous cause by the upright character and unflinching zeal of its leading champion. Some of the Asiarchs, whether converted to Christianity or not, had a friendly feeling towards the Apostle; and well knowing the passions of an Ephesian mob when excited at one of the festivals of Asia, they sent an urgent message to him to prevent him from venturing into the scene of disorder and danger.<sup>528</sup> Thus

<sup>527</sup> Something of the same kind seems to have happened as at Thessalonica (Acts 17:5, 6), when the Jews sought in vain for Paul and Silas in the house of Jason, and therefore dragged the host and some of the other Christians before the magistrates. Perhaps the house of Aquila and Priscilla may have been a Christian home to the Apostle at Ephesus, like Jason's house at Thessalonica. See Acts 18:18, 2, with 1 Cor. 16:19; and compare Rom. 16:3, 4, where they are said to have 'laid down their necks' for St. Paul's life.

<sup>528</sup> The danger in which St. Paul was really placed, as' well as other points in the same, narrative, is illustrated by the account of Polycarp's martyrdom. The proconsul, observing Polycarp filled with confidence

he reluctantly consented to remain in privacy, while the mob crowded violently into the theatre, filling the stone seats, tier above tier, and rending the air with their confused and fanatical cries.

It was indeed a scene of confusion; and never perhaps was the character of a mob more simply and graphically expressed, than when it is said, that "the majority knew not why they were come together" (verse 32). At length an attempt was made to bring the expression of some articulate words before the assembly. This attempt came from the Jews, who seem to have been afraid lest they should be implicated in the odium which had fallen on the Christians. By no means unwilling to injure the Apostle's cause, they were yet anxious to clear themselves, and therefore they "put Alexander forward" to make an apologetic speech <sup>529</sup> to the multitude. If this man was really, as we have suggested, "Alexander the coppersmith," he might naturally be expected to have influence with Demetrius and his fellow craftsmen. But when he stood up and "raised his hand" to invite silence, he was recognized immediately by the multitude as a Jew. It was no time for making distinctions between Jews and Christians; and one simultaneous cry arose

---

and joy, and his countenance brightened with grace, was astonished, and sent the herald to proclaim, in the middle of the stadium, "Polycarp confesses that he is a Christian." When this was declared by the herald, all the multitude, Gentiles and Jews, dwelling at Smyrna, cried out, 'This is that teacher of Asia, the father of the Christians, the destroyer of our gods; he that teaches multitudes not to sacrifice, not to worship.' Saying this, they cried out, and asked Philip the Asiarch to let a lion loose upon Polycarp." Eusebius.

<sup>529</sup> Our view of the purpose for which Alexander was put forward will depend upon whether we consider him to have been a Jew, or a Christian, or a renegade from Christianity. It is most natural to suppose that he was a Jew, that the Jews were alarmed by the tumult and anxious to clear themselves from blame, and to show they had nothing to do with St. Paul. As a Jew, Alexander would be recognized as an enemy to idolatry, and naturally the crowd would not hear him.

from every mouth," Great is Diana of the Ephesians; and this cry continued for two hours.

The excitement of an angry multitude wears out after a time, and a period of reaction comes, when they are disposed to listen to words of counsel and reproof. And, whether we consider the official position of the "Town clerk," or the character of the man as indicated by his speech, we may confidently say that no one in the city was so well suited to appease this Ephesian mob. The speech is a pattern of candid argument and judicious tact. He first allays the fanatical passions of his listeners by this simple appeal: "Is it not known everywhere that this city of the Ephesians is Neocoros of the great goddess Diana and of the image that came down from the sky"

The contradiction of a few insignificant strangers could not affect what was notorious in all the world. when he bids them remember that Paul and his companions had not been guilty of approaching or profaning the temple or of outraging the feelings of the Ephesians by calumnious expressions against the goddess. And then he turns from the general subject to the case of Demetrius, and points out that the remedy for any injustice was amply provided by the assizes which were then going on, or by an appeal to the proconsul. And reserving the most efficacious argument to the last, he reminded them that such an uproar exposed the city of Ephesus to the displeasure of the Romans : for, however great were the liberties allowed to an ancient and loyal city, it was well known to the whole population, that a tumultuous meeting which endangered the public peace would never be tolerated. So, having rapidly brought his arguments to a climax, he tranquillized the whole multitude and pronounced the technical words which declared the assembly dispersed. (Acts 19:41.) The stone seats were gradually emptied. The uproar ceased, and the rioters separated to their various occupations and amusements.

Thus God used the eloquence of a Greek magistrate to protect His servant, as before He

had used the right of Roman citizenship, and the calm justice of a Roman governor. And, as in the cases of Philippi and Corinth, the narrative of St. Paul's sojourn at Ephesus concludes with the notice of a deliberate and affectionate farewell.

The danger was now over. With gratitude to that Heavenly Master who had watched over his life and his works, and with a recognition of that love of his fellow Christians and that favor of the "Chief of Asia," which had been the instruments of his safety, he gathered together the disciples (Acts 20:1), and in one last affectionate meeting most probably in the school of Tyrannus he gave them his farewell salutations, and commended them to the grace of God, and parted from them with tears.

This is the last authentic account which we possess, if we except the meeting at Miletus (Acts 20), of any personal connection of St. Paul with Ephesus; for although we think it may be inferred from the Pastoral Epistles that he visited the metropolis of Asia again at a later period, yet we know nothing of the circumstances of the visit, and even its occurrence has been disputed. The other historical associations of Christianity with this city are connected with a different Apostle and a later period of the Church. Legend has been busy on this scene of apostolic preaching and suffering. Without attempting to unravel what is said concerning others who have lived and died at Ephesus, we are allowed to believe that the robber haunts in the mountains around have witnessed some passages in the life of St. John, that he spent the last year of the first century in this metropolis of the Asiatic Churches, and that his body rests among the sepulchers of Mount Prion. Here we may believe that the Gospel and Epistles were written, which teach us that "love" is greater than "faith and hope" (1 Cor. 13:13); and here, though the "candlestick" is removed, according to the prophetic word (Rev. 2:5), a monument yet survives, in the hill strewn with the ruins of many centuries, of him who was called "John

the Theologian," because he emphatically wrote of the "Divinity of our Lord"

## Chapter 17

### St. Paul at Troas

After his mention of the affectionate parting between St. Paul and the Christians of Ephesus, St. Luke tells us very little of the Apostle's proceedings during a period of nine or ten months; that is, from the early summer of the year A.D. 57 to the spring of A.D. 58.<sup>530</sup> All the information which we find in the Acts concerning this period, is comprised in the following words: "He departed to go into Macedonia, and when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece, and there abode three months." (Acts 20:1-3) Were it not for the information supplied by the Epistles, this is all we should have known of a period which was, intellectually at least, the most active and influential of St. Paul's career. These letters, however, supply us with many additional incidents belonging to this epoch of his life; and, what is more important, they give us a picture drawn by his own hand of his state of mind during an anxious and critical season; they bring him before us in his weakness and in his strength, in his sorrow and in his joy; they show the causes of his dejection and the source of his consolation.

In the first place, we thus learn what we should, *a priori*, have expected, that he visited Alexandria Troas on his way from Ephesus to Macedonia. In all probability he traveled from the one city to the other by sea, as we know he did<sup>531</sup> on his return in the following year. Indeed,

<sup>530</sup> The date of the year is according to the calculations of Wieseler, of which we shall say more when we come to the period upon which they are founded. The season at which he left Ephesus is ascertained by St. Paul's own words (1 Cor. 16:18) compared with Acts 20:1. The time of his leaving Corinth on his return appears from Acts 20:6.

<sup>531</sup> Except the small space from Troas to Assos by land, Acts 20:13, 14.

in countries in such a stage of civilization, the safest and most expeditious route from one point of the coast to another, is generally by water rather than by land; <sup>532</sup> for the "perils in the sea," though greater in those times than in ours, yet did not so frequently impede the voyager, as the "perils of rivers" and "perils of robbers" which beset the traveler by land.

We are not informed who were St. Paul's companions in this journey; but as we find that Tychicus and Trophimus (both Ephesians) were with him at Corinth (Acts 20:4) during the same apostolic progress, and returned thence in his company, it seems probable that they accompanied him at his departure. We find both of them remaining faithful to him through all the calamities which followed; both exerting themselves in his service, and executing his orders to the last; both mentioned as his friends and followers, almost with his dying breath.

In such company, St. Paul came to Alexandria Troas. We have already described the position and character of this city, whence the Apostle of the Gentiles had set forth when first he left Asia to fulfill his mission, the conversion of Europe. At that time, his visit seems to have been very short, and no results of it are recorded; but now he remained for a considerable time; he had meant to stay long enough to lay the foundation of a Church (see 2 Cor. 2:12), and would have remained still longer than he did, had it not been for the non arrival of Titus, whom he had sent to Corinth from Ephesus either with or soon after the First Epistle. The object of his mission <sup>533</sup> was connected with the great collection now going on for the Hebrew Christians

<sup>532</sup> At the same time it should be remembered that this was the most populous part of one of the most peaceful provinces, and that one of the great roads passed by Smyrna and Pergamus between Ephesus and Troas.

<sup>533</sup> It is not impossible that Titus may have carried another letter to the Corinthians; if so, it may be referred to in 2 Cor. 2:3, and 2 Cor. 8:8; passages which some have thought too strong for the supposition that they only refer to the First Epistle.

at Jerusalem, but he was also enjoined to enforce the admonitions of St. Paul upon the Church of Corinth, and endeavor to defeat the efforts of their seducers; and then to return with a report of their conduct, and especially of the effect upon them of the recent Epistle. Titus was desired to come through Macedonia, and to rejoin St. Paul (probably) at Troas, where the latter had intended to arrive shortly after Pentecost; but now that he was forced to leave Ephesus prematurely, he had resolved to wait for Titus at Troas, expecting, however, his speedy arrival. In this expectation he was disappointed; week after week passed, but Titus came not. The tidings which St. Paul expected by him were of the deepest interest; it was to be hoped that he would bring news of the triumph of good over evil at Corinth: yet it might be otherwise; the Corinthians might have forsaken the faith of their first teacher, and rejected his messenger. While waiting in this uncertainty, St. Paul appears to have suffered all the sickness of hope deferred." My spirit had no rest, because I found not Titus my brother." (2 Cor. 2:1) Nevertheless, his personal anxiety did not prevent his laboring earnestly and successfully in his Master's service.

### He passes over to Macedonia

He "published the Glad tidings of Christ" (2 Cor. 2:12) there as in other places, probably preaching as usual, in the first instance, to the Jews in the synagogue. He met with a ready hearing; "a door was opened to him in the Lord. And thus was laid the foundation of a Church which rapidly increased, and which we shall find him revisiting not long afterwards. At present, indeed, he was compelled to leave it prematurely; for the necessity of meeting Titus, and learning the state of things at Corinth, urged him forward. He sailed, therefore, once more from Troas to Macedonia (a voyage already described (Chapter 9) in our account of his former journey), and landing at Neapolis, proceeded immediately to Philippi.

We might have supposed that the warmth of affection with which he was doubtless welcomed by his converts here, would have

soothed the spirit of the Apostle, and restored his serenity. For, of all his converts, the Philippians seem to have been the most free from fault, and the most attached to himself. In the Epistle which he wrote to them, we find no censure, and much praise; and so zealous was their love for St. Paul, that they alone (of all the Churches which he founded) forced him from the very beginning to accept their contributions for his support.

Twice, while he was at Thessalonica, immediately after their own conversion, they had sent relief to him. Again they did the same while he was at Corinth, working for his daily bread in the manufactory of Aquila. And we shall find them afterwards cheering his Roman prison, by similar proofs of their loving remembrance. We might suppose from this that they were a wealthy Church; yet such a supposition is contradicted by the words of St. Paul, who tells us that "in the heavy trial which had proved their steadfastness, the fullness of their joy had overflowed out of the depth of their poverty, in the richness of their liberality." In fact, they had been exposed to very severe persecution from the first. "Unto them it was given," so St. Paul reminds them afterwards, "in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake." Perhaps, already their leading members had been prosecuted under the Roman laws upon the charge which proved so fatal in after times, of propagating a "new and illegal religion"; or, if this had not yet occurred, still it is obvious how severe must have been the loss inflicted by the alienation of friends and connections; and this would be especially the case with the Jewish converts, such as Lydia, who were probably the only wealthy members of the community, and whose sources of wealth were derived from the commercial relations which bound together the scattered Jews throughout the Empire.

What they gave, therefore, was not out of their abundance, but out of their penury; they did not grasp tenaciously at the wealth which was slipping from their hands, but they seemed eager to get rid of what still remained. They"

remembered the words of the Lord Jesus how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive." St. Paul might have addressed them in the words spoken to some who were likeminded with them: "Ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance"

### Causes of his Dejection

Such were the zealous and loving friends who now embraced their father in the faith; yet the warmth of their welcome did not dispel the gloom which hung over his spirit; although amongst them <sup>534</sup> he found Timotheus also, his "beloved son in the Lord," the most endeared to him of all his converts and companions. The whole tone of the Second Epistle to Corinth shows the depression under which he was laboring; and he expressly tells the Corinthians that this state of feeling lasted, not only at Troas, but also after he reached Macedonia. "When first I came into Macedonia," he says, "my flesh had no rest; without were fightings, within were fears." And this had continued until "God, who comforts them that are cast down, comforted me by the coming of Titus"

It has been sometimes supposed that this dejection was occasioned by an increase of the chronic malady under which St. Paul suffered; <sup>535</sup> and it seems not unlikely that this cause may have contributed to the result. He speaks much, in

<sup>534</sup> This we infer because Timothy was with him when he began to write the Second Epistle to Corinth (2 Cor. 1:1), which we believe to have been written at Philippi. how Timothy had been dispatched on some commission into Macedonia shortly before Easter, and St. Paul had then expected (but thought it doubtful) that he would reach Corinth and return thence to Ephesus; and that he would reach it after the reception at Corinth of the First Epistle to the Corinthians (1 Cor. 14:10,11)

<sup>535</sup> We need not notice the hypothesis that St. Paul's long-continued dejection was caused by the danger which he incurred on the day of the tumult in the theatre at Ephesus; a supposition most unworthy of the character of him who sustained such innumerable perils of a more deadly character with unshrinking fortitude.

the Epistle Written at this time from Macedonia, of the frailty of his bodily health (2 Cor. 4:7 to 2 Cor. 5:10, and also 2 Cor. 12:7 9, and see note on 2 Cor. 1:8); and, in a very affecting passage, he describes the earnestness with which he had besought his Lord to take from him this "thorn in the flesh" this disease which continually impeded his efforts, and shackled his energy. We can imagine how severe a trial to a man of his ardent temper such a malady must have been. Yet this alone would scarcely account for his continued depression, especially after the assurance he had received, that the grace of Christ was sufficient for him, that the vessel of clay (2 Cor. 4:7) was not too fragile for the Master's work, that the weakness of his body would but the more manifest the strength of God's Spirit. (2 Cor. 12:7 9) The real weight which pressed upon him was the "care of all the Churches;" the real cause of his grief was the danger which now threatened the souls of his converts, not in Corinth only, or in Galatia, but everywhere throughout the Empire. We have already described the nature of this danger, and seen its magnitude: we have seen how critical was the period through which the Christian Church was now passing.

The true question (which St. Paul was enlightened to comprehend) was no less than this; whether the Catholic Church should be dwarfed into a Jewish sect; whether the religion of spirit and of truth should be supplanted by the worship of letter and of form. The struggle at Corinth, the result of which he was now anxiously awaiting, was only one out of many similar struggles between Judaism<sup>536</sup> and Christianity. These were the "fightings without" which filled him with "fears within;" these were

---

<sup>536</sup> That the great opponents of St. Paul at Corinth were Judaizing emissaries, we have endeavored to prove below: at the same time a complication was given to the struggle at Corinth by the existence of another element of error in the free-thinking party, whose theoretic defense of their practical immorality we have already noticed.

the agitations which" gave his flesh no rest," and" troubled him on every side. (2 Cor. 7:5)

### He meets Titus at Philippi

At length the long expected Titus arrived at Philippi, and relieved the anxiety of his master by better tidings than he had hoped to hear.<sup>537</sup> The majority of the Corinthian Church had submitted to the injunctions of St. Paul, and testified the deepest repentance for the sins into which they had fallen. They had passed sentence of excommunication upon the incestuous person, and they had readily contributed towards the collection for the poor Christians of Palestine. But there was still a minority, whose opposition seems to have been rather embittered than humbled by the submission which the great body of the Church had thus yielded. They proclaimed, in a louder and more contemptuous tone than ever, their accusations against the Apostle. They charged him with craft in his designs, and with selfish and mercenary motives; a charge which they probably maintained by insinuating that he was personally interested in the great collection which he was raising.

We have seen (1 Cor. 16:3) what scrupulous care St. Paul took to keep his integrity in this matter above every shade of suspicion; and we shall find still further proof of this as we proceed. Meanwhile it is obvious how

---

<sup>537</sup> Wieseler is of opinion that before the coming of Titus St. Paul had already resolved to send another letter to the Corinthians, perhaps by those two brethren who traveled with Titus soon after, bearing the Second Epistle; and that he wrote as far as the 2nd verse of the 7th chapter of the Second Epistle to the Corinthians before the appearance of Titus. He infers this from the change of tone which takes place at this point, and from St. Paul's returning to topics which, in the earlier portion of the Epistle, he appeared to have dismissed; and from the manner in which the arrival of Titus is mentioned at 2 Cor. 7:4-7. On this hypothesis some other person from Corinth must have brought intelligence of the first impression produced on the Corinthians by the Epistle which had just reached them; and Titus conveyed the further tidings of their subsequent conduct.

singularly inconsistent this accusation was, in the mouths of those who eagerly maintained that Paul could be no true Apostle, because he did not demand support from the Churches which he founded. The same opponents accused him likewise of egregious vanity, and of cowardly weakness; they declared that he was continually threatening without striking, and promising without performing; always on his way to Corinth, but never venturing to come; and that he was as vacillating in his teaching as in his practice; refusing circumcision to Titus, yet circumcising Timothy; a Jew among the Jews, and a Gentile among the Gentiles.

It is an important question, to which of the divisions of the Corinthian Church these obstinate opponents of St. Paul belonged. From the notices of them given by St. Paul himself, it seems certain that they were Judaisers (see 2 Cor. 11:22); and still further, that they were of the Christian section of that party (see 2 Cor. 11:7). It also appears that they were headed by an emissary from Palestine (2 Cor. 11:4), who had brought letters of commendation from some members of the Church at Jerusalem, (see 2 Cor. 3:1) and who boasted of his pure Hebrew descent, and his especial connection with Christ Himself. (see 2 Cor. 11:22) St. Paul calls him a false apostle, a minister of Satan disguised as a minister of righteousness, and hints that he was actuated by corrupt motives. He seems to have behaved at Corinth with extreme arrogance, and to have succeeded, by his overbearing conduct, in impressing his partisans with a conviction of his importance, and of the truth of his pretensions. They contrasted his confident bearing with the timidity and self distrust which had been shown by St. Paul. (1 Cor. 2:3) And they even extolled his personal advantages over those of their first teacher; comparing his rhetoric with Paul's artificial speech, his commanding appearance with the insignificance of Paul's "bodily presence"

Titus, having delivered to St. Paul this mixed intelligence of the state of Corinth, was immediately directed to return thither (in company with two deputies specially elected to

take charge of their contribution by the Macedonian Churches),” in order to continue the business of the collection. St. Paul made him the bearer of another letter, which is addressed (still more distinctly than the First Epistle), not to Corinth only, but to all the Churches in the whole province of Achaia, including Athens and Genchrea, and perhaps also Sicyon, Argos, Megara, Patne, and other neighboring towns; all of which probably shared more or less in the agitation which so powerfully affected the Christian community at Corinth. The twofold character of this Epistle is easily explained by the existence of the majority and minority which we have described in the Corinthian Church. Towards the former the Epistle overflows with love; towards the latter it abounds with warning and menace. The purpose of the Apostle was to encourage and tranquillize the great body of the Church; but, at the same time, he was constrained to maintain his authority against those who persisted in despising the commands of Christ delivered by his mouth. It was needful, also that he should notice their false accusations; and that (undeterred by the charge of vanity which they brought), <sup>538</sup> he should vindicate his apostolic character by a statement of facts, and a threat of punishment to be inflicted on the contumacious. With these objects, he wrote as follows ;

---

<sup>538</sup> It is a curious fact, and marks the personal character of this Epistle, that the verb for 'boast' and its derivatives occur twenty-nine times in it, and only twenty-six times in all the other Epistles of St. Paul put together.

**Second Epistle to the Corinthians.** <sup>539</sup>**2 Corinthians 1**

**Salutation.** PAUL, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus the Brother, TO THE CHURCH of GOD WHICH IS IN CORINTH, AND TO ALL THE SAINTS THROUGHOUT THE WHOLE PROVINCE OF ACHAIA.

Grace be unto you and peace, from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

Thanks be to God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the father of compassion, and the God of all comfort, who consoles me in all my tribulation, thereby enabling me to comfort those who are in any affliction, with the same comfort wherewith I am myself comforted by God. For as the sufferings of Christ I have come upon me above measure, so by Christ also my consolation is above measure multiplied. But if, on the one hand, I am afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, (which works in you a firm endurance of the same sufferings which I also suffer; so that my hope is steadfast on your behalf;) and if, on the other hand, I am comforted, it is for your consolation, because I know that as you partake of my sufferings,

so you partake also of my comfort. For I would have you know, brethren, concerning the tribulation which befell me in the province of Asia, <sup>540</sup> that I was exceedingly pressed down by it beyond my strength to bear, so as to despair, even of life. Nay, by my own self I was already doomed to death; that I might rely no more upon myself, but upon God who raises the dead to life; who delivered me from a death so grievous, and does yet deliver me; in whom I have hope that He will still deliver me for the time to come; you also helping me by your supplications for me, that thanksgivings may from many tongues be offered up on my behalf, for the blessing gained to me by many prayers.

For this is my boast the testimony of my conscience, that I have dealt with the world, and above all with you, in godly honesty and singleness of mind, not in the strength of carnal wisdom, but in the strength of God's grace. For I write nothing else to you but what you read openly, <sup>541</sup> yea and what you acknowledge inwardly, and I hope that even to the end you will acknowledge, as some of you have already acknowledged, that I am your boast, even as you are mine, in the day of the Lord Jesus.

<sup>539</sup> St. Paul has given us the following particulars to determine the date of this Epistle:

(1.) He had been exposed to great danger in Proconsular Asia, i.e. at Ephesus (2 Cor. 1:8). This had happened Acts 19:23-41.

(2.) He had come thence to Troas, and (after some stay there) had passed over to Macedonia. This was the route he took, Acts 20:1.

(3.) He was in Macedonia at the time of writing (2 Cor. 9:2, the verb is in the present tense), and intended (2 Cor. 13:1) shortly to visit Corinth. This was the course of his journey, Acts 20:2.

(4.) The same collection is going on which is mentioned in I Cor. See 2 Cor. 8:6, and 9:2; and which was completed during his three months' visit to Corinth (Rom. 15:26), and taken up to Jerusalem immediately after, Acts 24:17.

(5.) Some of the other topics mentioned in I Cor. are again referred to, especially the punishment of the incestuous offender, in such a manner as to show that no long- interval had elapsed since the first Epistle.

<sup>540</sup> It has been questioned whether St. Paul here refers to the Ephesian tumult of Acts 19; and it is urged that he was not then in danger of his life. But had he been found by the mob during the period of their excitement, there can be little doubt that he would have been torn to pieces, or perhaps thrown to wild beasts in the Arena; and it seems improbable that within so short a period he should again have been exposed to peril of his life in the same place, and that nothing should have been said of it in the Acts. Some commentators have held (and the view has been ably advocated by Dean Alford) that St. Paul refers to a dangerous attack of illness. With this opinion we so far agree that we believe St. Paul to have been suffering from bodily illness when he wrote this Epistle. St. Paul's statement here that he was "self-doomed to death" certainly looks very like a reference to a very dangerous illness, in which he had despaired of recovery.

<sup>541</sup> The word means *you read aloud*, that is, when the Epistles of St. Paul were read publicly to the congregation. Compare 1 Thess. 5:27.

And in this confidence it was my wish to come first to you, and that afterwards you might have a second benefit; and to go by you into Macedonia, and back again from Macedonia to you, and by you to be forwarded on my way to Judea. Am I accused then of forming this purpose in levity and caprice? or is my purpose carnal, to please all, by saying at once both yea and nay? Yet as God is faithful, my words to you are no [deceitful] mixture of yea and nay. For when the Son of God, Jesus Christ, was proclaimed among you by us, (by me, I say, and Silvanus, and Timothy,) in Him was found no wavering between yea and nay, but in Him was yea alone; for all the promises of God have in Him the yea [which seals their truth]; wherefore also through Him the Amen [which acknowledges their fulfillment,] is uttered to the praise of God by our voice. But God is He who keeps both us and you steadfast to His anointed, and we also are anointed by Him. And He has set His seal upon us, and has given us the Spirit to dwell in our hearts, as the earnest<sup>542</sup> of His promises. But for my own part, I call God to witness, as my soul shall answer for it, that I gave up my purpose of visiting Corinth because I wished to spare you. I speak not<sup>543</sup> as though your faith was enslaved to my authority, but because I desire to your joy; for your faith is steadfast.

## 2 Corinthians 2

But I determined not again to visit you in grief; for if I cause you grief, who is there to cause me joy, but those whom I have

<sup>542</sup> Literally, the earnest money, i.e. a small sum which was paid in advance, as the ratification of a bargain; a custom which still prevails in many countries. The gift of the Holy Spirit in this life is said by St. Paul to be the earnest of their future inheritance; he repeats the expression 2 Cor. 5:5, and Eph. 1:14, and expresses the same thing under a different metaphor Rom. 8:23.

<sup>543</sup> St. Paul adds this sentence to soften what might seem the magisterial tone of the preceding, in which he had implied his power to punish the Corinthians.

grieved? And for this very reason I wrote<sup>544</sup> to you instead of coming, that I might not receive grief from those who ought to give me joy; and I confide in you all that my joy is yours. For I wrote to you out of much affliction and anguish of heart, with many tears; not to pain you, but that you might know the abundance of my love.

As concerns him<sup>545</sup> who has caused the pain it is not me that he has pained, but some of you; [some, I say,] that I may not press too harshly upon all. For the offender himself, this punishment, which has been inflicted on him by the sentence of the majority,<sup>546</sup> is sufficient without increasing it. On the contrary, you ought rather to forgive and comfort him, lest he should be overwhelmed by the excess of his sorrow. Wherefore I beseech you fully to restore him to your love. For the very end which I sought when I wrote before, was to test you in this matter, and learn whether you would be obedient in all things. But whomsoever you forgive, I forgive also; for whatever<sup>547</sup> I have forgiven, I have forgiven on your account in the sight of Christ, that we may not be overreached by Satan; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

When I had come to Troas to publish the Glad Tidings of Christ, and a door was opened to me in the Lord, I had no rest in my spirit because I found not Titus my brother; so that I parted from them,<sup>548</sup> and came from thence into Macedonia. But thanks be to God who leads me on from place to place in the train of his triumph, to celebrate his victory over the enemies of Christ;<sup>549</sup> and by me

<sup>544</sup> i.e. First Corinthians

<sup>545</sup> Literally, *if any man has caused pain*; a milder expression which would not in English bear so definite a meaning as it does in the Greek.

<sup>546</sup> Not *many* (AV); but *the majority*. See, for the punishment, 1 Cor. 5:4.

<sup>547</sup> The best MSS have the neuter, not the masculine.

<sup>548</sup> Namely, from the Christians at Troas.

<sup>549</sup> The verb here used (which is mistranslated in A. V.) means to lead a man as a captive in a triumphal procession; the full phrase means, to lead captive in a

sends forth the knowledge of Him, a steam of fragrant incense, throughout the world. For Christ's is the fragrance which I offer up to God, whether among those in the way of salvation, or among those in the way of perdition; but to these it is an odor of death, to those of life. And [if some among you deny my sufficiency], who then is sufficient for these things? For I seek not profit (like most) by setting the word of God to sale,<sup>550</sup> but I speak from a single heart, from the command of God, as in God's presence, and in fellowship with Christ.

### 2 Corinthians 3

Will you say that I am again beginning to commend myself? Or think you that I need letters of commendation (like some other men) either to you, or from you? Nay, ye are yourselves my letter of commendation, a letter written on I my heart, known and read by all men; a letter<sup>551</sup> coming manifestly from Christ, and committed to my charge; written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not upon tablets of stone, but upon the fleshly tablets of the heart. But through Christ have I this confidence before God; not thinking myself sufficient to gain wisdom by

---

triumph over the enemies of Christ. The metaphor is taken from the triumphal procession of a victorious general. God is celebrating His triumph over His enemies; St. Paul (who had been so great an opponent of the Gospel) is a captive following in the train of the triumphal procession yet (at the same time, by a characteristic change of metaphor) an incense bearer, scattering incense (which was always done on these occasions) as the procession moves on. Some of the conquered enemies were put to death when the procession reached the Capitol; to them the smell of the incense was "an odor of death unto death;" to the rest who were spared, 'an odor of life unto life.' The metaphor appears to ha've been a favorite one with St. Paul; it occurs again Col. 2:15.

<sup>550</sup> Literally, *to sell by retail*, including a notion of fraud in the selling. Compare the similar imputations against his Judaizing adversaries in 1 Thess. 2:3.

<sup>551</sup> Literally, *being manifestly shown to be a letter of Christ conveyed by my ministration*.

my own reasoning,<sup>552</sup> as if it came from myself, but drawing my sufficiency from God.

For He it is who has made me suffice for the ministration of a new covenant, a covenant not of letter, but of spirit; for the letter kills, (cf. Rom. 7:9 11) but the spirit makes the dead to live. Yet if a glory was shed upon the ministration of the law of death, (a law written in letters, and graven upon stones,) <sup>553</sup> so that the sons of Israel could not fix their eyes on the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, although its brightness was soon to fade; how far more glorious must the ministration of the spirit be. For if the ministration of doom had glory, far more must the ministration of righteousness abound in glory.<sup>554</sup> Yea, that which then was glorious has no glory now, because of <sup>555</sup> the surpassing glory wherewith it is compared. For if a glory shone upon that which" was doomed to pass away, much more doth glory rest upon that which remains for ever. Therefore, having this hope, I speak and act without disguise; and not like Moses, who spread a veil over his face, that <sup>556</sup> the sons of Israel might not see the end of that fading brightness. But their minds were blinded; yea to this day, when they read in their synagogues <sup>557</sup> the ancient covenant, the same veil rests thereon, nor can they see beyond it that the law is done away in Christ; but even now, when Moses is read in

---

<sup>552</sup> Literally, *to reach any conclusion by my own reason*.

<sup>553</sup> Literally, *if the ministration of death in letters, graven upon stones, was born in glory*.

<sup>554</sup> The whole of this contrast between the glory of the new and the old dispensations, appears to confirm the hypothesis that St. Paul's chief antagonists at Corinth were of the Judaizing party.

<sup>555</sup> Literally, *For that which has been glorified in this particular, has not been glorified, because of the glory which surpasses it*.

<sup>556</sup> See Exo. 34:35. St. Paul here (as usual) blends the allegorical with the historical view of the passage referred to in the Old Testament.

<sup>557</sup> *In their synagogues* is implied in the term used here. Compare Acts 15:21.

their hearing, a veil <sup>558</sup> lies upon their heart. But when their heart turns to the Lord, the veil is rent away. Now the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord abides, there bondage gives place to freedom; and we all, while with face unveiled we behold in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are ourselves transformed continually into the same likeness; and the glory which shines upon us <sup>559</sup> is reflected by us, even as it proceeds from the Lord, the Spirit.

## 2 Corinthians 4

Therefore having this ministration, I discharge it with no faint hearted fears, remembering the mercy which I received. <sup>560</sup> I have renounced the secret dealings of shame, I walk not in the paths of cunning, I adulterate not the word of God; but openly setting forth the truth, as in the sight of God, I commend myself to the conscience of all men. But if there be still a veil which hides my Glad tidings from some who hear me, it is among those who are in the way of perdition; whose unbelieving minds the God of this world has blinded, and shut out the glorious light of the Glad tidings of Christ, who is the image of God. For I proclaim not myself, but Christ Jesus as Lord and Master, and myself your bondsman for the Sake of Jesus. :For God, who called forth light out of darkness, has caused His light to shine in my heart, that [upon others also] might shine forth the knowledge of His glory manifested in the face of Jesus Christ.

<sup>558</sup> Perhaps there may be here an allusion to the Tallith, which (if we may assume this practice to be as old as the apostolic age) was worn in the synagogue by every worshipper, and was literally a veil hanging down over the breast.

<sup>559</sup> "From glory" indicates the origin of this transformation, namely, *the glory shining on us*; "to glory," the effect; namely, *the reflection of that glory by us*. For the metaphor, compare 1 Cor. 13:12. We observe that in both passages that even the representation of divine truth given us by Christianity is only a *reflection* of the reality.

<sup>560</sup> Referring to his conversion from a state of Jewish unbelief.

But this treasure is lodged in a body of fragile clay, <sup>561</sup> that so the surpassing might which accomplishes the work should be God's and not my own. I am hard pressed, yet not crushed; perplexed, yet not despairing; persecuted, yet not forsaken; struck down, yet not destroyed. In my body I bear about continually the dying of Jesus, that in my body the life also of Jesus might be shown forth. For I, in the midst of life, am daily given over to death for the sake of Jesus, that in my dying flesh the life whereby Jesus conquered death might show forth its power.

So then death working in me, works life <sup>562</sup> in you. Yet having the same spirit of faith whereof it is written "I believed, and therefore did I speak." Psalm 116:10 I also believe, and therefore speak. For I know that He who raised the Lord Jesus from the dead, shall raise me also by Jesus, and shall call me into His presence together with you; for all [my sufferings] are on your behalf, that the mercy which has abounded above them all, might call forth your thankfulness; that so the fullness of praise might be poured forth to God, not by myself alone, but multiplied by many voices. <sup>563</sup> Wherefore I faint not; but though my outward man decays, yet my inward man is renewed from day to day. For my light afflictions, which last but for a moment, work for me a weight of glory, immeasurable and eternal. Meanwhile I look not to things seen, but to things unseen: for the things that are seen pass away; but the things that are unseen endure for ever.

<sup>561</sup> The whole of this passage, from this point to 5:10, shows that St. Paul was suffering from bodily illness when he wrote. See also 12:7-9.

<sup>562</sup> Literally, *while death works in me, life works in you*. i.e. the mortal peril to which St. Paul exposed himself was the instrument of bringing spiritual life to his converts.

<sup>563</sup> The literal translation would be, *that the favor which has abounded might, through the thanksgiving of the greater number, overflow to the praise of God*.

## 2 Corinthians 5

Yea, I know that if the tent which is my earthly house be destroyed, I have a mansion built by God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. And herein I groan with earnest longings, desiring to cover my earthly raiment with the robes of my heavenly mansion. (If indeed I shall be found <sup>564</sup> still clad in my fleshly garment.) For we who are dwelling in the tent, groan and are burdened; not desiring to put off our [earthly] clothing, but to put over it [our heavenly] raiment, that this our dying nature might be swallowed up by life. And He who has prepared me for this very end is God, who has given me the Spirit as the earnest of my hope. Therefore, I am ever of good courage, knowing that while my home is in the body, I am in banishment from the Lord (for I walk by faith, not by sight). Yea, my heart fails me not, but I would gladly suffer banishment from the body, and have my home with Christ. Therefore I strive earnestly that, whether in banishment or at home, I may be pleasing in His sight. For we must all be made manifest without disguise before the judgment seat of Christ, that each may receive according to that which he has done in the body, either good or evil.

Knowing therefore the fearfulness of the Lord's judgment, though I seek to win men,

<sup>564</sup> Literally, "If indeed I shall be found clad: and not stripped of my clothing", i.e. If, at the Lord's coming, I shall be found still living in the flesh. We know from other passages, that it was a matter of uncertainty with St. Paul whether he should survive to behold the second coming of Christ or not. Compare I Thess. 4:15, and 1 Cor. 15:51. So, in the next verse, he expresses his desire that his fleshly body should be transformed into a spiritual body, without being 'unclad' by death. The metaphor of 'nakedness' as combined with 'tent' seems suggested by the Oriental practice of striking the tent very early in the morning, often before the travelers are dressed. So we read in McCheyne's account of his journey through the desert, "When morning began to dawn, our tents were taken down. Often we have found ourselves shelterless before being fully dressed." (Life McCheyne, p. 92.) It should be observed that the original denotes simply dressed, clad, the antithesis to naked.

yet my uprightness is manifest in the sight of Gael- and I hope also that it is manifested by the witness of your consciences. I write not thus to repeat my own commendation but that I may furnish you with a ground of boasting on my behalf, that you may have an answer for those whose boasting is in the outward matters of sight, not in the inward possessions of the heart. For if I be mad, it is for God's cause; if sober, it is for yours. For the love of Christ constrains me, because I thus have judged, that if one died for all, then all died [in Him] <sup>565</sup>; and that He died for all, that the living might live no longer to themselves, but to Him, who, for their sakes, died and rose again.

I therefore, from henceforth, view no man carnally; yea, though once my view of Christ was carnal, <sup>566</sup> yet now it is no longer carnal. Whosoever, then, is in Christ, is a new creation; his old being has passed away, and behold, all has become new. But all comes from God, for He it is who reconciled me to Himself by Jesus Christ, and charged me with the ministry of reconciliation; for God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself, reckoning their sins no more against them, and having ordained me to speak the word of reconciliation. Therefore, I am an ambassador for Christ, as though God exhorted you by my voice; in Christ's stead I beseech you be ye reconciled to God. For Him who knew no sin, God struck with the doom of sin on our behalf; that we may be changed into the righteousness of God in Christ.

## 2 Corinthians 6

Moreover, as working together with Him, I also exhort you, that the grace which you have received from God be not in vain. For he saith: "I have heard thee in an acceptable time, and in the day of salvation have I

<sup>565</sup> The original cannot mean *all were dead* (AV), but *all died*. The death of all for whom He died, was virtually involved in His death.

<sup>566</sup> We agree [with other commentators] that this cannot refer to any actual knowledge which St. Paul had of our Lord when upon earth; it would probably have been "Jesus" had that been meant.

succored thee." (Isa. 49:8) Behold, now is the acceptable time, behold, now is the day of salvation.

For I take heed to give no cause of stumbling, lest blame should be cast on the ministration wherein I serve: but in all things I commend myself as one who ministers to God's service; in steadfast endurance, in afflictions, in necessities, in straitness of distress, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labors, in sleepless watching, in hunger and thirst; in purity, in knowledge, in long suffering, in kindness, in [the gifts of] the Holy Spirit, in love unfeigned; speaking the word of truth, working with the power of God, fighting with the weapons of righteousness, both for attack and for defense; through good report and evil, through honor and through infamy; counted as a deceiver, yet being true; as unknown [by men], yet acknowledged [by God]; as ever dying, yet behold I live; as chastened by suffering, yet not destroyed; as sorrowful, yet ever filled with joy; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, yet possessing all things.

Corinthians, my mouth has opened itself to you freely, my heart is enlarged towards you. You find no narrowness in my love, but the narrowness is in your own. I pray you therefore in return for my affection (I speak as to my children), let your hearts be opened in like manner.

14 Cease to yoke yourselves unequally in illmatched intercourse with unbelievers; for what fellowship has righteousness with unrighteousness? what communion has light with darkness? what concord has Christ with Belial? what partnership has a believer with an unbeliever? what agreement has the temple of God with idols?

For ye are yourselves a temple of the living God, as God said: "I will dwell in them, and walk in them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people." (Lev. 26:11,12) Wherefore, "Come out from among them and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing, and I will receive you." (Isa. 52:11) And, "I will be unto you a father,

and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty."<sup>567</sup>

## 2 Corinthians 7

Having therefore these promises, my beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from every defilement, either of flesh or spirit, and perfect our holiness, in the fear of God.

Give me a favorable hearing. I have wronged no man, I have ruined no man no man, I have defrauded no man; I say not this to condemn you, [as though I had myself been wronged by you,] for I have said before that I have you in my heart, to live and die with you.

Great is my freedom towards you, great is my boasting of you; I am filled with the comfort which you have caused me; I have more than an overweight of joy, for all the affliction which has befallen me. When first I came into Macedonia my flesh had no rest, but I was troubled on every side; without were fightings, within were fears. But God, who comforts them that are cast down, comforted me by the coming of Titus; and not by his coming only, but by the comfort which he felt on your account, and the tidings which he brought of your longing for my love, your mourning for my reproof, your zeal for my cause; so that my sorrow has been turned into joy.

For though I grieved you in my letter, I do not regret it; but though I did regret it, (for I see that grief was caused you by that letter, though but for a season,) I now rejoice; not because you were grieved, but because your grief led you to repentance; for the grief I caused you was a godly sorrow; so that I might nowise harm you [even when I grieved you]. For the work of godly sorrow is repentance not to be repented of, leading to salvation; but the work of worldly sorrow is death. Consider what was wrought among yourselves when you were grieved with a godly sorrow; what earnestness it wrought in you, yea, what eagerness to clear

<sup>567</sup> This passage is not to be found exactly in the Old Testament, although 2 Sam. 7:14 and Jer. 31:9 and 32:38, contain the substance of it.

yourselves from blame, what indignation,<sup>568</sup> what fear,<sup>569</sup> what longing, what zeal,<sup>570</sup> what punishment of wrong. You have cleared yourselves altogether from every stain of guilt in this matter. Know, therefore, that although I wrote to [rebuke] you, it was not so much to punish the wrong doer, nor to avenge him<sup>571</sup> who suffered the wrong, but that my earnest zeal for you in the sight of God might be manifest to yourselves.

This, therefore, is the ground of my comfort; but besides my consolation on your account, I was beyond measure rejoiced by the joy of Titus, because his spirit has been refreshed by you all. For whatever boast of you I may have made to him, I have not been put to shame. But as all I ever said to you was spoken in truth, so also my boasting of you to Titus has been proved a truth. And his heart is more than ever drawn towards you, while he calls to mind the obedience of you all, and the fear and trembling wherewith you received him. I rejoice that in all things you give me ground for courage.

## 2 Corinthians 8

I desire, brethren, to make known to you the manifestation of God's grace, which has been given in the churches of Macedonia. For in the heavy trial which has proved their steadfastness, the fullness of their joy has overflowed, out of the depth of their poverty, in the richness of their liberality. They have given (I bear them witness) not only according to their means, but beyond their means, and that of their own free will; for they besought me with much entreaty that they might bear their part in the grace of ministering to the saints.

And far beyond my hope, they gave their very selves to the Lord first, and to me also

<sup>568</sup> Indignation against the offender.

<sup>569</sup> Fear of the wrath of God.

<sup>570</sup> Zeal on behalf of right, and against wrong.

<sup>571</sup> Namely, the father of the offender. We need not be perplexed at his wife's forming another connection during his lifetime, when we consider the great laxity of the law of divorce among Greeks and Romans.

by the will of God. So that I have desired Titus [to revisit you], that as he caused you to begin this work before, so he may lead you to finish it, that this grace may not be wanting in you; but that, as you abound in all gifts, in faith and utterance, and knowledge, and earnest zeal, and in the love which joins your hearts with mine, so you may abound in this grace also. I say not this by way of command; but by the zeal of others I would prove the reality of your love. For you know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, how, though He was rich, yet for our sakes He became poor, that you, by His poverty might be made rich.

And I give you my advice in this matter; for it becomes you to do thus, inasmuch as you began not only the contribution, but the purpose of making it before others,<sup>572</sup> in the year which is passed. Now, therefore, fulfill your purpose by your deeds, that as you then showed your readiness of will, so now you may finish the work, according to your means. For if there be a willing mind, the gift is acceptable when measured by the giver's power, and needs not to go beyond. Nor [is this collection made] that others may be eased, and you distressed, but to make your burdens equal, that as now your abundance supplies their need, your own need may [at another time] be relieved in equal measure by their abundance, as it is written, "He that gathered much had nothing over; and he that gathered little had no lack." (Exo. 16:18) But, thanks be to God, by whose gift the heart of Titus has the same zeal as my own on your behalf; for he not only has consented to my desire, but is himself very zealous in the matter, and departs to you of his own accord. And I have sent as his companion the brother who is with him, whose praise in publishing the Glad tidings is spread throughout all the churches; who has moreover been chosen by the churches [of Macedonia] to accompany me in my journey (when I bear this gift, which I have

<sup>572</sup> "Began before" namely, before the Macedonian churches. The meaning is, that the Corinthians had been the first not only to make the collection, but to propose it.

undertaken to administer) ; that the Lord might be glorified, and that <sup>573</sup> I might undertake the task with more good will. For I guard myself against all suspicion which might be cast upon me in my administration of this bounty with which I am charged; being "provident of good report" not only "in the sight of the Lord," but also "in the sight of men." <sup>574</sup> The brother <sup>575</sup> whom I have sent likewise with them, is one whom I have put to the proof in many trials, and found always zealous in the work, but who is now yet more zealous from the full trust which he has in you. Concerning Titus, then (on the one hand), he is partner of my lot, and fellow laborer with me for your good; concerning our brethren (on the other hand), they are ambassadors of the churches a manifestation of the glory of Christ. Show them, therefore, the proof of your love, and justify my boasting on your behalf, in the sight of the churches.

## 2 Corinthians 9

For of your ministration to the saints [at Jerusalem] it is needless that I should write to you, since I know the forwardness of your mind, **and boast of it to the Macedonians on your behalf, saying that Achaia has been ready ever since last year, and the knowledge of your zeal has roused the most of them. But I have sent the brethren, lest my report of you in this matter should be turned into an empty boast; that you may be truly ready, as I declared you to be. Lest perchance the**

<sup>573</sup> The reading of the best MSS, gives the sense as follows: *to promote my willingness of mind, i.e. to render me more willing to undertake the administration of the alms*, which St. Paul would have been unwilling to do without coadjutors elected by the contributors, lest he should incur unworthy suspicion.

<sup>574</sup> The quotation here is from Prov. 3:4, cited also in Rom. 12:17.

<sup>575</sup> There is even less to guide us in our conjectures as to the person here indicated, than in the case of the other deputy mentioned above. Here, also, the emissary was elected by some of the Churches who had contributed to the collection. He may have been either Luke, Gaius, Tychicus, or Trophimus (Acts. 20:4).

**Macedonians who may come with me to visit you, should find you not yet ready, and so shame should fall upon me (for I will not say upon you) in this ground of my boasting. 576 Therefore, I thought it needful to desire these brethren to visit you before my coming, and to arrange beforehand the completion of this bounty which you before promised to have in readiness; so it be really given by your bounty, not wrung from your covetousness. But remember, he who sows sparingly shall reap sparingly; and he who sows bountifully, shall reap bountifully. Let each do according to the free choice of his heart; not grudgingly, or of necessity; for "God loveth a cheerful giver." (Prov. 22:8) And God is able to give you an overflowing measure of all good gifts, that all your wants of every kind may be supplied at all times, and you may give of your abundance to every good work. As it is written, "The good man hath scattered abroad, he hath given to the poor; his righteousness remaineth for ever." 577 And He who furnishes "seed to the sower, and bread for the food of man," 578 will furnish you with plenteous store of seed, and bless your righteousness with fruits of increase; being enriched with all good things, that you may give un**

<sup>576</sup> Literally, the word means, *the groundwork on which some superstructure is founded*. His appeal to the Macedonians was grounded on this readiness of the Corinthians. If (with the best MSS) we omit "of my boasting," the meaning will be unaltered.

<sup>577</sup> Psalm 110:9. The subject of the verb "scattered" in the psalm is "the good man" (in the 5<sup>th</sup> verse), which St. Paul leaves to be supplied by the memory of his readers. To represent the quotation accurately to an English reader, it is necessary to insert this word, otherwise it would seem as if "God" were the subject of the verb.

<sup>578</sup> These words are an exact quotation from Isaiah 55:10. Ignorance of this fact has caused an inaccuracy in the A.V. The literal translation of the remainder of the verse is: *Furnish and make plenteous your seed, and increase the fruits springing from your righteousness.*

grudgingly; causing thanksgivings to God, from those to whom I bear your gifts. For the ministrations of this service not only fill up the measure of the necessities of the saints, but also overflow beyond it, in many thanks to God; while they praise God for the proof thus given of the obedience wherewith you have consented to the Glad tidings of Christ, and for the single mindedness of your liberality both to them, and to all. Moreover, in their prayers for you they express the earnest longings of their love towards you, caused by the surpassing grace of God manifested in you. Thanks be to God for His unspeakable gift.

## 2 Corinthians 10

Now, I Paul, myself exhort you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, (I, who am mean, forsooth, and lowly in outward presence, while I am among you, yet treat you boldly when I am absent) beseech you (I say), that you will not force me to show, when I am present, the bold confidence in my power, wherewith I reckon to deal with some who reckon I me by the standard of the flesh. For, though living in the flesh, my warfare is not waged according to the flesh. For the weapons which I wield are not of fleshly weakness, but mighty in the strength of God to overthrow the strongholds of the adversaries. Thereby can I overthrow the reasoning of the disputer, and pull down all lofty bulwarks that raise themselves against the knowledge of God, and bring every rebellious thought into captivity and subjection to Christ. And when the obedience of your church shall be complete, I am ready to punish all who may be disobedient.<sup>579</sup>

---

<sup>579</sup> We should notice in verses 3-6 the completeness of the military allegory. The image is that of a campaign against rebels: rock-forts (such as those on St. Paul's own Cilician coast) must be cast down; and when the general obedience of the country is secured, those who are still rebellious must be summarily punished. We should observe, too, the new turn given

Do you look at matters of outward advantage? If there be any among you who confidently assumes that he belongs [above the rest] to Christ, let him reckon anew by his reason, that if he belong to Christ, so do I no less. For although I were to boast somewhat highly concerning the authority which the Lord has given me (not to cast you down, but to build you up), my words would not be shamed by the truth. I say this, lest you should imagine that I am writing empty threats. "For his letters," says one, "are weighty and powerful, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible." Let such a man assure himself that the words which I write while absent, I will bear out by my deeds when present! For I venture not to number or compare myself with certain of the self commenders; nay, they, measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves with themselves, are guilty of folly.

But I, for my part, will not let my boasting carry me beyond measure, but will confine it within that measure given me by God, who made my line reach even to you. For I stretch not myself beyond due bounds (as though I reached you not); for I have already come as far even as Corinth to publish the Glad tidings of Christ. I am not boasting beyond measure, in the labors of others; but, I hope that as your faith goes on increasing, among yourselves, I shall be still further honored within my appointed limits, by bearing the Glad tidings to the countries beyond you; not by boasting of work made ready to my hand within another man's limit. Meantime, "He that boasteth, let him boast in the Lord." (Jer. 9:24) For a man is proved worthy, not when he commends himself, but when he is commended by the Lord.

## 2 Corinthians 11

Would that ye could bear with me a little in my folly! Yea, ye already bear with me. For I love you with a godly jealousy, because I betrothed you to one only husband, even to Christ, that I might present you unto Him in virgin purity; but I fear lest, as Eve was

---

to one phrase (not *casting down* but *building up*) in verse 8, and even in 13:10.

beguiled by the craftiness of the serpent, so your imaginations should be corrupted, and you should be seduced from your single minded faithfulness to Christ. For if he that comes among you is preaching another Jesus, whom I preached not, or if you are receiving [from him] another Spirit, which you received not before, or a new Glad tidings, which you accepted not before, you would do well to bear with me; for I reckon myself no whit behind your super eminent Apostles. Yea, though I be unskilled in the arts of speech, yet I am not wanting in the gift of knowledge; but I have manifested it towards you in all things, and amongst all men. Or is it a sin [which must rob me of the name of Apostle], that I proclaimed to you, without fee or reward, the Glad tidings of God, and abased; myself that you might be exalted? Other churches I spoiled, and took their wages to do you service. And when I was with you, though I was in want, I pressed not upon any of you; for the brethren,<sup>580</sup> when they came from Macedonia, supplied my needs; and I kept, and will keep myself altogether from casting a burden upon you. As the truth of Christ is in me, no deed of mine shall rob me of this boasting in the region of Achaia. And why? Because I love you not? God knows my love. But what I do I will continue to do, that I may cut off all ground from those who wish to find some ground of slander; and let them show the same cause for their boasting as I for mine. For men like these are false Apostles, deceitful workmen, clothing themselves in the garb of Christ's Apostles. And no wonder; for even Satan can transform himself into an angel of light. It is not strange, then, if his servants disguise themselves as servants of righteousness: but their end shall be according to their works.

I entreat you all once more I not to count me for a fool; or, if you think me such, yet bear with me in my folly, that I, too, may boast a little of myself. But, in so doing, I speak not in the spirit of the Lord, but, as it were, in folly, while we stand upon this ground of boasting; for, since many are boasting in the

<sup>580</sup> Probably Timothy and Silvanus, who may have brought the contribution sent by the Philippians.

spirit of the flesh, I will boast likewise. And I know that you bear kindly with fools as beseems the wise. Nay, you bear with men, though they enslave you, though they devour you, though they entrap you, though they exalt themselves over you, though they smite you on the face, to degrade you. I say that I was weak; and yet, if any have ground of boldness, I too (I speak in folly) have ground to be as bold as they. Are they Hebrews? so am I. Are they sons of Israel? so am I. Are they the seed of Abraham? so am I. Are they servants of Christ? (I speak as though I were beside myself) such, far more am I. In labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft. (five times I received from Jews the forty stripes save one; thrice I was scourged with the Roman rods; once I was stoned; thrice I suffered shipwreck;<sup>581</sup> a night and a day have I spent in the open 7 sea.) In journeyings often; in perils of rivers, in perils of robbers; in perils from my countrymen, in perils from the heathen; in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea; in perils among false brethren. In toil and weariness, often in sleepless watchings; in hunger and thirst, often without bread to eat; in cold and nakedness. And besides all the rest, I there is the crowd which presses upon me daily, and the care of all the churches. Who is weak, but I share his' weakness? Who is caused to fall, but I burn with indignation? If I must needs boast, I will boast of my weakness. God, who is the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, He who is blessed for ever, knows that I lie not.

In Damascus, the governor under Aretas, the king, kept watch over the city with a garrison, purposing to apprehend me; and I was let down by the wall, through a window,

<sup>581</sup> The five Jewish scourgings, two of the three Roman beatings with rods (one being at Philippi), and the three shipwrecks, are all unrecorded in the Acts. The stoning was at Lystra. What a life of incessant adventure and peril is here disclosed to us. And when we remember that he who endured and dared all this was a man constantly suffering from infirm health, such heroic self-devotion seems almost superhuman.

in a basket, and thus [not by my strength, but by my weakness] I escaped his hands. <sup>582</sup>

## 2 Corinthians 12

It is not for me, then, to boast. But I will come also to visions and revelations of the Lord. I know a man who was caught up fourteen years ago (whether in the body or out of the body, I cannot tell; God knoweth), caught up, I say, in the power of Christ, even to the third heaven, And I know that such a man (whether in the body or out of the body I cannot tell; God knoweth) was caught up into Paradise, and heard, unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for man to utter. Of such a man I will boast; but of myself I will not boast, save in the tokens of my weakness.

If I should choose to boast, I should not be guilty of empty vanity, for I should speak the truth; but I forbear to speak, that I may not cause any man to think of me more highly than when he sees my deeds or hears my teaching. And lest, through the exceeding greatness of these revelations, I should be lifted up with pride, there was given me a thorn in the flesh, a messenger of Satan, to buffet me, to keep down my pride. And thrice I besought the Lord concerning it, that it might depart from me. But He hath said to

<sup>582</sup> We prefer the reading of the Textus Receptus (which is also adopted by Chrysostom and by Tischendorf) to that of the Vatican Manuscript, adopted by Lachmann. On the other hand, for what follows we take Lachmann's reading, on the authority of the Codex Vaticanus, instead of the Textus Receptus. The whole passage is most perplexing, from the obscurity of its connection with what precedes and what follows. Why did St. Paul mention his escape from Damascus in so much detail? Was it merely as an event ignominious to himself? This seems the best view, but it is far from satisfactory. There is something most disappointing in his beginning thus to relate in detail the first in that series of wonderful escapes of which he had just before given a rapid sketch, and then suddenly and abruptly breaking off; leaving our curiosity roused and yet ungratified. We cannot agree with DeWette in considering the Damascene escape to be introduced as the climax of all the other perils mentioned, nor in referring to it the solemn attestation of verse 31.

me, , My grace is sufficient for thee; for my strength is mighty <sup>583</sup> in weakness." Most gladly, therefore, will I boast rather in my weakness than in my strength, that the strength of Christ may rest upon me and dwell in me. Therefore I rejoice in signs of weakness, in outrage, in necessities, in persecutions, in straitness of distress, endured for Christ; for when I am weak, then am I strong.

I have been guilty of folly, but you forced me to it; for I ought myself to have been commended by you: for I came no whit behind your super eminent Apostles, though I be of no account. The marks, at least, of an Apostle were seen in the deeds which I wrought among you, in signs, and wonders, and miracles, with steadfast endurance of persecution. Wherein had you the disadvantage of other churches, unless, indeed, that I did not burden you with my own maintenance? forgive me this wrong. Behold I am now for the third time I preparing to visit you, and I purpose to cast no burden upon you; for I seek not your substance, but yourselves. Since children should not lay up wealth for parents, but parents for children. Nay, rather, most gladly will I spend, yea, and myself be spent, for your souls, though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved.

But though it be granted that I did not burden you myself, yet perchance this was my cunning, whereby I entrapped your simplicity. Did I defraud you of your wealth by some of the messengers whom I sent to you? I desired Titus to visit you, and with him I sent the brother, his fellow traveler. Did Titus defraud you? Did we not act in the same spirit? Did we not walk in the same steps?

Do you again imagine that it is before you I defend myself!! Nay, before God I speak, in Christ; but all, beloved, for your sakes, that you may be built up. For I fear lest perchance when I come I should find you not such as I could wish, and that you also should find me other than you desire. I fear to find you full

<sup>583</sup> "Has its full development."

of strife, jealousies, passions, intrigues, slanderings, backbitings, vaunting, sedition. I fear lest, when I come, my God will again humble me by your faults, and I shall mourn over many among those who have sinned before and who have not repented of the uncleanness, and fornication, and wantonness which they committed.

## 2 Corinthians 13

I now come to you for the third time. "Out of the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be confirmed." (Deut. 19:15) I have warned you formerly, and I now forewarn you, as when I was present the second time so now, while I am absent, saying to those who had sinned before [my last visit], and to all the rest of the offenders, "If I come again I win not spare." I Thus you shall have the proof you seek of the power of Christ, who speaks in me; for He shows no weakness towards you, but works mightily among you.

For although He died upon the cross through the weakness of the flesh, yet now He lives through the power of God. And so I, too, share the weakness of His body; yet I shall share also the power of God, whereby He lives, when I come to deal with you. Examine [not me, but] yourselves, whether you are truly in the faith; put yourselves to the proof [concerning Christ's presence with you which ye seek in me]. Know ye not of your own selves, that Jesus Christ is dwelling in you? unless, perchance, when thus proved, you fail to abide the proof. But I hope you will find that I, for my part, abide the proof. Yet I pray to God that you may do no evil; desiring not that my own power may be clearly proved, but that you may do right, although I should seem unable to abide the proof: for I have no power against the truth, but only for the truth's defense. I rejoice, I say, when I am powerless [against you] and you are strong; yea, the very end of my prayers is your perfect reformation. Therefore I write this to you while absent, that, when present, I may not deal harshly with you in the strength of that authority which the Lord has given me, not to cast down; but to build up.

**Finally, brethren, farewell. Reform what is amiss Conclusion. in yourselves, exhort one another, be of one mind, live in peace; so shall the God of love and peace be with you. Salute one another with the kiss of holiness. All the saints here salute you.**

**The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.**

In this letter we find a considerable space devoted to subjects connected with a collection now in progress for the poor Christians in Judea. It is not the first time that we have seen St. Paul actively exerting himself in such a project. Nor is it the first time that this particular contribution has been brought before our notice. At Ephesus, in the First Epistle to the Corinthians, St. Paul gave special directions as to the method in which it should be laid up in store (1 Cor. 16:1-4). Even before this period similar instructions had been given to the Churches of Galatia. And the whole project was in fact the fulfillment of a promise made at a still earlier period, that in the course of his preaching among the Gentiles, the poor in Judea should be remembered (Gal. 2:10).

The collection was going on simultaneously in Macedonia and Achaia; and the same letter gives us information concerning the manner in which it was conducted in both places. The directions given to the Corinthians were doubtless similar to those under which the contribution was made at Thessalonica and Philippi. Moreover, direct information is incidentally given of what was actually done in Macedonia; and thus we are furnished with materials for depicting to ourselves a passage in the Apostle's life which is not described by St. Luke. There is much instruction to be gathered from the method and principles according to which these funds were collected by St. Paul and his associates, as well as from the conduct of those who contributed for their distant and suffering brethren.

Both from this passage of Scripture and from others we are fully made aware of St. Paul's motives for urging this benevolent work.

Besides his promise made long ago at Jerusalem, that in his preaching among the Gentiles the poor Jewish Christians should be remembered, the poverty of the residents in Judea would be a strong reason for his activity in collecting funds for their relief, among the wealthier communities who were now united with them in the same faith and hope. But there was a far higher motive, which lay at the root of the Apostle's anxious and energetic zeal in this cause. It is that which is dwelt on in the closing verses of the ninth chapter of the Epistle which has just been read, (2 Cor. 9:12-15) and is again alluded to in words less sanguine in the Epistle to the Romans. (Rom. 15:30,31) A serious schism existed between the Gentile and Hebrew Christians, which, though partially closed from time to time, seemed in danger of growing continually wider under the mischievous influence of the Judaisers.

The great labor of St. Paul's life at this time was directed to the healing of this division. He felt that if the Gentiles had been made partakers of the spiritual blessings of the Jews, their duty was to contribute to them in earthly blessings (Rom. 15:27), and that nothing would be more likely to allay the prejudices of the Jewish party than charitable gifts freely contributed by the Heathen converts. According as cheerful or discouraging thoughts predominated in his mind, and to such alternations of feeling even an Apostle was liable, he hoped that "the ministrations of that service would not only fill up the measure of the necessities of Christ's people" in Judea, but would "overflow" in thanksgivings and prayers on their part for those whose hearts had been opened to bless them (2 Cor. 9:12-15), or he feared that this charity might be rejected, and he entreated the prayers of others, "that he might be delivered from the disobedient in Judea, and that the service which he had undertaken for Jerusalem might be favorably received by Christ's people" (Rom. 15:30, 31).

Influenced by these motives, he spared no pains in promoting the work; but every step was conducted with the utmost prudence and

delicacy of feeling. He was well aware of the calumnies with which his enemies were ever ready to assail his character; and, therefore, he took the most careful precautions against the possibility of being accused of mercenary motives. At an early stage of the collection, we find him writing to the Corinthians, to suggest that "whomsoever they should judge fitted for the trust, should be sent to carry their benevolence to Jerusalem" (1 Cor. 16:3); and again he alludes to the delegates commissioned with Titus, as, "guarding himself against all suspicion which might be cast on him in his administration of the bounty with which he was charged," and as being "careful to do all things in a seemly manner, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men" (2 Cor. 8:20, 21).

This regard to what was seemly appears most strikingly in his mode of bringing the subject before those to whom he wrote and spoke. He lays no constraint upon them. They are to give "not grudgingly or of necessity," but each "according to the free choice of his heart; for God loveth a cheerful giver" (2 Cor. 9:7). "If there is a willing mind, the gift is acceptable when measured by the giver's power, and needs not to go beyond" (2 Cor. 8:12). He spoke rather as giving "advice" (8:10), than as a "command," and he sought to prove the reality of his converts' love, by reminding them of the zeal of others (8:8).

In writing to the Corinthians, he delicately contrasts their wealth with the poverty of the Macedonians. In speaking to the Macedonians themselves, such a mode of appeal was less natural, for they were poorer and more generous. Yet them also he endeavored to rouse to a generous rivalry, by telling them of the zeal of Achaia (8:24, 9:2). To them also he would doubtless say that "he who sows sparingly shall reap sparingly, and he who sows bountifully shall reap bountifully" (9:6), while he would gently remind them that God was ever able to give them an overflowing measure of all good gifts, supplying all their wants, and enabling them to be bountiful to others. And that one

overpowering argument could never be forgotten, the example of Christ, and the debt of love we owe to Him," You know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, how, though He was rich, yet for our sakes He became poor, that you, by His poverty, might be made rich" (8:9). Nor ought we, when speaking of the instruction to be gathered from this charitable undertaking, to leave unnoticed the calmness and deliberation of the method which he recommends of laying aside, week by week, what is devoted to God (1 Cor. 16:2), a practice equally remote from the excitement of popular appeals, and the mere impulse of instinctive benevolence.

The Macedonian Christians responded nobly to the appeal which was made to them by St. Paul. The zeal of their brethren in Achaia" roused the most of them to follow it" (2 Cor. 9:2). God's grace was abundantly" manifested in the Churches" on the north of the Aegean. Their conduct in this matter, as described to us by the Apostle's pen, rises to the point of the highest praise. It was a time, not of prosperity, but of great affliction, to the Macedonian Churches; nor were they wealthy communities like the Church of Corinth; yet," in their heavy trial, the fullness of their joy overflowed out of the depth of their poverty in the riches of their liberality'. Their contribution was no niggardly gift, wrung from their covetousness (8:5) ; but they gave honestly" according to their means', and not only so, but even" beyond their means'; nor did they give grudgingly, under the pressure of the Apostle's urgency, but" of their own free will, beseeching him with much entreaty that they might bear their part in the grace of ministering to Christ's people'. And this liberality arose from that which is the basis of all true Christian charity." They gave themselves first to the Lord Jesus Christ, by the will of God'.

The Macedonian contribution, if not complete, was in a state of much forwardness, when St. Paul wrote to Corinth. He speaks of liberal funds as being already pressed upon his acceptance (2 Cor. 8:4), and the delegates who were to accompany him to Jerusalem had already been chosen (2 Cor. 8:19, 23). We do

not know how many of the Churches of Macedonia took part in this collection,<sup>584</sup> but we cannot doubt that that of Philippi held a conspicuous place in so benevolent a work. In the case of the Philippian Church, this bounty was only a continuation of the benevolence they had begun before, and an earnest of that which gladdened the Apostle's heart in his imprisonment at Rome." In the beginning of the Gospel" they and they only had sent once and again 3 to relieve his wants, both at Thessalonica and at Corinth (Phil. 4:15, 16); and" at the last" their care of their friend and teacher" flourished again" , and they sent their gifts to him at Rome, as now they sent to their unknown brethren at Jerusalem. The Philippians are in the Epistles what that poor woman is in the Gospels, who placed two mites in the treasury. They gave much, because they gave of their poverty; and wherever the Gospel is preached throughout the whole world, there shall this liberality be told for a memorial of them.

If the principles enunciated by the Apostle in reference to the collection command our devout attention, and if the example of the Macedonian Christians is held out to the imitation of all future ages of the Church, the conduct of those who took an active part in the management of the business should not be unnoticed. Of two of these the names are unknown to us, though their characters are described. One was a brother," whose praise in publishing the Gospel was spread throughout the Churches," and who had been chosen by the Church of Macedonia to accompany St. Paul with the charitable fund to Jerusalem (2 Cor. 8:18, 19). The other was one" who had been put to the proof in many trials, and always found zealous in the work'. But

<sup>584</sup> In 2 Cor. 9:9 we find Philippi used as equivalent to Macedonia, and so it may be here. But it is not absolutely certain that 2 Cor. was written at Philippi. The churches in Macedonia were few, and communication among them was easy along the Via Egnatia; as when the first contributions were sent from Philippi to St. Paul at Thessalonica.

concerning Titus, the third companion of these brethren," the partner of St. Paul's lot, and his fellow laborer for the good of the Church," we have fuller information; and this seems to be the right place to make a more particular allusion to him, for he was nearly concerned in all the steps of the collection now in progress.

Titus does not, like Timothy, appear at intervals through all the passages of the Apostle's life. He is not mentioned in the Acts at all, and this is the only place where he comes conspicuously forward in the Epistles; and all that is said of him is connected with the business of the collection. Thus we have a detached portion of his biography, which is at once a thread that guides us through the main facts of the contribution for the Judean Christians, and source whence we can draw some knowledge of the character of that disciple, to whom St. Paul addressed one of his pastoral Epistles. At an early stage of the proceedings he seems to have been sent, soon after the First Epistle was dispatched from Ephesus to Corinth (or perhaps as its bearer) not simply to enforce the Apostle's general injunctions, but to labor also in forwarding the collection (2 Cor. 12:18). Whilst he was at Corinth, we find that he took an active and zealous part at the outset of the good work (ibid. 8:6). And now that he had come to Macedonia, and brought the Apostle good news from Achaia, he was exhorted to return, that he might finish what was so well begun, taking with him (as we have seen) the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, and accompanied by the two deputies who have just been mentioned. It was a task which he was by no means unwilling to undertake. God" put into his heart the same zeal" which Paul himself had; he not only consented to the Apostle's desire, but was" himself very zealous in the matter, and went of his own accord" (2 Cor. viii. 16, 17). If we put together these notices, scanty as they are, of the conduct of Titus, they set before us a character which seems to claim our admiration for a remarkable union of enthusiasm, integrity, and discretion.

After the departure of Titus, St. Paul still continued to prosecute the labors of an evangelist in the regions to the north of Greece. He was unwilling as yet to visit the Corinthian Church, the disaffected members of which still caused him so much anxiety, and he would doubtless gladly employ this period of delay to accomplish any plans he might have formed and left incomplete on his former visit to Macedonia. On that occasion he had been persecuted in Philippi. and had been forced to make a precipitate retreat from Thessalonica; and from Berea his course had been similarly urged to Athens and Corinth. Now he was able to embrace a wider circumference in his Apostolic progress. Taking Jerusalem as his center, he had been perpetually enlarging the circle of his travels. In his first missionary journey he had preached in the southern parts of Asia Minor and the northern parts of Syria: in his second journey, he had visited the Macedonian towns which lay near the shores of the Aegean: and now on his third progress he would seem to have penetrated into the mountains of the interior, or even beyond them to the shores of the Adriatic, and" fully preached the Gospel of Christ round about unto Illyricum" (Rom. 15:19).

We here encounter a subject on which some difference of opinion must unavoidably exist. If we wish to lay down the exact route of the Apostle, we must first ascertain the meaning of the term "Illyricum" as used by St. Paul in writing to the Romans: and if we find this impossible, we must be content to leave this part of the Apostle's travels in some degree of vagueness; more especially as the preposition employed in the passage is evidently indeterminate.

The political import of the word" Illyricum" will be seen by referring to what has been written on the province of Macedonia in an earlier chapter. It has been there stated that the former province was contiguous to the north western frontier of the latter.

It must be observed, however, that a distinction was anciently drawn between Greek Illyricum,

a district on the south, which was incorporated by the Romans with Macedonia, and formed the coastline of that province where it touched the Adriatic, and Barbarous, or Roman Illyricum, which extended towards the head of that gulf, and was under the administration of a separate governor. This is "one of those ill fated portions of the earth which, though placed in immediate contact with civilization, have remained perpetually barbarian."<sup>585</sup> For a time it was in close connection, politically and afterwards ecclesiastically, with the capitals both of the Eastern and Western empires: but subsequently it relapsed almost into its former rude condition, and" to this hour it is devoid of illustrious names and noble associations." Until the time of Augustus, the Romans were only in possession of a narrow portion along the coast, which had been torn during the wars of the Republic from the pirate inhabitants. ~ But under the first Emperor a large region, extending far inland towards the valleys of the Save and the Drave, was formed into a province, and contained some strong links of the chain of military posts, which was extended along the frontier of the Danube. At first it was placed under the Senate: but it was soon found to require the presence of large masses of soldiers: the Emperor took it into his own hands, and inscriptions are still extant on which we can read the records of its occupation by the seventh and eleventh legions. Dalmatia, which is also mentioned by St. Paul (2 Tim. 4:10), was a district in the southern part of this province; and after the final reduction of the Dalmatian tribes, the province was more frequently called by this name than by that of Illyricum.<sup>586</sup> The limits of this political jurisdiction (to speak in general terms) may be said to have included Bosnia, and the modern Dalmatia, with parts of Croatia and Albania.

But the term Illyricum was by no means always, or even generally, used in a strictly political

<sup>585</sup> Arnold's *Rome*, Vol. I, p. 495.

<sup>586</sup> Dalmatia is a name unknown to the earlier Greek writers.

sense. The extent of country included in the expression was various at various times. The Illyrians were loosely spoken of by the earlier Greek writers as the tribes which wandered on the eastern shore of the Adriatic. The Illyricum which engaged the arms of Rome under the Republic was only a narrow strip of that shore with the adjacent islands. But in the Imperial times it came to be used of a vast and vague extent of country lying to the south of the Danube, to the east of Italy, and to the west of Macedonia. So it is used by Strabo in the reign of Augustus, and similarly by Tacitus in his account of the civil wars which preceded the fall of Jerusalem; and the same phraseology continues to be applied to this region, till the third century of the Christian era. We need not enter into the geographical changes which depended on the new division of the empire under Constantine, or into the fresh significance which, in a later age, was given to the ancient names, when the rivalry of ecclesiastical jurisdictions led to the schism of Eastern and Western Christendom. We have said enough to show that it is not possible to assume that the Illyricum of St. Paul was a definite district, ruled as a province by a governor from Rome.

It seems by far the most probable that the terms "Illyricum" and "Dalmatia" are both used by St. Paul in a vague and general sense: as we have before had occasion to remark in reference to Asia Minor, where many geographical expressions, such as "Mysia," "Galatia," and "Phrygia," were variously used, popularly and politically. It is indeed quite possible that St. Paul, not deeming it right as yet to visit Corinth, may have pushed on by the Via Egnatia, 7 from Philippi and Thessalonica, across the central mountains which turn the streams eastward and westward, to Dyrrhachium, the landing place of those who had come by the Appian Road from Rome to Brundisium. Then, though still in the province of Macedonia, he would be in the district called Greek Illyricum: I and he would be on a line of easy communication with Nicopolis on the south, where, on a later occasion, he proposed to" winter (Tit. 3:12);

and he could easily penetrate northwards into Roman or Barbarous Illyricum, where was that district of Dalmatia, which was afterwards visited by his companion Titus, whom, in the present instance, he had dispatched to Corinth. But we must admit that the expression in the Romans might have been legitimately used, if he never passed beyond the limits of Macedonia" and even if his Apostolic labors were entirely to the eastward of the mountains, in the country watered by the Strymon and the Axius.

Whether he traveled widely and rapidly in the regions to the north of Greece, or confined his exertions to the neighborhood of those Churches which he had previously founded, the time soon came when he determined to revisit that Church, which had caused him so much affliction not unmixed with joy. During the course of his stay at Ephesus, and in all parts of his subsequent journey in Troas and Macedonia, his heart had been continually at Corinth. He had been in frequent communication with his inconsistent and rebellious converts. Three letters had been written to entreat or to threaten them. Besides his own personal visit when the troubles were beginning, he had sent several messengers, who were authorized to speak in his name.

Moreover, there was now a special subject in which his interest and affections were engaged, the contribution for the poor in Judea, which he wished to "seal" to those for whom it was destined (Rom. 15:28) before undertaking his journey to the West.

Of the time and the route of this southward journey we can only say that the most probable calculation leads us to suppose that he was traveling with his companions towards Corinth at the approach of winter; and this makes it likely that he went by land rather than by sea. A good road to the south had long been formed from the neighborhood of Berea, connecting the chief towns of Macedonia with those of Achaia. Opportunities would not be wanting for preaching the Gospel at every stage in his progress; and perhaps we may infer from his

own expression in writing to the Romans (15:23), "I have no more place in those parts" either that Churches were formed in every chief city between Thessalonica and Corinth, or that the Glad tidings had been unsuccessfully proclaimed in Thessaly and Boeotia, as on the former journey they had found but little credence among the philosophers and triflers of Athens.

## Chapter 18

It was probably already winter, when St. Paul once more beheld in the distance the lofty citadel of Corinth, towering above the isthmus which it commands. The gloomy season must have harmonized with his feelings as he approached. The clouds which, at the close of autumn, so often hang round the summit of the Acrocorinthus, and cast their shadow upon the city below, might have seemed to typify the mists of vice and error which darkened the minds even of its Christian citizens. Their father in the faith knew that, for some of them at least, he had labored in vain. He was returning to converts who had cast off the morality of the Gospel; to friends who had forgotten his love; to enemies who disputed his divine commission. It is true, the majority of the Corinthian Church had repented of their worst sins, and submitted to his Apostolic commands. Yet what was forgiven could not entirely be forgotten; even towards the penitent he could not feel all the confidence of earlier affection; and there was still left an obstinate minority, who would not give up their habits of impurity, and who, when he spoke to them of righteousness and judgment to come, replied either by openly defending their sins, or by denying his authority and impugning his orthodoxy.

He now came prepared to put down this opposition by the most decisive measures: resolved to cast out of the Church these antagonists of truth and goodness, by the plenitude of his Apostolic power. Thus he warned them a few months before (as he had threatened, when present on an earlier occasion)," when I come again, I will not spare"

(2 Cor. 13:2). He declared his determination to punish the disobedient (2 Cor. 10:6). He "boasted" of the authority which Christ had given him (2 Cor. 10:8). He besought them not to compel him to use the weapons entrusted to him (2 Cor. 10:2), weapons not of fleshly weakness, but endowed with the might of God (2 Cor. 10:4). He pledged himself to execute by his deeds when present, all he had threatened by his words when absent (2 Cor. 10:11).

As we think of him, with these purposes of severity in his mind, approaching the walls of Corinth, we are irresistibly reminded of the eventful close of a former journey, when Saul, "breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord," drew nigh to Damascus. How strongly does this accidental resemblance bring out the essential contrast between the weapons and the spirit of Saul and Paul! Then he wielded the sword of the secular power he traveled as the proud representative of the Sanhedrin the minister of human cruelty and injustice: he was the Jewish Inquisitor the exterminator of heretics, seeking for victims to imprison or to stone. Now he is meek and lowly, travelling in the humblest guise of poverty, with no outward marks of pre-eminence or power; he has no jailers at his command to bind his captives, no executioners to carry out his sentence. All he can do is to exclude those who disobey him from a society of poor and ignorant outcasts, who are the objects of contempt to all the mighty, and wise, and noble, among their countrymen. His adversaries despise his apparent insignificance; they know that he has no outward means of enforcing his will; they see that his bodily presence is weak; they think his speech contemptible. Yet he is not so powerless as he seems.

Though now he wields no carnal weapons, his arms are not weaker but stronger than they were of old. He cannot bind the bodies of men, but he can bind their souls. Truth and love are on his side; the Spirit of God bears witness with the spirits of men on his behalf. His weapons are "mighty to overthrow the strongholds of the adversaries;" "Thereby" he could "overthrow

the reasoning of the disputer, and pull down the lofty bulwarks which raise themselves against the knowledge of God, and bring every rebellious thought into captivity and subjection to Christ"

Nor is there less difference in the spirit of his warfare than in the character of his weapons. Then he "breathed out threatenings and slaughter;" he "made havoc of the Church;" he "haled men and women into prison;" he "compelled them to blaspheme." When their sentence was doubtful, he gave his vote for their destruction; he was "exceedingly mad against them." Then his heart was filled with pride and hate, uncharitableness and self will.

But now his proud and passionate nature is transformed by the Spirit of God; he is crucified with Christ: the fervid impetuosity of his character is tempered by meekness and gentleness; his very denunciations and threats of punishment are full of love; he grieves over his contumacious opponents; the thought of their pain fills him with sadness." For if I cause you grief, who is there to cause me joy?" (2 Cor. 2:2) He implores them, even at the eleventh hour, to save him from the necessity of dealing harshly with them; he had rather leave his authority doubtful, and still remain liable to the sneers of his adversaries, than establish it by their punishment (2 Cor. 13:7-9). He will condescend to the weakest prejudices, rather than cast a stumbling block in a brother's path; he is ready to become "all things to all men," that he may "by all means save some"

Yet all that was good and noble in the character of Saul remains in Paul, purified from its old alloy. The same zeal for God burns in his heart, though it is no longer misguided by ignorance or warped by party spirit. The same firm resolve is seen in carrying out his principles to their consequences, though he shows it not in persecuting but in suffering. The same restless energy, which carried him from Jerusalem to Damascus that he might extirpate heresy, now urges him from one end of the world to the

other,<sup>587</sup> that he may bear the tidings of salvation.

The painful anticipations which saddened his return to Corinth were not, however, altogether unrelieved by happier thoughts. As he approached the well known gates, in the midst of that band of faithful friends who accompanied him from Macedonia, his memory could not but revert to the time when first he entered the same city, a friendless and lonely<sup>588</sup> stranger. He could not but recall the feelings of extreme depression with which he first began his missionary work at Corinth, after his unsuccessful visit to Athens.

The very firmness and bold confidence which now animated him, the assurance which he felt of victory over the opponents of truth, must have reminded him by contrast of the anxiety and self distrust<sup>589</sup> which weighed him down at his first intercourse with the Corinthians, and which needed a miraculous vision (Acts 18:9) for its removal. How could he allow discouragement to overcome his spirit, when he remembered the fruits borne by labors which had begun in so much sadness and timidity? It was surely something that hundreds of believers now called on the name of the Lord Jesus, who when he first came among them had worshipped nothing but the deification of their own lusts.

Painful no doubt it was to find that their conversion had been so incomplete; that the pollutions of heathenism still defiled those who had once washed away the stains" of sin; yet the majority of the Church had repented of their offences; the number who obstinately persisted in sin was but small; and if many of the adult

---

<sup>587</sup> He was at this very time intending to go first to Jerusalem, thence to Rome, and thence to Spain; that is, to travel from the eastern to the Western extremities of the civilized world. See Rom. 15:28

<sup>588</sup> He was left at Athens along (1 Thess. 3:1) and so remained until Timothy and Silas rejoined him at Corinth.

<sup>589</sup> See 1 Cor. 2:1-3

converts were so tied and bound by the chains of habit, that their complete deliverance could scarce be hoped for, yet at least their children might be brought up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. Moreover, there were some, even in this erring Church, on whom St. Paul could think with unmingled satisfaction; some who walked in the Spirit, and did not fulfill the lust of the flesh: who were created anew in Christ Jesus; with whom old things had passed away, and all things had become new; who dwelt in Christ, and Christ in them.

Such were Erastus the treasurer, and Stephanas, the first fruits of Achaia; such were Fortunatus and Achaicus, who had lately traveled to Ephesus on the errand of their brethren; such was Gaius, who was even now preparing to welcome beneath his hospitable roof the Apostle who had thrown open to himself the door of entrance into the Church of Christ. When St. Paul thought of" them that were such," and of the many others "who worked with them and labored," (1 Cor. 16:60 as he threaded the crowded streets on his way to the house of Gaius, doubtless he" thanked God and took courage"

But a painful surprise awaited him on his arrival. He found that intelligence had reached Corinth from Ephesus, by the direct route, of a more recent date than any which he had lately received; and the tidings brought by this channel concerning the state of the Galatian churches, excited both his astonishment and his indignation.<sup>590</sup> His converts there, whom he seems to have regarded with peculiar affection, and whose love and zeal for himself had formerly been so conspicuous, were rapidly forsaking his teaching, and falling an easy prey to the arts of Judaizing missionaries from Palestine.

We have seen the vigor and success with which the Judaizing party at Jerusalem were at this

---

<sup>590</sup> This is on the assumption that the Epistle to the Galatians was written soon after St. Paul's arrival at Corinth on the present occasion.

period pursuing their new tactics, by carrying the war into the territory of their great opponent, and endeavoring to counterwork him in the very centre of his influence, in the bosom of those Gentile Churches which he had so lately founded. We know how great was the difficulty with which he had defeated (if, indeed, they were yet defeated) the agents of this restless party at Corinth; and now, on his reaching that city to crush the last remains of their opposition, he heard that they had been working the same mischief in Galatia, where he had least expected it.

There, as in most of the early Christian communities, a portion of the Church had been Jews by birth; and this body would afford a natural fulcrum for the efforts of the Judaizing teachers; yet we cannot suppose that the number of Jews resident in this inland district could have been very large. And St. Paul in addressing the Galatians, although he assumes that there were some among them familiar with the Mosaic law, yet evidently implies that the majority were converts from heathenism. (cf. Gal. 4:8) It is remarkable, therefore, that the Judaizing emissaries should so soon have gained so great a hold over a church consisting mainly of Gentile Christians; and the fact that they did so proves not only their indefatigable activity, but also their skill in the arts of conciliation and persuasion. It must be remembered, however, that they were by no means scrupulous as to the means which they employed to effect their objects.

At any cost of falsehood and detraction, they resolved to loosen the hold of St. Paul upon the affection and respect of his converts. Thus to the Galatians they accused him of a want of uprightness, in observing the Law himself whilst among the Jews, yet persuading the Gentiles to renounce it; (Gal. 5:11) they argued that his motive was to keep his converts in a subordinate state, excluded from the privileges of a full covenant with God, which was enjoyed by the circumcised alone; (Gal. 4:16) they declared that he was an interested flatterer," becoming all things to all men," that he might

make a party for himself; and above all, they insisted that he falsely represented himself as an apostle of Christ, for that he had not, like the Twelve, been a follower of Jesus when He was on earth, and had not received His commission; that, on the contrary, he was only a teacher sent out by the authority of the Twelve, whose teaching was only to be received so far as it agreed with theirs and was sanctioned by them; whereas his doctrine (they alleged) was now in opposition to that of Peter and James, and the other " Pillars" of the Church.

By such representations they succeeded to a great extent in alienating the Galatian Christians from their father in the faith: already many of the recent converts submitted to circumcision, (Gal. 6:13) and embraced the party of their new teachers with the same zeal which they had formerly shown for the Apostle of the Gentiles; (Gal. 4:14,15) and the rest of the Church was thrown into a state of agitation and division.

On receiving the first intelligence of these occurrences, St. Paul hastened to check the evil before it should have become irremediable. He wrote to the Galatians an Epistle which begins with an abruptness and severity showing his sense of the urgency of the occasion, and the greatness of the danger. It is also frequently characterized by a tone of sadness, such as would naturally be felt by a man of such warm affections when he heard that those whom he loved were forsaking his cause and believing the calumnies of his enemies. In this letter his principal object is to show that the doctrine of the Judaizers did in fact destroy the very essence of Christianity, and reduced it from an inward and spiritual life to an outward and ceremonial system; but in order to remove the seeds of alienation and distrust which had been designedly planted in the minds of his converts, he begins by fully contradicting the falsehoods which had been propagated against himself by his opponents, and especially by vindicating his title to the Apostolic office as received directly from Christ, and exercised independently of the other Apostles. Such were the circumstances

and such the objects which led him to write the following Epistle.

## Epistle to the Galatians

### Galatians 1

**PAUL an Apostle sent not from men nor by man but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised Him from the dead. With all the brethren in my company; To THE CHURCHES OF GALATIA.**

Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ; who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of our God and Father; to whom be glory, even unto the ages of ages. Amen

I marvel that you are so soon shifting your ground, and forsaking Him who called you in the grace of Christ, for a new Glad tidings; which is nothing else but the device of certain men who are troubling you, and who desire to pervert the Glad tidings of Christ. But even though I myself, or an angel from heaven, should declare to you any other Glad tidings that that which I declared, let him be accursed. As I have said before, so now I say again, if any man is come to you with a Glad tidings different from that which you received before, let him be accursed. Think ye that man's assent, or God's is now my object? or is it that I seek favor with men? Nay, if I still sought favor with men, I should not be the bondsman of Christ.

For I certify you, brethren, that the Glad tidings which I brought you is not of man's devising. For I myself received it not from man, nor was it taught me by man's teaching, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ. For you have heard of my former behavior in the days of my Judaism, how I persecuted beyond measure the Church of God, and strove to root it out, and outran in Judaism many of my own age and nation, being more exceedingly zealous for the traditions of my fathers. But when it pleased Him, who set me apart from my mother's womb and called me by His grace, to reveal His Son in me, that I might proclaim His Glad tidings among the Gentiles, I did not take counsel with flesh and blood, nor yet did I go up to Jerusalem to

those who were Apostles before me, but I departed immediately into Arabia, and from thence returned to Damascus. Afterwards, when three years had passed, I went up to Jerusalem, that I might know Cephas and with him I remained fifteen days; but other of the Apostles saw I none, save only James, the brother of the Lord. (Now in this which I write to you, behold I testify before God that I lie not.) After this I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia; but I was still unknown by face to the Churches of Christ in Judea: tidings only were brought them from time to time, saying, "He who was once our persecutor now bears the Glad tidings of that Faith, which formerly he labored to root out." And they glorified God in me.

### Galatians 2

Then fourteen years after, I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

At that time I went up in obedience to a revelation, and I communicated to the brethren in Jerusalem the Glad tidings which I proclaimed among the Gentiles; but to the chief brethren I communicated it privately, lest perchance my labors, either past or present, might be fruitless. Yet not even Titus, my own companion (being a Greek), was compelled to be circumcised. But this communication [with the Apostles in Judea] I undertook on account of the false brethren who gained entrance by fraud, for they crept in among us to spy out our freedom (which we possess in Christ Jesus) that they might enslave us under their own yoke. To whom I yielded not the submission they demanded; no, not for an hour; that the truth of the Glad tidings might stand unaltered for your benefit.

But from those who were held in chief reputation it matters not to me of what account they were, God is no respecter of persons those (I say) who were the chief in reputation gave me no new instruction; but, on the contrary, when they saw that I had been charged to preach the Glad tidings to the uncircumcised, as Peter to the circumcised (for He who wrought in Peter for the Apostleship of the circumcision, wrought also in me for the Gentiles), and

when they had learned the grace which had been given me, James, Cephas, and John, who were accounted chief pillars, gave to me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship, purposing that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews; provided only, that we should remember the poor,<sup>591</sup> which I have accordingly endeavored to do with diligence. But when Cephas came to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he had incurred reproach; :for before the coming of certain [brethren] from James, he was in the habit of eating with the Gentiles; but when they came, he began to draw back, and to separate himself from the Gentiles, for fear of the Jewish brethren. And he was joined in his dissimulation by the rest of the Jews [in the Church of Antioch], so that even Barnabas was drawn away with them to dissemble in like manner. But when I saw that they were walking in a crooked path, and forsaking the truth of the Glad tidings, I said to Cephas before them all, "if thou, being born a Jew, art wont to live according to the customs of the Gentiles, and not of the Jews, how is it that thou constrainest the Gentiles to keep the ordinances of the Jews? We are Jews by birth, and not unhallowed Gentiles; yet, knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the Law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, we ourselves also have put our faith in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the Law; for by the works of the Law "shall no flesh be justified." (Psalm 143:2)

But what if, while seeking to be justified in Christ, we have indeed reduced ourselves also to the sinful state of unhallowed Gentiles? Is Christ then a minister of sin? God forbid!

For if I again build up that [structure of the Law] which I have overthrown, then I represent myself as a transgressor. Whereas I, through the operation of the Law, became dead to the Law, that I might 20 live to God. I am crucified with Christ; it is no more I that live, but Christ is living in me; and my outward life which still remains, I live in the

faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me. I frustrate not God's gift of grace [like those who seek righteousness in the Law]; for if the Law can make men righteous, then Christ died in vain.

### Galatians 3

O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you? You, before whose eyes was held up the picture of Jesus Christ upon the cross. One question I would ask you. When you received the Spirit, was it from the works of the Law, or the preaching of Faith? Are you so senseless? Having begun in the Spirit, would you now end in the Flesh? Have you received so many benefits in vain if indeed it has been in vain? Whence, I say, are the gifts of Him who furnishes you with the fullness of the Spirit, and works in you the power of miracles? From the deeds of the Law, or from the preaching of Faith?

So likewise "Abraham had faith in God, and it was reckoned unto him for righteousness." (Gen. 15:6) Know, therefore, that they only are the sons of Abraham who are children of Faith. And the Scripture, foreseeing that God through Faith justifies [not the Jews only but] the Gentiles, declared beforehand to Abraham the Glad tidings, saying, "All the nations of the Gentiles shall be blessed in thee." (Gen. 12:3) So then, they who are children of Faith [whether they be Jews or Gentiles] are blessed with faithful Abraham.

For all they who rest upon<sup>592</sup> the works of the Law are under a curse; for it is written, "Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the Law to do them." (Deut. 27:26) And it is manifest that no man is counted righteous in God's judgment under the conditions of the Law; for it is written, "By faith shall the righteous live." (Hab. 2:4) But the Law rests not on Faith, but declares, "The man that hath done these things shall live therein." (Lev. 18:5).

Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the Law, having become accursed for our sakes

<sup>591</sup> Namely, the poor Christians in Judea.

<sup>592</sup> Literally, *who have their root in the works of the Law*, or, according to the Hebrew image, *the children of the works of the Law*.

(for it is written, "Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree." (Deut. 21:23) to the end that in Christ Jesus the blessing of Abraham might come unto the Gentiles; that through Faith we might receive the promise of the Spirit.

Brethren, I speak in man's language, nevertheless, a man's covenant, when ratified, cannot by its giver be annulled, or set aside by a later addition. Now God's promises were made to Abraham and to his seed; the scripture says not "and to thy seeds," as if it spoke of many, but as of one, "and to thy seed;"<sup>593</sup> and this seed is Christ. But this I say; a covenant which had been ratified before by God, to be fulfilled in Christ, the Law which was given four hundred and thirty years afterwards, cannot make void, to the annulling of the promise. For if the inheritance comes from the Law, it comes no longer from promise; whereas God has given it to Abraham freely by promise.

To what end, then, was the Law? it was added because of the transgressions of men, till the Seed should come, to whom belongs the promise; and it was enacted by the ministration of angels<sup>594</sup> through the hands of [Moses, who was] a mediator [between God and the people]. Now where a mediator is, there must be two parties. But God is one there is no second party to His promise].

Do I say then that the Law contradicts the promises of God? that be far from me! For had a Law been given which could raise men from death to life, then would righteousness be truly from the Law. But the Scripture (on the other hand) has shut up the whole world together under sin, that from Faith in Jesus Christ the promise might be given to the faithful.

But before Faith came, we were shut up in prison, in ward under the Law, in preparation for the Faith which should

<sup>593</sup> Gen. 13:15. The meaning of the argument is that the recipients of God's promises are not to be looked on as an aggregate of different individuals, or of different races, but are all one body, whereof Christ is the head.

<sup>594</sup> Compare Acts 7:53.

afterwards be revealed. Thus, even as the slave who leads a child to the house of the schoolmaster, so the Law has led us to [our teacher] Christ, that by Faith we might be justified: but now that Faith is come, we are under the slave's care no longer. For you are all the sons of God, by your faith in Christ Jesus: yea, whosoever among you have been baptized unto Christ, have clothed yourselves with Christ. In Him there is neither Jew nor Gentile, neither slave nor freeman, neither male nor female; for you all are one in Christ Jesus. And if you are Christ's, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs of the blessing by promise.

#### Galatians 4

Now I say, that the heir, so long as he is a child, has no more freedom than a slave, though he is owner of the whole inheritance; but he is under overseers and stewards until the time appointed by his father. And so we also [who are Israelites] when we were children, were in bondage, under our childhood's lessons of outward ordinances. But when the appointed time was fully come, God sent forth His Son, who was born of a woman, and born subject to the Law; that He might redeem from their slavery the subjects of the Law, that we might be adopted as the sons of God. And because you are the sons of God, He has sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying unto Him "Father." Wherefore thou [who canst so pray] art no more a slave, but a son: and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

But formerly, when you knew not God, you were in bondage to gods that have no real being. now, when you have gained the knowledge of God, or rather, when God has acknowledged you, how is it that you are turning backwards to those childish lessons, weak and beggarly as they are; eager to place yourselves once more in bondage under their dominion? Are you observing days, and months,<sup>595</sup> and seasons,<sup>596</sup> and

<sup>595</sup> The seven months.

<sup>596</sup> The seasons of the great Jewish feasts.

years.<sup>597</sup> I am fearful for you, lest I have spent my labor on you in vain. I beseech you, brethren, to become as I am, [and seek no more a place among the circumcised;] for I too have become as you 11 are [and have cast away the pride of my circumcision] . You have never wronged me: on the contrary, although it was sickness (as you know) which caused me to preach the Glad tidings to you at my first visit, yet you neither scorned nor loathed the bodily infirmity which was my trial;<sup>598</sup> but you welcomed me as an angel of God, yea, even as Christ Jesus. Why, then, did you think yourselves so happy? (for I hear you witness that, if it had been possible, you would have torn out your own eyes<sup>599</sup> and given them to me.) Am I then become your enemy<sup>600</sup> because I tell you the truth? They [who call me so] show zeal for you

<sup>597</sup> The Sabbatical and Jubilee years. From this it has been supposed that this Epistle must have been written in a Sabbatical year. But this does not necessarily follow, because the word may be merely inserted to complete the sentence; and of course those who observed the Sabbaths, festivals, &c., would intend to observe also the Sabbatical years when they came. The plural' years' favors this view.

<sup>598</sup> This was probably the same disease mentioned 2 Cor. 12:7. It is very unfortunate that the word temptation has so changed its meaning in the last two hundred and fifty years, as to make the Authorized Version of this verse a great source of misapprehension to ignorant readers. Some have even been led to imagine that St. Paul spoke of a sinful habit in which he indulged, and to the dominion of which he was encouraged (2 Cor. 12:9) contentedly to resign himself! We should. add that if, with some of the best MSS., we read' your,' it makes no very material difference in the sense; St. Paul's sickness would then be called the trial of the Galatians.

<sup>599</sup> This certainly seems to confirm the view of those who suppose St. Paul's malady to have been some disease in the eyes. The "your" appears emphatic, as if he would say you would have torn out your own eyes to supply the lack of mine.

<sup>600</sup> The Judaizers accused St. Paul of desiring to keep the Gentile converts in an inferior position, excluded (by want of circumcision) from full covenant with God; and called him, therefore, their enemy.

with no good intent; they would shut you out from others that your zeal may be for them alone. But it is good to be zealous in a good cause, and that at all times, and not when zeal lasts only [like yours] while I am present with you. My beloved children, I am again bearing the pangs of travail for you, till Christ be fully formed within you. I would that I were present with you now, that I might change my tone; for you fill me with perplexity.

Tell me ye that desire to be under the Law will you not hear the Law? For therein it is written that Abraham had two sons; one by the bondwoman, the other by the free. But the son of the bondwoman was born to him after the flesh: whereas the son of the free woman was born by virtue of the promise. Now, all this is allegorical; for these two women are the two covenants; the first given from Mount Sinai, whose children are born into bondage, which is Hagar (for the word Hagar<sup>601</sup> in Arabia signifies :Mount Sinai): and she answers to the earthly Jerusalem, for she is in bondage with her children. But [Sarah is the second covenant in Christ, and answers to the heavenly Jerusalem; for] the heavenly Jerusalem is free; which is the mother of us all. And so it is written "Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth into shouting, thou that travailest not; for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath the husband." (Isa. 44:1)

Now, we, brethren, like Isaac, are children [born not naturally, but] of God's promise. Yet, as then the spiritual seed of Abraham was persecuted by his natural seed, so it is also now. Nevertheless, what says the Scripture? "Cast out the bondwoman and her son; for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman." (Gen. 21:10) Wherefore, brethren, we are not children of the bond woman, but of the free.

<sup>601</sup> The word "Hagar" in Arabic means 'a rock,' and some authorities tell us that Mount Sinai is so called by the Arabs. The lesson to be drawn from this whole passage, as regards the Christian use of the Old Testament, is of an importance which can scarcely be overrated.

**Galatians 5**

Stand fast, then, in the freedom which Christ has given us, and turn not back again, to entangle yourselves in the yoke of bondage.

**Lo, I Paul declare unto you, that if you cause yourselves to be circumcised, Christ will profit you nothing. I testify again to every man who submits to circumcision, that he thereby lays himself under obligation to fulfill the whole Law. If you rest your righteousness on the Law, you are cut off from Christ, you are fallen from His gift of grace. For we, through the Spirit [not through the Flesh], from Faith [not works], look eagerly for the hope of righteousness. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision; but Faith, whose work is Love.**

**You were running the race well: who has cast a stumbling block in your way? who has turned you aside from your obedience to the truth? The counsels which you have obeyed came not from Him who called you." A little leaven leavens the whole lump." As for me, I rely upon you, in the Lord, that you will not be led astray; but he that is troubling you, whosoever he be, shall bear the blame. But if I myself also [as they say] still preach circumcision, why am I still persecuted? for if I preach circumcision, then the cross, the stone at which they stumble, is done away.**

**I could wish that these agitators who disturb your quiet, would execute upon themselves not only circumcision, but excision also.**

**For you, brethren, have been called to freedom; only make not your freedom a vantage ground for the Flesh, but rather enslave yourselves one to another by the bondage of love. For all the Law is fulfilled in 15 this one saying, "Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself." (Lev. 19:18) But if you bite and devour one another, take heed lest you be utterly destroyed by one another's means.**

**But this I say, walk in the Spirit, and you shall not fulfill the desire of the Flesh; for the desire of the Flesh fights against the Spirit, and the desire of the Spirit fights against the Flesh; and this variance tends to hinder you from doing what you wish to do. But, if you**

**be led by the Spirit, you are not under the Law. Now, the works of the Flesh are manifest, which are such as these; fornication, impurity, lasciviousness; idolatry, witchcraft; <sup>602</sup>enmities, strife, jealousy, passionate anger; intrigues, divisions, sectarian parties; envy, murder; drunkenness, revellings, and such like. Of which I forewarn you (as I told you also in times past), that they who do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, trustfulness, 6 gentleness, self denial. Against such there is no Law.**

**But they who are Christ's have crucified the flesh, with its passions and its lusts. If we live by the Spirit, let our steps be guided by the Spirit. Let us not become vainglorious, provoking one another to strife, regarding one another with envy.**

**Galatians 6**

**Brethren, I speak to you who call yourselves the Spiritual, even if anyone be overtaken in a fault, do you correct such a man in a spirit of meekness; and take thou heed to thyself, lest thou also be tempted. Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ. For, if any man exalts himself, thinking to be something when he is nothing, he deceives himself with vain imaginations. Rather let every man examine his own work, and then his boasting will concern himself alone and not his neighbor; for each will bear the load [of sin ] which is his own, [instead of magnifying the load which is his brother's]. Moreover, let him who is receiving instruction in the Word give to his instructor a share in all the good things which he possesses. Do not deceive yourselves, God cannot be defrauded. Every man shall reap as he has sown. The man who now sows for his own Flesh, shall reap there from a harvest doomed to perish; but he who**

<sup>602</sup> The profession of magical arts. The history of the times in which St. Paul lived is full of the crimes committed by those who professed such arts. We have seen him brought into contact with such persons as Ephesus already. They dealt in poisons also, which accounts for the use of the term etymologically.

**sows for the Spirit, shall from the Spirit reap the harvest of life eternal, But let us continue in well doing, and not be weary: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all men, but especially to our brethren in the household of Faith.**

**Observe the size of the characters which I write to you with my own hand.**

**I tell you that they who wish to have a good repute in things pertaining to the Flesh, they, and. they alone are forcing circumcision upon you; and that only to save themselves from the persecution which Christ bore upon the cross. For even they who circumcise themselves do not keep the Law; but they wish to have you circumcised, that your obedience to the fleshly ordinance may give them a ground of boasting. But as for me, far be it from me to boast, save only in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ; whereby the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision is anything, nor uncircumcision; but a new creation. And whosoever shall walk by this rule, peace and mercy be upon them, and upon all the Israel of God.**

**Henceforth, let no man vex me; for I bear in my body the scars which mark my bondage to the Lord Jesus.**

**Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.**

## Chapter 19

### Paul at Corinth

It was probably about the same time when St. Paul dispatched to Ephesus the messengers who bore his energetic remonstrance to the Galatians, that he was called upon to inflict the punishment which he had threatened upon those obstinate offenders who still defied his censures at Corinth. We have already seen that these were divided into two classes: the larger consisted of those who justified their immoral

practice by antinomian <sup>603</sup> doctrine, and, styling themselves 'the Spiritual,' considered the outward restrictions of morality as mere carnal ordinances, from which they were emancipated; the other and smaller (but more obstinate and violent) class, who had been more recently formed into a party by emissaries from Palestine, were the extreme Judaizers, who were taught to look on Paul as a heretic, and to deny his Apostleship. Although the principles of these two parties differed so widely, yet they both agreed in repudiating the authority of St. Paul; and, apparently, the former party gladly availed themselves of the calumnies of the Judaizing propagandists, and readily listened to their denial of Paul's divine commission; while the Judaizers, on their part, would foster any opposition to the Apostle of the Gentiles, from whatever quarter it might arise.

But now the time was come when the peace and purity of the Corinthian Church was to be no longer destroyed (at least openly) by either of these parties. St. Paul's first duty was to silence and shame his leading opponents, by proving the reality of his Apostleship, which they denied. This he could only do by exhibiting 'the signs of an Apostle,' which consisted, as he himself informs us, mainly in the display of miraculous powers (2 Cor. 12:12). The present was a crisis which required such an appeal to the direct judgment of God, who could alone decide between conflicting claimants to a Divine commission.

It was a contest like that between Elijah and the prophets of Baal. St. Paul had already in his absence professed his readiness to stake the truth of his claims on this issue (2 Cor. 10:8, and

---

<sup>603</sup> In applying this term Antinomian to the 'all things lawful' party at Corinth, we do not of course mean that all their opinions were the same with those which have been held by modern (so-called) Antinomians. But their characteristic (which was a belief that the restraints of outward law were abolished for Christians) seems more accurately expressed by the term Antinomian, than by any other.

13:3 6) ; and we may be sure that now, when he was present, he did not shrink from the trial. And, doubtless, God, who had sent him forth, wrought such miracles by his agency as sufficed to convince or to silence the gainsayers. Perhaps the Judaizing emissaries from Palestine had already left Corinth after fulfilling their mission by founding an anti Pauline party there~ If they had remained, they must now have been driven to retreat in shame and confusion. All other opposition was quelled likewise, and the whole Church of Corinth were constrained to confess that God was on the side of Paul. Now, therefore, that 'their obedience was complete,' the painful task remained of 'punishing all the disobedient' (2 Cor. 10:6). It was not enough that those who had so often offended and so often been pardoned before, should now merely profess once more a repentance which was only the offspring of fear or of hypocrisy; unless they were willing to give proof of their sincerity by renouncing their guilty indulgences. They had long infected the Church by their immorality; they were not merely evil themselves, but they were doing harm to others, and causing the name of Christ to be blasphemed among the heathen. It was necessary that the salt which had lost its savor should be cast out, lest its putrescence should spread to that which still retained its purity (2 Cor. 12:21).

St. Paul no longer hesitated to stand between the living and the dead, that the plague might be stayed.' We know, from his own description (1 Cor. 5:3 5), the very form and manner of the punishment inflicted. A solemn assembly of the Church was convened; the presence and power of the Lord Jesus Christ was especially invoked; the cases of the worst offenders were separately considered, and those whose sins required so heavy a punishment were publicly cast out of the Church, and (in the awful phraseology of Scripture) delivered over to Satan. Yet we must not suppose that even in such extreme cases the object of the sentence was to consign the criminal to final reprobation. On the contrary, the purpose of this

excommunication was so to work on the offender's mind as to bring him to sincere repentance, 'that his spirit might be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.' (1 Cor. 5:5) If it had this happy effect, and if he manifested true contrition, he was restored (as we have already seen in the case of the incestuous person <sup>604</sup>) to the love of the brethren and the communion of the Church.

### Purification of the Corinthian Church

We should naturally be glad to know whether the pacification and purification of the Corinthian Church thus effected was permanent; or whether the evils which were so deeply rooted, sprang up again after St. Paul's departure. On this point Scripture gives us no further information, nor can we find any mention of this Church (which has hitherto occupied so large a space in our narrative) after the date of the present chapter, either in the Acts or the Epistles.

Such silence seems, so far as it goes, of favorable augury. And the subsequent testimony of Clement (the 'fellow laborer' of Paul, mentioned Phil. 4:3) confirms this interpretation of it. He speaks (evidently from his own personal experience) of the impression produced upon every stranger who visited the Church of Corinth, by their exemplary conduct; and specifies particularly their possession of the virtues most opposite to their former faults. Thus, he says that they were distinguished for the ripeness and soundness of their knowledge in contrast to the unsound and false pretence of knowledge for which they were rebuked by St. Paul.

Again, he praises the pure and blameless lives of their 'women; which must therefore have been greatly changed since the time when fornication, wantonness, and impurity (2 Cor. xii. 21) were the characteristics of their society. But especially he commends them for their entire freedom from faction and party spirit, which had formerly been so conspicuous

<sup>604</sup> 2 Cor. 2:6-8

among their faults. Perhaps the picture which he draws of this golden age of Corinth may be too favorably colored, as a contrast to the state of things which he deplored when he wrote. Yet we may believe it substantially true, and may therefore hope that some of the worst evils were permanently corrected; more particularly the impurity and licentiousness which had hitherto been the most flagrant of their vices.

Their tendency to party spirit, however (so characteristic of the Greek temper), was not cured; on the contrary, it blazed forth again with greater fury than ever, some years after the death of St. Paul. Their dissensions were the occasion of the letter of Clement already mentioned; he wrote in the hope of appeasing a violent and long continued schism which had arisen (like their earlier divisions) from their being 'puffed up in the cause of one against another.' (1 Cor. 4:6) He rebukes them for their envy, strife, and party spirit; accuses them of being devoted to the cause of their party leaders rather than to the cause of God; and declares that their divisions were rending asunder the body of Christ, and casting a stumbling block in the way of many. This is the last account which we have of the Corinthian Church in the Apostolic age; so that the curtain falls upon a scene of unchristian strife, too much like that upon which it rose. Yet, though this besetting sin was still unsubdued, the character of the Church, as a whole, was much improved since the days when some of them denied the resurrection, and others maintained their right to practice unchastity.

St. Paul continued three months (Acts 20:3) resident at Corinth; or, at least, he made that city his headquarters during this period. Probably he made excursions thence to Athens and other neighboring Churches, which (as we know) he had established at his first visit throughout all the region of Achaia, and which, perhaps, needed his presence, his exhortations, and his correction, no less than the metropolitan Church. Meanwhile, he was employed in completing that great collection for the Christians of Palestine, upon which we have

seen him so long engaged. The Christians of Achaia from whose comparative wealth much seems to have been expected, had already prepared their contributions, by laying aside something for the fund on the first day of every week; (1 Cor. 16:2) and, as this had been going on for more than a year, <sup>605</sup> the sum laid by must have been considerable. This was now collected from the individual contributors, and entrusted to certain treasurers elected by the whole Church, who were to carry it to Jerusalem in company with St. Paul.

### Phoebe's Journey to Rome

While the Apostle was preparing for this journey, destined to be so eventful, one of his converts was also departing from Corinth, in an opposite direction, charged with a commission which has immortalized her name. This was Phoebe, a Christian matron resident at Cenchrea, the eastern port of Corinth. She was a widow of consideration and wealth, who acted as one of the deaconesses of the Church, and was now about to sail to Rome, upon some private business, apparently connected with a lawsuit in which she was engaged. St. Paul availed himself of this opportunity to send a letter by her hands to the Roman Church. His reason for writing to them at this time was his intention of speedily visiting them, on his way from Jerusalem to Spain. He desired, before his personal intercourse with them should begin, to give them a proof of the affectionate interest which he felt for them, although they 'had not seen his face in the flesh.' We must not suppose, however, that they were hitherto altogether unknown to him; for we see, from the very numerous salutations at the close of the Epistle, that he was already well acquainted with many individual Christians at Rome. From the personal acquaintance he had thus formed, and the intelligence he had received, he had reason to entertain a very high opinion of the character of the Church; and accordingly he tells them (Rom. 15:14 16) that, in entering so fully in his

<sup>605</sup> 2 Cor. 8:10 and 2 Cor. 9:2

letter upon the doctrines and rules of Christianity, he had done it not so much to teach as to remind them; and that he was justified in assuming the authority so to exhort them, by the special commission which Christ had given him to the Gentiles.

The latter expression shows us that a considerable proportion, if not the majority, of the Roman Christians were of Gentile origin, which is also evident from several other passages in the Epistle. At the same time, we cannot doubt that the original nucleus of the Church there, as well as in all the other great cities of the Empire, was formed by converts (including more Gentile proselytes than Jews) who had separated themselves from the Jewish synagogue. The name of the original founder of the Roman Church has not been preserved to us by history, nor even celebrated by tradition. This is a remarkable fact, when we consider how soon the Church of Rome attained great eminence in the Christian world, both from its numbers, and from the influence of its metropolitan rank.

Had any of the Apostles laid its first foundation, the fact could scarcely fail to have been recorded. It is therefore probable that it was formed in the first instance, of private Christians converted in Palestine, who had come from the eastern <sup>606</sup> parts of the Empire to

---

<sup>606</sup> We cannot, perhaps, infer anything as to the composition of the Church at Rome, from the fact that St. Paul writes to them in Greek instead of Latin; because Hellenistic Greek was (as we have seen, p.32) his own native tongue, in which he seems always to have written; and if any of the Roman Christians did not understand that language, interpreters were not wanting in their own body who could explain it to them. Unquestionably, however, he assumes that his readers are familiar with the Septuagint (Rom. iv. 18). It is rather remarkable that Tertius, who acted as St. Paul's amanuensis, was apparently (to judge from his name) a Roman Christian of the Latin section of the Church. It cannot, of course, be supposed that all the Roman Christians were of Oriental origin and Grecian speech. Yet it is certain that Greek remained the

reside at Rome, or who had brought back Christianity with them, from some of their periodical visits to Jerusalem, as the 'Strangers of Rome,' from the great Pentecost. Indeed, among the immense multitudes whom political and commercial reasons constantly attracted to the metropolis of the world, there could not fail to be representatives of every religion which had established itself in any of the provinces.

On this hypothesis, the earliest of the Roman Christians were Jews by birth, who resided in Rome, from some of the causes above alluded to. By their efforts others of their friends and fellow countrymen (who were very numerous at Rome) would have been led to embrace the Gospel. But the Church so founded, though Jewish in its origin, was remarkably free from the predominance of Judaizing tendencies. This is evident from the fact that so large a proportion of it at this early period were already of Gentile blood; and it appears still more plainly from the tone assumed by St. Paul throughout the Epistle, so different from that in which he addresses the Galatians, although the subject matter is often nearly identical. Yet, at the same time, the Judaizing element, though not preponderating, was not entirely absent. We find that there were opponents of the Gospel at Rome, who argued against it on the ground of the immoral consequences which followed (as they thought) from the doctrine of Justification by Faith; and even charged St. Paul himself with maintaining that the greater man's sin, the greater was God's glory. (See Rom. 3:8.) Moreover, not all the Jewish members of the Church could bring themselves to acknowledge their uncircumcised Gentile brethren as their equals in the privileges of Christ's kingdom (Rom. 3:9 and 29; 15:7 11); and, on the other hand, the more enlightened Gentile converts were inclined to treat the lingering Jewish prejudices of weak consciences with scornful contempt (Rom. xiv. 3). It was the aim of St. Paul to win the former of these parties to

---

prevailing language in the Church of Rome for several centuries.

Christian truth, and the latter to Christian love; and to remove the stumbling blocks out of the way of both, by setting before them that grand summary of the doctrine and practice of Christianity which is contained in the following Epistle.

## Epistle to the Romans <sup>607</sup>

### Romans 1

**PAUL, a bondsman of Jesus Christ, a called Apostle, set apart to publish the Glad tidings of God, which He promised of old by His Prophets in the Holy Scriptures, concerning His Son (who was born of the seed of David according to the flesh, but was marked out as the Son of God with mighty power, according to the spirit of holiness, by resurrection from the dead), even Jesus Christ, our Lord and Master. By whom I received grace and apostleship, that I might declare His name among all the Gentiles, and bring them to the obedience of faith. Among whom ye also are numbered, being called by Jesus Christ – to ALL GOD'S BELOVED,**

<sup>607</sup> The date of this Epistle is very precisely fixed by the following statements contained in it :

- (1.) St. Paul had never yet been to Rome (1:11, 13, 15).
- (2.) He was intending to go to Rome, after first visiting Jerusalem (15:23-28). This was exactly his purpose during his three months' residence at Corinth. See Acts 19:21.
- (3.) He was going to bear a collection of alms from Macedonia and Achaia to Jerusalem (15:26 and 31). This he did carry from Corinth to Jerusalem at the close of this three months' visit. See Acts 24:17.
- (4.) When he wrote the Epistle, Timothy, Sosipater, Gaius, and Erastus were with him (xvi. 21, 23) ; of these, the first three are expressly mentioned in the Acts as having been with him at Corinth during the three months' visit (see Acts 20:4) ; and the last, Erastus, was himself a Corinthian, and had been sent shortly before from Ephesus (Acts 19:22) with Timothy on the way to Corinth. Compare 1 Cor. 16:10, 11.
- (5.) Phoebe, a deaconess of the Corinthian port of Cenchrea, was the bearer of the Epistle (16:1) to Rome.

### CALLED TO BE SAINTS, WHO DWELL IN ROME.

**Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**First I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all because the tidings of your faith are told throughout the whole world. For God is my witness (whom I serve with the worship of my spirit, in proclaiming the Glad tidings of His Son), how unceasingly I make mention of you at all times in my prayers, beseeching Him that, if it be possible, I might now at length have a way open to me according to the will of God, to come and visit you. For I long to see you, that I may impart to you some spiritual gift, for the establishment of your steadfastness; that I may share with you (I would say) in mutual encouragement, through the faith both of you and me together, one with another. But I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that I have often purposed to come to you (though hitherto I have been hindered), that I might have some fruit among you also, as I have among the other Gentiles. I am a debtor both to Greeks and Barbarians, both to wise and foolish; therefore, as far as in me lies, I am ready to declare the Glad tidings to you that are in Rome, as well as to others. For [even in the chief city of the world] I am not ashamed of the Glad tidings of Christ, seeing it is the mighty power whereby God brings salvation to every man that has faith therein, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile. <sup>608</sup> For therein God's righteousness <sup>609</sup> is**

<sup>608</sup> St. Paul uses the word for 'Greek' as the singular of the word for 'Gentiles' because the singular of the latter is not used in the sense of a *Gentile*. Also, the plural 'Greeks' is used when *individual Gentiles* are meant; 'Gentiles' when *Gentiles collectively* are spoken of.

<sup>609</sup> Not Righteousness, the attribute of God, but the righteousness which God considers such; and which must, therefore, be the perfection of man's moral nature. This righteousness may be looked on under two aspects; 1. *in itself*, as a moral condition of man; 2. *in its consequences*, as involving a freedom from guilt in the sight of God. Under the first aspect it is the possession of a certain disposition of mind called *faith*.

revealed, a righteousness which springs from Faith, and which faith receives, as it is written: "By faith shall the righteous live." (Hab. 2:4)

For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who keep down the truth [which they know] by the wickedness wherein they live. Because that which can be known of God is manifested in their hearts, God Himself having shown it to them; for His eternal power and Godhead, though they be invisible, yet are seen ever since the world was made, being understood by His works that they [who despised Him] might have no excuse; because although they knew God they glorified Him not as God nor gave Him thanks, but in their reasoning they went astray after vanity, and their senseless heart was darkened. Calling themselves wise, they were turned into fools, and forsook the glory of the imperishable God for idols graven in the likeness of perishable men, or of birds and beasts, and creeping things. Therefore God also gave them up to work uncleanness according to their hearts' lust, to dishonor their bodies one with another; seeing they had bartered the truth of God for lies, and revered and worshipped the things made instead of the Maker, who is blessed forever, Amen.

For this cause God gave them up to shameful passions; for on the one hand their women changed the natural use into that which is against nature; and on the other hand their men, in like manner, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men working abomination, and receiving in themselves the due recompense of their transgression. And as they thought fit to cast out the acknowledgment of God, God gave them over to an outcast mind, to do the things that are unseemly. They are filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, depravity, covetousness, maliciousness. They overflow with envy, murder, strife, deceit, malignity. They are whisperers, backbiters, God haters;

outrageous, overweening, false boasters; inventors of wickedness; undutiful to parents; bereft of wisdom; breakers of covenanted faith; devoid of natural affection; ruthless, merciless. Who knowing the decree of God whereby all that do such things are worthy of death, not only commit the sins, but delight in their fellowship with the sinners.

## Romans 2

Wherefore thou, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest others, art thyself without excuse; for in judging thy neighbor thou condemnest thyself, since thy deeds are the same which in him thou dost condemn. And we know that God judges them who do such wickedness, not by their words, but by their deeds. But reckonest thou, O thou that condemnest such evil doers, and doest the like thyself, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? or does the rich abundance of His kindness and forbearance and long suffering cause thee to despise Him? and art thou ignorant that God, by His kindness [in withholding punishment], strives to lead thee to repentance?

But thou in the hardness and impenitence of thy heart, art treasuring up against thyself a store of wrath, which will be manifested in the day of wrath, even the day when God will reveal to the sight of men the righteousness of His judgment. For He will pay to all their due, according to their deeds; to those who with steadfast endurance in well doing seek glory and honor incorruptible, He will give life eternal; but for men of guile, who are obedient to unrighteousness, and disobedient to the truth, indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish shall fall upon them; yea, upon every soul of man that does the work of evil, upon the Jew first, and also upon the Gentile.

But glory and honor and peace shall be given to every man who does the work of good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentiles; for there is no respect of persons with God.

For they who have sinned without [the knowledge of] the Law, shall perish without [the punishment of] the Law; and they who have sinned under the Law, shall be judged

---

Under the second aspect it is regarded as something reckoned by God to the account of man – *an acquittal of past offenses*.

by the Law. For not the hearers of the Law <sup>610</sup> are righteous in God's sight, but the doers of the Law shall be counted righteous. For when the Gentiles, having not the Law, do by nature the works of the Law, they, though they have not the Law, are a Law to themselves; since they manifest the work of the Law written in their hearts; while their conscience also bears its witness, and their inward thoughts answering one to the other, accuse, or else defend them; [as will be seen] in that day when God shall judge the secret counsels of men by Jesus Christ, according to the glad tidings which I preach.

Behold thou callest thyself a Jew and restest in the Law, and boastest of God's favor, and knowest the will of God and givest judgment upon good or evil, being instructed by the teaching of the Law. Thou deemest thyself a guide of the blind, a light to those who are in darkness, an instructor of the simple, a teacher of babes, possessing in the Law the perfect pattern of knowledge and of truth. Thou therefore that teachest thy neighbor, dost thou not teach thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal? thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou rob temples? thou that makest thy boast in the Law, by breaking the Law dost thou dishonor God? Yea, as it is written, "Through you is the name of God blasphemed among the Gentiles." (Isa. 52:5)

For circumcision avails if thou keep the Law; but if thou be a breaker of the Law, thy circumcision is turned into uncircumcision. If then the uncircumcised Gentile keep the decrees of the Law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? And shall not he, though naturally uncircumcised, by fulfilling the Law, condemn thee, who with Scripture and circumcision dost break the Law? For he is not a Jew, who is one outwardly; nor is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh; but he is a Jew who is one inwardly, and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit,

<sup>610</sup> The Jews were "hearers of the Law" in their synagogues, every Sabbath.

not in the letter; whose praise comes not from man but from God.

### Romans 3

But if this be so, what advantage has the Jew, and what has been the profit of circumcision? Much every way. First, because to their keeping were entrusted the oracles of God. For what, though some of them were faithless to the trust? shall we say that their faithlessness destroys the faithfulness of God? That be far from us. Yea, be sure that God is true, though all mankind be liars, as it is written: "That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged." (Psa. 51:4) But if the righteousness of God is established by our unrighteousness [His faithfulness being more clearly seen by our faithlessness], must we not say that God is unjust," (I speak as men do), "in sending the punishment?" That be far from us, for [if this punishment be unjust], how shall God judge the world? since <sup>611</sup> [of that judgment also it might be said]: 'If God's truth has by the occasion of my falsehood more fully shown itself, to the greater manifestation of His glory, why am I still condemned as a sinner? and why should we not say' (as I myself am slanderously charged with saying) 'Let us do evil that good may come?' Of such men the doom is just.

What shall we say then? [having gifts above the Gentiles] have we the pre eminence over them? No, in no wise; for we have already charged all, both Jews and Gentiles, with the guilt of sin. And so it is written, "There is none righteous, no not one; there is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God, they are all gone out of the way, they are altogether become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one. Their throat is an open

<sup>611</sup> In this most difficult passage we must bear in mind that tit. Paul is constantly referring to the arguments of his opponents, which were familiar to his readers at Rome, but are not so to ourselves. Hence the apparently abrupt and elliptical character of the argument, and the necessity of supplying something to make the connection intelligible.

sepulcher, with their tongue they have used deceit, the poison of asps is under their lips. Their mouth is full of cursing and bitterness. Their feet are swift to shed blood. Destruction and misery are in their paths, and the way of peace have they not known. There is no fear of God before their eyes." (Psalm 14:1-3)

Now we know that all the sayings of the Law are spoken to those under the Law; [these things therefore are spoken to the Jews] that every mouth might be stopped, and the whole world might be subjected to the judgment of God. For through the works of the Law, "shall no flesh be justified in His sight," (Psalm 143:2) because by the Law is wrought [not the doing of righteousness, but] the acknowledgment of sin.

But now, not by the Law, but by another way, God's righteousness is brought to light, whereto the Law and the prophets bear witness; God's righteous (I say) which comes by faith in Jesus Christ, for all and upon all, who have faith; for there is no difference [between Jew and Gentile], since all have sinned, and none have attained the glorious likeness of God. But they are justified freely by His grace through the ransom which is paid in Christ Jesus. For Him hath God set forth, in His blood to be a propitiatory sacrifice by means of Faith, thereby to manifest the righteousness of God; because in His forbearance God had passed over the former sins of men in the times that are gone by. [Him (I say) hath God set forth in this present time to manifest His righteousness, that He might be just and [yet] might justify the children of Faith. Where then is the boasting [of the Jew]? It has been shut out. By what law? by the law of works? no, but by the law of Faith. For we reckon that by Faith a man is justified, and not by the works of the Law; else God must be the God of the Jews alone; but is He not likewise the God of the Gentiles? Yea, He is the God of the Gentiles also. For God is one [for all men], and He will justify through Faith the circumcision of the Jews, and by their Faith will He justify also the un-circumcision of the Gentiles.

Do we then by faith bring to nought the Law? Yea, we establish the Law.

#### Romans 4

What then can we say that our father Abraham gained by the fleshly ordinance? For, if Abraham was justified by works he has a ground of boasting. But he has no ground of boasting with God; for what says the Scripture: "Abraham had faith in God, and it was reckoned unto him for righteousness." (Gen. 15:6) Now if a man earn his pay by his work, it is not reckoned to him as a favor, but it is paid to him as a debt; but if he earns nothing by his work, but puts faith in Him who justifies the ungodly, then his faith is "reckoned to him for righteousness."

In like manner David also tells the blessedness of the man, to whom God reckoneth righteousness, not by works but by another way, saying, "Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man against whom the Lord shall not reckon sin." (Psalm 32:1,2) Is this blessing then for the circumcised alone? or does it not belong also to the uncircumcised? for we say, "his faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness."

How then was it reckoned to him? when he was circumcised, or uncircumcised? Not in circumcision but in uncircumcision, And he received circumcision as an outward sign of inward things, a seal to attest the righteousness which belonged to his faith while he was yet uncircumcised. That so he might be father of all the faithful who are uncircumcised, that the righteousness [of Faith] might be reckoned to them also; and father of circumcision to those who are not circumcised only in the flesh, but who also tread in the steps of that Faith which our father Abraham had while yet uncircumcised.

For the promise <sup>612</sup> to Abraham and his seed that he should inherit the world came not by the

<sup>612</sup> The land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever; Gen. 13:15. St. Paul (according to his frequent practice in dealing with the

Law, but by the righteousness of Faith. For, if this inheritance belong to the children of the Law, Faith is made of no account, and the promise is brought to nought; because the Law brings [not blessings but] punishment,<sup>613</sup> (for where there is no law, there can be no law-breaking). Therefore the inheritance belongs to Faith, that it might be a free gift; that so the promise [not being capable of forfeiture] might stand firm to all the seed of .Abraham, not to his children of the Law alone, but to the children of his Faith; for he is the Father of us all [both Jews and Gentiles], (as it is written, "I have made thee the father of many nations," (Gen. 17:5) in the sight of God, who saw his faith, even God who makes the dead to live, and calls the things that are not as though they were. For .Abraham had faith in hope beyond hope, that he might become "The father of many nations;" as it was said unto him, "Look toward heaven and tell the stars if thou be able to number them; even so shall thy seed by."<sup>614</sup> And having no feebleness in his faith, he regarded not his own body which was already dead (being about a hundred years old), nor the deadness of Sarah's womb; at the promise of God (I say) he doubted not faithlessly, but was filled with the strength of Faith, and gave glory to God; being fully persuaded that what He has promised He is

---

Old Testament) allegorizes this promise. So that, as Abraham is (allegorically viewed) the type of Christian faith, he is also the heir of the world, whereof the sovereignty belongs to his spiritual children, by virtue of their union with their Divine Head.

<sup>613</sup> Literally, "wrath"; i.e. the wrath of God punishing the transgressions of the Law.

<sup>614</sup> Gen. xvii. 5. In such quotations, a few words were sufficient to recall the whole passage to Jewish readers; therefore, to make them intelligible to modern readers, it is sometimes necessary to give the context. It should be observed that this quotation alone is sufficient to prove that the majority of those to whom St. Paul was writing were familiar with the Septuagint version; for to none others could such a curtailed citation be intelligible. The hypothesis that the Homan Christians had originally been Jewish proselytes, of Gentile birth, satisfies this condition. See the introductory remarks to this Epistle.

able also to perform. Therefore "his faith was reckoned to him for righteousness."

But these words were not written for his sake only, but for our sakes likewise; for it will be "reckoned unto righteousness" to us also, who have faith in Him that raised from the dead our Lord Jesus; who was given up to death for our transgressions, and raised again to life for our justification.

## Romans 5

Therefore, being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom also we have received entrance into this grace wherein we stand; and we exult in hope of the glory of God. And not only so, but we exult also in our sufferings; for we know that by suffering is wrought steadfastness, and steadfastness is the proof of soundness, and proof gives rise to hope; and out hope cannot shame us in the day of trial; because the love of God is shed forth in our hearts by the Holy Spirit, who has been given to unto us. For while we were yet helpless [in our sins], Christ at the appointed time died for sinners. Now hardly for a righteous man will any be found to die (although some perchance would even endure death for the good), but God gives proof of His own love to us, because while we were yet sinners Christ died for us.

Much more, now that we have been justified in His blood, shall we be saved through Him from the wrath to come. For if, when we were His enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of His Son, much more, being already reconciled, shall we be saved, by sharing in G His life. Nor is this our hope only for the time to come; but also [in our present sufferings] we exult in God, through Jesus Christ our Lord, by whom we have now received reconciliation with God.

This therefore is like the case when through one man [Adam], sin entered into the world and by sin death and so death spread to all mankind because all committed sin. For before the Law was given [by Moses] there was sin in the world; but sin is not the reckoned against the sinner, when there is no law [forbidding] it; nevertheless death reigned from Adam till Moses even over

those whose sin [not being the breach of law] did not resemble the sin of Adam. Now Adam is an image of Him that was to come. But far greater is the gift than was the transgression; for if by the sin of the one man [Adam], death came upon the many, much more in the grace of the one man Jesus Christ has the freeness of God's bounty overflowed unto the many. Moreover the boon [of God] exceeds the fruit of Adam's sin; for the doom came, out of one offence, a sentence of condemnation; but the gift comes, out of many offences, a sentence of acquittal. For if the reign of death was established by the one man [Adam], through the sin of him alone; far more shall the reign of life be established in those who receive the overflowing fullness of the free gift of righteousness, by the one man Jesus Christ. Therefore, as the fruit of one offence reached to all men, and brought upon them condemnation [the source of death]; so likewise the fruit of one acquittal shall reach to all, and shall bring justification, the source of life. For as, by the disobedience of the one, the many were made sinners; so by the obedience of the one, the many shall be made righteous. And the Law was added, that sin might abound; I but where sin abounded, the gift of grace has overflowed beyond [the outbreak of sin]; that as sin has reigned in death, so grace might reign through righteousness unto life eternal, by the work of Jesus Christ our Lord.

## Romans 6

What shall we say then? shall we persist in sin that the gift of grace may be more abundant? God forbid. We who have died to sin, how can we any longer live in sin? or have you forgotten that all of us, when we were baptized into fellowship with Christ Jesus, were baptized into fellowship with His death? With Him therefore we were buried by the baptism wherein we shared His death [when we sank beneath the waters]; that even as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, so we likewise might walk in newness of life. For if we have

been grafted <sup>615</sup> into the likeness of His death, so shall we also share His resurrection. For we know that our old man was crucified with Christ, that the sinful body [of the old man] might be destroyed, that we might no longer be the slaves of sin; (for he that is dead is justified from sin). Now if we have shared the death of Christ, we believe that we shall also share His life; knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, can die no more; death has no more dominion over Him. For He died once, and once only, unto sin; but He lives [for ever] unto God. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but living unto God in Christ Jesus. Let not sin therefore reign in your dying body, causing you to obey its lusts; nor give up your members to sin, as instruments of unrighteousness; but give yourselves to God, as being restored to life from the dead, and your members to His service as instruments of righteousness; for sin shall not have the mastery over you, since you are not under the Law, but under grace.

What then? shall we sin because we are not under the Law, but under grace? God forbid. Know ye not that He to whose service you give yourselves, is your real master, whether sin, whose end is death, or obedience, whose end is righteousness. But God be thanked that you, who were once the slaves of sin, obeyed from your hearts the teaching whereby you were molded anew; and when you were freed from the slavery of sin, you became the bondsmen of righteousness. (I speak the language of common life, to show the weakness of your fleshly nature [which must be in bondage either to the one, or to the other]). For as once you gave up the members of your body for slaves of uncleanness and licentiousness, to work the deeds of license; so now must you give them up for slaves of righteousness to work the deeds of holiness. For when you were the slaves of sin, you were free from the service

<sup>615</sup> Literally, *have become partakers of a vital union* [as that of a graft with the tree into which it is grafted] *of the representation of his death* [in baptism]. The meaning appears to be, *if we have shared the reality of his death, whereof we have undergone the likeness.*

of righteousness. What fruit had you then in those things, from the deeds whereof you are now ashamed? yea, the end of them is death. But now, being freed from the bondage of sin, and enslaved to the service of God, your fruit is growth in holiness, and its end is life eternal. For the wage of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord and master.

### Romans 7

[I say that you are not under the Law ]; or are you ignorant, brethren (for I speak to those who know the Law), that the dominion of the Law over man lasts only during their life? thus the married woman is bound by the Law to her husband while he lives, but if her husband be dead, the Law which bound her to him has lost its hold upon her; so that while her husband is living if she be joined to another man, she will be counted an adulteress; but if her husband be dead, she is free from the Law, so as to be no adulteress although joined to another man.

Where you also, my brethren, were made dead to the Law, by [union with] the body of Christ; that you might be married to another, even to Him who was raised from the dead; that we might bring forth fruit unto God. For when we were in the flesh, the sinful passions occasioned by the Law wrought in our members, leading us to bring forth fruit unto death. But now that we have died [with Christ] the Law wherein we were formerly held fast, has lost its hold upon us: so that we are no longer in the old bondage of the letter, but in the new service of the spirit.

What shall we say then? that the Law is Sin? That be far from US! But then I should not have known what sin was, except through the Law; thus I should not have known the sin of coveting, unless the Law had said "Thou shalt not covet." (Exodus 20:17) But when sin had gained by the commandment a vantage ground against me, it wrought in me all manner of covetousness (for where these is no law, sin is dead). And I felt that I was alive before, when I knew no law; but when the commandment came, sin rose to life, and I died; and the very commandment whose end is life, was found to be the cause of death; for sin, when it had gained a

vantage ground by the commandment, deceived me to my fall, and slew me by the sentence of the Law.

Wherefore the Law indeed is holy, and its commandments are holy, and just, and good. Do I say then that Good became to me Death? Far be that from me. But I say that win wrought this; that so it might be made manifest as sin, in working Death to me through [the knowledge of] Good; that sin might become beyond measure sinful, by the commandment.

For we know that the Law is spiritual; but for me, I am carnal, a slave sold into the captivity of sin. What I do, I acknowledge not; for I so not what I would, but what I hate. But if my will is against my deeds, I thereby acknowledge the goodness of the Law. And now it is no more I myself who do the evil, but it is the sin which dwells in me.

For I know that in me, that is, in my flesh, good abides not; for to will is present with me, but to do the right is absent; the good that I would, I do not; but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if my own will is against my deeds, it is no more I myself who do them, but the sin which dwells in me. I find then this law, that though my will is to do good, yet evil is present with me; for I consent gladly to the law of God in my inner man; but I behold another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and making me captive to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from this body of death?

I thank God [that He has now delivered me] through Jesus Christ our Lord.

So then in myself, though I am subject in my mind to the law of God, yet in my flesh I am subject to the law of sin.

### Romans 8

Now, therefore, there is no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus; for the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has freed me from the law of sin and death. For God (which was impossible to the Law, because by the flesh it had no power), by sending His

own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and on behalf of sin, overcame<sup>616</sup> sin in the flesh; to the end, that the decrees of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the Flesh, but after the Spirit.<sup>617</sup> For they who live after the flesh, mind fleshly things; but they who live after the Spirit mind spiritual things, and the fleshly mind is death; but the spiritual mind is life and peace. Because the fleshly mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor can be; and they whose life is in the Flesh cannot please God. But your life is not in the Flesh, but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God be dwelling in you; and if any man has not the Spirit of Christ, he is not Christ's. But if Christ be in you, though your body be dead, because of sin [to which its nature tends], yet your spirit is life, because of righteousness [which dwells within it]; yea, if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead be dwelling in you, He who raised Christ from the dead shall endow with life also your dying bodies, by His Spirit which dwells within you. Therefore, brethren, we are debtors bound not to the Flesh, that we should live after the Flesh [but to the Spirit]; for if you live after the Flesh, you are doomed to die; but if by the Spirit you destroy the deeds of the body, in their death you will attain to life.

For all who are led by God's Spirit, and they alone, are the sons of God. For you have not received a Spirit of bondage, that you should go back again to the state of slavish fear, but you have received a Spirit of adoption wherein we cry [unto God] saying "Father." The Spirit itself bears witness with our own spirit, that we are the children of God, And if children, then heirs: heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ; that if now we share His sufferings, we should hereafter share His

<sup>616</sup> Literally, *condemned*, i.e. *put it to rebuke, worsted it*. Compare Heb. 11:7

<sup>617</sup> The contrast between the victory thus obtained by the spirit, with the previous subjection of the soul to the flesh, is thus beautifully described by Tertullian: "When the Soul is wedded to the Spirit, the Flesh follows-like the handmaid who follows her wedded mistress to the husband's home-being thenceforward no longer the servant of the Soul, but of the Spirit."

glory. For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are nothing worth, when set against the glory which shall soon be revealed unto us. For the longing of the creation looks eagerly for the time when [the glory of] the sons of God shall be revealed. For the creation was made subject to decay, not by its own will, but because of Him who subjected it thereto, in hope: for the creation itself also shall be delivered from its by slavery to death, and shall gain the freedom of the sons of God when they are glorified. For we know that the whole creation is groaning together, and suffering the pangs of labor, which have not yet brought forth the birth. And not only they, but ourselves also, who have received the Spirit for the first fruits [of our inheritance], even we ourselves are groaning inwardly, longing for the adoption<sup>618</sup> which shall ransom our body from its bondage. For our salvation lies in hope; but hope possessed is not hope, since a man cannot hope for what he sees in his possession; but if we hope for things not seen, we steadfastly endure the present, and long earnestly for the future. And, even as we long for our redemption, so the Spirit gives help to our weakness; for we know not what we should pray for as we ought; but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us, with groans [for deliverance] which words cannot utter. But He who searches our hearts knows [though it be unspoken] what is the desire of the Spirit, because He intercedes for the saints according to the will of God.

Moreover, we know that all things work together for good to those who love God,

<sup>618</sup> Adoption to sonship; by which a slave was emancipated and made 'no longer a slave but a son.' (Gal. 4:7.) In one sense St. Paul taught that Christians had already received this adoption (compare Rom. 8:15, Gal. 4:5, Eph. 1:1); they were already made the sons of God in Christ. (Rom. 8:16, Gal. 3:26.) So, in a yet lower sense, the Jews under the old dispensation had the adoption to sonship; see 9:4. But in this passage he teaches us that this adoption is not perfect during the present life; there is still a higher sense, in which it is future, and the object of earnest longing to those who are already in the lower sense the sons of God.

who have been called according to His purpose. For those whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be made like to the pattern of His Son, that many brethren might be joined to Him, the firstborn. And those whom He predestined, them He also called; and whom He called, them He also justified; and whom He justified, them He also glorified. What shall we say then to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us? He that spared not His own Son, but gave Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things? What accuser can harm God's chosen? it is God who justifies them. What judge can doom us? It is Christ who died, nay, rather, who is risen from the dead; yea, who is at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us. Who can separate us from the love of Christ? Can suffering, or straitness of distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or the peril of our lives, or the swords of our enemies? [though we may say,] as it is written, "For Thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter." (Psalm 44:22)

Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us. For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, all the Principalities and Powers of Angels, nor things present, nor things to come, nor things above, nor things below, nor any power in the whole creation, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

### Romans 9

I speak the truth in Christ (and my conscience bears me witness, with the Holy Spirit's testimony, that I lie not), I have great heaviness, and unceasing sorrow in my heart; yea, I could wish that I myself were cast out from Christ as an accursed thing, for the sake of my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh; who are the seed of Israel, whom God adopted for His children, whose were the glory of the Shekinah, and the Covenants, and the Lawgiving, and the service of the temple, and the promises of blessing. Whose fathers were the patriarchs, and of whom (as to His flesh) was born the

Christ who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen.

Yet I speak not as if the promise of God had fallen to the ground; for not all are Israel who are of Israel, nor because all are the seed of Abraham, are they all the children of Abraham; but "In Isaac shall thy seed be called." (Gen. 21:12) That is, not the children of the flesh of Abraham are the sons of God, but his children of the promise are counted for his seed. For thus spoke the word of promise, saying, "At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son." (Gen. 18:10) [so that Ishmael, although the son of Abraham, had no part in the promise]. And not only so, but [Esau likewise was shut out; for when Rebekah had conceived two sons by the same husband, our forefather Isaac, yea, while they were not yet born, and had done nothing either good or bad (that God's purpose according to election might abide, coming not from the works of the called, but from the will of The Caller,) it was declared unto her "The elder shall serve the younger." (Gen. 25:23) according to that which is written, "Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated." (Mal. 1:2,3)

What shall we say, then? Shall we call God unjust [because He has cast off the seed of Abraham]? That be far from us. For to Moses He saith, "I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion." (Exodus 33:19) So then, the choice comes not from man's will, nor from man's speed, but from God's mercy. And thus the Scripture says to Pharaoh, "Even for this end did I raise thee up, that I might show my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth." (Exodus 9:16)

According to his will, therefore, He has mercy on one, and hardens another. Thou wilt say to me, then, "Why does God still blame us? for who can resist His will?" Nay, rather, oh man, who art thou that disputes against God? "Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?" (Isa. 14:9) "Hath not the potter power

over the clay?" <sup>619</sup> to make out of the same lump one vessel for honor and one for dishonor? But what if God (though willing to show forth His wrath, and to make known His power) endured with much long suffering vessels of wrath, fitted for destruction, [and cast them not at once away]? And what if thus He purposed to make known the riches of His glory bestowed upon vessels of mercy, which He had before prepared for glory?

And such are we, whom He has called not only from among the Jews, but from among the Gentiles, as He saith also in Hosea, "I will call them my people which were not my people, and her beloved which was not beloved; (Hos. 2:23) and it shall come to pass that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, there shall they be called the sons of the living God." (Hos. 1:10) But Isaiah cries concerning Israel,

---

<sup>619</sup> Jeremiah 18:6, not quoted literally, but according to the sense. In this and in other similar references to the Old Testament, a few words were sufficient to recall the whole passage to St. Paul's Jewish readers (compare Rom. 4:18); therefore, to comprehend his argument, it is often necessary to refer to the context of the passage from which he quotes. The passage in Jeremiah referred to is as follows: *-Then I went down to the potter's house, and behold he wrought a work on the wheels. And the vessel that he made of clay was marred in the hands of the potter; so he made it again another vessel, as seemed good to the potter to make it. O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter, saith the Lord. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in my hand, O house of Israel. At what instant I shall speak concerning a nation and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up and to pull down and to destroy it; if that nation against whom I have pronounced turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them. And at what instant I shall speak concerning a nation and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it; if it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good wherewith I said I would benefit them.* Similar passages might be quoted from the Apocryphal books; and it might be said that the above cited passage of Isaiah was referred to here. Yet this from Jeremiah is so apposite to St. Paul's argument, that he probably refers especially to it.

saying, "Though the number of the sons of Israel be as the sand of the sea, [only] the remnant shall be saved; for He doth complete His reckoning, and cuts it short in righteousness; yea, a short reckoning will the Lord make upon the earth." (Isa. 10:22,23)

And as Isaiah said before, "Except the Lord Sabaoth had left us a seed remaining, we had been as Sodom, and had been made like unto Gomorrah." (Isa. 1:9)

What shall we say, then? We say that the Gentiles though they sought not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness of faith; but that the house of Israel, though they sought a law of righteousness, have not attained thereto. And why/ Because they sought it not by faith, but thought to gain it by the works of the Law; for they stumbled against the stone of stumbling, as it is written, "Behold I lay in Zion a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence; and no man that hath faith in Him shall be confounded." <sup>620</sup>

## Romans 10

Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they may be saved; for I bear them witness that they have a zeal for God, yet not guided by knowledge of God; <sup>621</sup> for because they knew not the righteousness of God, and sought to establish their own righteousness, therefore they submitted not to the righteousness of God.

For the end of the Law is Christ, that all may attain righteousness who have faith in Him. For Moses writes concerning the righteousness of the Law, saying, "The man that hath done these things shall live

---

<sup>620</sup> Isaiah 28:16, apparently from LXX, but not verbatim, "stone of stumbling and rock of offence" being interpolated and not found exactly anywhere in Isaiah. In Isa. 8:14 there are words that are nearly similar.

<sup>621</sup> The word for knowledge here is very forcible; and is the same which is used in 1 Cor 13:12 and Col. 1:10.

therein;"<sup>622</sup> but the righteousness of faith speaks in this wise. Say not in thine heart, "Who shall ascend into heaven?"<sup>623</sup> that is, "Who can bring down Christ from heaven?" nor say, "Who shall descend into the abyss?" that is, "Who can raise up Christ from the dead?" But how speaks it? "The Word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth and in thy heart;" that is, that is, the Word Faith which we proclaim, saying, 'If with thy mouth thou shalt confess Jesus for thy Lord, and shalt have faith in thy heart that God raised Him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.' For faith unto righteousness is in the heart, and confession unto salvation is from the mouth. And so says the Scripture, "No man that hath faith in Him shall be confounded;"<sup>624</sup> for there is no distinction between Jew and Gentile, because the same [Jesus] is Lord over all, and He gives richly to all who call upon Him; for "Every man who shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved."<sup>625</sup>

How then shall they call on Him in whom they have put no faith? And how shall they put faith in Him whom they never heard? And how

<sup>622</sup> Levit. 18:5 (LXX) ; quoted also Gal. 3:12.

<sup>623</sup> Deut. 30:12. St. Paul here, though he quotes from the LXX. (verse 8 is verbatim), yet slightly alters it, so as to adapt it better to illustrate his meaning. His main statement is, , the Glad-tidings of salvation is offered, and needs only to be accepted; to this he transfers the description which Moses has given of the Law, viz. 'the Lord is nigh thee; and the rest of the passage of Deuteronomy he applies in a higher sense than that in which Moses had written it (according to the true Christian mode of using the Old Testament), not to the Mosaic Law, but to the Gospel of Christ. The passage in Deuteronomy is as follows; "This commandment which I command thee this day is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off, It is not in heaven that thou shouldst say, Who shall go up for us to heaven and bring it unto us, that we may hear it and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea that thou shouldst say, who shall go over the sea for us and bring it unto us, that we may hear it and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it."

<sup>624</sup> Isa. 28:16. See 9:33.

<sup>625</sup> Joel 2:32, LXX.

shall they hear of Him if no man bear the tidings? And who shall bear the tidings if no messengers be sent forth?"<sup>626</sup>

As it is written, "How beautiful are the feet of them that bear glad tidings of peace, that bear glad tidings of good things."<sup>627</sup> Yet some have not hearkened to the glad tidings, as saith Esaias, "Lord, who hath given faith to our teaching?"<sup>628</sup>

So then, faith comes by teaching;<sup>629</sup> and our teaching comes by the Word of God. But I say, have they not heard [the voices of the teachers]? Yea, "Their sound has gone forth into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the earth."<sup>630</sup>

Again I say, did not Israel know [the purpose of God]? yea, it is said first my Moses, "I will make you jealous against them which are no people, against a Gentile nation without understanding will I make you wrath."<sup>631</sup>

But Esaias speaks boldly, saying, "I was found of them that asked not after me."<sup>632</sup> But unto Israel he says, "All day long have I spread forth

<sup>626</sup> This is a justification of the mission of the Apostles to the Gentiles, which was an offence to the Jews. See Acts 22:22.

<sup>627</sup> Isa. 52:7, LXX

<sup>628</sup> Isa. 53:7, apparently from the Hebrew and not from LXX.

<sup>629</sup> There is no English word which precisely represents **ajkoh** in its subjective as well as objective meaning. See note on 1 Thess. 2:13.

<sup>630</sup> Psalm 19:4 (LXX). In the psalm this is said of 'the heavens' which by their wonderful phenomena declare the glory of their Creator. There seems to be no comparison in the psalm between *the heavens* and *the word of God*. Paul here quotes the Old Testament, not in its primary meaning, but applying it in a higher sense, or perhaps only as a poetical illustration. As to the assertion of the universal preaching of the Gospel, Dean Alford well observes that it is not made in a *geographical* but in a *religious* sense. The Gospel was now preached to all nations, and not to the Jews along.

<sup>631</sup> Deut 32:21, LXX

<sup>632</sup> Isa. 65:1 (LXX with transposition)

my arms unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.”<sup>633</sup>

### Romans 11

I say, then, must we think that God has cast off His people?<sup>634</sup> That be far from us; for I am myself an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God has not cast off His people whom He foreknew. Yea, know ye not what is said in the scriptures of Elias, how he intercedes with God against Israel, saying, “Lord, they have killed thy prophets and digged down thine altars, and I only have been left, and they seek my life also.”<sup>635</sup> But what says the answer of God to him? “I have yet left to myself a remnant, even seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to Baal.”

So likewise at this present time there is a remnant [of the house of Israel] chosen by gift of grace. But if their choice be the gift of grace, it can no more be deemed the wage of works; for the gift that is earned is no gift: or if it be gained by works, it is no longer the gift of grace; for work claims wages and not gifts. 'What follows then? That which Israel seeks, Israel has not won; but the chosen have won it, and the rest were blinded, as it is written, “God hath given them a spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, unto this way.”<sup>636</sup> And David says, “Let their table be made a snare and a trap, and a stumbling block and a recompense unto them. Let their eyes be darkened that they may not see, and bow down their back always.”<sup>637</sup>

<sup>633</sup> Isa. 65:2 (LXX)

<sup>634</sup> Alluding to Psalm 94:14, *Jehovah shall not utterly cast out His people*. Perhaps Paul's antagonists accused him of contradicting this prophecy.

<sup>635</sup> 1 Kings 19:10.

<sup>636</sup> This quotation seems to be compounded of Deut 29:4 and Isaiah 29:10.

<sup>637</sup> Psalm 69:23, 24, almost verbatim.

Shall we say, then,<sup>638</sup> “they have stumbled to the end that they might fall?” That be far from us; but rather their stumbling has brought salvation to the Gentiles, “to provoke Israel in jealousy.” Now if their stumbling enriches the world, and if the lessening of their gain gives wealth to the Gentiles, how much more must their fullness do!

For to you who are Gentiles I say that, as Apostle of the Gentiles, I glorify my ministration for this end if perchance I might provide to jealousy my kinsmen, and save some among them. For if the casting of them out is the reconciliation of the world [to God], what must the gathering in of them be, but life from the dead?

Now, if the first of the dough be hallowed, the whole mass is thereby hallowed; and if the root be hallowed, so are also the branches. But if some of the branches were broken off, and thou being of the wild olive stock wast grafted in amongst them, and made to share the root and richness of the olive, yet boast not over the branches: but if thou art boastful thou bearest not the root, but the root thee. Thou wilt say then, “the branches were broken off that I might be grafted in.’

It is true, for lack of faith they were broken off, and by faith thou standest in their place: be not high minded, but fear; for if God spared not, the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not thee. Behold, therefore, the goodness and the severity of God; towards them who fell, severity, but towards thee, goodness, if thou continue steadfast to His goodness; for otherwise thou too shalt be cut off. And they also, if they persist not in their faithlessness, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in where they were before. For if thou wast cut out from that which by nature was the wild olive, and wast grafted against nature into the fruitful olive, how much more shall these, the natural branches, be grafted into the fruitful stock from whence they sprang? For I would not have you ignorant, brethren, of this mystery, lest you should be wise in

<sup>638</sup> Literally, *I say then, shall we conclude that ...*

your own conceits; that blindness upon a part of Israel until the full body of the Gentiles shall have come in. And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written, "Out of Zion shall come the deliverer, and He shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob. And this is my covenant with them."<sup>639</sup> "When I shall take away their sins."<sup>640</sup>

In respect of the Glad tidings [that it might be borne to the Gentiles], they are God's enemies for your sakes; but in respect of God's choice, they are His beloved for their fathers' sakes: for no change of purpose can annul God's gifts and call. And as in times past you were yourselves disobedient to God, but have now received mercy upon their disobedience; so in this present time they have been disobedient, that upon your obtaining mercy they likewise might obtain mercy. For God has shut up all together under disobedience, that He might have mercy upon all. O depth of the bounty, and the wisdom and the knowledge of God; how unfathomable are His judgments, and how unsearchable His paths! Yea, "Who hath known the mind of the Lord, or who hath been His counselor?"<sup>641</sup>

Or, "Who hath first given unto God, that he should deserve a recompense?"<sup>642</sup>

For from Him is the beginning, and by Him the life, and in Him the end of all things.

Unto Him be glory forever. Amen.

## Romans 12

I EXHORT you, therefore, brethren, as you would acknowledge the mercies of God, to offer your bodies a living sacrifice, holy and well pleasing unto God, which is your reasonable worship. And be not conformed to the fashion of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that by an unerring test you may discern the will of God, even that which is good, and acceptable, and perfect.

<sup>639</sup> Isaiah 59:20.

<sup>640</sup> Isaiah 27:9

<sup>641</sup> Isaiah 40:13 (LXX, nearly verbatim)

<sup>642</sup> Job 41:11 (according to the sense of the Hebrew, but not the LXX)

For through the grace bestowed upon me [as Christ's Apostle], I warn every man among you not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think, but to seek a sober mind, according to the measure of faith which God has given him.

For as we have many limbs, which are all members of the same body, though they have not all the same office; so we ourselves are all one body in Christ, and fellow members one of another; but we have gifts according to the grace which God has given us. He that has the gift of prophecy, let him exercise it according to the proportion of his faith.

He that has the gift of ministration, let him minister; let the teacher labor in teaching; the exhorter, in exhortation. He who gives, let him give in singleness of mind. He who rules, let him rule diligently. He who shows pity, let him show it gladly. Let your love be without feigning. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. Be kindly affectioned one to another in brotherly love; in honor let each set his neighbor above himself. Let your diligence be free from sloth, let your spirit grow with zeal; be true bondsmen of your Lord.

In your hope be joyful; in your sufferings be steadfast; in your prayers be unwearied. Be liberal to the needs of the saints. And show hospitality to the stranger. Bless your persecutors; yea, bless, and curse not. Rejoice with them that rejoice, and weep with them that weep. Be of one mind amongst yourselves. Set not your heart on high things, but suffer yourselves to be borne along with the lowly. Be not wise in your own conceits. Repay no man evil for evil. "Be provident of good report in the sight of all men."<sup>643</sup> If it be possible, as far as lies in yourselves, keep peace with all men.

Revenge not yourselves, beloved, but give place to the wrath [of God]; for it is written, "Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord."<sup>644</sup> Therefore, "If thine enemy hunger,

<sup>643</sup> This is a quotation nearly verbatim from Prov. 3:4 (LXX).

<sup>644</sup> Deut. 30:35 (LXX)

feed him; if he thirst, give him drink; for in so doing, thou shalt heap coals of fire upon his head." Be not overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good.

### Romans 13

Let every man submit himself to the authorities of government; for all authority comes from God, and the authorities which now are, have been set in their place by God: therefore, he who sets himself against the authority, resists the ordinance of God; and they who resist will bring judgment upon themselves. For the magistrate is not terrible to good works, but to evil. Wilt thou be fearless of his authority? do what is good, and thou shalt have its praise. For the magistrate is God's minister to thee for good. But if thou art an evil doer, be afraid; for not by chance does he bear the sword [of justice], being a minister of God, appointed to do vengeance upon the guilty. Wherefore you must needs submit, not only for fear, but also for conscience sake; for this also is the cause why you pay tribute, because the authorities of government are officers of God's will, and this is the very end of their daily work.

Pay, therefore, to all their dues; tribute to whom tribute is due; customs to whom customs; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor. Owe no debt to any man, save the debt of love alone; for he who loves his neighbor has fulfilled the law. For the law which says, "Thou shalt not commit adultery; thou shalt do no murder; thou shalt not steal; thou shalt not bear false witness; thou shalt not covet."<sup>645</sup> Love works no ill to his neighbor; therefore Love is the fulfillment of the Law.

This do, knowing the season wherein we stand, and that for us it is high time to awake out of sleep, for our salvation is already nearer than when we first believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand; let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light. Let us walk (as in the light of day) in seemly guise; not in rioting

<sup>645</sup> Lev. 19:18

and drunkenness, not in dalliance and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But clothe yourselves with the Lord Jesus Christ, and take no thought to please your fleshly lusts.

### Romans 14

Him who is weak in his faith receive into your fellowship, imposing no determinations of doubtful questions.<sup>646</sup>

Some have faith that they may eat all things; others, who are weak, eat herbs alone.<sup>647</sup> Let not him who eats despise him who abstains, nor let him who abstains judge him who eats, for God has received him among His people.

Who art thou that judges another's servants? To his own master he must stand or fall; but he shall be made to stand, for God is able to set him up.

There are some who esteem one day above another; and again there are some who esteem all days alike; let each be fully persuaded in his own mind. He who regards the day, regards it unto the Lord. He who eats, eats unto the Lord, for he gives God thanks; and he who abstains, abstains unto the Lord, and gives thanks to God likewise.

For not unto himself does anyone of us either live or die; but whether we live, we live unto the Lord, or whether we die, we die unto the Lord; therefore, living or dying, we are the Lord's. For to this end Christ died,

<sup>646</sup> Literally, *not acting so as to make distinctions* [or *determinations*] *which belong to disputatious reasoning.*

<sup>647</sup> These were probably Christians of Jewish birth, who so feared lest they should (without knowing it) eat meat which had been offered to idols or was otherwise ceremonially unclean (which might easily happen in such a place as Rome), that they abstained from meat altogether. Thus Josephus mentions some Jewish priests who, from such conscientious scruples, abstained while prisoners in Rome from all animal food. So Daniel and his fellow-captives in Babylon refused the king's meat and wine, and ate pulse alone, that they might not defile themselves (Dan. 1:8-12). The tone and precepts of this chapter of Romans correspond with 1 Cor. 8.

and lived again, that He might be Lord both of the dead and of the living.

But thou, why judgest thou thy brother? Or thou, why despisest thou thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. And so it is written, "As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall acknowledge God."<sup>648</sup>

So, then, everyone of us shall give account to God [not of his brethren, but] of himself. Let us then judge each other no more, but let this rather be your judgment, to put no stumbling block or cause of falling in your brother's way. I know and am persuaded in the Lord Jesus, that nothing is in itself unclean; but whatever a man thinks unclean, is unclean to him. And if for meat thou grieve thy brother, thou hast ceased to walk by the rule of love. Destroy not him with thy meat for whom Christ died.

I say then, let not your good be evil spoken of. For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit; and he who lives in these things as Christ's bondsman is well pleasing to God, and cannot be condemned by men. Let us therefore follow the things which make for peace, such as may build us up together into one. Destroy not thou the work of God for a meal of meat. All things indeed [in themselves] are pure; but to him that eats with stumbling all is evil. It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor to do any other thing, whereby thy brother is made to stumble. Hast thou faith [that nothing is unclean]? keep it for thine own comfort before God. Happy is he who condemns not himself by his own judgment.

But he who doubts, is thereby condemned if he eats, because he has not faith that he may eat; and every faithless deed is sin.

## Romans 15

And we, who are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves. Let each of us please his neighbor for good ends, to build him up. For so Christ pleased not Himself, but in Him was fulfilled

<sup>648</sup> Isaiah 45:23 (LXX)

that which is written, "The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell upon me."<sup>649</sup>

For our instruction is the end of all which was written of old; that by steadfast endurance, and by the counsel of the Scriptures, we may hold fast our hope. Now may God, from whom both counsel and endurance come, grant you to be of one mind together, according to the will of Christ, that you may all [both strong and weak], with one heart and voice, glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Wherefore, receive one another into fellowship, to the glory of God, even as Christ also received you.

For I say that Jesus Christ came to be a minister of the circumcision, to maintain the truthfulness of God, and confirm the promises made to our fathers; and that the Gentiles should praise God for His mercy, as it is written, "For this cause I will acknowledge thee among the Gentiles, and will sing unto thy name."<sup>650</sup> And again it is said, "Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with His people;"<sup>651</sup> and again, "Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laud Him, all ye peoples."<sup>652</sup> and again Esaias says, "There shall come the root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles hope."<sup>653</sup>

Now may the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that you may abound in hope, through the mighty working of the Holy Spirit.

But I am persuaded, my brethren, not only by the reports of others, but by my own judgment, that you are already full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, and able, of yourselves to admonish one another. Yet I have written to you somewhat boldly in parts [of this letter], to remind you [rather than to teach you], because of that gift of grace which God bestowed upon me that I should be a minister of Jesus Christ to the

<sup>649</sup> Psalm 69:9

<sup>650</sup> Psalm 18:49

<sup>651</sup> Deut. 32:43

<sup>652</sup> Psalm 117:1

<sup>653</sup> Isaiah 11:10

Gentiles, serving in the Glad tidings of God, that I might present the Gentiles to God, as a priest presents the offering,<sup>654</sup> a sacrifice well pleasing to Him, hallowed by the working of the Holy Spirit. I have therefore the power of boasting in Christ Jesus, concerning the things of God; for I will not date [as some do] to glorify myself for the labors of others, but I will speak only of the works which Christ has wrought by me, to bring the Gentiles to obedience, by word and deed, with the might of signs and wonders, the might of the Spirit of God; so that going forth from Jerusalem, and round about as far as Illyricum, I have fulfilled my task in bearing the Glad tidings of Christ. And my ambition was to bear it according to this rule, [that I should go] not where the name of Christ was known (lest I should be building on another man's foundation), but [where it was unheard]; as it is written, "To whom He was not spoken of, they shall see; and the people who have not heard shall understand."<sup>655</sup>

This is the cause why I have often been hindered from coming to you. But now that I have no longer room enough [for my labors] in these regions, and have had a great desire to visit you these many years, so soon as I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you; for I hope to see you on my way, and to be set forward on my journey thither by you, after I have in some measure satisfied my desire of your company.

But now I am going to Jerusalem, being employed in a ministration to the saints. For the provinces of Macedonia and Achaia have willingly undertaken to make a certain contribution for the poor among the saints in Jerusalem. Willingly, I say, they have done this; and indeed they are their debtors; for since the Gentiles have shared in the spiritual goods of the brethren in Jerusalem,

<sup>654</sup> Literally, *a minister of Jesus Christ unto the Gentiles, a priest presenting an offering in respect of the Glad-tidings of God, that the Gentiles might be offered up as an offering well-pleasing unto Him*. The same thing is said under a somewhat difference metaphor in 2 Cor. 11:2.

<sup>655</sup> Isaiah 52:15.

they owe it in return to minister to them in their earthly goods. When, therefore, I have finished this task, and have given to them in safety the fruit of this collection, I will come from thence, by you, into Spain. And I am sure that when I come to you, my coming will receive the fullness of Christ's blessing. But I beseech you, brethren, by our Lord Jesus Christ, and by the love which the Spirit gives, to help me in my conflict with your prayers to God on my behalf, that I may be delivered from the disobedient in Judea, and that the service which I have undertaken for Jerusalem may be favorably received by the Saints; that so I may come to you in joy, by God's will, and may be refreshed in your companionship. The God of peace be with you all. Amen.

#### Romans 16

I commend to you Phoebe our sister, who is a ministering servant of the Church at Cenchrea; that you may receive here in the Lord, as the saints should receive one another, and aid her in any business wherein she needs your help; for she has herself aided many, and me also among the rest.

Greet Priscilla and Aquila, my fellow laborers in the work of Christ Jesus, who, to save my life, laid down their own necks; who are thanked, not by me alone, but by all the Churches of the Gentiles. Greet likewise the Church which assembles at their house.

Salute Epaenetus my dearly beloved, who is the first fruits of Asia unto Christ.

Salute Mary, who labored much for me.

Salute Andronicus and Junias, my kinsmen and fellow prisoners, who are well known among the Apostles, and who were also in Christ before me.

Salute Amplias, my dearly beloved in the Lord.

Salute Urbanus, my fellow workman in Christ's service, and Stachys my dearly beloved.

Salute Apelles, who has been tried and found trustworthy in Christ's work.

Salute those who are of the household of Aristobulus.

Salute Herodion, my kinsman.

Salute those of the household of Narcissus who

are in the Lord's fellowship.

Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, the faithful laborers in the Lord's service.

Salute Persis the dearly beloved, who has labored much in the Lord.

Salute Rufus, the chosen in the Lord and his mother, who is also mine.

Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren who are with them.

Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints who are with them.

Salute one another with the kiss of holiness.

The Churches of Christ [in Achaia] salute you.

I exhort you, brethren, to keep your eyes upon those who cause divisions, and cast stumbling blocks in the way of others, contrary to the teaching which you have learned. Shun them that are such; for the master whom they serve is not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly: and by their fair speaking and flattery they deceive the hearts of the guileless. I say this, because the tidings of your obedience have been told throughout the world. On your own behalf, therefore, I rejoice: but I wish you not only to be simple in respect of evil, but to be wise for good. And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet speedily.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

Timotheus, my fellow laborer, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you. I, Tertius, who have written this letter, salute you in the Lord.

Gaius, who is the host, not of me alone, but also of the whole Church, salutes you.

Erastus, the treasurer of the city, and the brother Quartus, salute you.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Now I commend you unto Him who is able to keep you steadfast, according to my

**Glad tidings, and the preaching of Jesus Christ whereby is unveiled the mystery which was kept secret in eternal times of old, but has now been brought to light, and made known to all the Gentiles by the Scriptures of the Prophets, by command of the eternal God; that the Gentiles might be led to the obedience of faith unto Him, the only wise God, I commend you through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory forever. AMEN**

## Chapter 20

### Isthmian Games

In the epistles which have been already set before the reader in the course of this biography, and again in some of those which are to succeed, St. Paul makes frequent allusion to a topic which engrossed the interest, and called forth the utmost energies, of the Greeks.

The periodical games were to them rather a passion than an amusement: and the Apostle often uses language drawn from these celebrations, when he wishes to enforce the zeal and the patience with which a Christian ought to strain after his heavenly reward. The imagery he employs is sometimes varied. In one instance, when he describes the struggle of the spirit with the flesh, he seeks his illustration in the violent contest of the boxers (1 Cor. 9:26). In another, when he would give a strong representation of the perils he had encountered at Ephesus, he speaks as one who had contended in that ferocious sport which the Romans had introduced among the Greeks, the fighting of gladiators with wild beasts (1 Cor. 15:32). But, usually, his reference is to the foot race in the stadium, which, as it was the most ancient, continued to be the most esteemed, among the purely Greek athletic contests. If we compare the various passages where this language is used, we find the whole scene in the stadium brought vividly before us, the herald who summons the contending runners, the course, which rapidly diminishes in front of them, as their footsteps advance to the goal, the judge (2 Tim. 4:8) who holds out the prize at the end of the course, the prize itself, a chaplet of fading leaves, which is compared with the

strongest emphasis of contrast to the unfading glory with which the faithful Christian will be crowned <sup>656</sup> (1Cor. 9:24; Phil. 3:14), the joy and exultation of the victor, which the Apostle applies to his own case, when he speaks of his converts as his “joy and crown,” the token of his victory and the subject of his boasting.

And under the same image he sets forth the heavenly prize, after which his converts themselves should struggle with strenuous and unswerving zeal, with no hesitating step (1 Cor. 9:26), pressing forward and never looking back (Phil. 3:13,14), even to the disregard of life itself (Acts 20:24). And the metaphor extends itself beyond the mere struggle in the arena to the preparations which were necessary to success, to that severe and continued training, <sup>657</sup> which being so great for so small a reward, was a fit image of that “training unto godliness” which has the promise not only of this life, but of that which is to come – to the strict regulations <sup>658</sup> which presided over all the details,

<sup>656</sup> Βραβεῖον. 1 Cor. 9:24, Phil. 3:14. It was a chaplet of green leaves; φθαρτὸς στέφανος. 1 Cor. 9:25. (Cf. 2 Tim. 2:5, 4:8; also 1 Pet. 5:4) The leaves varied with the locality where the games were celebrated. At the Isthmus they were those of the indigenous pine. For a time parsley was substituted for them; but in the Apostle’s day the pine-leaves were used again.

<sup>657</sup> Γυμνάζω and γυμνασία. 1 Tim. 4:7, 8. The γυμνάσιον was an important feature of every Greek city. The word is not found in the New Testament, but we find it in 1 Mac. 1:14. and 2 Mac. 4:9, where allusion is made to places of Greek amusement built at Jerusalem.

<sup>658</sup> Ἐὰν μὴ νομίμως ἀθλήσῃ. 2 Tim. 2:5. As regards the more general νόμιμα of the athletic contests, the following may be enumerated from the Eliaca of Pausanias. Every candidate was required to be of pure Hellenic descent. He was disqualified by certain moral and political offences. He was obliged to take an oath that he had been ten months in training, and that he would violate none of the regulations. Bribery was punished by a fine. The candidate was obliged to practise again in the gymnasium immediately before the games, under the direction of judges or umpires, who

both of the contest and the preliminary discipline, and are used to warn the careless Christian of the peril of an undisciplined life, to the careful diet, which admonishes us that, if we would so run that we may obtain, we must be temperate in all things.”

This imagery would be naturally and familiarly suggested to Paul by the scenes which he witnessed in every part of his travels. At his own native place on the banks of the Cydnus, in every city throughout Asia Minor, and more especially at Ephesus, the stadium, and the training for the stadium were among the chief subjects of interest to the whole population. Even in Palestine, and at Jerusalem itself, these busy amusements were well known.

But Greece was the very home from which these institutions drew their origin; and the Isthmus of Corinth was one of four sanctuaries, where the most celebrated games were periodically held. Now that we have reached the point where St. Paul is about to leave this city for the last time, we are naturally led to make this allusion: and an interesting question suggests itself here, i.e., whether the Apostle was ever himself present during the Isthmian games. It might be argued a priori that this is highly probable; for great numbers came at these seasons from all parts of the Mediterranean to witness or take part in the contests; and the very fact that amusement and ambition brought some, makes it certain that the Apostle, just as he desired to be at Jerusalem during the Hebrew festivals, so would gladly preach the Gospel at a time when so vast a concourse met at the Isthmus, whence, as from a centre, it might be carried to every shore with the dispersion of the strangers.

But, further, it will be remembered, that on his first visit, St. Paul spent two years at Corinth; and though there is some difficulty in determining the times at which the games were celebrated, yet it seems almost certain that they

were themselves required to be instructed for ten months in the details of the games.

recurred every second year, at the end of spring, or the beginning of summer.<sup>659</sup> Thus it may be confidently concluded that he was there at one of the festivals. As regards the voyage undertaken from Ephesus, the time devoted to it was short, yet that time may have coincided with the festive season; and it is far from inconceivable that he may have sailed across the Aegean in the spring, with some company of Greeks who were proceeding to the Isthmian meeting. On the present occasion he spent only three of the winter months in Achaia, and it is hardly possible that he could have been present during the games. It is most likely that there were no crowds among the pine trees at the Isthmus, and that the stadium at the Sanctuary of Neptune was silent and unoccupied when St. Paul passed by it along the northern road, on his way to Macedonia.

### In Perils from the Jews

His intention had been to go by sea to Syria (Acts 20:3), as soon as the season of safe navigation should be come; and in that case he would have embarked at Cenchrea, whence he had sailed during his second missionary journey, and whence the Christian Phoebe had recently gone with the letter to the Romans. He himself had prepared his mind for a journey to Rome; but first he was purposed to visit Jerusalem, that he might convey the alms which had been collected for the poorer brethren, in Macedonia and Achaia. He looked forward to this expedition with some misgiving; for he knew what danger was to be apprehended from his Jewish and Judaizing enemies; and even in his letter to the Roman Christians, he requested their prayers for his safety. And he had good

<sup>659</sup> They were, in the Greek way of reckoning, a τριέτηρις. Of the four great national festivals, the Olympian and Pythian games took place every fourth year, the Nemean and Isthmian every second; the latter in the third and first year of each Olympiad. The festival was held in the year 53 a.d., which is the first of an Olympiad; and (as we have seen) there is good reason for believing that the Apostle came to Corinth in the autumn of 52, and left it in the spring of 54.

reason to fear the Jews; for ever since their discomfiture under Gallio they had been irritated by the progress of Christianity, and they organized a plot against the great preacher, when he was on the eve of departing for Syria. We are not informed of the exact nature of this plot;<sup>660</sup> but it was probably a conspiracy against his life, like that which was formed at Damascus soon after his conversion (Acts 9:23, 2 Cor. 9:32), and at Jerusalem, both before and after the time of which we write (Acts 9:29, 23:12), and it necessitated a change of route, such as that which had once saved him on his departure from Berea (Acts 17:14).

On that occasion his flight had been from Macedonia to Achaia; now it was from Achaia to Macedonia. Nor would he regret the occasion which brought him once more among some of his dearest converts. Again he saw the Churches on the north of the Aegean, and again he went through the towns along the line of the Via Egnatia. He reappeared in the scene of his persecution among the Jews of Thessalonica, and passed on by Apollonia and Amphipolis to the place where he had first landed on the European shore. The companions of his journey were Sopater the son of Pyrrhus, a native of Berea, Aristarchus and Secundus, both of Thessalonica, with Gaius of Derbe and Timotheus, and two Christians from the province of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus, whom we have mentioned before, as his probable associates, when he last departed from Ephesus.

From the order in which these disciples are mentioned, and the notice of the specific places to which they belonged, we should be inclined to conjecture that they had something to do with the collections which had been made at the

<sup>660</sup> The Jews generally settled in great numbers at seaports for the sake of commerce, and their occupation would give them peculiar influence over the captains and owners of merchant vessels, in which St. Paul must have sailed. They might, therefore, form the project of seizing him or murdering him at Cenchreae with great probability of success.

various towns on the route. As St. Luke does not mention the collection, we cannot expect to be able to ascertain all the facts. But since St. Paul left Corinth sooner than was intended, it seems likely that all the arrangements were not complete, and that Sopater was charged with the responsibility of gathering the funds from Berea, while Aristarchus and Secundus took charge of those from Thessalonica.

St. Luke himself was at Philippi: and the remaining four of the party were connected with the interior or the coast of Asia Minor. <sup>661</sup>

The whole of this company did not cross together from Europe, to Asia; but St. Paul and St. Luke lingered at Philippi, while the others preceded them to Troas. <sup>662</sup> The journey through Macedonia had been rapid, and the visits to the other Churches had been short. But the Church at Philippi had peculiar claims on St. Paul's attention: and the time of his arrival induced him to pause longer than in the earlier part of his journey. It was the time of the Jewish Passover. And here our thoughts turn to the Passover of the preceding year, when the Apostle was at Ephesus. We remember the higher and Christian meaning which he gave to the Jewish festival. It was no longer an Israelitish ceremony, but it was the Easter of the New Dispensation. He was not now occupied with

<sup>661</sup> Some would read Δερβαῖος δὲ Τιμόθεος, in order to identify Gaius with the disciple of the same name who is mentioned before along with Aristarchus (Γαῖον καὶ Ἀρίσταρχον Μακεδόνας 19:29). But it is almost certain that Timotheus was a native of Lystra, and not Derbe, and Gaius was so common a name, that this need cause us no difficulty.

<sup>662</sup> It is conceivable, but not at all probable, that these companions sailed direct from Corinth to Troas, while Paul went through Macedonia. Some would limit οὔτοι to Trophimus and Tycnicus; but this is quite unnatural. The expression ἄγρι τῆς Ἀσίας seems to imply that St. Paul's companions left him at Miletus, except St. Luke (who continues the narrative from this point in the first person) and Trophimus (who was with him at Jerusalem, 21:29.), and whoever might be the other deputies who accompanied him with the alms. (2 Cor. 8:19–21)

shadows; for the substance was already in possession. Christ the Passover had been sacrificed, and the feast was to be kept with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. Such was the higher standing point to which he sought to raise the Jews whom he met, in Asia or in Europe, at their annual celebrations.

Thus, while his other Christian companions had preceded him to Troas, he remained with Luke some time longer at Philippi, and did not leave Macedonia till the Passover moon was waning. Notwithstanding this delay, they were anxious, if possible, to reach Jerusalem before Pentecost (Acts 20:16). And we shall presently trace the successive days through which they were prosperously brought to the fulfillment of their wish. <sup>663</sup> Some doubt has been thrown on the

<sup>663</sup> It may be well to point out here the general distribution of the time spent on the voyage. Forty-nine days intervened between Passover and Pentecost. The days of unleavened bread [Mark 14:12. Luke 22:7, Acts 12:3, 1 Cor. 5:8.] succeeded the Passover. Thus, St. Paul stayed at least seven days at Philippi after the Passover (v. 6),—five days were spent on the passage to Troas (ib.),—six days (for so we may reckon them) were spent at Troas (ib.),—four were occupied on the voyage by Chios to Miletus (vv. 13–15, see below),—two were spent at Miletus,—in three days St. Paul went by Cos and Rhodes to Patara (21:1, see below),—two days would suffice for the voyage to Tyre (vv. 2, 3),—six days were spent at Tyre (v. 4),—two were taken up in proceeding by Ptolemais to Cæsarea (v. 7, 8). This calculation gives us thirty-seven days in all; thus leaving thirteen before the festival of Pentecost, after the arrival at Cæsarea, which is more than the conditions require. We may add, if necessary, two or three days more during the voyage in the cases where we have reckoned inclusively.

The mention of the Sunday spent at Troas fixes (though not quite absolutely) the day of the week on which the Apostle left Philippi. It was a Tuesday or a Wednesday. We might, with considerable probability, describe what was done each day of the week during the voyage; but we are not sure, in all cases, whether we are to reckon inclusively or exclusively, nor are we absolutely certain of the length of the stay at Miletus.

It will be observed, that all we have here said is independent of the particular year in which we suppose

possibility of this plan being accomplished in the interval; for they did not leave Philippi till the seventh day after the fourteenth of Nisan was past. It will be our business to show that the plan was perfectly practicable, and that it was actually accomplished, with some days to spare.

---

the voyage to have been made, and of the day of the week on which the 14th of Nisan occurred. Mr. Greswell (Dissertation 25. in vol. iv.) has made a careful calculation of the different parts of the voyage, on the hypothesis that the year was 56 a.d., when the Passover fell on March 19. and Pentecost on May 8.: and he has shown that the accomplishment of St. Paul's wish, under the circumstances described, was quite practicable. He has even allowed, as we shall see, more time than was necessary, by supposing that the time from Patara to Tyre lasted from Monday to Thursday (p. 523). The same may be said of Wieseler's estimate (pp. 99–115.), according to which the year was 58 a.d., when the 14th of Nisan fell on March 27. He allows five days (p. 101.) for the voyage between Patara and Tyre, adducing the opinion of Chrysostom as one well acquainted with those seas. Hug allows six days. (Introd. to New Testament, Eng. Transl., Vol. II. pp. 325–327.)

We may observe here, that many commentators write on the nautical passages of the Acts as if the weather were always the same and the rate of sailing uniform, or as if the Apostle travelled in steam-boats. His motions were dependent on the wind. He might be detained in harbour by contrary weather. Nothing is more natural than that he should be five days on one occasion, and two on another, in passing between Philippi and Troas; just as Cicero was once fifteen, and once thirteen, in passing between Athens and Ephesus. So St. Paul might sail in two days from Patara to Tyre, though, under less favourable circumstances, it might have required four or five, or even more. It is seldom that the same passage is twice made in exactly the same time by any vessel not a steamer.

Another remark may be added, that commentators often write as though St. Paul had chartered his own vessel, and had the full command of her movements. This would be highly unlikely for a person under the circumstances of St. Paul; and we shall see that it was not the case in the present voyage, during which, as at other times, he availed himself of the opportunities offered by merchant vessels or coasters.

### Time Occupied on the Route

The voyage seemed to begin unfavorably. The space between Neapolis and Troas could easily be sailed over in two days with a fair wind: and this was the time occupied when the Apostle made the passage on his first coming to Europe (Acts 16:11). On this occasion the same voyage occupied five days. We have no means of deciding whether the ship's progress was retarded by calms, or by contrary winds. Either of these causes of delay might equally be expected in the changeable weather of those seas. St. Luke seems to notice the time in both instances, in the manner of one who was familiar with the passages commonly made between Europe and Asia: and something like an expression of disappointment is implied in the mention of the 'five days' which elapsed before the arrival at Troas.

The history of Alexandria Troas, first as a city of the Macedonian princes, and then as a favorite colony of the Romans, has been given before; but little has been said as yet of its appearance. From the extent and magnitude of its present ruins (though for ages it has been a quarry both for Christian and Mahomedan edifices) we may infer what it was in its flourishing period. Among the oak trees, which fill the vast enclosure of its walls, are fragments of colossal masonry. Huge columns of granite are seen lying in the harbour, and in the quarries on the neighbouring hills.<sup>664</sup> A theatre, commanding a

---

<sup>664</sup> Alexandria Troas must have been like Aberdeen, a city of granite. The hills which supplied this material were to the N. E. and S. E. Dr. Clarke mentions a stupendous column, which is concealed among some trees in the neighbourhood, and which he compares to the famous column of the Egyptian Alexandria. Fellows speaks of hundreds of columns, and says that many are bristling among the waves to a considerable distance out at sea. He saw seven columns lying with their chips in a quarry, which is connected by a paved road with the city. Thus granite seems to have been to Alexandria Troas what marble was to Athens; and we are reminded of the quarries of Pentelicus. The granite columns of Troas have been used for making cannon-balls for the defence of the Dardanelles.

view of Tenedos and the sea, shows where the Greeks once assembled in crowds to witness their favourite spectacles. Open arches of immense size, towering from the midst of other great masses of ruin, betray the hand of Roman builders.

These last remains, once doubtless belonging to a gymnasium or to baths, and in more ignorant ages, when the poetry of Homer was better remembered than the facts of history, popularly called 'The Palace of Priam,' are conspicuous from the sea. We cannot assert that these buildings existed in the day of St. Paul, but we may be certain that the city, both on the approach from the water, and to those who wandered through its streets, must have presented an appearance of grandeur and prosperity. Like Corinth, Ephesus, or Thessalonica, it was a place where the Apostle must have wished to lay firmly and strongly the foundations of the Gospel.

On his first visit, as we have seen, he was withheld by a supernatural revelation from remaining; and on his second visit, though a door was opened to him, and he did gather together a community of Christian disciples, yet his impatience to see Titus compelled him to bid them a hasty farewell. Now, therefore, he would be the more anxious to add new converts to the Church, and to impress deeply on those who were converted, the truths and the duties of Christianity: and he had valuable aid both in Luke, who accompanied him, and the other disciples who had preceded him.

### Sunday at Troas

The labours of the early days of the week that was spent at Troas are not related to us; but concerning the last day we have a narrative which enters into details with all the minuteness of one of the Gospel histories. It was the evening which succeeded the Jewish Sabbath. On the Sunday morning the vessel was about to sail.

The Christians of Troas were gathered together at this solemn time to celebrate that feast of love which the last commandment of Christ has enjoined on all His followers. The place was an

upper room, with a recess or balcony projecting over the street or the court. The night was dark: three weeks had not elapsed since the Passover and the moon only appeared as a faint crescent in the early part of the night. Many lamps were burning in the room where the congregation was assembled. The place was hot and crowded. St. Paul, with the feeling strongly impressed on his mind that the next day was the day of his departure, and that souls might be lost by delay, was continuing in earnest discourse, and prolonging it even till midnight, when an occurrence suddenly took place, which filled the assembly with alarm, though it was afterwards converted into an occasion of joy and thanksgiving. A young listener, whose name was Eutychus, was overcome by exhaustion, heat, and weariness, and sank into a deep slumber. He was seated or leaning in the balcony; and, falling down in his sleep, was dashed upon the pavement below, and was taken up dead. Confusion and terror followed, with loud lamentation. But Paul was enabled to imitate the power of that Master whose doctrine he was proclaiming. As Jesus had once said of the young maiden (Mark 9:24; Mark 5:39), who was taken by death from the society of her friends, 'She is not dead, but sleepeth,' so the Apostle of Jesus received power to restore the dead to life. He went down and fell upon the body, like Elisha of old, and, embracing Eutychus, said to the bystanders, 'Do not lament; for his life is in him.'

With minds solemnised and filled with thankfulness by this wonderful token of God's power and love, they celebrated the Eucharistic feast. The act of Holy Communion was combined, as was usual in the Apostolic age, with a common meal: and St. Paul now took some refreshment after the protracted labour of the evening, and then continued his conversation till the dawning of the day.

It was now time for the congregation to separate. The ship was about to sail, and the companions of Paul's journey took their departure to go on board. It was arranged, however, that the Apostle himself should join

the vessel at Assos, which was only about twenty miles distant by the direct road, while the voyage round Cape Lectum was nearly twice as far. He thus secured a few more precious hours with his converts at Troas; and eagerly would they profit by his discourse, under the feeling that he was so soon to leave them: and we might suppose that the impression made under such circumstances, and with the recollection of what they had witnessed in the night, would never be effaced from the minds of any of them, did we not know, on the highest authority, that if men believe not the prophets of God, neither will they believe 'though one rose from the dead.'

### Assos

But the time came when St. Paul too must depart. The vessel might arrive at Assos before him; and, whatever influence he might have with the seamen, he could not count on any long delay. He hastened, therefore, through the southern gate, past the hot springs, and through the oak woods, then in full foliage, which cover all that shore with greenness and shade, and across the wild water courses on the western side of Ida. Such is the scenery which now surrounds the traveler on his way from Troas to Assos. The great difference then was, that there was a good Roman road, which made St. Paul's solitary journey both more safe and more rapid than it could have been now. We have seldom had occasion to think of the Apostle in the hours of his solitude. But such hours must have been sought and cherished by one whose whole strength was drawn from communion with God, and especially at a time when, as on this present journey, he was deeply conscious of his weakness, and filled with foreboding fears. There may have been other reasons why he lingered at Troas after his companions: but the desire for solitude was (we may well believe) one reason among others. The discomfort of a crowded ship is unfavourable for devotion: and prayer and meditation are necessary for maintaining the religious life even of an Apostle. That Saviour to whose service he was devoted had often prayed in solitude on the mountain,

and crossed the brook Kedron to kneel under the olives of Gethsemane. And strength and peace were surely sought and obtained by the Apostle from the Redeemer, as he pursued his lonely road that Sunday afternoon in spring, among the oak woods and the streams of Ida.

No delay seems to have occurred at Assos. He entered by the Sacred Way among the famous tombs,<sup>665</sup> and through the ancient gateway, and proceeded immediately to the shore. We may suppose that the vessel was already hove to and waiting when he arrived; or that he saw her approaching from the west, through the channel between Lesbos and the main. He went on board without delay, and the Greek sailors and the Apostolic missionaries continued their voyage. As to the city of Assos itself, we must conclude, if we compare the description of the ancients with present appearances, that its aspect as seen from the sea was sumptuous and grand. A terrace with a long portico was raised by a wall of rock above the water line. Above this was a magnificent gate, approached by a flight of steps. Higher still was the theatre, which commanded a glorious view of Lesbos and the sea, and those various buildings which are now a wilderness of broken columns, triglyphs, and friezes. The whole was crowned by a citadel of Greek masonry on a cliff of granite. Such was the view which gradually faded into indistinctness as the vessel retired from the shore, and the summits of Ida rose in the evening sky.

The course of the voyagers was southwards, along the eastern shore of Lesbos. When Assos

---

<sup>665</sup> This Street of Tombs (Via Sacra) is one of the most remarkable features of Assos. It is described by Fellows in his excellent account of Assos (Asia Minor, p. 52.). The Street of Tombs extends to a great distance across the level ground to N. W. of the city. Some of the tombs are of vast dimensions, and formed each of one block of granite. These remains are the more worthy of notice because the word sarcophagus was first applied in Roman times to this stone of Assos (lapis Assius), from the peculiar power it was supposed to possess of aiding the natural decay of corpses.

was lost, Mitylene, the chief city of Lesbos, came gradually into view. The beauty of the capital of Sappho's island was celebrated by the architects, poets, and philosophers of Rome. Like other Greek cities, which were ennobled by old recollections, it was honoured by the Romans with the privilege of freedom. Situated on the south eastern coast of the island, it would afford a good shelter from the north westerly winds, whether the vessel entered the harbour or lay at anchor in the open roadstead. It seems likely that the reason why they lay here for the night was, because it was the time of dark moon, and they would wish for daylight to accomplish safely the intricate navigation between the southern part of Lesbos and the mainland of Asia. Minor.

In the course of Monday they were abreast of Chios (ver. 15). The weather in these seas is very variable: and, from the mode of expression employed by St. Luke, it is probable that they were becalmed. An English traveller under similar circumstances has described himself as 'engrossed from daylight till noon' by the beauty of the prospects with which he was surrounded, as his vessel floated idly on this channel between Scio and the continent. On one side were the gigantic masses of the mainland: on the other were the richness and fertility of the island, with its gardens of oranges, citrons, almonds, and pomegranates, and its white scattered houses overshadowed by evergreens. Until the time of its recent disasters, Scio was the paradise of the modern Greek: and a familiar proverb censured the levity of its inhabitants, like that which in the Apostle's day described the coarser faults of the natives of Crete (Tit. 1:12).

### Mitylene, Chios, Samos

The same English traveller passed the island of Samos after leaving that of Chios. So likewise did St. Paul (ver. 15). But the former sailed along the western side of Samos, and he describes how its towering cloud capped heights are contrasted with the next low island to the west. The Apostle's course lay along the

eastern shore, where a much narrower marine pass intervenes between it and a long mountainous ridge of the mainland, from which it appears to have been separated by some violent convulsion of nature.

This high promontory is the ridge of Mycale, well known in the annals of Greek victory over the Persians. At its termination, not more than a mile from Samos, is the anchorage of Trogyllium. Here the night of Tuesday was spent; apparently for the same reason as that which caused the delay at Mitylene. The moon set early: and it was desirable to wait for the day before running into the harbour of Miletus.

The short voyage from Chios to Trogyllium had carried St. Paul through familiar scenery. The bay across which the vessel had been passing was that into which the Cayster flowed. The mountains on the mainland were the western branches of Messogis and Tmolus, the ranges that enclose the primeval plain of 'Asia.' The city, towards which it is likely that some of the vessels in sight were directing their course, was Ephesus, where the Apostolic labours of three years had gathered a company of Christians in the midst of unbelievers. One whose solicitude was so great for his recent converts could not willingly pass by and leave them unvisited: and had he had the command of the movements of the vessel, we can hardly believe that he would have done so. He would surely have landed at Ephesus, rather than at Miletus. The same wind which carried him to the latter harbour, would have been equally advantageous for a quick passage to the former. And, even had the weather been unfavourable at the time for landing at Ephesus, he might easily have detained the vessel at Trogyllium; and a short journey by land northward would have taken him to the scene of his former labours.

Yet every delay, whether voluntary or involuntary, might have been fatal to the plan he was desirous to accomplish. St. Luke informs us here (and the occurrence of the remark shows us how much regret was felt by the Apostle on passing by Ephesus) that his intention was, if possible, to be in Jerusalem at

Pentecost (ver. 16). Even with a ship at his command, he could not calculate on favourable weather, if he lost his present opportunity: nor could he safely leave the ship which had conveyed him hitherto; for he was well aware that he could not be certain of meeting with another that would forward his progress. He determined, therefore, to proceed in the same vessel, on her southward course from Trogyllium to Miletus.

Yet the same watchful zeal which had urged him to employ the last precious moments of the stay at Troas in his Master's cause, suggested to his prompt mind a method of reimpresing the lessons of eternal truth on the hearts of the Christians at Ephesus, though he was unable to revisit them in person. He found that the vessel would be detained at Miletus a sufficient time to enable him to send for the presbyters of the Ephesian Church, with the hope of their meeting him there. The distance between the two cities was hardly thirty miles, and a good road connected them together. Thus, though the stay at Miletus would be short, and it might be hazardous to attempt the journey himself, he could hope for one more interview, if not with the whole Ephesian Church, at least with those members of it whose responsibility was the greatest.

### Trogyllium, Miletus

The sail from Trogyllium, with a fair wind, would require but little time. if the vessel weighed anchor at daybreak on Wednesday, she would be in harbour long before noon.<sup>666</sup> The message was doubtless sent to Ephesus immediately on her arrival; and Paul remained at Miletus waiting for those whom the Holy Spirit, by his hands, had made overseers over the flock of Christ (ver. 28).

The city where we find the Christian Apostle now waiting, while those who had the care of

<sup>666</sup> The distance is about seventeen nautical miles and a half. If the vessel sailed at six in the morning from Trogyllium, she would easily be in harbour at nine.

the vessel were occupied with the business that detained them, has already been referred to as more ancient than Ephesus, though in the age of St. Paul inferior to it in political and mercantile eminence. Even in Homer, the 'Carian Miletus' appears as a place of renown. Eighty colonies went forth from the banks of the Meander, and some of them were spread even to the eastern shores of the Black Sea, and beyond the pillars of Hercules to the west. It received its first blow in the Persian war, when its inhabitants, like the Jews, had experience of a Babylonian captivity. It suffered once more in Alexander's great campaign ;<sup>6</sup> and after his time it gradually began to sink towards its present condition of ruin and decay, from the influence, as it would seem, of mere natural causes, the increase of alluvial soil in the delta having the effect of removing the city gradually further and further from the sea.

Even in the Apostle's time, there was between the city and the shore a considerable space of level ground, through which the ancient river meandered in new windings, like the Forth at Stirling. Few events connect the history of Miletus with the transactions of the Roman Empire. When St. Paul was there, it was simply one of the second rate sea ports on this populous coast, ranking, perhaps, with Adramyttium or Patara, but hardly with Ephesus or Smyrna.

### The Speech to the Ephesian Presbyters

The excitement and joy must have been great among the Christians of Ephesus, when they heard that their honoured friend and teacher, to whom they had listened so often in the school of Tyrannus, was in the harbour of Miletus, within the distance of a

few miles. The presbyters must have gathered together in all haste to obey the summons, and gone with eager steps out of the southern gate, which leads to Miletus. By those who travel on such an errand, a journey of twenty or thirty miles is not regarded long and tedious, nor is much regard paid to the difference between day and night. The presbyters of Ephesus might

easily reach Miletus on the day after that on which the summons was received. And though they might be weary when they arrived, their fatigue would soon be forgotten at the sight of their friend and instructor; and God also, 'who comforts them that are cast down (2 Cor. 7:6), comforted him by the sight of his disciples. They were gathered together probably in some solitary spot upon the shore to listen to his address. This little company formed a singular contrast with the crowds which used to assemble at the times of public amusement in the theatre of Miletus. But that vast theatre is now a silent ruin, while the words spoken by a careworn traveller to a few despised strangers are still living as they were that day, to teach lessons for all time, and to make known eternal truths to all who will hear them, while they reveal to us, as though they were merely human words, all the tenderness and the affection of Paul, the individual speaker.

#### ACTS 20:18 35

Brethren,<sup>667</sup> ye know yourselves, from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you throughout all the time; serving the Lord with all lowliness of mind, and with many tears and trials which befell me through the plotting of the Jews. And how I kept back none of those things which are profitable for you, but declared them to you, and taught you both publicly and from house to house; testifying both to Jews and Gentiles their need of repentance towards God, and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ.

And now as for me, behold I go to Jerusalem in spirit foredoomed to chains; yet I know not the things which shall befall me there, save that in every city the Holy Spirit gives

**the same testimony, that bonds and afflictions abide me.**

**But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry which I received from the Lord Jesus to testify the Glad tidings of the grace of God.**

**And now, behold I know that ye all, among whom I have gone from city to city, proclaiming the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more. Wherefore I take you to witness this day, that I am clear from the blood of all. For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God. Take heed, therefore, unto yourselves, and to all the flock in which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to feed the Church of God, which He purchased with His own blood. For this I know, that after my departure, grievous wolves shall enter in among you, who will not spare the flock. And from your own selves will men arise speaking perverted words, that they may draw away the disciples after themselves. Therefore, be watchful, and remember that for the space of three years I ceased not to warn everyone of you, night and day, with tears.**

And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of His grace; even to Him who is able to build you up and to give you an inheritance among all them that are sanctified. When I was with you, I coveted no man's silver or gold, or raiment. Yea, ye know yourselves, that these hands ministered to my necessities, and to those who were with me. And all this I did for your example; to teach you that so labouring ye ought to support the helpless, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, "It is more blessed to give than to receive."

#### Cos

The close of this speech was followed by a solemn act of united supplication (Acts 20:36). St. Paul knelt down on the shore with all those who had listened to him, and offered up a prayer to that God who was founding His Church in the midst of difficulties apparently insuperable; and then followed an outbreak of

<sup>667</sup> Ἀδελφοί is found here in the Uncial Manuscript d (Codex Bezae) and in some early versions; and we have adopted it, because it is nearly certain that St. Paul would not have begun his address abruptly without some such word. Compare all his other recorded speeches in the Acts.

natural grief, which even Christian faith and resignation were not able to restrain. They fell on the Apostle's neck and clung to him, and kissed him again and again, sorrowing most because of his own foreboding announcement, that they should never behold that countenance again, on which they had often gazed with reverence and love (20:37, 38). But no long time could be devoted to the grief of separation. The wind was fair, and the vessel must depart. They accompanied the Apostle to the edge of the water (20:38). The Christian brethren were torn away from the embrace of their friends; and the ship sailed out into the open sea, while the presbyters prepared for their weary and melancholy return to Ephesus.

The narrative of the voyage is now resumed in detail. It is quite clear, from St. Luke's mode of expression, that the vessel sailed from Miletus on the day of the interview. 'With a fair wind she would easily run down to Cos in the course of the same afternoon. The distance is about forty nautical miles; the direction is due south. The phrase used implies a straight course and a fair wind, and we conclude, from the well known phenomena of the Levant, that the wind was northwesterly, which is the prevalent direction in those seas. With this wind the vessel would make her passage Miletus to Cos in six hours, passing the shores of Caria, with the high summits of Mount Latmus on the left, and with groups of small islands (among which Patmos (Rev. 1:9) would be seen at times) studding the sea on the right. Cos is an island about twenty three miles in length, extending from south west to northeast, and separated by a narrow channel from the mainland.

But we should rather conceive the town to be referred to, which lay at the eastern extremity of the island. It is described by the ancients as a beautiful and well built city: and it was surrounded with fortifications erected by Alcibiades towards the close of the Peloponnesian war. Its symmetry had been injured by an earthquake, and the restoration had not yet been effected; but the productiveness of the island to which it

belonged, and its position in the Levant, made the city a place of no little consequence. The wine and the textile fabrics of Cos were well known among the imports of Italy. Even now no harbour is more frequented by the merchant vessels of the Levant.

The roadstead is sheltered by nature from all winds except the north east, and the inner harbour was not then, as it is now, an unhealthy lagoon. Moreover, Claudius had recently bestowed peculiar privileges on the city. Another circumstance made it the resort of many strangers, and gave it additional renown. It was the seat of the medical school traditionally connected with Aesculapius; and the temple of the god of healing was crowded with votive models, so as to become in effect a museum of anatomy and pathology. The Christian physician St. Luke, who knew these coasts so well, could hardly be ignorant of the scientific and religious celebrity of Cos. We can imagine the thankfulness with which he would reflect, as the vessel lay at anchor off the city of Hippocrates, that he had been emancipated from the bonds of superstition, without becoming a victim to that scepticism which often succeeds it, especially in minds familiar with the science of physical phenomena.

### Rhodes

On leaving the anchorage of Cos, the vessel would have to proceed through the channel which lies between the southern shore of the island and that tongue of the mainland which terminates in the Point of Cnidus. If the wind continued in the north west, the vessel would be able to hold a straight course from Cos to Cape Crio (for such is the modern name of the promontory of Triopium, on which Cnidus was built), and after rounding the point she would run clear before the wind all the way to Rhodes. Another of St. Paul's voyages will lead us to make mention of Cnidus. We shall, therefore, only say, that the extremity of the promontory descends with a perpendicular precipice to the sea, and that this high rock is separated by a level space from the main, so that, at a distance,

it appears like one of the numerous islands on the coast. Its history, as well as its appearance, was well impressed on the mind of the Greek navigator of old; for it was the scene of Conon's victory: and the memory of their great admiral made the south western corner of the Asiatic peninsula to the Athenians what the south western corner of Spain is to us, through the memories of St. Vincent and Trafalgar.

We have supposed St. Paul's vessel to have rounded Cape Crio, to have left the western shore of Asia Minor, and to be proceeding along the southern shore. The current between Rhodes and the main runs strongly to the westward: but the northwesterly wind would soon carry the vessel through the space of fifty miles to the northern extremity of the island, where its famous and beautiful city was built.

Until the building of its metropolis, the name of this island was comparatively unknown. But from the time when the inhabitants of the earlier towns were brought to one centre, and the new city, built by Hippodamus (the same architect who planned the streets of the Pirreus), rose in the midst of its perfumed gardens and its amphitheatre of hills, with unity so symmetrical that it appeared like one house, Rhodes has held an illustrious place among the islands of the Mediterranean.

From the very effect of its situation, lying as it did on the verge of two of the basins of that sea, it became the intermediate point of the eastern and western trade. Even now it is the harbour at which most vessels touch on their progress to and from the Archipelago. It was the point from which the Greek geographers reckoned their parallels of latitude and meridians of longitude. And we may assert that no place has been so long renowned for ship building, if we may refer to the 'benches, and masts, and ship boards' of Dodanim and Chittim; with the feeble constructions of the modern Turkish dockyard, as the earliest and latest efforts of that Rhodian skill, which was celebrated by Pliny in the time of St. Paul. To the copious supplies of ship timber were added many other physical advantages. It was a proverb that the sun shone

every day in Rhodes: and her inhabitants revelled in the luxuriance of the vegetation which surrounded them.

We find this beauty and this brilliant atmosphere typified in her coins, on one side of which is the head of Apollo radiated like the sun, while the other exhibits the rose flower, the conventional emblem which bore the name of the island. But the interest of what is merely outward fades before the moral interest associated with its history.

If we rapidly run over its annals, we find something in every period, with which elevated thoughts are connected. The Greek period is the first, famous not merely for the great Temple of the Sun, and the Colossus, which, like the statue of Borromeo at Arona, seemed to stand over the city to protect it,<sup>668</sup> but far more for the supremacy of the seas, which was employed to put down piracy, for the code of mercantile law, by which the commerce of later times was regulated, and for the legislative enactments, framed almost in the spirit of Christianity, for the protection of the poor.

This is followed by the Roman period; when the faithful ally, which had aided by her naval power in subduing the East, was honoured by the Senate and the Emperors with the name and privileges of freedom; and this by the Byzantine, during which Christianity was established in the Levant, and the city of the Rhodians, as the metropolis of a province of islands, if no longer holding the empire of the Mediterranean, was at least recognised as the Queen of the Aegean.

During the earlier portion of the middle ages, while mosques were gradually taking the place

---

<sup>668</sup> The Colossus was in ruins even in Strabo's time (xiv.). It had been overthrown by an earthquake according to Polybius (v. 88. 1.) It seems to be a popular mistake that this immense statue stood across the entrance of one of the harbours. The only parallel in modern times is the statue of San Carlo Borromeo and in height they were nearly identical, the latter being 106 feet, the former 105 (70 cubits).

of Byzantine churches, Rhodes was the last Christian city to make a stand against the advancing Saracens; and again during their later portion, she reappears as a city ennobled by the deeds of Christian chivalry; so that, ever since the successful siege of Sulieman the Magnificent, her fortifications and her stately harbour, and the houses in her streets, continue to be the memorials of the Knights of St. John. Yet no point of Rhodian history ought to move our spirits with so much exultation as that (by, when the vessel that conveyed St. Paul came round the low northern point of the island to her moorings before the city.

We do not know that he landed like other great conquerors who have visited Rhodes. It would not be necessary even to enter the harbour, for a safe anchorage would be found for the night in the open roadstead. The kingdom of God cometh not with observation, and the vessel which was seen by the people of the city to weigh anchor in the morning, was probably undistinguished from the other coasting craft with which they were daily familiar.

No view in the Levant is more celebrated than that from Rhodes towards the opposite shore of Asia Minor. The last ranges of Mount Taurus come down in magnificent forms to the sea; and a long line of snowy summits is soon along the Lycian coast, while the sea between is often an unruffled expanse of water under a blue and brilliant sky. Across this expanse, and towards a harbour near the further edge of these Lycian mountains, the Apostle's course was now directed (Acts 21:1). To the eastward of Mount Cragus, the steep sea front of which is known to the pilots of the Levant by the name of the Seven Capes, the river Xanthus winds through a rich and magnificent valley, and past the ruins of an ancient city, the monuments of which, after a long concealment, have lately been made familiar to the British public.

The harbour of the city of Xanthus was situated a short distance from the left bank of the river. Patara was to Xanthus what the Piræus was to Athens; and, though this comparison might seem to convey the idea of an importance which

never belonged to the Lycian seaport, yet ruins still remain to show that it was once a place of some magnitude and splendour. The bay, into which the river Xanthus flowed, is now a desert of moving sand, which is blown by the westerly wind into ridges along the shore, and is gradually hiding the remains of the ancient city; but a triple archway and a vast theatre have been described by travellers. Some have even thought that they have discovered the seat of the oracle of Apollo, who was worshipped here, as his sister Diana was worshipped at Ephesus or Perga: and the city walls can be traced among the sand hills with the castle that commanded the harbour. In the war against Antiochus, this harbour was protected by a sudden storm from the Roman fleet, when Livius sailed from Rhodes. Now we find the Apostle Paul entering it with a fair wind, after a short sail from the same island.

#### Patara

It seems that the vessel in which St. Paul had been hitherto sailing either finished its voyage at Patara, or was proceeding further eastward along the southern coast of Asia Minor, and not to the ports of Phoenicia. St. Paul could not know in advance whether it would be possible for him to arrive in Palestine in time for Pentecost (20:16); but an opportunity presented itself unexpectedly at Patara. Providential circumstances conspired with his own convictions to forward his journey, notwithstanding the discouragement which the fears of others had thrown across his path. In the harbour of Patara they found a vessel which was on the point of crossing the open sea to Phoenicia (21:2). They went on board without a moment's delay; and it seems evident, from the mode of expression, that they sailed the very day of their arrival. Since the voyage lay across the open sea, with no shoals or rocks to be dreaded, and since the north westerly winds often blow steadily for several days in the Levant during spring, there could be no reason why the vessel should not weigh anchor in the evening, and sail through the night.

We have now to think of St. Paul as no longer passing through narrow channels, or coasting along in the shadow of great mountains, but as sailing continuously through the midnight hours, with a prosperous breeze filling the canvas, and the waves curling and sounding round the bows of the vessel. There is a peculiar freshness and cheerfulness in the prosecution of a prosperous voyage with a fair wind by night. The sailors on the watch, and the passengers also, feel it, and the feeling is often expressed in songs or in long conversation. Such cheerfulness might be felt by the Apostle and his companions, not without thankfulness to that God who giveth songs in the night (Job 35:10), and who hearkens to those who fear Him, and speak often to one another, and think upon His name (Mal. 3:16). If we remember, too, that a month had now elapsed since the moon was shining on the snows of Haemus, and that the full moonlight would now be resting on the great sail of the ship, we are not without an expressive imagery, which we may allowably throw round the Apostle's progress over the waters between Patara and Tyre.

The distance between these two points is three hundred and forty geographical miles; and if we bear in mind (what has been mentioned more than once) that the north westerly winds in April often blow like monsoons in the Levant, and that the rig of ancient sailing vessels was peculiarly favourable to a quick run before the wind, we come at once to the conclusion that the voyage might easily be accomplished in forty eight hours. <sup>669</sup>

---

<sup>669</sup> the rate would be rather more than seven knots an hour. The writer once asked the captain of a vessel engaged in the Mediterranean trade, how long it would take to sail with a fair wind from the Seven Capes to Tyre; and the answer was, "About thirty hours, or perhaps it would be safer to say forty-eight." Now, vessels rigged like those of the ancients, with one large main-sail, would run before the wind more quickly than our own merchantmen. Those who have sailed before the monsoons in the China seas have seen junks (which are rigged in this respect like Greek and Roman

Everything in St. Luke's account gives a strong impression that the weather was in the highest degree favourable; and there is one picturesque phrase employed by the narrator, which sets vividly before us some of the phenomena of a rapid voyage. That which is said in the English version concerning the "discovering" of Cyprus, and "leaving it on the left hand," is, in the original, a nautical expression, implying that the land appeared to rise quickly, as they sailed past it to the southward. It would be in the course of the second day (probably in the evening) that "the high blue eastern land appeared." The highest mountain of Cyprus is a rounded summit, and there would be snow upon it at that season of the year. After the second night, the first land in sight would be the high range of Lebanon in Syria (21:3), and they would easily arrive at Tyre before the evening.

### Tyre

So much has been written concerning the past history and present condition of Tyre, that these subjects are familiar to every reader, and it is unnecessary to dwell upon them here. When St. Paul came to this city, it was neither in the glorious state described in the prophecies of Ezekiel and Isaiah, when "its merchants were princes, and its traffickers the honourable of the earth," nor in the abject desolation in which it now fulfils those prophecies, being, a place to spread nets upon, and showing only the traces of its maritime supremacy in its ruined mole, and a port hardly deep enough for boats. It was in the condition in which it had been left by the successors of Alexander, the island, which once held the city, being joined to the mainland by a causeway, with a harbour on the north, and another on the south. In honour of its ancient greatness, the Romans gave it the name of a free city; and it still commanded some commerce, for its manufactures of glass and purple were not yet decayed, and the narrow belt of the Phoenician coast between the mountains and

---

merchantmen) behind them in the horizon in the morning, and before them in the horizon in the evening.

the sea required that the food for its population should be partly brought from without.

It is allowable to conjecture that the ship, which we have just seen crossing from Patara, may have brought grain from the Black Sea, or wine from the Archipelago <sup>670</sup>, with the purpose of taking on from Tyre a cargo of Phoenician manufactures. We know that, whatever were the goods she brought, they were unladed at Tyre, and that the vessel was afterwards to proceed to Ptolemais. For this task of unlading some days would be required. She would be taken into the inner dock; and St. Paul had thus some time at his disposal, which he could spend in the active service of his Master. He and his companions lost no time in "seeking out the disciples." It is probable that the Christians at Tyre were not numerous; but a Church had existed there ever since the dispersion consequent upon the death of Stephen, and St. Paul had himself visited it, if not on his mission of charity from Antioch to Jerusalem, then doubtless on his way to the Council.

There were not only disciples at Tyre, but prophets. Some of those who had the prophetic power foresaw the danger which was hanging over St. Paul, and endeavoured to persuade him to desist from his purpose of going to Jerusalem. We see that different views of duty might be taken by those who had the same spiritual knowledge, though that knowledge were supernatural. St. Paul looked on the coming danger from a higher point. What to others was an overwhelming darkness, to him appeared only as a passing storm. And he resolved to face it, in the faith that He who had protected him hitherto, would still give him shelter and safety.

The time spent at Tyre in unlading the vessel, and probably taking in a new cargo, and

<sup>670</sup> For the wine trade of the Archipelago, see what has been said in reference to Rhodes. We need not suppose that the vessel bound for Phœnicia sailed in the first instance from Patara. St. Paul afterwards found a westward bound Alexandrian ship in one of the harbours of Lycia. Acts 27:5.

possibly, also, waiting for a fair wind, was seven days, including a Sunday. St. Paul 'broke bread' with the disciples, and discoursed as he had done at Troas; and the week days, too, would afford many precious opportunities for confirming those who were already Christians, and for making the Gospel known to others, both Jews and Gentiles.

When the time came for the ship to sail, a scene was witnessed on the Phoenician shore, like that which had made the Apostle's departure from Miletus so impressive and affecting. There attended him through the city gate, as he and his companions went out to join the vessel now ready to receive them, all the Christians of Tyre, and even their wives and children. And there they knelt down and prayed together on the level shore. We are not to imagine here any Jewish place of worship, like the proseucha at Philippi; but simply that they were on their way to the ship. The last few moments were precious, and could not be so well employed as in praying to Him who alone can give true comfort and protection. The time spent in this prayer was soon passed. And then they tore themselves from each other's embrace; the strangers went on board, and the Tyrian believers returned home sorrowful and anxious, while the ship sailed southwards on her way to Ptolemais.

#### **Ptolemais, Caesarea**

There is a singular contrast in the history of those three cities on the Phoenician shore, which are mentioned in close succession in the concluding part of the narrative of this Apostolic journey. Tyre, the city from which St. Paul had just sailed, had been the seaport whose destiny formed the burden of the sublimest prophecies in the last days of the Hebrew monarchy. Caesarea, the city to which he was ultimately bound, was the work of the family of Herod, and rose with the rise of Christianity. Both are fallen now into utter decay. Ptolemais, which was the intermediate stage between them, is an older city than either, and has outlived them both. It has never been

withdrawn from the field of history; and its interest has seemed to increase (at least in the eyes of Englishmen) with the progress of centuries. Under the ancient name of Acco it appears in the Book of Judges (1:31) as one of the towns of the tribe of Assher. It was the pivot of the contests between Persia and Egypt. Not unknown in the Macedonian and Roman periods, it reappears with brilliant distinction in the middle ages, when the Crusaders called it St. Jean d'Acre.

It is needless to allude to the events which have fixed on this sea fortress, more than once, the attention of our own generation. At the particular time when the Apostle Paul visited this place, it bore the name of Ptolemais, most probably given to it by Ptolemy Lagi, who was long in possession of this part of Syria, and it had recently been made a Roman colony by the Emperor Claudius. It shared with Tyre and Sidon, Antioch and Caesarea, the trade of the eastern coast of the Mediterranean Sea. With a fair wind, a short day's voyage separates it from Tyre.

To speak in the language of our own sailors, there are thirteen miles from Tyre to Cape Blanco, and fifteen from thence to Cape Carmel; and Acre, "the ancient Ptolemais," is situated on the further extremity of that bay, which sweeps with a wide curvature of sand to the northwards, from the headland of Carmel. It is evident that St. Paul's company sailed from Tyre to Ptolemais within the day. At the latter city, as at the former, there were Christian disciples, who had probably been converted at the same time and under the same circumstances as those of Tyre. Another opportunity was afforded for the salutations and encouragement of brotherly love; but the missionary party stayed here only one day. Though they had accomplished the voyage in abundant time to reach Jerusalem. at Pentecost, they hastened onwards, that they might linger some days at Caesarea.

One day's travelling by land was sufficient for this part of their journey. The distance is between thirty and forty miles. At Caesarea

there was a Christian family, already known to us in the earlier passages of the Acts of the Apostles, with whom they were sure of receiving a welcome. The last time we made mention of Philip the Evangelist was when he was engaged in making the Gospel known on the road which leads southwards by Gaza towards Egypt, about the time when St. Paul himself was converted on the northern road, when travelling to Damascus. Now, after many years, the Apostle and the Evangelist are brought together under one roof.

On the former occasion, we saw that Caesarea was the place where the labours of Philip on that journey ended. Thenceforward it became his residence if his life was stationary, or it was the centre from which he made other missionary circuits through Judea. He is found, at least, residing in this city by the sea, when St. Paul arrives in the year 58 from Achaia and Macedonia. His family consisted of four daughters, who were an example of the fulfilment of that prediction of Joel, quoted by St. Peter, which said that at the opening of the new dispensation, God's Spirit should come on His "handmaidens" as well as His bondsmen, and that the "daughters," as well as the sons, should prophesy. The prophetic power was granted to these four women at Caesarea, who seem to have been living that life of single devotedness which is commended by St. Paul in his first letter to the Corinthians (1 Cor. 7), and to have exercised their gift in concert for the benefit of the Church.

It is not improbable that these inspired women gave St. Paul some intimation of the sorrows which were hanging over him. But soon a more explicit voice declared the very nature of the trial he was to expect. The stay of the Apostle at Caesarea lasted some days. He had arrived in Judea in good time before the festival, and haste was now unnecessary. Thus news reached Jerusalem of his arrival; and a prophet named Agabus, whom we have seen before coming from the same place on a similar errand, went down to Caesarea, and communicated to St. Paul and the company of Christians by whom he

was surrounded a clear knowledge of the impending danger. His revelation was made in that dramatic form which impresses the mind with a stronger sense of reality than mere words can do, and which was made familiar to the Jews of old by the practice of the Hebrew prophets.

As Isaiah (ch. 20.) loosed the sackcloth from his loins, and put off his shoes from his feet, to declare how the Egyptian captives should be led away into Assyria naked and barefoot, or as the girdle of Jeremiah (ch. 13.), in its strength and its decay, was made a type of the people of Israel in their privilege and their fall, Agabus, in like manner, using the imagery of action, took the girdle of St. Paul, and fastened it round his own hands and feet, and said, "Thus saith the Holy Ghost: So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man to whom this girdle belongs, and they shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles."

The effect of this emphatic prophecy, both on Luke, Aristarchus, and Trophimus, the companions of St. Paul's journey, and those Christians of Caesarea, who, though they had not travelled with him, had learnt to love him, was very great. They wept, and implored him not to go to Jerusalem. But the Apostle himself could not so interpret the supernatural intimation. He was placed in a position of peculiar trial. A voice of authentic prophecy had been so uttered, that, had he been timid and wavering, it might easily have been construed into a warning to deter him. Nor was that temptation unfelt which arises from the sympathetic grief of loving friends. His affectionate heart was almost broken when he heard their earnest supplications and saw the sorrow that was caused by the prospect of his danger; but the mind of the Spirit had been so revealed to him in his own inward convictions, that he could see the Divine counsel through apparent hindrances. His resolution was "no wavering between yea and nay, but was yea in Jesus Christ." His deliberate purpose did not falter for a moment. He declared that he was "ready not only to be bound, but to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus." And

then they desisted from their entreaties. Their respect for the Apostle made them silent. They recognised the will of God in the steady purpose of His servant, and gave their acquiescence in those words in which Christian resignation is best expressed: "The will of the Lord be done."

### The Journey to Jerusalem

The time was now come for the completion of the journey. The festival was close at hand. Having made the arrangements that were necessary with regard to their luggage, and such notices in Holy Scriptures should receive their due attention, for they help to set before us all the reality of the Apostle's journeys, he and the companions who had attended him from Macedonia proceeded to the Holy City. Some of the Christians of Caesarea went along with them, not merely, as it would seem, to show their respect and sympathy for the Apostolic company, but to secure their comfort on arriving, by taking him to the house of Mnason, a native of Cyprus, who had been long ago converted to Christianity, possibly during the life of our Lord Himself, and who may have been one of those Cyprian Jews who first made the Gospel known to the Greeks at Antioch.

Thus we have accompanied St. Paul on his last recorded journey to Jerusalem. It was a journey full of incident; and it is related more minutely than any other portion of his travels. We know all the places by which he passed, or at which he stayed; and we are able to connect them all with familiar recollections of history. We know, too, all the aspect of the scenery. He sailed along those coasts of Western Asia, and among those famous islands, the beauty of which is proverbial.

The very time of the year is known to us. It was when the advancing season was clothing every low shore, and the edge of every broken cliff, with a beautiful and refreshing verdure; when the winter storms had ceased to be dangerous, and the small vessels could ply safely in shade and sunshine between neighbouring ports. Even the state of the weather and the direction of the wind are known. We can point to the

places on the map where the vessel anchored for the night, and trace across the chart the track that was followed, when the moon was full. Yet more than this, we are made fully aware of the state of the Apostle's mind, and of the burdened feeling under which this journey was accomplished.

The expression of this feeling strikes us the more from its contrast with all the outward circumstances of the voyage. He sailed in the finest season, by the brightest coasts, and in the fairest weather; and yet his mind was occupied with forebodings of evil from first to last; so that a peculiar shade of sadness is thrown over the whole narration. If this be true, we should expect to find some indications of this pervading sadness in the letters written about this time; for we know how the deeper tones of feeling make themselves known in the correspondence of any man with his friends. Accordingly, we do find in The Epistle written to the Romans shortly before leaving Corinth, a remarkable indication of discouragement, and almost despondency, when he asked the Christians at Rome to pray that, on his arrival in Jerusalem, he might be delivered from the Jews who hated him, and be well received by those Christians who disregarded his authority.

The depressing anxiety with which he thus looked forward to the journey would not be diminished, when the very moment of his departure from Corinth was beset by a Jewish plot against his life. And we find the cloud of gloom, which thus gathered at the first, increasing and becoming darker as we advance. At Philippi and at Troas, indeed, no direct intimation is given of coming calamities; but it is surely no fancy which sees a foreboding shadow thrown over that midnight meeting, where death so suddenly appeared among those that were assembled there with many lights in the upper chamber, while the Apostle seemed unable to intermit his discourse, as 'ready to depart on the morrow.' For indeed at Miletus he said, that already 'in every city' the Spirit had admonished him that bonds and imprisonment were before him. At Miletus it is

clear that the heaviness of spirit, under which he started, had become a confirmed anticipation of evil. When he wrote to Rome, he hoped to be delivered from the danger he had too much reason to fear. Now his fear predominates over hope; and he looks forward, sadly but calmly, to some imprisonment not far distant.

At Tyre, the first sounds that he hears on landing are the echo of his own thoughts. He is met by the same voice of warning, and the same bitter trial for himself and his friends. At Caesarea his vague forebodings of captivity are finally made decisive and distinct, and he has a last struggle with the remonstrances of those whom he loved. Never had he gone to Jerusalem without a heart full of emotion, neither in those early years, when he came an enthusiastic boy from Tarsus to the school of Gamaliel, nor on his return from Damascus, after the greatest change that could have passed over an inquisitor's mind, nor when he went with Barnabas from Antioch to the Council, which was to decide an anxious controversy. Now he had much new experience of the insidious progress of error, and of the sinfulness even of the converted. Yet his trust in God did not depend on the faithfulness of man; and he went to Jerusalem calmly and resolutely, though doubtful of his reception among the Christian brethren, and not knowing what would happen on the morrow.

## Chapter 21

### The Reception at Jerusalem

"WHEN we were come to Jerusalem, the Brethren received us gladly." Such is St. Luke's description of the welcome which met the Apostle of the Gentiles on his arrival in the metropolis of Judaism. So we shall find afterwards "the brethren" hailing his approach to Rome, and "coming to meet him as far as Appii Forum." Thus, wherever he went, or whatever might be the strength of hostility and persecution which dogged his footsteps, he found some Christian hearts who loved the Glad

tidings which he preached, and loved himself as the messenger of the Grace of God.

The Apostle's spirit, which was much depressed, as we have seen, by anticipations of coldness and distrust on the part of the Church at Jerusalem, must have been lightened by his kind reception. He seems to have spent the evening of his arrival with these sympathising brethren; but on the morrow, a more formidable ordeal awaited him. He must encounter the assembled Presbyters of the Church; and he might well doubt whether even the substantial proof of loving interest in their welfare, of which he was the bearer, would overcome the antipathy with which (as he was fully aware) too many of them regarded him. The experiment, however, must be tried; for this was the very end .of his coming to Jerusalem at all, at a time when his heart called him to Rome. His purpose was to endeavour to set himself right with the Church of Jerusalem, to overcome the hostile prejudices which had already so much impeded his labours, and to endeavour, by the force of Christian love and forbearance; to win the hearts of those whom he regarded, in spite of all their weaknesses and errors, as brethren in Christ Jesus.

### Assembling of the Elders

Accordingly, when the morning came, the Presbyters or Elders of the Church were called together by James (who as we have before mentioned, presided over the Church of Jerusalem) to receive Paul and his fellow travellers, the messengers of the Gentile Churches.

We have already seen how carefully St. Paul had guarded himself from the possibility of suspicion in the administration of his trust, by causing deputies to be elected by the several churches whose alms he bore, as joint trustees with himself of the fund collected. These deputies now entered together with him into the assembly of the Elders, and the offering was presented, a proof of love from the Churches of the Gentiles to the mother Church, whence their spiritual blessings had been derived.

The travellers were received with that touching symbol of brotherhood, the kiss of peace, which was exchanged between the Christians of those days on every occasion of public as well as private meeting. Then the main business of the assembly was commenced by an address from St. Paul. This was not the first occasion on which he had been called to take a similar part, in the same city, and before the same audience. Our thoughts are naturally carried back to the days of the Apostolic Council, when he first declared to the Church of Jerusalem the Gospel which he preached among the Gentiles, and the great things which God had wrought thereby. The majority of the Church had then, under the influence of the Spirit of God, been brought over to his side, and had ratified his views by their decree. But the battle was not yet won; he had still to contend against the same foes with the same weapons.

We are told that he now gave a detailed account of all that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry' since he last parted from Jerusalem four years before. The foundation of the great and flourishing Church of Ephesus doubtless furnished the main interest of his narrative; but he would also dwell on the progress of the several Churches in Phrygia, Galatia, and other parts of Asia Minor, and likewise those in Macedonia and Achaia, from whence he was just returned. In such a discourse, he could scarcely avoid touching on subjects which would excite painful feelings, and rouse bitter prejudice in many of his audience. He could hardly speak of Galatia without mentioning the attempted perversion of his converts there. He could not enter into the state of Corinth without alluding to the emissaries from Palestine, who had introduced confusion and strife among the Christians of that city. Yet we cannot doubt that St. Paul, with that graceful courtesy which distinguished both his writings and his speeches, softened all that was disagreeable, and avoided what was personally offensive to his audience, and dwelt, as far as he could, on topics in which all present would agree. Accordingly we find that the

majority of the assembled Elders were favourably impressed by his address, and by the tidings which he brought of the progress of the Gospel. The first act of the assembly was to glorify God for the wonders He had wrought. They joined in solemn thanksgiving with one accord; and the Amen (1 Cor. 14:16), which followed the utterance of thanks and praise from Apostolic lips, was swelled by many voices.

Thus the hope expressed by St. Paul on a former occasion (2 Cor. 9:12), concerning the result of this visit to Jerusalem, was in a measure fulfilled. But beneath this superficial show of harmony there lurked elements of discord, which threatened to disturb it too soon. We have already had occasion to remark upon the peculiar composition of the Church at Jerusalem, and we have seen that a Pharisaic faction was sheltered in its bosom, which continually strove to turn Christianity into a sect of Judaism. We have seen that this faction had recently sent emissaries into the Gentile Churches, and had endeavoured to alienate the minds of St. Paul's converts from their converter. These men were restless agitators, animated by the bitterest sectarian spirit, and although they were numerically a small party, yet we know the power of a turbulent minority.

But besides these Judaising zealots, there was a large proportion of the Christians at Jerusalem, whose Christianity, though more sincere than that of those just mentioned, was yet very weak and imperfect. The many thousands of Jews which believed had by no means all attained to the fulness of Christian faith. Many of them still knew only a Christ after the flesh, a Saviour of Israel, a Jewish Messiah. Their minds were in a state of transition between the Law and the Gospel, and it was of great consequence not to shock their prejudices too rudely, lest they should be tempted to make shipwreck of their faith, and renounce their Christianity altogether. Their prejudices were most wisely consulted in things indifferent by St. James; who accommodated himself in all points to the strict requirements of the Law, and thus

disarmed the hostility of the Judaising bigots. He was, indeed, divinely ordained to be the Apostle of this transition Church. Had its councils been less wisely guided, had the Gospel of St. Paul been really repudiated by the Church of Jerusalem, it is difficult to estimate the evil which might have resulted.

This class of Christians was naturally very much influenced by the declamation of the more violent partisans of Judaism. Their feelings would be easily excited by an appeal to their Jewish patriotism. They might without difficulty be roused to fury against one whom they were taught to regard as a despiser of the Law, and a reviler of the customs of their forefathers. Against St. Paul their dislike had been long and artfully fostered; and they would from the first have looked on him perhaps with some suspicion, as not being, like themselves, a Hebrew of the Holy City, but only a Hellenist of the Dispersion.

Such being the composition of the great body of the Church, we cannot doubt that the same elements were to be found amongst the Elders also. And this will explain the resolution to which the assembly came, at the close of their discussion on the matters brought before them. They began by calling St. Paul's attention to the strength of the Judaical party among the Christians of Jerusalem. They told him that the majority even of the Christian Church had been taught to hate his very name, and to believe that he went about the world, 'teaching the Jews to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs.

They further observed that it was impossible his arrival should remain unknown; his renown was too great to allow him to be concealed: his public appearance in the streets of Jerusalem would attract a crowd of curious spectators, most of whom would be violently hostile. It was therefore of importance that he should do something to disarm this hostility, and to refute the calumnies which had been circulated concerning him. The plan they recommended was, that he should take charge of four Jewish

Christians, who were under a Nazaritic vow, accompany them to the Temple, and pay for them the necessary expenses attending the termination of their vow.

Agrippa, not long before, had given the same public expression of his sympathy with the Jews, on his arrival from Rome to take possession of his throne. And what the King had done for popularity, it was felt that the Apostle might do for the sake of truth and peace. His friends thought that he would thus, in the most public manner, exhibit himself as an observer of the Mosaic ceremonies, and refute the accusations of his enemies. They added that, by so doing, he would not countenance the errors of those who sought to impose the Law upon Gentile converts; because it had been already decided by the Church of Jerusalem, that the ceremonial observances of the Law were not obligatory on the Gentiles.

It is remarkable that this conclusion is attributed expressly, in the Scriptural narrative, not to James (who presided over the meeting), but to the assembly itself. The lurking shade of distrust implied in the terms of the admonition, was certainly not shared by that great Apostle, who had long ago given to St. Paul the right hand of fellowship. We have already seen indications that, however strict might be the Judaical observances of St. James, they did not satisfy the Judaising party at Jerusalem, who attempted, under the sanction of his name, to teach doctrines and enforce practices of which he disapproved. The partisans of this faction, indeed, are called by St. Paul (while anticipating this very visit to Jerusalem), "the disobedient party." It would seem that their influence was not unfelt in the discussion which terminated in the resolution recorded. And though St. James acquiesced (as did St. Paul) in the advice given, it appears not to have originated with himself.

The counsel, however, though it may have been suggested by suspicious prejudice, or even by designing enmity, was not in itself unwise. St. Paul's great object (as we have seen) in this visit to Jerusalem, was to conciliate the Church of Palestine. If he could win over that Church to

the truth, or even could avert its open hostility to himself, he would be doing more for the diffusion of Christianity than even by the conversion of Ephesus. Every lawful means for such an end he was ready gladly to adopt. His own principles, stated by himself in his Epistles, required this of him. He had recently declared that every compliance in ceremonial observances should be made, rather than cast a stumbling block in a brother's way.

He had laid it down as his principle of action, to become a Jew to Jews, that he might gain the Jews; as willingly as he became a Gentile to Gentiles, that he might gain the Gentiles. He had given it as a rule, that no man should change his external observances because he became a Christian; that the Jew should remain a Jew in things outward. Nay more, he himself observed the Jewish festivals, had previously countenanced his friends in the practice of Nazaritic vows and had circumcised Timothy, the son of a Jewess. So false was the charge that he had forbidden the Jews to circumcise their children. In fact, the great doctrine of St. Paul concerning the worthlessness of ceremonial observances, rendered him equally ready to practise as to forsake them.

A mind so truly Catholic as his was necessarily free from any repugnance to mere outward observances; a repugnance equally superstitious with the formalism which clings to ritual. In his view, circumcision was nothing and uncircumcision was nothing; but faith, which worketh by love. And this love rendered him willing to adopt the most burdensome ceremonies, if by so doing he could save a brother from stumbling. Hence he willingly complied with the advice of the assembly, and thereby, while he removed the prejudices of its more ingenuous members, doubtless exasperated the factious partisans who had hoped for his refusal.

#### The Nature of the Nazarite Vow

Thus the meeting ended amicably, with no open manifestation of that hostile feeling towards St. Paul which lurked in the bosoms of some who

were present. On the next day, which was the great feast of Pentecost, St. Paul proceeded with the four Christian Nazarites to the Temple. It is necessary here to explain the nature of their vow, and of the office which he was to perform for them. It was customary among the Jews, for those who had received deliverance from any great peril, or who from other causes desired publicly to testify their dedication to God, to take upon themselves the vow of a Nazarite, the regulations of which are prescribed in the sixth chapter of the book of Numbers.<sup>671</sup> In that book no rule is laid down as to the time during which this life of ascetic rigour was to continue: but we learn from the Talmud and Josephus that thirty days was at least a customary period. During this time the Nazarite was bound to abstain from wine, and to suffer his hair to grow uncut. At the termination of the period, he was bound to present himself in the Temple, with certain offerings, and his hair was then cut off and burnt upon the altar.

The offerings required were beyond the means of the very poor, and consequently it was thought an act of piety for a rich man to pay the necessary expenses, and thus enable his poorer countrymen to complete their vow. St. Paul was far from rich; he gained his daily bread by the work of his own hands; and we may therefore naturally ask how he was able to take upon himself the expenses of these four Nazarites. The answer probably is, that the assembled Elders had requested him to apply to this purpose a portion of the fund which he had placed at their disposal. However this may be, he now made himself responsible for these expenses, and accompanied the Nazarites to the Temple, having first performed the necessary purifications together with them.

On entering the Temple he announced to the priests that the period of the Nazaritic vow which his friends had taken was accomplished, and he waited within the sacred enclosure till the necessary offerings were made for each of

them, and their hair cut off and burnt in the sacred fire.

He might well have hoped, by thus complying with the legal ceremonial, to conciliate those, at least, who were only hostile to him because they believed him hostile to their national worship. And, so far as the great body of the Church at Jerusalem was concerned, he probably succeeded. But the celebration of the festival had attracted multitudes to the Holy City, and the Temple was thronged with worshippers from every land; and amongst these were some of those Asiatic Jews who had been defeated by his arguments in the Synagogue of Ephesus, and irritated against him during the last few years daily more and more, by the continual growth of a Christian Church in that city, formed in great part of converts from among the Jewish Proselytes.

These men, whom a zealous feeling of nationality had attracted from their distant home to the metropolis of their faith, now beheld, where they least expected to find him, the "apostate" Israelite, who had opposed their teaching and seduced their converts. An opportunity of revenge, which they could not have hoped for in the Gentile city where they dwelt, had suddenly presented itself. They sprang upon their enemy, and shouted while they held him fast, "Men of Israel, help. This is the man that teacheth all men everywhere against the People and the Law, and this Place." Then as the crowd rushed tumultuously towards the spot, they excited them yet further by accusing Paul of introducing Greeks into the Holy Place, which was profaned by the presence of a Gentile.

#### Paul Seized at the Festival

The vast multitude which was assembled on the spot, and in the immediate neighbourhood, was excited to madness by these tidings, which spread rapidly through the crowd. The pilgrims who flocked at such seasons to Jerusalem were of course the most zealous of their nation; very Hebrews of the Hebrews. We may imagine the horror and indignation which would fill their

<sup>671</sup> Numbers 6:13-18

minds when they heard that an apostate from the faith of Israel had been seized in the very act of profaning the Temple at this holy season. A furious multitude rushed upon the Apostle; and it was only their reverence for the holy place which preserved him from being torn to pieces on the spot. They hurried him out of the sacred enclosure, and assailed him with violent blows. Their next course might have been to stone him or to hurl him over the precipice into the valley below. They were already in the court of the Gentiles, and the heavy gates which separated the inner from the outer enclosure were shut by the Levites, when an unexpected interruption prevented the murderous purpose.

### The Temple and the Garrison

It becomes desirable here to give a more particular description than we have yet done of the Temple area and the sanctuary which it enclosed. Some reference has been made to this subject in the account of St. Stephen's martyrdom, especially to that "Stone Chamber: the Hall Gazith where the Sanhedrin held their solemn conclave. Soon we shall see St. Paul himself summoned before this tribunal, and hear his voice in that hall where he had listened to the eloquence of the first martyr. But meantime other events came in rapid succession: for the better understanding of which it is well to form to ourselves a clear notion of the localities in which they occurred.

The position of the Temple on the eastern side of Jerusalem, the relation of Mount Moriah to the other eminences on which the city was built, the valley which separated it from the higher summit of Mount Zion, and the deeper ravine which formed a chasm between the whole city and the Mount of Olives, these facts of general topography are too well known to require elucidation. On the other hand, when we turn to the description of the Temple area itself and that which it contained, we are met with considerable difficulties. It does not, however, belong to our present task to reconcile the statements in Josephus and the Talmud with each other and with present

appearances. Nor shall we attempt to trace the architectural changes by which the scene has been modified, in the long interval between the time when the Patriarch built the altar on Moriah for his mysterious sacrifice, and our own day, when the same spot is the "wailing place" of those who are his children after the flesh, but not yet the heirs of his faith. Keeping aloof from all difficult details, and withdrawing ourselves from the consideration of those events which have invested this hill with an interest unknown to any other spot on the earth, we confine our selves to the simple task of depicting the Temple of Herod, as it was when St. Paul was arrested by the infuriated Jews.

That rocky summit, which was wide enough for the threshing floor of Araunah, was levelled after David's death, and enlarged by means of laborious substructions, till it presented the appearance of one broad uniform area. On this level space the temples of Solomon and Zerubbabel were successively built: and in the time of the Apostles there were remains of the former work in the vast stones which formed the supporting wall on the side of the valley of Jehoshaphat, and of the latter in the eastern gate, which in its name and its appearance continued to be a monument of the Persian power.

### The Temple Area

The architectural arrangements of Herod's Temple were, in their general form, similar to the two which had preceded it. When we think of the Jewish sanctuary, whether in its earlier or later periods, our impulse is to imagine to ourselves some building like a synagogue or a church: but the first effort of our imagination should be to realise the appearance of that wide open space, which is spoken of by the prophets as the *Outer Court* or the *Court of the Lord's House*, and is named by Josephus the *Outer Temple*, and both in the Apocrypha and the Talmud, the *Mountain of the House*. That which was the "House" itself, or the Temple, properly so called, was erected on the highest of a series

of successive terraces, which rose in an isolated mass from the centre of the Court, or rather nearer to its northwestern corner.

In form the Outer Court was a square; a strong wall enclosed it; the sides corresponded to the four quarters of the heavens, and each was a stadium or a furlong in length. Its pavement of stone was of various colours, and it was surrounded by a covered colonnade, the roof of which was of costly cedar, and was supported on lofty and massive columns of the Corinthian order, and of the whitest marble. On three sides there were two rows of columns: but on the southern side the cloister deepened into a fourfold colonnade the innermost supports of the roof being pilasters in the enclosing wall.

About the southeastern angle, where the valley was most depressed below the plateau of the Temple, we are to look for that "Porch of Solomon" (John 10:23, Acts 3:11) which is familiar to us in the New Testament; and under the colonnades, or all the open area in the midst, were the "tables of the money changers and the seats of them who sold doves," which turned that which was intended for a house of prayer into a "house of merchandise" (John 2:16) and "den of thieves" (Matt. 21:13). Free access was afforded into this wide enclosure by gates on each of the four sides, one of which on the east was called the Royal Gate, and was perhaps identical with the "Beautiful Gate" of sacred history, while another on the west was connected with the crowded streets of Mount Zion by a bridge over the intervening valley.

Nearer (as we have seen) to the northwestern corner than the centre of the square, arose that series of enclosed terraces on the summit of which was the sanctuary. These more sacred limits were fenced off by a low balustrade of stone, with columns at intervals, on which inscriptions in Greek and Latin warned all Gentiles against advancing beyond them on pain of death. It was within this boundary that St. Paul was accused of having brought his heathen companions. Besides this balustrade, a separation was formed by a flight of fourteen steps leading up to the first platform, which in

its western portion was a narrow terrace of fifteen feet wide round the walls of the innermost sanctuary, while the eastern portion expanded into a second court, called the Court of the Women. By this term we are not to understand that it was exclusively devoted to that sex, but that no women were allowed to advance beyond it. This court seems to have contained the treasury (Mark 12:41; Luke 21:1) and various chambers, of which that at the south eastern corner should be mentioned here, for there the Nazarites performed their vows; and the whole court was surrounded by a wall of its own, with gates on each side, the easternmost of which was of Corinthian brass, with folding doors and strong bolts and bars, requiring the force of twenty men to close them for the night. We conceive that it was the closing of these doors by the Levites, which is so pointedly mentioned by St. Luke (Acts 21:30); and we must suppose that St. Paul had been first seized within them, and was then dragged down the flight of steps into the Outer Court.

The interest, then, of this particular moment is to be associated with the eastern entrance of the Inner from the Outer Temple. But to complete our description, we must now cross the Court of the Women to its western gate. The Holy Place and the Holy of Holies were still within and above the spaces we have mentioned. Two courts yet intervened between the court last described and the Holy House itself. The first was the Court of Israel, the ascent to which was by a flight of fifteen semicircular steps; the second, the Court of the Priests, separated from the former by a low balustrade. Where these spaces bordered on each other, to the south, was the hall Gazith, the meeting place of the Sanhedrin, partly in one court and partly in the other. A little further towards the north were all those arrangements which we are hardly able to associate with the thoughts of worship, but which daily reiterated in the sight of the Israelites that awful truth that "without shedding of blood there is no remission," the rings at which the victims were

slaughtered, the beams and hooks from which they were suspended when dead, and the marble tables at which the entrails were washed: here, above all, was the Altar, the very place of which has been plausibly identified by the bore in the sacred rock of the Moslems, which appears to correspond exactly with the description given in the Mishna of the drain and cesspool which communicated with the sewer that ran off into the Keehon.

The House itself remains to be described. It was divided into three parts, the Vestibule, the Holy Place, and the Holy of Holies. From the Altar and the Court of the Priests to the Vestibule was another flight of twelve steps, the last of the successive approaches by which the Temple was ascended from the east. The Vestibule was wider than the rest of the House: its front was adorned with a golden vine of colossal proportions: and it was separated by a richly embroidered curtain or veil from the Holy Place, which contained the Table of Shew bread, the Candlestick, and the Altar of Incense. After this was the "second veil" (Heb. 9:3), closing the access to the innermost shrine, which in the days of the Tabernacle had contained the golden censer and the ark of the covenant, but which in Herod's Temple was entirely empty, though still regarded as the "Holiest of All." The interior height of the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies was comparatively small: but above them and on each side were chambers so arranged that the general exterior effect was that of a clerestory rising above aisles: and the whole was surmounted with gilded spikes, to prevent the birds from settling on the sacred roof.

Such is a bare outline of the general plan of the Jewish Temple. Such was the arrangement of its parts, which could be traced as in a map, by those who looked down from the summit of the Mount of Olives, as the modern (19<sup>th</sup> Century) traveller looks now from the same place upon the mosque of Omar and its surrounding court. As seen from this eminence, when the gilded front of the vestibule flashed back the rays of the sun, and all the courts glittered (to use the

comparison of Josephus) with the whiteness of snow, while the column of smoke rose over all, as a perpetual token of acceptable sacrifice, and worshippers were closely crowded on the eastern steps and terraces in front of the Holy House, and Pilgrims from all countries under heaven were moving through the Outer Court and flocking to the same point from all streets in the city, the Temple at the time of a festival must have been a proud spectacle to the religious Jew. It must have been with sad and incredulous wonder that the four Disciples heard from Him who wept over Jerusalem, that all this magnificence was presently to pass away. None but a Jew can understand the passionate enthusiasm inspired by the recollections and the glorious appearance of the national Sanctuary. And none but a Jew can understand the bitter grief and deep hatred which grew out of the degradation in which his nation was sunk at that particular time. This ancient glory was now under the shadow of an alien power. The Sanctuary was all but trodden under foot by the Gentiles. The very worship was conducted under the surveillance of Roman soldiers. We cannot conclude this account of the Temple without describing the fortress which was contiguous, and almost a part of it.

#### The Fortress of Antonia

If we were to remount to the earlier history of the Temple, we might perhaps identify the tower of Antonia with the palace of which we read in the book of Nehemiah (2:8; 7:2). It was certainly the building which the Hasmonean princes erected for their own residence under the name of Baris.<sup>672</sup> Afterwards rebuilt with greater strength and splendour by the first Herod, it was named by him in honour of Mark Antony. Its situation is most distinctly marked out by Josephus, who tells us that it was at the northwestern corner of the Temple area, with the cloisters of which it communicated by means of staircases (Acts 21:35, 40). It is difficult, however, to define the exact extent of

<sup>672</sup> Josephus, *Antiquities* xv.11.4.

ground which it covered in its renewed form during the time of the Herods. There is good reason for believing that it extended along the whole northern side of the great Temple court, from the northwestern corner where it abutted on the city, to the north eastern where it was suddenly stopped by the precipice which fronted the valley: and that the tank, which is now popularly called the Pool of Bethesda, was part of the fosse which protected it on the north. Though the ground on which the tower of Antonia stood was lower than that of the Temple itself, yet it was raised to such a height, that at least the south eastern of its four turrets commanded a view of all that went on within the Temple, and thus both in position and in elevation it was in ancient Jerusalem what the Turkish governor's house is now, whence the best view is obtained over the enclosure of the mosque of Omar.

But this is an inadequate comparison. If we wish to realise the influence of this fortress in reference to political and religious interests, we must turn rather to that which is the most humiliating spectacle in Christendom, the presence of the Turkish troops at the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, where they are [were] stationed to control the fury of the Greeks and Latins at the most solemn festival of the Christian year. Such was the office of the Roman troops that were quartered at the Jewish festivals in the fortress of Antonia.

Within its walls there were barracks for at least a thousand soldiers. Not that we are to suppose that all the garrison in Jerusalem was always posted there. It is probable that the usual quarters of the "whole cohort" (Matt. 27:27), or the greater part of it, were towards the western quarter of the city, in the Pretorium (John 18:28) or official residence where Jesus was mocked by the soldiers, and on the pavement in front of which Pilate sat, and condemned the Saviour of the world. But at the time of the greater festivals, when a vast concourse of people, full of religious fanaticism and embittered by hatred of their rulers, flocked into the Temple courts, it was found necessary

to order a strong military force into Antonia, and to keep them under arms, so that they might act immediately and promptly in the case of any outbreak.

A striking illustration of the connection between the Fortress and the Temple is afforded by the history of the quarrels which arose in reference to the priestly vestments. These robes were kept in Antonia during the time of Herod the Great. When he died, they came under the superintendence of the Roman Procurator. Herod Agrippa I during his short reign, exercised the right which had belonged to his grandfather. At his death the command that the Procurator Cuspius Fadus should take the vestments under his care raised a ferment among the whole Jewish people; and they were only kept from an outbreak by the presence of an overwhelming force under Longinus, the Governor of Syria. An embassy to Rome, with the aid of the younger Agrippa (Herod Agrippa II), who was then at the imperial court, obtained the desired relaxation: and the letter is still extant in which Claudius assigned to Herod, King of Chalcis, the privilege which had belonged to his brother. But under the succeeding Procurators, the relation between the fortress Antonia and the religious ceremonies in the Temple became more significant and ominous.

The hatred between the embittered Jews and those soldiers who were soon to take part in their destruction, grew deeper and more implacable. Under Ventidius Cumanus, frightful loss of life had taken place on one occasion at the passover, in consequence of an insult perpetrated by one of the military. When Felix succeeded him, assassination became frequent in Jerusalem: the high priest Jonathan was murdered, like Becket, in the Temple itself, with the connivance of the Procurator: and at the very moment of which we write, both the soldiers and the populace were in great excitement in consequence of the recent 'uproar' caused by an Egyptian impostor (Acts 21:38), who had led out a vast number of

fanatic followers “into the wilderness” to be slain or captured by the troops of Felix.

This imperfect description of the Temple area and of the relations subsisting between it and the contiguous fortress, is sufficient to set the scene before us, on which the events we are now to relate occurred in rapid succession. We left St. Paul at the moment when the Levites had closed the gates, lest the Holy Place should be polluted by murder, and when the infuriated mob were violently beating the Apostle, with the full intention of putting him to death. The beginning and rapid progress of the commotion must have been seen by the sentries on the cloisters and the tower; and news was sent up immediately to Claudius Lysias, the commandant of the garrison, that “all Jerusalem was in an uproar” (ver. 31). The spark had fallen on materials the most inflammable, and not a moment was to be lost, if a conflagration was to be averted.

Lysias himself rushed down instantly, with some of his subordinate officers and a strong body of men, into the Temple court. At the sight of the flashing arms and disciplined movements of the Imperial soldiers, the Jewish mob desisted from their murderous violence. They left off beating of Paul. They had for a moment forgotten that the eyes of the sentries were upon them: but this sudden invasion by their hated and dreaded tyrants reminded them that they were “in danger to be called in question for that day's uproar.” (Acts 19:40.)

Claudius Lysias proceeded with the soldiers promptly and directly to St. Paul, whom he perceived to be the central object of all the excitement in the Temple court: and in the first place he ordered him to be chained by each hand to a soldier, for he suspected that he might be the Egyptian rebel, who had himself baffled the pursuit of the Roman force, though his followers were dispersed. This being done, he proceeded to question the bystanders, who were watching this summary proceeding, half in disappointed rage at the loss of their victim, and half in satisfaction that they saw him at least in captivity. But when Lysias demanded

who he was and what he had done, some cried one thing, and some another, among the multitude (W. 33,34); and when he found that he could obtain no certain information in consequence of the tumult, he gave orders that the prisoner should be conveyed into the barracks within the fortress.

The multitude pressed and crowded on the soldiers, as they proceeded to execute this order: so that the Apostle was actually carried up the staircase, in consequence of the violent pressure from below. And meanwhile deafening shouts arose from the stairs and from the court, the same shouts which, nearly thirty years before, surrounded the Pretorium of Pilate, “Away with him, away with him.”

At this moment, the Apostle, with the utmost presence of mind, turned to the commanding officer who was near him, and, addressing him in Greek, said respectfully, “May I speak with thee?” Claudius Lysias was startled when he found himself addressed by his prisoner in Greek, and asked him whether he was then mistaken in supposing he was the Egyptian ringleader of the late rebellion. St. Paul replied calmly that he was no Egyptian, but a Jew; and he readily explained his knowledge of Greek, and at the same time asserted his claim to respectful treatment, by saying that he was a native of Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city: and he proceeded to request that he might be allowed to address the people. The request was a bold one; and we are almost surprised that Lysias should have granted it: but there seems to have been something in St. Paul's aspect and manner, which from the first gained an influence over the mind of the Roman officer: and his consent was not refused. And now the whole scene was changed in a moment. St. Paul stood upon the stairs and turned to the people, and made a motion with the hand, as about to address them. And they too felt the influence of his presence. Tranquillity came on the sea of heads below: there was a great silence, and he began, saying:

**Acts 22:1 21**

**Brethren and Fathers, hear me, and let me now defend myself before you.**

The language which he spoke was Hebrew. Had he spoken in Greek, the majority of those who heard him would have understood his words: but the sound of the holy tongue in that holy place fell like a calm on the troubled waters. The silence became universal and breathless; and the Apostle proceeded to address his countrymen as follows :

**I am myself an Israelite, born indeed at Tarsus, in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city, and taught at the feet of Gamaliel, in the strictest doctrine of the law of our fathers; and was zealous in the cause of God, as ye all are this day. And I persecuted this sect unto the death, binding with chains and casting into prison both men and women. And of this the High Priest is my witness, and all the Sanhedrin; from whom, moreover, I received letters to the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring those also who were there to Jerusalem, in chains, that they might be punished.**

**But it came to pass that as I journeyed, when I drew nigh to Damascus, about mid day, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me. And I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying unto me, *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?* And I answered, *Who art thou Lord?* and He said unto me, *I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou, persecutest. And the men who were with me saw the light, and were terrified; but they heard not the voice of Him that spake unto me. And I said, *What shall I do, Lord?* And the Lord said unto me, *Arise and go into Damascus, and there thou shalt be told of all things which are appointed for thee to do.****

**And when I could not see, from the brightness of that light, my companions led me by the hand, and so I entered into Damascus. And a certain Ananias, a devout man according to the law, well reported of by all the Jews who dwelt there, came and stood beside me, and said to me, *Brother Saul, receive thy sight; and in that instant I received my sight and looked upon him. And he said, *The God of our Fathers hath ordained****

***thee to know His will, and to behold the Just One, and to hear the voice of His mouth. For thou shalt be His witness to all the world of what thou hast seen and heard. And now, why dost thou delay? Arise and be baptized and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of Jesus.***

**And it came to pass, after I had returned to Jerusalem and while I was praying in the Temple that I was in a trance, and saw Him saying unto me, *Make haste and go forth quickly from Jerusalem, for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me. And I said, Lord, they themselves know that I continually imprisoned and scourged in every synagogue the believers in Thee. And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I myself also was standing by and consenting gladly to his death, and keeping the raiment of them who slew him. And He said unto me, Depart; for I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.***

At these words St. Paul's address to his countrymen was suddenly interrupted. Up to this point he had riveted their attention. They listened, while he spoke to them of his early life, his persecution of the Church, his mission to Damascus. Many were present who could testify, on their own evidence, to the truth of what he said. Even when he told them of his miraculous conversion, his interview with Ananias, and his vision in the Temple, they listened still.

With admirable judgment he deferred till the last all mention of the Gentiles. He spoke of Ananias as a devout man according to the law' (ver. 12), as one "well reported of by all the Jews", as one who addressed him in the name of the God of their Fathers (ver. 14). He showed how in his vision he had pleaded before that God the energy of his former persecution, as a proof that his countrymen must surely be convinced by his conversion: and when he alluded to the death of Stephen, and the part which he had taken himself in that cruel martyrdom (ver. 20), all the associations of the place where they stood must (we should have thought) have brought the memory of that scene with pathetic force before their minds.

But when his mission to the Gentiles was announced, though the words quoted were the words of Jehovah spoken in the Temple itself, even as the Lord had once spoken to Samuel, one outburst of frantic indignation rose from the Temple area and silenced the speaker on the stairs. Their national pride bore down every argument which could influence their reason or their reverence. They could not bear the thought of uncircumcised Heathens being made equal to the sons of Abraham. They cried out that such a wretch ought not to pollute the earth with his presence that it was a shame to have preserved his life: and in their rage and impatience they tossed off their outer garments (as on that other occasion, when the garments were laid at the feet of Saul himself), and threw up dust into the air with frantic violence.

#### Escape from Torture

This commotion threw Lysias into new perplexity. He had not been able to understand the Apostle's Hebrew speech: and, when he saw its results, he concluded that his prisoner must be guilty of some enormous crime. He ordered him therefore to be taken immediately from the stairs into the barracks and to be examined by torture, in order to elicit a confession of his guilt. Whatever instruments were necessary for this kind of scrutiny would be in readiness within a Roman fortress: and before long the body of the Apostle was stretched out, like that of a common malefactor, to receive the lashes, with the officer standing by, to whom Lysias had entrusted the superintendence of this harsh examination.

Thus St. Paul was on the verge of adding another suffering and disfigurement to that long catalogue of afflictions, which he had enumerated in the last letter he wrote to Corinth, before his recent visit to that city (2 Cor. 11:23-25). Five times scourged by the Jews, once beaten with rods at Philippi, and twice on other unknown occasions, he had indeed been "in stripes above measure." And now he was in a Roman barrack, among rude soldiers, with a similar indignity in prospect; when he rescued

himself, and at the same time gained a vantage ground for the Gospel, by that appeal to his rights as a Roman citizen, under which he had before sheltered his sacred cause at Philippi. He said these few words to the centurion who stood by. "Is it lawful to torture one who is a Roman citizen and uncondemned?"

The magic of the Roman law produced its effect in a moment. The centurion immediately reported the words to his commanding officer, and said significantly, "Take heed what thou doest: for this man is a Roman citizen." Lysias was both astonished and alarmed. He knew full well that no man would dare to assume the right of citizenship, if it did not really belong to him: and he hastened in person to his prisoner. A hurried dialogue took place, from which it appeared, not only that St. Paul was indeed a Roman citizen, but that he held this privilege under circumstances far more honourable than his interrogator: for while Claudius Lysias had purchased the right for a great sum, Paul was free born. Orders were instantly given for the removal of the instruments of torture: and those who had been about to conduct the examination retired.

Lysias was compelled to keep the Apostle still in custody; for he was ignorant of the nature of his offence, and indeed this was evidently the only sure method of saving him from destruction by the Jews. But the Roman officer was full of alarm: for in his treatment of the prisoner he had already been guilty of a flagrant violation of the law.

#### Paul Before the Sanhedrin

On the following day the commandant of the garrison adopted a milder method of ascertaining the nature of his prisoner's offence. He summoned a meeting of the Jewish Sanhedrin with the high priests, and brought St. Paul down from the fortress and set him before them, doubtless taking due precautions to prevent the consequences which might result from a sudden attack upon his safety. Only a narrow space of the Great Temple Court intervened, between the steps which led down

from the tower Antonia, and those which led up to the hall Gazith, the Sanhedrin's accustomed place of meeting. If that hall was used on this occasion, no Heathen soldiers would be allowed to enter it: for it was within the balustrade which separated the sanctuary from the Court. But the fear of pollution would keep the Apostle's life in safety within that enclosure. There is good reason for believing that the Sanhedrin met at that period in a place less sacred, to which the soldiers would be admitted; but this is a question into which we need not enter. Wherever the council sat, we are suddenly transferred from the interior of a Roman barrack to a scene entirely Jewish.

Paul was now in presence of that council, before which, when he was himself a member of it, Stephen had been judged. That moment could hardly be forgotten by him: but he looked steadily at his inquisitors, among whom he would recognise many who had been his fellow pupils in the school of Gamaliel, and his associates in the persecution of the Christians. That unflinching look of conscious integrity offended them, and his confident words, "Brethren, I have always lived a conscientious life before God, up to this very day", so enraged the high priest, that he commanded those who stood near to strike him on the mouth. This brutal insult roused the Apostle's feelings, and he exclaimed, "God shall smite thee, thou whited wall; sittest thou to judge me according to the law, and then in defiance of the law dost thou command me to be struck!" If we consider these words as an outburst of natural indignation, we cannot severely blame them, when we remember St. Paul's temperament, and how they were provoked. If we regard them as a prophetic denunciation, they were terribly fulfilled, when this hypocritical president of the Sanhedrin was murdered by the assassins in the Jewish war. In whatever light we view them now, those who were present in the Sanhedrin treated them as profane and rebellious. "Revilest thou God's high priest?" was the indignant exclamation of the bystanders. And then Paul recovered

himself, and said, with Christian meekness and forbearance, that he did not consider that Ananias was high priest; other wise he would not so have spoken, seeing that it is written in the Law, "Thou shalt not revile the rule of thy people."

But the Apostle had seen enough to be convinced that there was no prospect before this tribunal of a fair inquiry and a just decision. He therefore adroitly adopted a prompt measure for enlisting the sympathies of those who agreed with him in one doctrine, which, though held to be an open question in Judaism, was an essential truth in Christianity. He knew that both Pharisees and Sadducees were among his judges, and well aware that, however united they might be in the outward work of persecution, they were divided by an impassable line in the deeper matters of religious faith, he cried out, *Brethren, I am a Pharisee, and all my forefathers were Pharisees: it is for the hope of a resurrection from the dead that I am to be judged this day.* This exclamation produced an instantaneous effect on the assembly. It was the watchword which marshalled the opposing forces in antagonism to each other. The Pharisees felt a momentary hope that they might use their ancient partisan as a new weapon against their rivals; and their hatred against the Sadducees was even greater than their hatred of Christianity. They were vehement in their vociferations; and their language was that which Gamaliel had used more calmly many years before (and possibly the aged Rabban may have been present himself in this very assembly), "If this doctrine be of God, ye cannot destroy it: beware lest ye be found to be fighting against God. We find no fault in this man: what, if (as he says) an angel or a spirit have indeed spoken to him, " The sentence was left incomplete or unheard in the uproar.

The judgment hall became a scene of the most violent contention; and presently Claudius Lysias received information of what was taking place, and fearing lest the Roman citizen, whom he was bound to protect, should be torn in

pieces between those who sought to protect him, and those who thirsted for his destruction, he ordered the troops to go down instantly, and bring him back into the soldiers' quarters within the fortress.

So passed this morning of violent excitement. In the evening, when Paul was isolated both from Jewish enemies and Christian friends, and surrounded by the uncongenial sights and sounds of a soldiers' barrack, when the agitation of his mind subsided, and he was no longer strung up by the presence of his persecutors, or supported by sympathising brethren, can we wonder that his heart sank, and that he looked with dread on the vague future that was before him. Just then it was that he had one of those visions by night, which were sometimes vouchsafed to him, at critical seasons of his life, and in providential conformity with the circumstances in which he was placed. The last time when we were informed of such an event was when he was in the house of Aquila and Priscilla at Corinth, and when he was fortified against the intimidation of the Jews by the words, 'Fear not: for I am with thee.' (Acts 18:9, 10.) The next instance we shall have to relate is in the worst part of the storm at sea, between Fair Havens and Malta, when a similar assurance was given to him: "Fear not: thou must stand before Caesar."

On the present occasion events were not sufficiently matured for him to receive a prophetic intimation in this explicit form. He had, indeed, long looked forward to a visit to Rome: but the prospect now seemed further off than ever. And it was at this anxious time that he was miraculously comforted and strengthened by Him, who is 'the confidence of all the ends of the earth, and of them that are afar off upon the sea; who by His strength setteth fast the mountains; who stilleth the noise of the seas and the tumult of the people.' In the visions of the night, the Lord Himself stood by him and said: "Be of good cheer, Paul; for as thou hast testified of me at Jerusalem, so must thou testify also at Rome."

### Conspiracy

The contrast is great between the peaceful assurance thus secretly given to the faith of the Apostle in his place of imprisonment, and the active malignity of his enemies in the city. When it was day, more than forty of the Jews entered into a conspiracy to assassinate Paul; and that they might fence round their crime with all the sanction of religion, they bound themselves by a curse, that they would eat and drink nothing till the deed was accomplished. Thus fortified by a dreadful oath, they came before the chief priests and members of the Sanhedrin, and proposed the following plan, which seems to have been readily adopted. The Sanhedrists were to present themselves before Claudius Lysias, with the request that he would allow the prisoner to be brought once more before the Jewish Court, that they might enter into a further investigation; and the assassins were to lie in wait, and murder the Apostle on his way down from the fortress. The plea to be brought before Lysias was very plausible: and it is probable that, if he had received no further information, he would have acted on it, for he well knew that the proceedings of the Court had been suddenly interrupted the day before, and he would be glad to have his perplexity removed by the results of a new inquiry.

The danger to which the Apostle was exposed was most imminent: and there has seldom been a more horrible example of crime masked under the show of religious zeal. The plot was ready and the next day it would have been carried into effect, when God was pleased to confound the schemes of the conspirators. The instrument of St. Paul's safety was one of his own relatives, the son of that sister whom we have before mentioned as the companion of his childhood at Tarsus. It is useless to attempt to draw that veil aside, which screens the history of this relationship from our view: though the narrative seems to give us hints of domestic intercourse at Jerusalem, of which, if it were permitted to us, we would gladly know more. Enough is told to us to give a favourable impression, both of the affection and discretion

of the Apostle's nephew: nor is he the only person, the traits of whose character are visible in the artless simplicity of the narrative.

The young man came into the barracks, and related what he knew of the conspiracy to his uncle; to whom he seems to have had perfect liberty of access. Paul, with his usual promptitude and prudence, called one of the centurions to him, and requested him to take the youth to the commandant, saying that he had a communication to make to him. The officer complied at once, and took the young man with this message from "the prisoner Paul," to Claudius Lysias; who, partly from the interest he felt in the prisoner, and partly, we need not doubt, from the natural justice and benevolence of his disposition, received the stranger kindly, "took him by the hand, and led him aside, and asked him in private" to tell him what he had to say. The young man related the story of the conspiracy in full detail, and with much feeling, Lysias listened to his statement and earnest entreaties; then, with a soldier's promptitude, and yet with the caution of one who felt the difficulty of the situation, he decided at once on what he would do, but without communicating the plan to his informant. He simply dismissed him, with a significant admonition, "Be careful that thou tell no man that thou hast laid this information before me."

### The Journey to Caesarea

When the young man was gone, Claudius Lysias summoned one or two of his subordinate officers, and ordered them to have in readiness two hundred of the legionary soldiers, with seventy of the cavalry, and two hundred spearmen; so as to depart for Caesarea at nine in the evening, and take Paul in safety to Felix the governor. The journey was long, and it would be requisite to accomplish it as rapidly as possible. He therefore gave directions that more than one horse should be provided for the prisoner. We may be surprised that so large a force was sent to secure the safety of one man; but we must remember that this man was a

Roman citizen, while the garrison in Antonia, consisting of more than a thousand men, could easily spare such a number for one day on such a service; and further, that assassinations, robberies, and rebellions were frequent occurrences at that time in Judea, and that a conspiracy also wears a formidable aspect to those who are responsible for the public peace. The utmost secrecy, as well as promptitude, was evidently required; and therefore an hour was chosen, when the earliest part of the night would be already past. At the time appointed, the troops, with St. Paul in the midst of them, marched out of the fortress, and at a rapid pace took the road to Caesarea.

It is to the quick journey and energetic researches of an American traveller, that we owe the power of following the exact course of this night march from Jerusalem to Caesarea. In an earlier part of this work we have endeavoured to give an approximate representation of the Roman roads, as they existed in Palestine; and we have had occasion more than once to allude to the route which lay between the religious and political capitals of the country. To the roads previously mentioned we must add another, which passes, not by Lydda (or Diospolis), but more directly across the intermediate space from Gophna to Antipatris. We have thus the whole route to Caesarea before us; and we are enabled to picture to ourselves the entire progress of the little army which took St. Paul in safety from the conspiracies of the Jews, and placed him under the protection of Felix the governor.

The road lay, first, for about three hours, northwards, along the high mountainous region which divides the valley of the Jordan from the great western plain of Judea. About midnight they would reach Gophna. Here, after a short halt, they quitted the northern road which leads to Neapolis and Damascus, once travelled by St. Paul under very different circumstances, and turned towards the coast on the left. Presently they began to descend among the western eminences and valleys of the mountain country, startling the shepherd on the hills of Ephraim,

and rousing the village peasant, who woke only to curse his oppressor, as he heard the hoofs of the horses on the pavement, and the well known tramp of the Roman soldiers.

A second resting place might perhaps be found a Thamna a city mentioned by Josephus in the Jewish wars, and it was possibly the "Timnath Heres," where Joshua<sup>673</sup> was buried, in mount Ephraim, in the border of his inheritance. And then they proceeded, still descending over a rocky and thinly cultivated tract, till about daybreak they came to the ridge of the last hill and overlooked "the great plain of Sharon coming quite up to its base on the west." The road now turned northwards, across the rich land of the plain of Sharon, through fields of wheat and barley,<sup>6</sup> just then almost ready for the harvest. "On the east were the mountains of Samaria, rising gradually above each other, and bounding the plain in that direction : on the left lay a line of low wooded hills, shutting it in from the sea." Between this higher and lower range, but on the level ground, in a place well watered and richly wooded, was, the town of Antipatris. Both its history and situation are described to us by Josephus. The ancient Caphar Saba from which one of the Asmonean princes had dug a trench and built a wall to Joppa, to protect the country from invasion, was afterwards rebuilt by Herod (the Great), and named in honour of his father Antipater. It is described in one passage as near the mountains, and in another, as in the richest plain of his dominions, with abundance both of water and wood. In the narrative of the Jewish war, Antipatris is mentioned as one of the scenes of Vespasian's first military proceedings. It afterwards disappears from history: but the ancient name is still familiarly used by the peasantry, and remains with the physical features of the neighbourhood to identify the site.

The foot soldiers proceeded no further than Antipatris, but returned from thence to Jerusalem (23:32). They were no longer

necessary to secure St. Paul's safety; for no plot by the way was now to be apprehended; but they might very probably be required in the fortress of Antonia. It would be in the course of the afternoon that the remaining soldiers with their weary horses entered the streets of Caesarea. The centurion who remained in command of them proceeded at once to the governor, and gave up his prisoner; and at the same time presented the dispatch, with which he was charged by the commandant of the garrison at Jerusalem.

### Felix

We have no record of the personal appearance of Felix; but if we may yield to the impression naturally left by what we know of his sensual and ferocious character, we can imagine the countenance with which he read the following dispatch. "*Claudius Lysias sends greeting to the most Excellent Felix the governor. This man was apprehended by the Jews, and on the point of being killed by them, when I came and rescued him with my military guard: for I learnt that he was a Roman citizen. And wishing to ascertain the charge which they had to allege against him, I took him down to their Sanhedrin: and there I found that the charge had reference to certain questions of their law, and that he was accused of no offence worthy of death or imprisonment. And now having received information, that a plot is about to be formed against the man's life, I send him to thee forthwith, and I have told his accusers that they must bring their charge before thee. Farewell.*"

Felix raised his eyes from the paper, and said, "To what province does he belong?" It was the first question which a Roman governor would naturally ask in such a case. So Pilate had formerly paused, when he found he was likely to trespass on Herod's jurisdiction. Besides the delicacy required by etiquette, the Roman law laid down strict rules for all inter provincial communications. In the present case there could be no great difficulty for the moment. A Roman citizen with certain vague charges brought against him, was placed under the

<sup>673</sup> Joshua 19:49,50; 24:30; Judges 2:8,9

protection of a provincial governor; who was bound to keep him in safe custody till the cause should be heard. Having therefore ascertained that Paul was a native of the province of Cilicia, Felix simply ordered him to be kept in Herod's pretorium, and said to Paul himself, "I will hear and decide thy cause, when thy accusers are come." Here then we leave the Apostle for a time. A relation of what befell him at Caesarea will be given in another chapter, to which an account of the political state of Palestine, and a description of Herod's city, will form a suitable introduction.

## Chapter 22

### Agrippa II

We have pursued a long and varied narrative, since we last took a general view of the political history of Judea. The state of this part of the Empire in the year 44 was briefly summed up in a previous chapter (Chap. 4.). It was then remarked that this year and the year 60 were the two only points which we can regard as fixed in the annals of the earliest Church, and, therefore, the two best chronological pivots of the Apostolic history. We have followed the life of the Apostle Paul through a space of fourteen years from the former of these dates: and now we are rapidly approaching the second. Then we recounted the miserable end of king Agrippa I. Now we are to speak of Herod Agrippa II., who, like his father, had the title of King, though his kingdom was not identically the same.<sup>674</sup>

The life of the second Agrippa ranges over the last period of national Jewish history, and the first age of the Christian Church: and both his life and that of his sisters Drusilla and Berenice are curiously connected, by manifold links, with the general history of the times. This Agrippa saw the destruction of Jerusalem, and lived till the first century was closed in the old age of St. John, the last of a dynasty eminent for

magnificence and intrigue. Berenice concluded a life of profligacy by a criminal connection with Titus, the conqueror of Jerusalem. Drusilla became the wife of Felix, and perished with the child of that union in the eruption of Vesuvius.

We have said that the kingdom of this Agrippa was not coincident with that of his father. He was never, in fact, King of Judea. The three years, during which Agrippa I reigned at Caesarea, were only an interpolation in the long series of Roman procurators, who ruled Judea in subordination to the governors of Syria, from the death of Herod the Great to the final destruction of Jerusalem. In the year 44, the second Agrippa was only sixteen years old, and he was detained about the court of Claudius, while Cuspius Fadus was sent out to direct the provincial affairs at Caesarea.

It was under the administration of Fadus that those religious movements took place, which ended in placing under the care of the Jews the sacred vestments kept in the tower of Antonia, and which gave to Herod king of Chalcis the management of the Temple and its treasury, and the appointment of the high priests. And in other respects the Jews had reason to remember his administration with gratitude; for he put down the banditti which had been the pest of the country under Agrippa; and the slavish compliment of Tertullus to Felix (Acts 24:2, 3) might have been addressed to him with truth, that "by him the Jews enjoyed great quietness, and that very worthy deeds had been done to the nation by his providence. He was succeeded by Tiberius Alexander, a renegade Alexandrian Jew, and the nephew of the celebrated Philo. In relation to the life of this official in Judea, there are no incidents worth recording: at a later period we see him at the siege of Jerusalem in command of Roman forces under Titus: and the consequent inscriptions in his honour at Rome served to point the sarcasm of the Roman satirist. Soon after the arrival of Ventidius Cumanus to succeed him as governor in the year 48, Herod king of Chalcis died, and Agrippa II. was placed on his throne, with the same privileges in reference to the Temple and

<sup>674</sup> Agrippa II was made king of Chalcis AD 48, he received a further accession of territory AD 53, and died, at the age of 70 in AD 99. He was intimate with Josephus and was the last prince of the Herodian house.

its worship, which had been possessed by his uncle.

During the government of Cumanus, the low and sullen murmurs which announced the approaching eruption of the dark volcano, now gathering its strength in Palestine, became more distinct. The people and the Roman soldiery began to display mutual animosity. One indication of this animosity has been alluded to before, the dreadful loss of life in the Temple which resulted from the wanton insolence of one of the soldiers in Antonia at the time of a festival. Another was the excitement which ensued after the burning of the Scriptures by the Roman troops at Beth Horon, on the road between Jerusalem and Caesarea. An attack made by the Samaritans on some Jews who were proceeding through their country to a festival, led to wider results. Appeal was made to Quadratus, governor of Syria: and Cumanus was sent to Rome to answer for his conduct to the Emperor. In the end he was deposed, and Felix, the brother of Pallas the freedman and favourite of Claudius, was (partly by the influence of Jonathan the high priest) appointed to succeed him.

The mention of this governor, who was brought into such intimate relations with St. Paul, demands that we should enter now more closely into details. The origin of Felix and the mode of his elevation would prepare us to expect in him such a character as that which is condensed into a few words by Tacitus, that, "in the practice of all kinds of lust and cruelty, he exercised the power of a king with the temper of a slave." The Jews had, indeed, to thank him for some good services to their nation. He cleared various parts of the country from robbers; and he pursued and drove away that Egyptian fanatic, with whom Claudius Lysias too hastily identified St. Paul.

But the same historian, from whom we derive this information, gives us a terrible illustration of his cruelty in the story of the murder of Jonathan, to whom Felix was partly indebted for his own elevation. The high priest had presumed to expostulate with the governor on

some of his practices, and assassins were forthwith employed to murder him in the sanctuary of the Temple. And as this crime illustrates one part of the sentence, in which Tacitus describes his character, so we may see the other parts of it justified and elucidated. in the narrative of St. Luke; that which speaks of him as a voluptuary, by his union with Drusilla, whom he had enticed from her husband by aid of a magician, who is not unreasonably identified by some with Simon Magus, and that which speaks of his servile meanness, by his trembling without repentance at the preaching of Paul, and by his detention of him in prison from the hope of a bribe.

When he finally left the Apostle in bonds at Caesarea, this also (as we shall see) was done from a mean desire to conciliate those who were about to accuse him at Rome of maladministration of the province. The final breach between him and the provincials seems to have arisen from a quarrel at Caesarea, between the Jewish and Heathen population, which grew so serious, that the troops were called out into the streets, and both slaughter and plunder was the result.

The mention of this circumstance leads us to give some account of the troops quartered in Palestine and of the general distribution of the Roman army: without some notion of which no adequate idea can be obtained of the Empire and the Provinces. Moreover St. Paul is brought, about this part of his life, into such close relations with different parts of that military service, from which he draws some of his most forcible imagery, that our narrative would be incomplete without some account both of the Pretorian guards and the legionary soldiers. The latter force may be fitly described in connection with Caesarea, and we shall see that it is not out of place to allude here to the former also) though its natural association is with the city of Rome.

### The Roman Army

That division between the armed and unarmed provinces will serve to direct us to the principle

on which the Roman legions were distributed. They were chiefly posted in the outer provinces or along the frontier, the immediate neighbourhood of the Mediterranean being completely subdued under the sway of Rome. The military force required in Gaul and Spain was much smaller than it had been in the early days of Augustus. Even in Africa the frontier was easily maintained: for the Romans do not seem to have been engaged there in that interminable war with native tribes, which occupies the French in Algeria. The greatest accumulation of legions was on the northern and eastern boundaries of the Empire, along the courses of the three frontier rivers, the Rhine, the Danube, and the Euphrates; and, finally, three legions were stationed in Britain and three in Judaea. We know the very names of these legions. Just as we find memorials of the second, the ninth, and the twentieth in connection with Chester or York, so by the aid of historians or historic monuments we can trace the presence of the fifth, the tenth, and the fifteenth in Caesarea, Ptolemais, or Jerusalem. And here two principles must be borne in mind which regulated the stations of the legions. They did not move from province to province, as our troops are taken in succession from one colony to another; but they remained on one station for a vast number of years. And they were recruited, for the most part, from the provinces where they were posted: for the time had long passed away when every legionary soldier was an Italian and a freeborn Roman citizen. Thus Josephus tells repeatedly that the troops quartered in his native country were reinforced from thence; not indeed, from the Jews, for they were exempt from the duty of serving, but from the Greek and Syrian population.

But what were these legions? We must beware of comparing them too exactly with our own regiments of a few hundred men: for they ought rather to be called brigades, each consisting of more than 6000 infantry, with a regiment of cavalry attached. Here we see the explanation of one part of the force sent down by Claudius

Lysias to Antipatris. Within the fortress of Antonia were stables for the horses of the troopers, as well as quarters for a cohort of infantry. But, moreover, every legion had attached to it a body of auxiliaries levied in the province, of almost equal number: and here, perhaps, we find the true account of the 200 spearmen who formed a part of St. Paul's escort, with the 200 legionary soldiers. Thus we can form to ourselves some notion of those troops (amounting, perhaps, to 35,000 men), the presence of which was so familiar a thing in Judea, that the mention of them appears in the most solemn passages of the Evangelic and Apostolic history, while a Jewish historian gives us one of the best accounts of their discipline and exercises.

#### Troops Quartered in Palestine

But the legionary soldiers, with their cavalry and auxiliaries, were not the only military force in the Empire, and, as it seems, not the only one in Judea itself. The great body of troops at Rome (as we shall see when we have followed St. Paul to the metropolis) were the Pretorian Guards, amounting at this period to 10,000 men. These favoured forces were entirely recruited from Italy; their pay was higher, and their time of service shorter; and, for the most part, they were not called out on foreign service. Yet there is much weight in the opinion which regards the Augustan Cohort of Acts 27:1 as a part of this Imperial Guard. Possibly it was identical with the Italian Cohort of Acts 10:1. It might well be that the same corps might be called "Italian," because its men were exclusively Italians; and "Augustan," because they were properly part of the Emperor's guard, though some of them might occasionally be attached to the person of a provincial governor. And we observe that, while Cornelius (10:1) and Julius (27:1) are both Roman names, it is at Caesarea that each of these cohorts is said to have been stationed. As regards the Augustan cohort, if the view above given is correct, one result of it is singularly interesting: for it seems that Julius the centurion, who conducted the Apostle Paul to Rome, can be identified with a high degree of

probability with Julius Priscus, who was afterwards prefect of the Pretorian Guards under the Emperor Vitellius.

### Caesarea

This brief notice may suffice, concerning the troops quartered in Palestine, and especially at Caesarea. The city itself remains to be described. Little now survives on the spot to aid us in the restoration of this handsome metropolis. On the wide area once occupied by its busy population there is silence, interrupted only by the monotonous washing of the sea; and no sign of human life, save the occasional encampment of Bedouin Arabs, or the accident of a small coasting vessel anchoring off the shore. The best of the ruins are engulfed by the sand, or concealed by the encroaching sea. The nearest road passes at some distance, so that comparatively few travellers have visited Caesarea. Its glory was shortlived. Its decay has been complete, as its rise was arbitrary and sudden. Strabo, in the reign of Augustus, describes at this part of the inhospitable coast of Palestine nothing but a landing place with a castle called Strato's tower. Less than eighty years afterwards we read in Tacitus and Pliny of a city here, which was in possession of honourable privileges, which was the "Head of Judea," as Antioch was of Syria. Josephus explains to us the change which took place in so short an interval, by describing the work which Herod the Great began and completed in twelve years. Before building Antipatris in honour of his father, he built on the shore between Dora and Joppa, where Strato's castle stood near the boundary of Galilee and Samaria, a city of sumptuous palaces in honour of Augustus Caesar.

The city was provided with everything that could contribute to magnificence, amusement, and health. But its great boast was its harbour, which provided for the ships which visited that dangerous coast a safe basin, equal in extent to the Piraeus. Vast stones were sunk in the sea to the depth of twenty fathoms, and thus a stupendous breakwater was formed, curving

round so as to afford complete protection from the southwesterly winds, and open only on the north. Such is an imperfect description of that city, which in its rise and greatest eminence is exactly cotemporaneous with the events of which we read in the Gospels and the Acts of the Apostles. It has, indeed, some connection with later history.

Vespasian was here declared Emperor, and he conferred on it the title of a colony, with the additional honour of being called by his own name. Here Eusebius and Procopius were born, and thus it is linked with the recollections of Constantine and Justinian. After this time its annals are obscured, though the character of its remains which have been aptly termed "ruins of ruins," show that it must have long been a city of note under the successive occupants of Palestine. Its chief association, however, must always be with the age of which we are writing. Its two great features were its close connection with Rome and the Emperors, and the large admixture of heathen strangers in its population. Not only do we see here the residence of Roman procurators, the quarters of imperial troops and the port by which Judea was entered from the west, but a Roman impress was ostentatiously given to everything that belonged to Caesarea.

The conspicuous object to those who approached from the sea was a temple dedicated to Caesar and to Rome: the harbour was called the "Augustan harbour:" the city itself was "Augustan Caesarea." And, finally, the foreign influence here was so great, that the Septuagint translation of the Scriptures was read in the synagogues. There was a standing quarrel between the Greeks and the Jews, as to whether it was a Greek city or a Jewish city. The Jews appealed to the fact that it was built by a Jewish prince. The Greeks pointed to the temples and statues. This quarrel was never appeased till the great war broke out, the first act of which was the slaughter of 20,000 Jews in the streets of Caesarea.

Such was the city in which St. Paul was kept in detention among the Roman soldiers, till the

time should come for his trial before that unscrupulous governor, whose character has been above described. His accusers were not long in arriving. The law required that causes should be heard speedily; and the Apostle's enemies at Jerusalem were not wanting in zeal. Thus, after five days, the high priest Ananias and certain members of the Sanhedrin appeared, with one of those advocates who practised in the law courts of the provinces, where the forms of Roman law were imperfectly known, and the Latin language imperfectly understood.

The man, whose professional services were engaged on this occasion, was called Tertullus. The name is Roman, and there is little doubt that he was an Italian, and spoke on this occasion in Latin. The criminal information was formally laid before the governor. The prisoner was summoned and Tertullus brought forward the charges against him in a set speech, which we need not quote at length.

He began by loading Felix with unmerited praises, and then proceeded to allege three distinct heads of accusation against St. Paul, charging him, first, with causing factious disturbances among all the Jews throughout the Empire (which was an offence against the Roman Government, and amounted to *Majestas* or treason against the Emperor), secondly, with being a ringleader of "the sect of the Nazarenes" (which involved heresy against the Law of Moses), and thirdly, with an attempt to profane the Temple at Jerusalem (an offence not only against the Jewish, but also against the Roman Law, which protected the Jews in the exercise of their worship).

He concluded by asserting (with serious deviations from the truth) that Lysias, the commandant of the garrison, had forcibly taken the prisoner away, when the Jews were about to judge him by their own ecclesiastical law, and had thus improperly brought the matter before Felix. The drift of this representation was evidently to persuade Felix to give up St. Paul to the Jewish courts, in which case his assassination would have been easily

accomplished. And the Jews who were present gave a vehement assent to the statements of Tertullus, making no secret of their animosity against St. Paul, and asserting that these things were indeed so.

The governor now made a gesture to the prisoner to signify that he might make his defence. The Jews were silent: and the Apostle, after briefly expressing his satisfaction that he had to plead his cause before one so well acquainted with Jewish customs, refuted Tertullus step by step. He said that on his recent visit to Jerusalem at the festival (and he added that it was only twelve days since he had left Caesarea for that purpose), he had caused no disturbance in any part of Jerusalem, that, as to heresy, he had never swerved from his belief in the Law and the Prophets, and that in conformity with that belief, he held the doctrine of a resurrection, and sought to live conscientiously before the God of his fathers, and, as to the Temple, so far from profaning it, he had been found in it deliberately observing the very strictest ceremonies.

The Jews of Asia he added, who had been his first accusers, ought to have been present as witnesses now. Those who were present knew full well that no other charge was brought home to him before the Sanhedrin except what related to the belief that he held in common with the Pharisees. But, without further introduction, we quote St. Luke's summary of his own words:

#### Acts 24:10 21

**Knowing, as I do, that thou hast been judge over this nation for many years, I defend myself in the matters brought against me with greater confidence. For it is in thy power to learn, that only twelve days have passed since I went up to Jerusalem to worship. And neither in the Temple, nor in the synagogues, nor in the streets, did they find me disputing with any man, or causing any disorderly concourse of people; nor can they prove against me the things whereof they now accuse me.**

**But this I acknowledge to thee, that I follow the opinion, which they call a sect, and thus worship the God of my fathers. And I believe all things which are written in the Law and in the Prophets; and I hold a hope towards God, which my accusers themselves entertain, that there will be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and of the unjust. Wherefore I myself also strive earnestly to keep a conscience always void of offence towards God and man.**

**Now after several years I came hither, to bring alms to my nation, and offerings to the Temple. And they found me so doing in the Temple, after I had undergone purification; not gathering together a multitude, nor causing a tumult; but certain Jews from Asia discovered me, who ought to have been here before thee to accuse me, if they had anything to object against me.**

**Or let these my accusers themselves say whether they found me guilty of any offence, when I stood before the Sanhedrin; except it be for these words only which I cried out as I stood in the midst of them: "Concerning the resurrection of the dead, I am called in question before you this day."**

There was all the appearance of truthfulness in St. Paul's words; and they harmonised entirely with the statement contained in the dispatch of Claudius Lysias. Moreover, Felix had resided so long in Caesarea, where the Christian religion had been known for many years, and had penetrated even among the troops, that "he had a more accurate knowledge of their religion" (5:22) than to be easily deceived by the misrepresentations of the Jews. Thus a strong impression was made on the mind of this wicked man.

But his was one of those characters, which are easily affected by feelings, but always drawn away from right action by the overpowering motive of self interest. He could not make up his mind to acquit St. Paul. He deferred all inquiry into the case for the present. "When Lysias comes down," he said, "I will decide finally between you." Meanwhile he placed the Apostle under the charge of the centurion who had brought him to Caesarea, with directions that

he should be treated with kindness and consideration. Close confinement was indeed necessary, both to keep him in safety from the Jews, and because he was not yet acquitted: but orders were given that he should have every relaxation which could be permitted in such a case, and that any of his friends should be allowed to visit him, and to minister to his comfort.

We read nothing, however, of Lysias coming to Caesarea, or of any further judicial proceedings. Some few days afterwards Felix came into the audience chamber with his wife Drusilla, and the prisoner was summoned before them. Drusilla, "being a Jewess" (v. 24), took a lively interest in what Felix told her of Paul, and was curious to hear something of this faith which had "Christ" for its object. Thus Paul had an opportunity in his bonds of preaching the Gospel, and such an opportunity as he could hardly otherwise have obtained. His audience consisted of a Roman libertine and a profligate Jewish princess: and he so preached, as a faithful Apostle must needs have preached to such hearers. In speaking of Christ, he spoke of "righteousness and temperance and judgment to come," and while he was so discoursing, "Felix trembled." Yet still we hear of no decisive result. "Go thy way for this time: when I have a convenient season, I will send for thee," was the response of the conscience stricken but impenitent sinner, the response which the Divine Word has received ever since, when listened to in a like spirit.

We are explicitly informed why this governor shut his ears to conviction, and even neglected his official duty, and kept his prisoner in cruel suspense. He hoped that he might receive from Paul a bribe for his liberation. He was not the only governor of Judea, against whom a similar accusation is brought, and Felix, well knowing how the Christians aided one another in distress, and possibly having some information of the funds with which St. Paul had recently been entrusted, and ignorant of those principles which make it impossible for a true Christian to tamper by bribes with the course of law, might

naturally suppose that he had here a good prospect of enriching himself. "Hence he frequently sent for Paul, and had many conversations with him." But his hopes were unfulfilled. Paul, who was ever ready to claim the protection of the law, would not seek to evade it by dishonourable means: and the Christians, who knew how to pray for an Apostle in bonds (Acts 12), would not forget the duty of "rendering unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's." Thus Paul remained in the Pretorium; and the suspense continued two years.

Such a pause in a career of such activity, such an arrest of the Apostle's labours at so critical a time, two years taken from the best part of a life of such importance to the world, would seem to us a mysterious dispensation of Providence, if we did not know that God has an inner work to accomplish in those who are the chosen instruments for effecting His greatest purposes. As Paul might need the repose of preparation in Arabia, before he entered on his career, so his prison at Caesarea might be consecrated to the calm meditation, the less interrupted prayer, which resulted in a deeper experience and knowledge of the power of the Gospel. Nor need we assume that his active exertions for others were entirely suspended. The care of all the churches might still be resting on him: many messages, and even letters, 2 of which we know nothing, may have been sent from Caesarea to brethren at a distance. And a plausible conjecture fixes this period and place for the writing of St. Luke's Gospel under the superintendence of the Apostle of the Gentiles.

All positive information, however, is denied us concerning the employments of St. Paul while imprisoned at Caesarea. We are the more disposed, therefore, to turn our thoughts to the consideration of the nature and outward circumstances of his confinement; and this inquiry is indeed necessary for the due elucidation of the narrative.

When an accusation was brought against a Roman citizen, the magistrate, who had criminal jurisdiction in the case, appointed the

time for hearing the cause, and detained the accused in custody during the interval. He was not bound to fix any definite time for the trial, but might defer it at his own arbitrary pleasure; and he might also commit the prisoner at his discretion to any of the several kinds of custody recognised by the Roman law. These were as follows: First, confinement in the public jail (*custodia publica*), which was the most severe kind; the common gaols throughout the Empire being dungeons of the worst description, where the prisoners were kept in chains, or even bound in positions of torture. Of this we have seen an example in the confinement of Paul and Silas at Philippi.

Secondly, free custody (*custodia libera*), which was the mildest kind. Here the accused party was committed to the charge of a magistrate or senator, who became responsible for his appearance on the day of trial; but this species of detention was only employed in the case of men of high rank. Thirdly, military custody (*custodia militaris*), which was introduced at the beginning of the Imperial regime. In this last species of custody the accused person was given in charge to a soldier, who was responsible with his own life for the safe keeping of his prisoner. This was further secured by chaining the prisoner's right hand to the soldier's left. The soldiers of course relieved one another in this duty. Their prisoner was usually kept in their barracks, but sometimes allowed to reside in a private house under their charge.

It was under this latter species of custody that St. Paul was now placed by Felix, who gave him in charge to the centurion, that he should be kept in custody (Acts 24:23); but (as we have seen) he added the direction, that he should be treated with such indulgence as this kind of detention permitted. Josephus tells us that, when the severity of Agrippa's imprisonment at Rome was mitigated, his chain was relaxed at mealtimes. This illustrates the nature of the alleviations which such confinement admitted; and it is obvious that the centurion might render it more or less galling, according to his

inclination, or the commands he had received. The most important alleviation of St. Paul's imprisonment consisted in the order, which Felix added, that his friends should be allowed free access to him.

Meantime, the political state of Judea grew more embarrassing. The exasperation of the people under the maladministration of Felix became increasingly implacable; and the crisis was rapidly approaching. It was during the two years of St. Paul's imprisonment that the disturbances, to which allusion has been made before, took place in the streets of Caesarea. The troops, who were chiefly recruited in the province, fraternised with the heathen population, while the Jews trusted chiefly to the influence of their wealth. In the end Felix was summoned to Rome, and the Jews followed him with their accusations. Thus it was that he was anxious, even at his departure, "to confer obligations upon them" (v. 27), and one effort to diminish his unpopularity was "to leave Paul in bonds." In so doing, he doubtless violated the law, and trifled with the rights of a Roman citizen; but the favour of the provincial Jews was that which he needed; and the Christians were weak in comparison with them; nor were such delays in the administration of justice unprecedented, either at Rome or in the provinces.

Thus it was, that, as another governor of Judea opened the prisons that he might make himself popular, Felix, from the same motive, riveted the chains of an innocent man. The same enmity of the world against the Gospel which set Barabbas free, left Paul a prisoner.

No change seems to have taken place in the outward circumstances of the Apostle, when Festus came to take command of the province. He was still in confinement as before. But immediately on the accession of the new governor, the unsleeping hatred of the Jews made a fresh attempt upon his life; and the course of their proceedings presently changed the whole aspect of his case, and led to unexpected results.

### Paul Before Festus

When a Roman governor came to his province whether his character was coarse and cruel, like that of Felix, or reasonable and just, as that of Festus seems to have been, his first step would be to make himself acquainted with the habits and prevalent feelings of the people he was come to rule, and to visit such places as might seem to be more peculiarly associated with national interests. The Jews were the most remarkable people in the whole extent of the Roman provinces: and no city was to any other people what Jerusalem was to the Jews.

We are not surprised, therefore, to learn that "three days" after his arrival at the political metropolis, Festus "went up to Jerusalem." Here he was immediately met by an urgent request against St. Paul, preferred by the chief priests and leading men among the Jews, and seconded, as it seems, by a general concourse of the people, who came round him with no little vehemence and clamour. They asked as a favour (and they had good reason to hope that the new governor on his accession would not refuse it), that he would allow St. Paul to be brought up to Jerusalem.

The plea, doubtless, was, that he should be tried again before the Sanhedrin. But the real purpose was to assassinate him on some part of the road, over which he had been safely brought by the escort two years before, so bitter and so enduring was their hatred against the apostate Pharisee. The answer of Festus was dignified and just, and worthy of his office. He said that Paul was in custody at Caesarea, and that he himself was shortly to return thither (v. 4), adding that it was not the custom of the Romans to give up an uncondemned person as a mere favour (v. 16). The accused must have the accuser face to face, and full opportunity must be given for a defence. Those, therefore, who were competent to undertake the task of accusers, should come down with him to Caesarea, and there prefer the accusation (v. 5).

Festus remained "eight or ten days" in Jerusalem, and then returned to Caesarea; and

the accusers went down the same day. No time was lost after their arrival. The very next day Festus took his seat on the judicial tribunal, with his Assessors near him (v. 12), and ordered Paul to be brought before him. The Jews who had come down from Jerusalem stood round, bringing various heavy accusations against him (which, however, they could not establish), and clamorously asserting that he was worthy of death. We must not suppose that the charges now brought were different in substance from those urged by Tertullus.

The Prosecutors were in fact the same now as then, namely, delegates from the Sanhedrin; and the prisoner was still lying under the former accusation, which had never been withdrawn. We see from what is said of Paul's defence, that the charges were still classed under the same three heads as before; viz. Heresy, Sacrilege, and Treason. But Festus saw very plainly that the offence was really connected with the religious opinions of the Jews, instead of relating, as he at first expected, to some political movement (ver. 18, 19); and he was soon convinced that Paul had done nothing worthy of death (v. 25). Being, therefore, in perplexity (v. 20), and at the same time desirous of ingratiating himself with the provincials (v. 9), he proposed to St. Paul that he should go up to Jerusalem, and be tried there in his presence, or at least under his protection. But the Apostle knew full well the danger that lurked in this proposal, and, conscious of the rights which he possessed as a Roman citizen, he refused to accede to it, and said boldly to Festus:

**Acts 25:10, 11**

**I stand before Caesar's tribunal, and there ought my trial to be. To the Jews I have done no wrong, as thou knowest full well. If I am guilty, and have done anything worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if the things whereof these men accuse me are nought, no man can give me up to them. I appeal unto Caesar.**

Festus was probably surprised by this termination of the proceedings ; but no choice

was open to him. Paul had urged his prerogative as a Roman citizen, to be tried, not by the Jewish, but by the Roman law; a claim which, indeed, was already admitted by the words of Festus, who only proposed to transfer him to the jurisdiction of the Sanhedrin with his own consent: He ended by availing himself of one of the most important privileges of Roman citizenship, the right of appeal. By the mere pronouncement of these potent words, "I appeal unto Caesar," he instantly removed his cause from the jurisdiction of the magistrate before whom he stood, and transferred it to the supreme tribunal of the Emperor at Rome.

To explain the full effect of this proceeding, we must observe that in the provinces of Rome, the supreme criminal jurisdiction (both under the Republic and the Empire) was exercised by the Governors, whether they were Proconsuls, Proprætors, or (as in the case of Judea) Procurators. To this jurisdiction the provincials were subject without appeal, and it is needless to say that it was often exercised in the most arbitrary manner. But the Roman citizens in the provinces, though also liable to be brought before the judgment seat of the Governor, were protected from the abuse of his authority; for they had the right of stopping his proceedings against them by appealing to the Tribunes, whose intervention at once transferred the cognizance of the cause to the ordinary tribunals at Rome.

This power was only one branch of that prerogative of intercession (as it was called) by which the Tribunes could stop the execution of the sentences of all other magistrates. Under the Imperial regime, the Emperor stood in the place of the Tribunes; Augustus and his successors being invested with the Tribunician power, as the most important of the many Republican offices which were concentrated in their persons. Hence the Emperors constitutionally exercised the right of intercession, by which they might stop the proceedings of inferior authorities. But they extended this prerogative much beyond the

limits which had confined it during the Republican epoch. They not only arrested the execution of the sentences of other magistrates, but claimed and exercised the right of reversing or altering them, and of re hearing the causes themselves. In short, the Imperial tribunal was erected into a supreme court of appeal from all inferior courts, either in Rome or in the provinces. Such was the state of things when St. Paul appealed from Festus to Caesar.

If the appeal was admissible, it at once suspended all further proceedings on the part of Festus. There were, however, a few cases in which the right of appeal was disallowed; a bandit, or a pirate, for example, taken in the fact, might be condemned and executed by the Proconsul, notwithstanding his appeal to the Emperor. Accordingly, we read that Festus took counsel with his Assessors, concerning the admissibility of Paul's appeal. But no doubt could be entertained on this head; and he immediately pronounced the decision of the Court. "Thou hast appealed unto Caesar: to Caesar thou shalt be sent."

Thus the hearing of the cause, as far as Festus was concerned, had terminated. There only remained for him the office of remitting to the supreme tribunal, before which it was to be carried, his official report upon its previous progress. He was bound to forward to Rome all the acts and documents bearing upon the trial, the depositions of the witnesses on both sides, and the record of his own judgment on the case. And it was his further duty to keep the person of the accused in safe custody, and to send him to Rome for trial at the earliest opportunity.

Festus, however, was still in some perplexity. Though the appeal had been allowed, yet the information elicited on the trial was so vague, that he hardly knew what statement to insert in his dispatch to the Emperor: and it seemed a foolish thing to him to send a prisoner to Rome without at the same time specifying the charges against him' (v. 27). It happened about this time that Herod Agrippa II, King of Chalcis, with his sister Berenice, came on a complimentary visit

to the new governor, and stayed some days at Caesarea.

### Paul Before Herod Agrippa II

This prince had been familiarly acquainted from his youth with all that related to the Jewish law, and moreover, was at this time (as we have seen) superintendent of the Temple, with the power of appointing the high priest. Festus took advantage of this opportunity of consulting one better informed than himself on the points in question. He recounted to Agrippa what has been summarily related above: confessing his ignorance of Jewish theology, and alluding especially to Paul's reiterated assertion concerning "one Jesus who had died and was alive again." This cannot have been the first time that Agrippa had heard of the resurrection of Jesus, or of the Apostle Paul. His curiosity was aroused, and he expressed a wish to see the prisoner. Festus readily acceded to the request, and fixed the next day for the interview.

At the time appointed Agrippa and Berenice came with great pomp and display and entered into the audience chamber, with a suite of military officers and the chief men of Caesarea: and at the command of Festus, Paul was brought before them. The proceedings were opened by a ceremonious speech from Festus himself, describing the circumstances under which the prisoner had been brought under his notice, and ending with a statement of his perplexity as to what he should write to "his Lord" the Emperor. This being concluded, Agrippa said condescendingly to St. Paul, that he was now permitted to speak for himself. And the Apostle, "stretching out the hand" which was chained to the soldier who guarded him, spoke thus:

### Acts 26:2 18

**I think myself happy, King Agrippa, that I shall defend myself today, before thee, against all the charges charges of my Jewish accusers; especially because thou art expert in all Jewish customs and questions. Wherefore I pray thee to hear me patiently.**

My life and conduct from my youth, as it was at first among my own nation at Jerusalem, is known to all the Jews. They know me of old (I say) from the beginning, and can testify (if they would) that, following the strictest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee. And now I stand here to be judged, for the hope of the promise made by God unto our fathers. Which promise is the end whereto, in all their zealous worship, night and day, our twelve tribes hope to come. Yet this hope, King Agrippa, is charged against me as a crime, and that by Jews. What! is it judged among you a thing incredible that God should raise the dead?

Now I myself determined, in my own mind, that I ought exceedingly to oppose the name of Jesus the Nazarene. And this I did in Jerusalem, and many of the saints I myself shut up in prison, having received from the chief priests authority so to do; and when they were condemned to death, I gave my vote against them. And in every synagogue I continually punished them, and endeavoured to compel them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I went even to foreign cities to persecute them.

With this purpose I was on my road to Damascus, bearing my authority and commission from the chief priests, when I saw in the way, O King, at midday a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and those who journeyed with me. And when we all were fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking to me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the goad.* And I said, *Who art thou, Lord?* And the Lord said, *I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. But rise and stand upon thy feet; for to this end I have appeared unto thee, to ordain thee a minister and a witness both of those things which thou hast seen, and of those things wherein I shall appear unto thee. And thee have I chosen from the house of Israel, and from among the Gentiles; unto whom now I send thee, to open their eyes, that they may turn from darkness to light, from the power of Satan unto God; that they may receive forgiveness of sins,*

and an inheritance among the sanctified, by faith in me.

Whereupon, O King Agrippa, I was not disobedient the heavenly vision. But first to those at Damascus and Jerusalem, and throughout all the land of Judea, and also to the Gentiles, I proclaimed the tidings that they should repent and turn to God, and do works worthy of their repentance.

For these causes the Jews, when they caught me in the Temple, endeavoured to kill me.

Therefore, through the succour which I have received from God, I stand firm unto this day, and bear my testimony both to small and great; but I declare nothing else than what the Prophets and Moses foretold, that the Messiah should suffer, and that He should be the first to rise from the dead, and should be the messenger of light to the house of Israel, and also to the Gentiles.

Here Festus broke out into a loud exclamation, expressive of ridicule and surprise. To the cold man of the world, as to the inquisitive Athenians, the doctrine of the resurrection was foolishness: and he said, "Paul, thou art mad: thy incessant study is turning thee to madness." The Apostle had alluded in his speech to writings which had a mysterious sound, to the prophets and to Moses and it is reasonable to believe that in his imprisonment, such books and parchments, as he afterwards wrote for in his second letter to Timothy, were brought to him by his friends. Thus Festus adopted the conclusion that he had before him a mad enthusiast, whose head had been turned by poring over strange learning. The Apostle's reply was courteous and self possessed, but intensely earnest.

#### Acts 25 27

I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speak forth the words of truth and soberness. For the king has knowledge of these matters; and moreover I speak to him with boldness; because I am persuaded that none of these things is unknown to him, for this has not been done in a corner. King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest.

The King's reply was: "Thou wilt soon~ persuade me to be a Christian." The words were doubtless spoken ironically and in contempt: but Paul took them as though they had been spoken in earnest, and made that noble answer, which expresses, as no other words ever expressed them, that union of enthusiastic zeal with genuine courtesy, which is the true characteristic of a Christian.

**I would to God, that whether soon or late, not only thou, but also all who hear me to day, were such as I am; excepting these chains.**

This concluded the interview. King Agrippa had no desire to hear more; and he rose from his seat, with the Governor and Berenice and those who sat with them. As they retired, they discussed the case with one another, and agreed that Paul was guilty of nothing worthy of death or even imprisonment. Agrippa said positively to Festus, "This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed to the Emperor." But the appeal had been made. There was no retreat either for Festus or for Paul. On the new Governor's part there was no wish to continue the procrastination of Felix; and nothing now remained but to wait for a convenient opportunity of sending his prisoner to Rome.

## Chapter 23

### Ships and Navigation of the Ancients

Before entering on the narrative of that voyage<sup>675</sup> which brought the Apostle Paul, through

---

<sup>675</sup> The nautical difficulties of this narrative have been successfully explained by two independent inquirers; and, so far as we are aware, by no one else. A practical knowledge of seamanship was required for the elucidation of the whole subject; and none of the ordinary commentators seem to have looked on it with the eye of a sailor. The first who examined St. Paul's voyage in a practical spirit was the late Admiral Sir Charles Penrose whose life has been lately published (Murray, 1851). His MSS. have been kindly placed in the hands of the writer of this Chapter, and they are frequently referred to in the notes. A similar

manifold and imminent dangers, from Caesarea to Rome, it will be convenient to make a few introductory remarks concerning the ships and navigation of the ancients. By fixing clearly in the mind some of the principal facts relating to the form and structure of Greek and Roman vessels, the manner in which these vessels were worked, the prevalent lines of traffic in the Mediterranean, and the opportunities afforded to travellers of reaching their destination by sea, we shall be better able to follow this voyage without distractions or explanations, and with a clearer perception of each event as it occurred.

With regard to the vessels and seamanship of the Greeks and Romans, many popular mistakes have prevailed, to which it is hardly necessary to allude, after the full illustration which the subject has now received. We must not entertain the notion that all the commerce of the ancients was conducted merely by mean or small craft, which proceeded timidly in the day time, and only in the summer season, along the coast from harbour to harbour, and which were manned by mariners almost ignorant of the use of sails, and always trembling at the prospect of a storm. We cannot, indeed, assert that the arts either of ship building or navigation were matured in the Mediterranean so early as the first century of the Christian era. The Greeks and Romans were ignorant of the use of the compass: the instruments with which they took observations must have been rude compared with our modern quadrants and sextants<sup>676</sup>:

---

investigation was made subsequently, but independently, and more minutely and elaborately, by James Smith, Esq. of Jordanhill, whose published work on the subject (Longmans, 1848) has already obtained an European reputation. Besides other valuable aid, Mr. Smith has examined the sheets of this Chapter, as they have passed through the press. We have also to express our acknowledgments for much kind assistance received from Admiral Moorsom and other naval officers.

<sup>676</sup> We have no information of any nautical instruments at the time when we read of Ptolemy's mural quadrant at Alexandria; nor is it likely that any more effectual means of taking exact observations at

and we have no reason to believe that their vessels were provided with nautical charts: and thus, when "neither sun nor stars appeared," and the sky gave indications of danger, they hesitated to try the open sea. But the ancient sailor was well skilled in the changeable weather of the Levant, and his very ignorance of the aids of modern science made him the more observant of external phenomena, and more familiar with his own coasts. He was not less prompt and practical than a modern seaman in the handling of his ship, when overtaken by stormy weather on a dangerous coast.

The ship of the Greek and Roman mariner was comparatively rude, both in its build and its rig. The hull was not laid down with the fine lines, with which we are so familiar in the competing vessels of England and America, and the arrangement of the sails exhibited little of that complicated distribution yet effective combination of mechanical forces, which we admire in the East Indiaman or modern Frigate. With the war ships of the ancients we need not here occupy ourselves or the reader: but two peculiarities in the structure of Greek and Roman merchantmen must be carefully noticed; for both of them are much concerned in the seamanship described in the narrative before us.

The ships of the Greeks and Romans, like those of the early Northmen, were not steered by means of a single rudder, but by two paddle rudders, one on each quarter. Hence "rudders" are mentioned in the plural by St. Luke (Acts 27:40) as by heathen writers: and the fact is made still more palpable by the representations of art, as in the coins of Imperial Rome or the tapestry of Bayeux: nor does the hinged rudder appear on any of the remains of antiquity, till a late period in the Middle Ages.

And as this mode of steering is common to the two sources, from which we must trace our

---

sea, than the simple quadrant held in the hand, were in use before the invention of the reflecting quadrants and sextants by Hooke and Hadley. The want of exact chronometers must also be borne in mind.

present art of ship building, so also is the same mode of rigging characteristic of the ships both of the North Sea and the Mediterranean. We find in these ancient ships one large mast, with strong ropes rove through a block at the mast head, and one large sail, fastened to an enormous yard. We shall see the importance of attending to this arrangement, when we enter upon the incidents of St. Paul's voyage (Acts 27:17, 19). One consequence was, that instead of the strain being distributed over the hull, as in a modern ship, it was concentrated upon a smaller portion of it: and thus in ancient times there must have been a greater tendency to leakage than at present; and we have the testimony of ancient writers to the fact, that a vast proportion of the vessels lost were by foundering. Thus Virgil, whose descriptions of everything which relates to the sea are peculiarly exact, speaks of the ships in the fleet of Aeneas as lost in various ways, some on rocks and some on quicksands, but "all with fastenings loosened:" and Josephus relates that the ship from which he so narrowly escaped, foundered ~ in "Adria," and that he and his companions saved themselves by swimming through the night, an escape which found its parallel in the experience of the Apostle, who in one of those shipwrecks, of which no particular narration has been given to us, was "a night and a day in the deep" (2 Cor. 21:25). The same danger was apprehended in the ship of Jonah, from which "they cast forth the wares that were in the ship into the sea to lighten it"; as well as in the ship of St. Paul, from which, after having lightened it the first day, they cast out the tackling on the second day, and finally "threw out the cargo of wheat into the sea" (27:8, 19, 38).

This leads us to notice what may be called a third peculiarity of the appointments of ancient ships, as compared with those of modern times. In consequence of the extreme danger to which they were exposed from leaking, it was customary to take to sea, as part of their ordinary gear, undergirders, which were simply ropes for passing round the hull of the ship and

thus preventing the planks from starting <sup>677</sup>. One of the most remarkable proofs of the truth of this statement is to be found in the inscribed marbles dug up within the last twenty years at the Piraeus which give us an inventory of the Attic fleet in its flourishing period; as one of the most remarkable accounts of the application of these artificial 'helps' (27:17) in a storm, is to be found in the narrative before us.

If these differences between ancient ships and our own are borne in mind, the problems of early seamanship in the Mediterranean are nearly reduced to those with which the modern navigator has to deal in the same seas. The practical questions which remain to be asked are these: What were the dimensions of ancient ships? How near the wind could they sail? And, with a fair wind, at what rate?

As regards the first of these questions, there seems no reason why we should suppose the old trading vessels of the Mediterranean to be much smaller than our own. We may rest this conclusion, both on the character of the cargoes with which they were freighted, and on the number of persons we know them to have sometimes conveyed. Though the great ship of Ptolemy Philadelphus may justly be regarded as built for ostentation rather than for use, the Alexandrian vessel, which forms the subject of one of Lucian's dialogues, and is described as

---

<sup>677</sup> This is what is called "frapping" by seamen in the English navy, who are always taught how to frap a ship. The only difference is, that the practice is now resorted to much less frequently, and that modern ships are not supplied with "undergirders" specially prepared. The operation and its use are thus described in Falconer's Marine Dictionary: "To frap a ship is to pass four or five turns of a large cable-laid rope round the hull or frame of a ship, to support her in a great storm, or otherwise, when it is apprehended that she is not strong enough to resist the violent efforts of the sea." In most of the European languages the nautical term is, like the Greek, expressive of the nature of the operation. In Spanish the word is *tortorar*: a circumstance which possesses some etymological interest, since the word used by Isidore of Seville for a rope used in this way is *tormentum*.

driven by stress of weather into the Pineus, furnishes us with satisfactory data for the calculation of the tonnage of ancient ships. Two hundred and seventy six souls were on board the ship in which St. Paul was wrecked (27:37), and the "Castor and Pollux" conveyed them, in addition to her own crew, from Malta to Puteoli (28:11): while Josephus informs us that there were six hundred on board the ship from which he, with about eighty others, escaped. Such considerations lead us to suppose that the burden of many ancient merchantmen may have been from five hundred to a thousand tons. <sup>678</sup>

A second question of greater consequence in reference to the present subject, relates to the angle which the course of an ancient ship could be made to assume with the direction of the wind, or to use the language of English sailors (who divide the compass into thirty two points), within how many points of the wind she would sail? That ancient vessels could not work to windward, is one of the popular mistakes which need not be refuted. They doubtless took advantage of the Etesian winds, just as the traders in the Eastern Archipelago sail with the monsoons: but those who were accustomed to a seafaring life could not avoid discovering that a ship's course can be made to assume a less angle than a right angle with the direction of the wind, or, in other words, that she can be made to sail within less than eight points of the wind

Pliny distinctly says, that it is possible for a ship to sail on contrary tacks. The limits of this possibility depend upon the character of the

---

<sup>678</sup> The ship must have been of considerable burden, as we find there were no less than 276 persons embarked on board her. To afford fair accommodation for troops in a transport expressly fitted for the purpose, we should allow at the rate of a ton and a half to each man, and as the ship we are considering was not expressly fitted for passengers, we may conclude that her burden was fully, or at least nearly double, the number of tons, to the souls on board, or upwards of 500 tons.

vessel and the violence of the gale. We shall find, below, that the vessel in which St. Paul was wrecked, "could not look at the wind," for so the Greek word (27:1515) may be literally translated in the language of English sailors, though with a less violent gale, an English ship, well managed, could easily have kept her course. A modern merchantman, in moderate weather, can sail within six points of the wind. In an ancient vessel the yard could not be braced so sharp, and the hull was more clumsy: and it would not be safe to say that she could sail nearer the wind than within seven points.

To turn now to the third question, the rate of sailing, the very nature of the rig, which was less adapted than our own for working to windward, was peculiarly favourable to a quick run before the wind. In the China seas, during the monsoons, junks have been seen from the deck of a British vessel behind in the horizon in the morning, and before in the horizon in the evening. Thus we read of passages accomplished of old in the Mediterranean, which would do credit to a well appointed modern ship. Pliny, who was himself a seaman, and in command of a fleet at the time of his death, might furnish us with several instances. We might quote the story of the fresh fig, which Cato produced in the senate at Rome, when he urged his countrymen to undertake the third Punic war, by impressing on them the imminent nearness of their enemy. "This fruit," he says, "was gathered fresh at Carthage three days ago."

Other voyages, which he adduces, are such as these, seven days from Cadiz to Ostia, seven days from the straits of Messina to Alexandria, nine days from Puteoli to Alexandria. These instances are quite in harmony with what we read in other authors. Thus Rhodes and Cape Salmone, at the eastern extremity of Crete, are reckoned by Diodorus and Strabo as four days from Alexandria: Plutarch tells us of a voyage within the day from Brundisium to Corcyra: Procopius describes Belisarius as sailing on one day with his fleet from Malta, and landing on the next day some leagues to the south of Carthage. A thousand stades (or between 100

and 150 miles), is reckoned by the geographers a common distance to accomplish in the twenty four hours. And the conclusion to which we are brought is, that with a fair wind an ancient merchantman would easily sail at the rate of seven knots an hour, a conclusion in complete harmony both with what we have observed in a former voyage of St. Paul (Chap. 20), and with what will demand our attention at the close of that voyage, which brought him at length from Malta by Rhegium to Puteoli (Acts 28:13).

The remarks which have been made will convey to the reader a sufficient notion of the ships and navigation of the ancients. If to the above mentioned peculiarities of build and rig we add the eye painted at the prow, the conventional ornaments at stem and stern, which are familiar to us in remaining works of art, and the characteristic figures of Heathen divinities, we shall gain a sufficient idea of an ancient merchantman. And a glance at the chart of the Mediterranean will enable us to realise in our imagination the nature of the voyages that were most frequent in the ancient world. With the same view of elucidating the details of our subject beforehand, we may now devote a short space to the prevalent lines of traffic, and to the opportunities of travellers by sea, in the first century of the Christian era.

### Roman Commerce

Though the Romans had no natural love for the sea, and though a commercial life was never regarded by them as an honourable occupation, and thus both experience of practical seamanship, and the business of the carrying trade remained in a great measure with the Greeks, yet a vast development had been given to commerce by the consolidation of the Roman Empire. Piracy had been effectually put down before the close of the Republic. The annexation of Egypt drew towards Italy the rich trade of the Indian seas. After the effectual reduction of Gaul and Spain, Roman soldiers and Roman slave dealers invaded the shores of Britain. The

trade of all the countries which surrounded the Mediterranean began to flow towards Rome. <sup>679</sup>

The great city herself was passive, for she had nothing to export. But the cravings of her luxury, and the necessities of her vast population, drew to one centre the converging lines of a busy traffic from a wide extent of provinces. To leave out of view what hardly concerns us here, the commerce by land from the North, some of the principal directions of trade by sea may be briefly enumerated as follows. The harbours of Ostia and Puteoli were constantly full of ships from the West, which had brought wool and other articles from Cadiz a circumstance which possesses some interest for us here, as illustrating the mode in which St. Paul might hope to accomplish his voyage to Spain (Rom. 15:24).

On the South was Sicily, often called the Storehouse of Italy, and Africa, which sent furniture woods to Rome, and heavy cargoes of marble and granite. On the East, Asia Minor was the intermediate space through which the caravan trade passed, conveying silks and spices from beyond the Euphrates to the markets and wharves of Ephesus. We might extend this enumeration by alluding to the fisheries of the Black Sea, and the wine trade of the Archipelago. But enough has been said to give some notion of the commercial activity of which Italy was the centre: and our particular attention here is required only to one branch of trade, one line of constant traffic across the waters of the Mediterranean to Rome.

Alexandria has been mentioned already as a city, which, next after Athens, exerted the strongest intellectual influence over the age in which St. Paul's appointed work was done; and we have had occasion to notice some indirect connection between this city and the Apostle's

<sup>679</sup> There seem to have been two great lines of inland trade through Asia Minor, one near the southern shore of the Black Sea, through the districts opened by the campaigns of Pompey, and the other through the centre of the country from Mazaca, on the Euphrates, to Ephesus.

own labours. But it was eminent commercially not less than intellectually. The prophetic views of Alexander were at that time receiving an ampler fulfilment than at any former period. The trade with the Indian Seas, which had been encouraged under the ptolemies, received a vast impulse in the reign of Augustus: and under the reigns of his successors, the valley of the Nile was the channel of an active transit trade in spices, dyes, jewels, and perfumes, which were brought by Arabian mariners from the far East, and poured into the markets of Italy.

But Egypt was not only the medium of transit trade. She had her own manufactures of linen, paper, and glass, which she exported in large quantities. And one natural product of her soil has been a staple commodity from the time of Pharaoh to our own. We have only to think of the fertilising inundations of the Nile, on the one hand, and, on the other, of the multitudes composing the free and slave population of Italy, in order to comprehend the activity and importance of the Alexandrian corn trade. At a later period the Emperor Commodus established a company of merchants to convey the supplies from Egypt to Rome; and the commendations which he gave himself for this forethought may still be read in the inscription round the ships represented on his coins.

The harbour, to which the Egyptian corn vessels were usually bound, was Puteoli. At the close of this chapter we shall refer to some passages which give an animated picture of the arrival of these ships. Meanwhile, it is well to have called attention to this line of traffic between Alexandria and Puteoli; for in so doing we have described the means which Divine Providence employed for bringing the Apostle to Rome.

The transition is easy from the commerce of the Mediterranean to the progress of travellers from point to point in that sea. If to this enumeration of the main lines of traffic by sea we add all the ramifications of the coasting trade which depended on them, we have before us a full view of the opportunities which travellers possessed of accomplishing their

voyages. Just in this way we have lately seen St. Paul completing the journey, on which his mind was set, from Philippi, by Miletus and Patara, to Caesarea (Chap. 20). We read of no periodical packets for the conveyance of passengers sailing between the great towns of the Mediterranean.

Emperors themselves were usually compelled to take advantage of the same opportunities to which Jewish pilgrims and Christian Apostles were limited. When Vespasian went to Rome, leaving Titus to prosecute the siege of Jerusalem, "he went on board a merchant ship, and sailed from Alexandria to Rhodes," and thence pursued his way through Greece to the Adriatic, and finally went to Rome through Italy by land. And when the Jewish war was ended, and when, suspicions having arisen concerning the allegiance of Titus to Vespasian, the son was anxious to rejoin his father, he also left Alexandria in a "merchant ship," and "hastened to Italy," touching at the very places at which St. Paul touched, first at Rhegium (28:13), and then at Puteoli.

#### Departure from Caesarea

If such was the mode in which even royal personages travelled from the provinces to the metropolis, we must of course conclude that those who travelled on the business of the state must often have been content to avail themselves of similar opportunities. The sending of state prisoners to Rome from various parts of the Empire was an event of frequent occurrence. Thus we are told by Josephus, that Felix 'for some slight offence, bound and sent to Rome several priests of his acquaintance, honourable and good men, to answer for themselves to Caesar.'" Such groups must often have left Caesarea and the other Eastern ports, in merchant vessels bound for the west; and such was the departure of St. Paul, when the time at length came for that eventful journey, which had been so long and earnestly cherished in his own wishes; so emphatically foretold by Divine revelation; and which was destined to involve such great

consequences to the whole future of Christianity.

The vessel in which he sailed, with certain other state prisoners, was "a ship of Adramyttium" apparently engaged in the coasting trade, and at that time (probably the end of summer or the beginning of autumn) bound on her homeward voyage. Whatever might be the harbours at which she intended to touch, her course lay along the coast of the province of Asia.

Adramyttium was itself a seaport in Mysia, which (as we have seen) was a subdivision of that province: and we have already described it as situated in the deep gulf which recedes beyond the base of Mount Ida, over against the island of Lesbos, and as connected by good roads with Pergamus and Troas on the coast, and the various marts in the interior of the peninsula. Since St. Paul never reached the place, no description of it is required. It is only needful to observe that when the vessel reached the coast of Asia, the travellers would be brought some considerable distance on their way to Rome; and there would be a good prospect of finding some other westward bound vessel, in which they might complete their voyage, more especially since the Alexandrian corn ships (as we shall see) often touched at the harbours in that neighbourhood.

St. Paul's two companions, besides the soldiers, with Julius their commanding officer, the sailors, the other prisoners, and such occasional passengers as may have taken advantage of this opportunity of leaving Caesarea, were two Christians already familiar to us, Luke the Evangelist, whose name, like that of Timotheus, is almost inseparable from the Apostle, and whom we may conclude to have been with him since his arrival in Jerusalem and Aristarchus the Macedonian, of Thessalonica, whose native country and native city have been separately mentioned before (Acts 19:29, 20:4), and who seems, from the manner in which he is spoken of in the Epistles written from Rome (Philemon 24, Col. 4:10), to have been, like St. Paul himself, a prisoner in the cause of the Gospel.

**Sidon**

On the day after sailing from Caesarea the vessel put into Sidon (v. 3). This may be readily accounted for, by supposing that she touched there for the purposes of trade, or to land some passengers. Or another hypothesis is equally allowable. Westerly and northwesterly winds prevail in the Levant at the end of summer and the beginning of autumn; and we find that it did actually blow from these quarters soon afterwards, in the course of St. Paul's voyage. Such a wind would be sufficiently fair for a passage to Sidon: and the seamen might proceed to that port in the hope of the weather becoming more favourable, and be detained there by the wind continuing in the same quarter.

The passage from Caesarea to Sidon is sixty seven miles, a distance easily accomplished, under favourable circumstances, in less than twenty four hours. In the course of the night they would pass by Ptolemais and Tyre, where St. Paul had visited the Christians two years before. Sidon is the last city on the Phoenician shore in which the Apostle's presence can be traced. It is a city associated, from the earliest times, with patriarchal and Jewish History. The limit of "the border of the Canaanites" in the description of the peopling of the earth after the Flood (Gen. 10:19), "the haven of the sea, the haven of ships" in the dim vision of the dying Patriarch (Gen. 49:13), the "great Sidon" of the wars of Joshua (Josh. 11:8), the city that never was conquered by the Israelites (Judg. 1:31), the home of the merchants that "passed over the sea" (Isa. 23), its history was linked with all the annals of the Hebrew race.

Nor is it less familiarly known in the records of heathen antiquity. Its name is celebrated both in the Iliad and the Odyssey, and Herodotus says that its sailors were the most expert of all the Phoenicians. Its strong and massive fortifications were pulled down when this coast fell under the sway of the Persians; but its harbour remained uninjured till a far later period. The Prince of the Druses, with whose strange and brilliant career its more recent

history is most closely connected, threw masses of stone and earth into the port, in order to protect himself from the Turks: and houses are now standing on the spot where the ships of King Louis anchored in the last Crusade, and which was crowded with merchandise in that age, when the Geographer of the Roman Empire spoke of Sidon as the best harbour of Phoenicia.

Nor is the history of Sidon without a close connection with those years in which Christianity was founded. Not only did its inhabitants, with those of Tyre, follow the footsteps of Jesus, to hear His words, and to be healed of their diseases (Luke 6:17): but the Son of David Himself visited those coasts, and there rewarded the importunate faith of a Gentile suppliant (Matt. 15, Mark 7); and soon the prophecy which lay, as it were, involved in this miracle, was fulfilled by the preaching of Evangelists and Apostles. Those who had been converted during the dispersion which followed the martyrdom of Stephen were presently visited by Barnabas and Saul (Acts 11). Again, Paul with Barnabas passed through these cities on their return from the first victorious journey among the Gentiles (Acts 15:3).

Nor were these the only journeys which the Apostle had taken through Phoenicia; so that he well knew, on his arrival from Caesarea, that Christian brethren were to be found in Sidon. He, doubtless, told Julius that he had friends there, whom he wished to visit; and, either from special commands which had been given by Festus in favour of St. Paul, or through an influence which the Apostle had already gained over the centurion's mind, the desired permission was granted.

If we bear in our remembrance that St. Paul's health was naturally delicate, and that he must have suffered much during his long detention at Caesarea, a new interest is given to the touching incident, with which the narrative of this voyage opens, that the Roman officer treated this one prisoner "courteously, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself." We have already considered the military position of this centurion, and seen that there

are good grounds for identifying him with an officer mentioned by a heathen historian. It gives an additional pleasure to such investigations, when we can record our grateful recollection of kindness shown by him to that Apostle, from whom we have received our chief knowledge of the Gospel.

### Sidon to Myra

On going to sea from Sidon, the wind was unfavourable. Hence, whatever the weather had been before, it certainly blew from the westward now. The direct course from Sidon to the "coasts of Asia" would have been to the southward of Cyprus, across the sea over which the Apostle had sailed so prosperously two years before.

Thus when St. Luke says that "they sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the winds were contrary," he means that they sailed to the north east and north of the island. If there were any doubt concerning his meaning, it would be made clear by what is said afterwards, that they "sailed through the sea which is over against Cilicia and Pamphylia." The reasons why this course was taken will be easily understood by those who have navigated those seas in modern times. By standing to the north, the vessel would fall in with the current which sets in a north westerly direction past the eastern extremity of Cyprus, and then westerly along the southern coast of Asia Minor, till it is lost at the opening of the Archipelago <sup>680</sup>. And besides

---

<sup>680</sup> "From Syria to the Archipelago there is a constant current to the westward, slightly felt at sea, but very perceptible near the shore, along this part of which [Lycia] it runs with considerable but irregular velocity: between Adratchan Cape and the small adjacent island we found it one day almost three miles an hour. .... The great body of water, as it moves to the westward, is intercepted by the western coast of the Gulf of Adalia; thus pent up and accumulated, it rushes with augmented violence towards Cape Khelidonia, where, diffusing itself in the open sea, it again becomes equalised." Of two persons engaged in the merchant-service, one says that he has often "tricked other fruit-vessels" in sailing westward, by standing to the north to get this current,

this, as the land was neared, the wind would draw off the shore, and the water would be smoother; and both these advantages would aid the progress of the vessel. Hence she would easily work to windward, under the mountains of Cilicia, and through the bay of Pamphylia, to Lycia, which was the first district in the province of Asia.

Thus we follow the Apostle once more across the sea over which he had first sailed with Barnabas from Antioch to Salamis, and within sight of the summits of Taurus, which rise above his native city, and close by Perga and Attaleia, till he came to a Lycian harbour not far from Patara, the last point at which he had touched on his return from the third Missionary journey.

The Lycian harbour, in which the Adramyttian ship came to anchor on this occasion, after her voyage from Sidon, was Myra, a city which has been fully illustrated by some of those travellers whose researches have, within these few years, for the first time provided materials for a detailed geographical Commentary on the Acts of the Apostles. Its situation was at the opening of a long and wonderful gorge, which conducts the traveller from the interior of the mountain region of Lycia to the sea. A wide space of plain intervened between the city and the port. Strabo says that the distance was twenty stadia, or more than two miles.

If we draw a natural inference from the magnitude of the theatre, which remains at the base of the cliffs, and the traces of ruins to some distance across the plain, we should conclude that Myra once held a considerable population: while the Lycian tombs, still conspicuous in the rocks, seem to connect it with a remote period of Asiatic history. We trace it, on the other hand, in a later though hardly less obscure period of history: for in the Middle Ages it was called the port of the Adriatic, and was visited by Anglo Saxon travellers. This was the period when St.

---

while they took the mid-channel course; the other, that the current is sometimes so strong between Cyprus and the main, that he has known "a steamer jammed" there, in going to the East.

Nicholas, the saint of the modern Greek sailors, born at Patara, and buried at Myra, had usurped the honour which those two cities might more naturally have given to the Apostle who anchored in their harbours.

In the seclusion of the deep gorge of Dembra is a magnificent Byzantine church, probably the cathedral of the diocese, when Myra was the ecclesiastical and political metropolis of Lycia. Another building, hardly less conspicuous, is a granary erected by Trajan near the mouth of the little river Andraki. This is the ancient Andriace, which Pliny mentions as the port of Myra, and which is described to us by Appian, in his narrative of the Civil Wars of Rome, as closed and protected by a chain.

Andriace, the port of Myra, was one of the many excellent harbours which abound in the south western part of Asia Minor. From this circumstance, and from the fact that the coast is high and visible to a great distance, in addition to the local advantages which we have mentioned above, the westerly current, and the offshore wind, it was common for ships bound from Egypt to the westward to be found in this neighbourhood when the winds were contrary. It was therefore a natural occurrence, and one which could have caused no surprise, when the centurion met in the harbour at Myra with an Alexandrian corn ship on her voyage to Italy. Even if business had not brought her to this coast, she was not really out of her track in a harbour in the same meridian as that of her own port. It is probable that the same westerly winds which had hindered St. Paul's progress from Caesarea to Myra, had caused the Alexandrian ship to stand to the north.

### Myra to Cnidus

Thus the expectation was fulfilled, which had induced the centurion to place his prisoners on board the vessel of Adramyttium. That vessel proceeded on her homeward route up the coast of the Aegean, if the weather permitted: and we now follow the Apostle through a more eventful part of his voyage, in a ship which was probably much larger than those that were simply

engaged in the coasting trade. From the total number of souls on board, and the known fact that the Egyptian merchantmen were among the largest in the Mediterranean, we conclude that she was a vessel of considerable size.

Everything that relates to her construction is interesting to us, through the minute account which is given of her misfortunes, from the moment of her leaving Myra.

The weather was unfavourable from the first. They were 'many days' before reaching Cnidus (v. 7): and since the distance from Myra to this place is only a hundred and thirty miles, it is certain that they must have sailed slowly. The delay was of course occasioned by one of two causes, by calms or by contrary winds. There can be no doubt that the latter was the real cause, not only because the sacred narrative states that they reached Cnidus "with difficulty," but because we are informed that, when Cnidus was reached, they could not make good their course <sup>681</sup> any further, "the wind not

<sup>681</sup> Their direct course was about W. by S.: and, when they opened the point, they were under very unfavourable circumstances even for beating. The words μή προσεῶντος ἡμῶς τοῦ ἀνέμου Mr. Smith understands to mean that the wind would not allow the vessel to hold on her course towards Italy, after Cnidus was passed. So Sir C. Penrose, in whose MS. we find the following: "The course from Myra towards Italy was to pass close to the Island of Cythera (Cerigo), or the south point of the Morea; the island of Rhodes lying in the direct track. It appears that the ship passed to the northward of that island, having sailed slowly many days from the light and baffling winds, usual in those seas and at that season. Having at last got over against Cnidus (C. Crio), the wind not suffering them to get on in the direct course, it having become steady from the west or northwest, they sailed southwards, till, coming near to the east end of Crete, they passed, &c."

The words at first sight seem to mean that the wind would not allow them to put in to the harbour of Cnidus: and so they are understood by Meyer, De Wette, Humphry, and Hackett. But in a case of this kind nautical considerations must be taken into account. A friend remarks in a letter that "a ship on a weather shore could come to and warp it." If, however, it were true that they could not get into Cnidus, it

suffering them". At this point they lost the advantages of a favouring current, a weather shore and smooth water, and were met by all the force of the sea from the westward; and it was judged the most prudent course, instead of contending with a head sea and contrary winds, to run down to the southward, and, after rounding Cape Salmone, the easternmost point of Crete, to pursue the voyage under the lee of that island.

Knowing, as we do, the consequences which followed this step, we are inclined to blame it as imprudent, unless, indeed, it was absolutely necessary. For while the south coast of Crete was deficient in good harbours, that of Cnidus was excellent, well sheltered from the north westerly winds, fully supplied with all kinds of stores, and in every way commodious, if needful, for wintering.

### Cnidus

And here, according to our custom, we pause again in the narrative, that we may devote a few lines to the history and description of the place. In early times it was the metropolis of the Asiatic Dorians, who worshipped Apollo, their national deity, on the rugged headland called the Triopian promontory (the modern Cape Crio), which juts out beyond the city to the West. From these heights the people of Cnidus saw that engagement between the fleets of Pisander and Conon, which resulted in the maritime supremacy of Athens.

To the north west is seen the island of Cos; to the southeast, across a wider reach of sea, is the larger island of Rhodes, with which, in their weaker and more voluptuous days, Cnidus was united in alliance with Rome, at the beginning of the struggle between Italy and the East. The position of the city of Cnidus is to the east of the Triopian headland, where a narrow isthmus unites the promontory with the continent, and separates the two harbours which Strabo has described. Few places bear more incontestable

---

would equally follow that the wind was blowing hard from the N.W.

proofs of former magnificence; and fewer still of the ruffian industry of their destroyers.

The whole area of the city is one promiscuous mass of ruins; among which may be traced streets and gateways, porticoes and theatres. But the remains which are the most worthy to arrest our attention are those of the harbours: not only because Cnidus was a city peculiarly associated with maritime enterprise, but because these remains have been less obliterated by violence or decay. The smallest harbour has a narrow entrance between high piers, and was evidently the closed basin for triremes, which Strabo mentions.

But it was the southern and larger port which lay in St. Paul's course from Myra, and in which the Alexandrian ship must necessarily have come to anchor, if she had touched at Cnidus. This port is formed by two transverse moles; these noble works were carried into the sea to a depth of nearly a hundred feet; one of them is almost perfect: the other, which is more exposed to the south west swell, can only be seen under water. And we may conclude our description by quoting from another traveller, who speaks of "the remains of an ancient quay on the southwest, supported by Cyclopien walls, and in some places cut out of the steep limestone rocks, which rise abruptly from the water's edge."

This excellent harbour then, from choice or from necessity, was left behind by the seamen of the Alexandrian vessel. Instead of putting back there for shelter, they yielded to the expectation of being able to pursue their voyage under the lee of Crete, and ran down to Cape Salmone: after rounding which, the same 'difficulty' would indeed recur, but still with the advantage of a weather shore.

The statements at this particular point of St. Luke's narrative enable us to ascertain, with singular minuteness, the direction of the wind: and it is deeply interesting to observe how this direction, once ascertained, harmonizes all the inferences which we should naturally draw from other parts of the context. But the

argument has been so well stated by the first writer who has called attention to this question, that we will present it in his words rather than our own. "The course of a ship on her voyage from Myra to Italy, after she has reached Cnidus, is by the north side of Crete, through the Archipelago, W. by S. Hence a ship which can make good a course of less than seven points from the wind, would not have been prevented from proceeding on her course, unless the wind had been to the west of NNW. But we are told that she 'ran under Crete, over against Salmone,' which implies that she was able to fetch that cape, which bears about S.W. by S. from Cnidus; but, unless the wind had been to the north of WNW., she could not have done so. The middle point between NNW. and WNW. is north-west, which cannot be more than two points, and is probably not more than one, from the true direction. The wind, therefore, would in common language have been termed north-west." And then the author proceeds to quote, what we have quoted elsewhere (Vol. II. p. 275. n. 2.), a statement from the English Sailing Directions regarding the prevalence of north-westerly winds in these seas during the summer months; and to point out that the statement is in complete harmony with what Pliny says of the Etesian monsoons.

Under these circumstances of weather, a reconsideration of what has been said above, with the chart of Crete before us, will show that the voyage could have been continued some distance from Cape Salmone under the lee of the island, as it had been from Myra to Cnidus,—but that at a certain point (now called Cape Matala), where the coast trends suddenly to the north, and where the full force of the wind and sea from the westward must have been met, this possibility would have ceased once more, as it had ceased at the southwestern corner of the Peninsula. At a short distance to the east of Cape Matala is a roadstead, which was then called "Fair Havens," and still retains the same name, and which the voyagers successfully reached and came to anchor. There seems to have been no town at Fair Havens: but

there was a town near it called Lasæa <sup>682</sup>, a circumstance which St. Luke mentions, (if we may presume to say so) not with any view of fixing the locality of the roadstead, but simply because the fact was impressed on his memory. If the vessel was detained long at this anchorage, the sailors must have had frequent intercourse with Lasæa, and the soldiers too might obtain leave to visit it; and possibly also the prisoners, each with a soldier chained to his arm. We are not informed of the length of the delay at Fair Havens: but before they left the place, a "considerable time" had elapsed since they had sailed from Caesarea (v. 9); and they had arrived at that season of the year when it was considered imprudent to try the open sea. This is expressed by St. Luke by saying that "the fast was already past;" a proverbial phrase among

<sup>682</sup> Mr. Smith says that Lasæa is not mentioned by any ancient writer. It is, however, probably the Lasia of the Peutingerian Tables, stated there to be sixteen miles to the east of Gortyna. [See the short Appendix on the "Parapulus des Ap. Paulus," at the end of the first volume of Hoeck's *Kreta*, p. 439., and compare p. 412.] Some MSS. have Lasea, others Alassa. The Vulgate has Thalassa, and Cramer mentions coins of a Cretan town so called.—Ancient Greece, iii. 374.

[We are now able with great satisfaction to state that the city of Lasæa has been discovered. The Rev. G. Brown, with some companions, has recently visited this coast in the yacht *St. Ursula*; and a letter written by him from Fair Havens, on January 18th, 1856, supplies the following facts. When the party landed at Fair Havens, the question was asked, ποῦ ἔστι Λασαῖα; to which it was answered at once, that it was now a deserted place about two hours to the eastward, close to Cape Leonda. On receiving this information they ran along the coast before a S. W. wind; and, just after passing the Cape, the eye of one of the party was caught by "two white pillars, standing on a brae-side near the shore." On approaching and landing, the beach was found to be lined with masses of masonry, and various remains of a considerable town were discovered. The peasants, who came down from the hills, said that the name of the place was Lasea. Cape Leonda lies five miles east of Fair Havens. Mr. Brown's letter has been placed at our disposal by Mr. Smith, who will give fuller details in the second edition of his work on St. Paul's Shipwreck.]

the Jews, employed as we should employ the phrase "about Michaelmas," and indicating precisely that period of the year. The fast of expiation was on the tenth of Tisri, and corresponded to the close of September or the beginning of October; and is exactly the time when seafaring is pronounced to be dangerous by Greek and Roman writers. It became then a very serious matter of consultation whether they should remain at Fair Havens for the winter, or seek some better harbor. St. Paul's advice was very strongly given that they should remain where they were. He warned them that if they ventured to pursue their voyage, they would meet with violent weather, with great injury to the cargo and the ship, and much risk to the lives of those on board. It is sufficient if we trace in this warning rather the natural prudence and judgment of St. Paul than the result of any supernatural revelation: though it is possible that a prophetic power was acting in combination with the insight derived from long experience of "perils in the sea" (2 Cor. 11:26). He addressed such arguments to his fellow-voyagers as would be likely to influence all: the master would naturally avoid what might endanger the ship: the owner (who was also on board) would be anxious for the cargo: to the centurion and to all, the risk of imperiling their lives was a prospect that could not lightly be regarded. That St. Paul was allowed to give advice at all, implies that he was already held in a consideration very unusual for a prisoner in the custody of soldiers; and the time came when his words held a commanding sway over the whole crew: yet we cannot be surprised that on this occasion the centurion was more influenced by the words of the owner and the master than those of the Apostle. There could be no doubt that their present anchorage was "incommodious to winter in" (v. 12), and the decision of "the majority" was to leave it so soon as the weather should permit.

### Phoenix

On the south coast of the island, somewhat further to the west, was a harbor called Phoenix, with which it seems that some of the

sailors were familiar. They spoke of it in their conversation during the delay at Fair Havens, and they described it as "looking toward the south-west wind and north-west wind." If they meant to recommend a harbor, into which these winds blew dead on shore, it would appear to have been unsailorlike advice: and we are tempted to examine more closely whether the expression really means what at first sight it appears to mean, and then to inquire further whether we can identify this description with any existing harbor. This might indeed be considered a question of mere curiosity,—since the vessel never reached Phoenix,—and since the description of the place is evidently not that of St. Luke, but of the sailors, whose conversation he heard. But everything has a deep interest for us which tends to elucidate this voyage. And, first, we think there cannot be a doubt, both from the notices in ancient writers and the continuance of ancient names upon the spot, that Phoenix is to be identified with the modern Lutro. This is a harbor which is sheltered from the winds abovementioned: and, without entering fully into the discussions which have arisen from this subject, we give it as our opinion that the difficulty is to be explained, simply by remembering that sailors speak of everything from their own point of view, and that such a harbor does "look"—from the water towards the land which encloses it—in the direction of "south-west and north-west."

With a sudden change of weather, the north-westerly wind ceasing, and a light air springing up from the south, the sanguine sailors "thought that their purpose was already accomplished" (v. 13). They weighed anchor: and the vessel bore round Cape Matala. The distance to this point from Fair Havens is four or five miles: the bearing is W. by S. With a gentle southerly wind she would be able to weather the cape: and then the wind was fair to Phoenix, which was thirty-five miles distant from the cape, and bore from thence about WNW. The sailors already saw the high land above Lutro, and were proceeding in high spirits,—perhaps with fair-weather sails set,—

certainly with the boat towing astern—forgetful of past difficulties, and blind to impending dangers.

### The Storm

The change in the fortunes of these mariners came without a moment's warning<sup>683</sup>. Soon after weathering Cape Matala, and, while they were pursuing their course in full confidence, close by the coast of Crete (v. 13), a violent wind came down from the mountains, and struck the ship (seizing her, according to the Greek expression and whirling her round), so that it was impossible for the helmsman to make her keep her course. The character of the wind is described in terms expressive of the utmost violence. It came with all the appearance of a hurricane: and the name "Euroclydon," which was given to it by the sailors, indicates the commotion in the sea which presently resulted. The consequence was, that, in the first instance, they were compelled to scud before the gale.

If we wish to understand the events which followed, it is of the utmost consequence that we should ascertain, in the first place, the direction of this gale. Though there is a great weight of opinion in favor of the reading Euroaquilo, in place of Euroclydon,—a view

<sup>683</sup> Their experience, however, might have taught them that there was some cause for fear. Capt. J. Stewart, R. N. (as quoted by Mr. Smith, p. 60.) observes, in his remarks on the Archipelago: "It is always safe to anchor under the lee of an island with a northerly wind, as it dies away gradually; but it would be extremely dangerous with southerly winds, as they almost invariably shift to a violent northerly wind." [During the revision of these pages for the press (March 4. 1856), the following communication from Capt. Spratt was received in a letter from Mr. Smith: "We left Fair Havens with a light southerly wind and clear sky—every thing indicative of a fine day, until we rounded the cape to haul up for the head of the bay. Then we saw Mount Ida covered with a dense cloud, and met a strong northerly breeze (one of the summer gales, in fact, so frequent in the Levant, but which in general are accompanied by terrific gusts and squalls from those high mountains), the wind blowing direct from Mount Ida."]

which would determine, on critical grounds, that the wind was ENE.,—we need not consider ourselves compelled to yield absolutely to this authority: and the mere context of the narrative enables us to determine the question with great exactitude. The wind came down from the island and drove the vessel off the island: whence it is evident that it could not have been southerly. If we consider further that the wind struck the vessel when she was not far from Cape Matala (v. 14),—that it drove her towards Clauda (v. 16), which is an island about twenty miles to the S.W. of that point,—and that the sailors "feared" lest it should drive them into the Syrtis on the African coast (v. 17),—all which facts are mentioned in rapid succession,—an inspection of the chart will suffice to show us that the point from which the storm came must have been N.E., or rather to the East of N.E.,—and thus we may safely speak of it as coming from the ENE.

We proceed now to inquire what was done with the vessel under these perilous circumstances. She was compelled at first (as we have seen) to scud before the gale. But three things are mentioned in close connection with her coming near to Clauda, and running under the lee of it. Here they would have the advantage of a temporary lull and of comparatively smooth water for a few miles: and the most urgent necessity was attended to first. The boat was hoisted on board: but after towing so long, it must have been nearly filled with water: and under any circumstances the hoisting of a boat on board in a gale of wind is a work accomplished "with difficulty." So it was in this instance, as St. Luke informs us. To effect it at all, it would be necessary for the vessel to be rounded-to, with her head brought towards the wind; a circumstance which, for other reasons (as we shall see presently) it is important to bear in mind. The next precaution that was adopted betrays an apprehension lest the vessel should spring a leak, and so be in danger of foundering at sea. They used the tackling, which we have described above, and which provided "helps" in such an emergency. They

“undergirded” the ship with ropes passed round her frame and tightly secured on deck. And after this, or rather simultaneously (for, as there were many hands on board, these operations might all be proceeding together), they “lowered the gear.” This is the most literal translation of the Greek expression. In itself it is indeterminate: but it doubtless implies careful preparation for weathering out the storm. What precise change was made we are not able to determine, in our ignorance of the exact state of the ship’s gear at the moment. It might mean that the mainsail was reefed and set; or that the great yard was lowered upon deck and a small storm sail hoisted. It is certain that what English seamen call the top-hamper would be sent down on deck. As to those fair-weather sails themselves, which may have been too hastily used on leaving Fair Havens, if not taken in at the beginning of the gale they must have been already blown to pieces.

### Seamanship During the Gale

But the mention of one particular apprehension, as the motive of this last precaution, informs us of something further. It was because they “feared lest they should be driven into the Syrtis,” that they “lowered the gear.” Now to avoid this danger, the head of the vessel must necessarily have been turned away from the African coast, in the direction (more or less) from which the wind came. To have scudded before the gale under bare poles, or under storm-sails, would infallibly have stranded them in the Syrtis,—not to mention the danger of pooping, or being swamped by the sea breaking over her stern. To have anchored was evidently impossible. Only one other course remained: and this was what is technically called by sailors lying-to. To effect this arrangement, the head of the vessel is brought as near to the wind as possible: a small amount of canvass is set, and so adjusted, as to prevent the vessel from falling off into the trough of the sea. This plan (as is well known to all who have made long voyages) is constantly resorted to when the object is not so much to make progress, as to weather out a gale.

We are here brought to the critical point of the whole nautical difficulty in the narrative of St. Paul’s voyage and shipwreck, and it is desirable to notice very carefully both the ship’s position in reference to the wind and its consequent motion through the water. Assuming that the vessel was laid-to, the questions to be answered in reference to its position are these: How near the wind did she lie? and which side did she present to the wind? The first question is answered in some degree by a reference to what was said in the early part of this Chapter. If an ancient merchantman could go ahead in moderate weather, when within seven points of the wind, we may assume that she would make about the same angle with it when lying-to in a gale. The second question would be practically determined by the circumstances of the case and the judgment of the sailors. It will be seen very clearly by what follows that if the ship had been laid-to with her left or port side to the wind, she must have been driven far out of her course, and also in the direction of another part of the African coast. In order to make sure of sea-room, and at the same time to drift to the westward, she must have been laid-to with her right side to the wind, or on the starboard tack,—the position which she was probably made to assume at the moment of taking the boat on board.

We have hitherto considered only the ship’s position in reference to the wind. We must now consider its motion. When a vessel is laid-to, she does not remain stationary, but drifts: and our inquiries of course have reference to the rate and direction of the drift. The rate of drift may vary, within certain limits, according to the build of the vessel and the intensity of the gale: but all seamen would agree, that, under the circumstances before us, a mile and a half in the hour, or thirty-six miles in twenty four hours, may be taken as a fair average. The direction in which she drifts is not that in which she appears to sail, or towards which her bows are turned: but she falls off to leeward: and to the angle formed by the line of the ship’s keel and the line in which the wind blows we must add

another, to include what the sailors call lee-way: and this may be estimated on an average at six points ( $67^\circ$ ). Thus we come to the conclusion that the direction of drift would make an angle of thirteen points ( $147^\circ$ ) with the direction of the wind. If the wind was ENE, the course of the vessel would be W. by N.

### Sufferings During the Gale

We have been minute in describing the circumstances of the ship at this moment; for it is the point upon which all our subsequent conclusions must turn. Assuming now that the vessel was, as we have said, laid-to on the starboard tack, with the boat on board and the hull undergirded, drifting from Clauda in a direction W. by N. at the rate of thirty-six miles in twenty-four hours, we pursue the narrative of the voyage, without anticipating the results to which we shall be brought. The more marked incidents of the second and third days of the gale are related to us (vv. 18, 19). The violence of the storm continued without any intermission. On "the day after" they left Clauda, "they proceeded to lighten the ship" by throwing overboard whatever could be most easily spared. From this we should infer that the precaution of undergirding had been only partially successful, and that the vessel had already sprung a leak. This is made still more probable by what occurred on the "third day." Both sailors and passengers united in throwing out all the "spare gear" into the sea. Then followed "several days" of continued hardship and anxiety. No one who has never been in a leaking ship in a continued gale can know what is suffered under such circumstances. The strain both of mind and body—the incessant demand for the labor of all the crew—the terror of the passengers—the hopeless working at the pumps—the laboring of the ship's frame and cordage—the driving of the storm—the benumbing effect of the cold and wet,—make up a scene of no ordinary confusion, anxiety, and fatigue. But in the present case these evils were much aggravated by the continued overclouding of the sky (a circumstance not unusual during a Levanter) which prevented the

navigators from taking the necessary observations of the heavenly bodies. In a modern ship, however dark the weather might be, there would always be a light in the binnacle, and the ship's course would always be known: but in an ancient vessel, "when neither sun nor stars were seen for many days," the case would be far more hopeless. It was impossible to know how near they might be to the most dangerous coast. And yet the worst danger was that which arose from the leaky state of the vessel. This was so bad, that at length they gave up all hope of being saved, thinking that nothing could prevent her foundering. To this despair was added a further suffering from want of food, in consequence of the injury done to the provisions, and the impossibility of preparing any regular meal. <sup>684</sup>

Hence we see the force of the phrase which alludes to what a casual reader might suppose an unimportant part of the suffering, the fact that there was "much abstinence." It was in this time of utter weariness and despair that to the Apostle there rose up "light in the darkness:"

---

<sup>684</sup> The narrative of the loss of the Ramillies supplies a very good illustration of the state of things on board St. Paul's vessel during these two days. "At this time she had six feet of water in the hold, and the pumps would not free her, the water having worked out all the oakum. The admiral therefore gave orders for all the buckets to be remanned, and every officer to help towards freeing the ship: this enabled her to sail on. . . . . In the evening it was found necessary to dispose of the fore-castle and aftermost quarter-deck guns, together with some of the shot and other articles of very great weight; and the frame of the ship having opened during the night, the admiral was next morning prevailed upon, by the renewed and pressing remonstrances of his officers, to allow ten guns more to be thrown overboard. The ship still continuing to open very much, the admiral ordered tarred canvass and hides to be nailed fore and aft, from under the cills of the ports on the main deck and on the lower deck. Her increasing damage requiring still more to be done, the admiral directed all the guns on the upper deck, the shot, both on that and the lower deck, with various heavy stores, to be thrown overboard."

and that light was made the means of encouraging and saving the rest.

### St. Paul's Vision

While the Heathen sailors were vainly struggling to subdue the leak, Paul was praying; and God granted to him the lives of all who sailed with him. A vision was vouchsafed to him in the night, as formerly, when he was on the eve of conveying the Gospel from Asia to Europe, and more recently in the midst of those harassing events, which resulted in his voyage from Jerusalem to Rome. When the cheerless day came, he gathered the sailors round him on the deck of the laboring vessel, and, raising his voice above the storm, said:

**Sirs, ye should have hearkened to my counsel, and not have set sail from Crete: thus would you have been spared this harm and loss.**

**And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of any man's life among you, but only of the ship. For there stood by me this night an angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve, saying "Fear not, Paul; thou must stand before Caesar: and, lo! God hath given thee all who sail with thee." Wherefore, Sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that what hath been declared unto me shall come to pass. Nevertheless, we must be cast upon a certain island.**

We are not told how this address was received. But sailors, however reckless they may be in the absence of danger, are peculiarly open to religious impressions: and we cannot doubt that they gathered anxiously round the Apostle, and heard his words as an admonition and encouragement from the other world; that they were nerved for the toil and difficulty which was immediately before them, and prepared thenceforward to listen to the Jewish prisoner as to a teacher sent with a divine commission.

The gale still continued without abatement. Day and night succeeded, and the danger seemed only to increase: till fourteen days had elapsed, during which they had been "drifting through the sea of Adria" (v. 27). A gale of such duration, though not very frequent, is by no means

unprecedented in that part of the Mediterranean, especially towards winter. At the close of the fourteenth day, about the middle of the night the sailors suspected that they were nearing land. There is little doubt as to what were the indications of land. The roar of breakers is a peculiar sound, which can be detected by a practiced ear, though not distinguishable from the other sounds of a storm by those who have not "their senses exercised" by experience of the sea. When it was reported that this sound was heard by some of the crew, orders were immediately given to heave the lead, and they found that the depth of the water was "twenty fathoms." After a short interval, they sounded again, and found "fifteen fathoms." Though the vicinity of land could not but inspire some hope, as holding out the prospect of running the ship ashore and so being saved, yet the alarm of the sailors was great when they perceived how rapidly they were shoaling the water. It seems also that they now heard breakers ahead. However this might be, there was the utmost danger lest the vessel should strike and go to pieces. No time was to be lost. Orders were immediately given to clear the anchors. But, if they had anchored by the bow, there was good ground for apprehending that the vessel would have swung round and gone upon the rocks. They therefore let go "four anchors by the stern." For a time, the vessel's way was arrested: but there was too much reason to fear that she might part from her anchors and go ashore, if indeed she did not founder in the night: and "they waited anxiously for the day."

### Anchoring in the Night

The reasons are obvious why she anchored by the stern, rather than in the usual mode. Besides what has been said above, her way would be more easily arrested, and she would be in a better position for being run ashore next day. But since this mode of anchoring has raised some questions, it may be desirable, in passing, to make a remark on the subject. That a vessel can anchor by the stern is sufficiently proved (if proof were needed) by the history of some of

our own naval engagements. So it was at the battle of the Nile. And when ships are about to attack batteries, it is customary for them to go into action prepared to anchor in this way. This was the case at Algiers. There is still greater interest in quoting the instance of Copenhagen, not only from the accounts we have of the precision with which each ship let go her anchors astern as she arrived nearly opposite her appointed station, but because it is said that Nelson stated after the battle, that he had that morning been reading the twenty-seventh chapter of the Acts of the Apostles. But, though it will be granted that this maneuver is possible with due preparation, it may be doubted whether it could be accomplished in a gale of wind on a lee shore, without any previous notice. The question in fact is, whether ancient ships in the Mediterranean were always prepared to anchor in this way. Some answer to this doubt is supplied by the present practice of the Levantine caiques, which preserve in great measure the traditional build and rig of ancient merchantmen. These modern Greek vessels may still be seen anchoring by the stern in the Golden Horn at Constantinople, or on the coast of Patmos. But the best illustration is afforded by one of the paintings of Herculaneum, which represents "a ship so strictly contemporaneous with that of St. Paul, that there is nothing impossible in the supposition, that the artist had taken his subject from that very ship, on loosing from the pier at Puteoli." There is this additional advantage to be obtained from an inspection of this rude drawing, that we see very clearly how the rudders would be in danger of interfering with this mode of anchoring,—a subject to which our attention will presently be required. Our supposed objector, if he had a keen sense of practical difficulties, might still insist that to have anchored in this way (or indeed in the ordinary way) would have been of little avail in St. Paul's ship: since it could not be supposed that the anchors would have held in such a gale of wind. To this we can only reply, that this course was adopted to meet a dangerous emergency. The sailors could not have been certain of the result.

They might indeed have had confidence in their cables: but they could not be sure of their holding ground.

This is one of the circumstances which must be taken into account, when we sum up the evidence in proof that the place of shipwreck was Malta. At present we make no such assumption. We will not anticipate the conclusion, till we have proceeded somewhat farther with the narrative. We may, however, ask the reader to pause for a moment, and reconsider what was said of the circumstances of the vessel, when we described what was done under the lee of Clauda. We then saw that the direction in which she was drifting was W. by N. Now an inspection of the chart will show us that this is exactly the bearing of the northern part of Malta from the south of Clauda. We saw, moreover, that she was drifting at the rate of about a mile and a half in every hour, or thirty-six miles in the twenty-four hours. Since that time thirteen days had elapsed: for the first of the "fourteen days" would be taken up on the way from Fair Havens to Clauda. The ship therefore had passed over a distance of about 468 miles. The distance between Clauda and Malta is rather less than 480 miles. The coincidence is so remarkable, that it seems hardly possible to believe that the land, to which the sailors on the fourteenth night "deemed that they drew nigh,"—the "certain island" on which it was prophesied that they should be cast,—could be any other place than Malta. The probability is overwhelming. But we must not yet assume the fact as certain: for we shall find, as we proceed, that the conditions are very numerous, which the true place of shipwreck will be required to satisfy.

We return then to the ship, which we left laboring at her four anchors. The coast was invisible, but the breakers were heard in every pause of the storm. The rain was falling in torrents; and all hands were weakened by want of food. But the greatest danger was lest the vessel should founder before daybreak. The leak was rapidly gaining, and it was expected that each moment might be the last. Under

these circumstances we find the sailors making a selfish attempt to save themselves, and leave the ship and the passengers to their fate. Under the pretence of carrying out some anchors from the bow, they lowered the boat over the ship's side (v. 30). The excuse was very plausible, for there is no doubt that the vessel would have been more steady if this had been done; and, in order to effect it, it would be necessary to take out anchors in the boat. But their real intention was to save their own lives and leave the passengers. St. Paul penetrated their design, and either from some divine intimation of the instruments which were to be providentially employed for the safety of all on board,—or from an intuitive judgment, which shewed him that those who would be thus left behind, the passengers and soldiers, would not be able to work the ship in any emergency that might arise,—he saw that, if the sailors accomplished their purpose, all hope of being saved would be gone. With his usual tact, he addressed not a word to the sailors, but spoke to the soldiers and his friend the centurion; and they, with military promptitude, held no discussion on the subject, but decided the question by immediate action. With that short sword, with which the Roman legions cleft their way through every obstacle to universal victory, they “cut the ropes;” and the boat fell off, and, if not instantly swamped, drifted off to leeward into the darkness, and was dashed to pieces on the rocks.

### Waiting for the Day

Thus the prudent counsel of the Apostle, seconded by the prompt action of the soldiers, had been the means of saving all on board. Each successive incident tended to raise him, more and more, into a position of overpowering influence. Not the captain or the ship's crew, but the passenger and the prisoner, is looked to now as the source of wisdom and safety. We find him using this influence for the renewal of their bodily strength, while at the same time he turned their thoughts to the providential care of God. By this time the dawn of day was approaching. A faint light shewed more of the

terrors of the storm, and the objects on board the ship began to be more distinctly visible. Still, towards the land, all was darkness, and their eyes followed the spray in vain as it drifted off to leeward. A slight effort of imagination suffices to bring before us an impressive spectacle, as we think of the dim light just showing the haggard faces of the 276 persons, clustered on the deck, and holding on by the bulwarks of the sinking vessel. In this hour of anxiety the Apostle stands forward to give them courage. He reminds them that they had “eaten nothing” for fourteen days; and exhorts them now to partake of a hearty meal, pointing out to them that this was indeed essential to their safety, and encouraging them by the assurance that “not a hair of their head” should perish. So speaking, he set the example of the cheerful use of God's gifts and grateful acknowledgment of the Giver, by taking bread, “giving thanks to God before all,” and beginning to eat. Thus encouraged by his calm and religious example, they felt their spirits revive, and “they also partook of food,” and made themselves ready for the labor which awaited them. <sup>685</sup>

Instead of abandoning themselves to despair, they proceeded actively to adopt the last means for relieving the still sinking vessel. The cargo of

---

<sup>685</sup> “All hands now, crew and passengers, bond or free, are assembled on the deck, anxiously wishing for day, when Paul, taking advantage of a smaller degree of motion [would this necessarily be the case?] in the ship than when drifting with her side to the waves, recommends to them to make use of this time, before the dawn would require fresh exertions, in making a regular and comfortable meal, in order to refresh them after having so long taken their precarious repasts, probably without fire or any kind of cooking. He begins by example, but first, by giving God thanks for their preservation hitherto, and hopes of speedy relief. Having thus refreshed themselves, they cast out as much of the remaining part of the cargo (wheat) as they could, to enable them by a lighter draft of water either to run into any small harbour, or at least closer in with dry land, should they be obliged to run the ship on the rocks or beach.”—Penrose, MS.

wheat was now of no use. It was probably spoilt by the salt water. And however this might be, it was not worth a thought; since it was well known that the vessel would be lost. Their hope now was to run her on shore and so escape to land. Besides this, it is probable that, the ship having been so long in one position, the wheat had shifted over to the port side, and prevented the vessel from keeping that upright position, which would be most advantageous when they came to steer her towards the shore. The hatchways were therefore opened, and they proceeded to throw the grain into the sea. This work would occupy some time; and when it was accomplished, the day had dawned, and the land was visible.

### The Shipwreck

The sailors looked hard at the shore, but they could not recognize it. Though ignorant, however, of the name of the coast, off which they were anchored, they saw one feature in it which gave them a hope that they might accomplish their purpose of running the ship aground. They perceived a small bay or indentation, with a sandy or pebbly beach: and their object was, "if possible," so to steer the vessel that she might take the ground at that point. To effect this, every necessary step was carefully taken. While cutting the anchors adrift, they unloosed the lashings with which the rudders had been secured, and hoisted the foresail. These three things would be done simultaneously, as indeed is implied by St. Luke; and there were a sufficient number of hands on board for the purpose. The free use of the rudders would be absolutely necessary: nor would this be sufficient without the employment of some sail. It does not appear quite certain whether they exactly hit the point at which they aimed. We are told that they fell into "a place between two seas" (a feature of the coast, which will require our consideration presently) and there stranded the ship. The bow stuck fast in the shore and remained unmoved; but the stern began immediately to go to pieces under the action of the sea.

And now another characteristic incident is related. The soldiers, who were answerable with their lives for the detention of their prisoners, were afraid lest some of them should swim out and escape: and therefore, in the spirit of true Roman cruelty, they proposed to kill them at once. Now again the influence of St. Paul over the centurion's mind was made the means of saving both his own life and that of his fellow-prisoners. For the rest he might care but little; but he was determined to secure Paul's safety. He therefore prevented the soldiers from accomplishing their heartless intention, and directed those who could swim to "cast themselves into the sea" first, while the rest made use of spars and broken pieces of the wreck. Thus it came to pass that all escaped safely through the breakers to the shore.

When the land was safely reached, it was ascertained that the island on which they were wrecked was Melita. The mere word does not absolutely establish the identity of the place: for two islands were anciently called alike by this name. This, therefore, is the proper place for summing up the evidence which has been gradually accumulating in proof that it was the modern Malta. We have already seen (p. 414.) the almost irresistible inference which follows from the consideration of the direction and rate of drift since the vessel was laid-to under the lee of Clauda. But we shall find that every succeeding indication not only tends to bring us to the shore of this island, but to the very bay (the Cala di San Paolo) which has always been the traditional scene of the wreck.

In the first place we are told that they became aware of land by the presence of breakers, and yet without striking. Now an inspection of the chart will shew us that a ship drifting W. by N. might approach Koura point, the eastern boundary of St. Paul's Bay, without having fallen in previously with any other part of the coast: for, towards the neighborhood of Valetta, the shore trends rapidly to the southward. Again, the character of this point, as described in the Sailing Directions, is such that there must infallibly have been violent breakers upon it

that night. Yet a vessel drifting W. by N. might pass it, within a quarter of a mile, without striking on the rocks. But what are the soundings at this point? They are now twenty fathoms. If we proceed a little further we find fifteen fathoms. It may be said that this, in itself, is nothing remarkable. But if we add, that the fifteen fathom depth is in the direction of the vessel's drift (W. by N.) from the twenty fathom depth, the coincidence is startling. But at this point we observe, on looking at the chart, that now there would be breakers ahead,— and yet at such a distance ahead, that there would be time for the vessel to anchor, before actually striking on the rocks. All these conditions must necessarily be fulfilled; and we see that they are fulfilled without any attempt at ingenious explanation. But we may proceed farther. The character of the coast on the farther side of the bay is such, that though the greater part of it is fronted with mural precipices, there are one or two indentations, which exhibit the appearance of "a creek with a [sandy or pebbly] shore." And again we observe that the island of Salmonetta is so placed, that the sailors, looking from the deck when the vessel was at anchor, could not possibly be aware that it was not a continuous part of the mainland; whereas, while they were running her aground, they could not help observing the opening of the channel, which would thus appear (like the Bosphorus), "a place between two seas," and would be more likely to attract their attention, if some current resulting from this juxtaposition of the island and the coast interfered with the accuracy of their steering. And finally, to revert to the fact of the anchors holding through the night (a result which could not confidently be predicted), we find it stated, in our English Sailing Directions, that the ground in St. Paul's Bay is so good, that, "while the cables hold, there is no danger, as the anchors will never start."

#### **The Inhabitants Receive them Kindly**

Malta was not then the densely crowded island which it has become during the last half century. Though it was well known to the

Romans as a dependency of the province of Sicily, and though the harbor now called Valetta must have been familiar to the Greek mariners who traded between the East and the West,— much of the island was doubtless uncultivated and overrun with wood. Its population was of Phoenician origin,—speaking a language which, as regards social intercourse, had the same relation to Latin and Greek, which modern Maltese has to English and Italian. The inhabitants, however, though in this sense "barbarians," were favorably contrasted with many Christian wreckers in their reception of those who had been cast on their coast. They shewed them no "ordinary kindness;" for they lighted a fire and welcomed them all to the warmth, drenched and shivering as they were in the rain and the cold. The whole scene is brought very vividly before us in the sacred narrative. One incident has become a picture in St. Paul's life, with which every Christian child is familiar. The Apostle had gathered with his own hand a heap of sticks and placed them on the fire, when a viper came "out of the heat" and fastened on his hand. The poor superstitious people, when they saw this, said to one another, "This man must be a murderer: he has escaped from the sea: but still vengeance suffers him not to live." But Paul threw off the animal into the fire and suffered no harm. Then they watched him, expecting that his body would become swollen, or that he would suddenly fall down dead. At length, after they had watched for a long time in vain, and saw nothing happen to him, their feelings changed as violently as those of the Lystrians had done in an opposite direction; and they said that he was a God. We are not told of the results to which this occurrence led, but we cannot doubt that while Paul repudiated, as formerly at Lystra, all the homage which idolatry would pay to him, he would make use of the influence acquired by this miracle, for making the Savior known to his uncivilized benefactors.

St. Paul was enabled to work many miracles during his stay in Malta. The first which is recorded is the healing of the father of Publius,

the governor of the island, who had some possessions near the place where the vessel was lost, and who had given a hospitable reception to the shipwrecked strangers, and supplied their wants for three days. The disease under which the father of Publius was suffering was dysentery in an aggravated form. St. Paul went in to him and prayed, and laid his hands on him: and he recovered. This being noised through the island, other sufferers came to the Apostle and were healed. Thus he was empowered to repay the kindness of these islanders by temporal services intended to lead their minds to blessings of a still higher kind. And they were not wanting in gratitude to those, whose unexpected visit had brought so much good among them. They loaded them with every honour in their power, and, when they put to sea again, supplied them with everything that was needful for their wants (ver. 10).

#### Objections Considered

Before we pursue the concluding part of the voyage, which was so prosperous that hardly any incident in the course of it is recorded, it may be useful to complete the argument by which Malta is proved to be the scene of St. Paul's shipwreck, by briefly noticing some objections which have been brought against this view. It is true that the positive evidence already adduced is the strongest refutation of mere objections; but it is desirable not to leave unnoticed any of the arguments which appear to have weight on the other side. Some of them have been carelessly brought together by a great writer, to whom, on many subjects, we might be glad to yield our assent. Thus it is argued, that, because the vessel is said to have been drifting in the Adriatic, the place of shipwreck must have been, not Malta to the south of Sicily, but Meleda in the Gulf of Venice. It is no wonder that the Benedictine of Ragusa should have been jealous of the honour of his order, which had a convent on that small island. But it is more surprising that the view should have been maintained by other writers since. For not only do the classical poets use the name

“Adria” for all that natural division of the Mediterranean which lies between Sicily and Greece, but the same phraseology is found in historians and geographers. Thus Ptolemy distinguishes clearly between the Adriatic Sea and the Adriatic Gulf. Pausanias says that the Straits of Messene unite the Tyrrhenian Sea with the Adriatic Sea; and Procopius considers Malta as lying on the boundary of the latter. Nor are the other objections more successful. It is argued that Alexandrian sailors could not possibly have been ignorant of an island so well known as Malta was then. But surely they might have been very familiar with the harbor of Valetta, without being able to recognize that part of the coast on which they came during the storm. A modern sailor who had made many passages between New York and Liverpool might yet be perplexed if he found himself in hazy weather on some part of the coast of Wales. Besides, we are told that the seamen did recognize the island as soon as they were ashore. It is contended also that the people of Malta would not have been called barbarians. But, if the sailors were Greeks (as they probably were), they would have employed this term, as a matter of course, of those who spoke a different language from their own. Again it is argued that there are no vipers—that there is hardly any wood—in Malta. But who does not recognize here the natural changes which result from the increase of inhabitants and cultivation? Within a very few years there was wood close to St. Paul's Bay; and it is well known how the Fauna of any country varies with the vegetation. An argument has even been built on the supposed fact, that the disease of Publius is unknown in the island. To this it is sufficient to reply by a simple denial. Nor can we close this rapid survey of objections without noticing the insuperable difficulties which lie against the hypothesis of the Venetian Meleda, from the impossibility of reaching it, except by a miracle, under the above-related circumstances of weather,— from the disagreement of its soundings with what is required by the narrative of the shipwreck,—and by the

inconsistency of its position with what is related of the subsequent voyage.

### Syracuse - Rhegium

To this part of the voyage we must now proceed. After three months they sailed again for Italy in a ship called the *Castor and Pollux*. Syracuse was in their track, and the ship put into that famous harbor, and staid there three days. Thus St. Paul was in a great historic city of the West, after spending much time in those of greatest note in the East. We are able to associate the Apostle of the Gentiles and the thoughts of Christianity with the scenes of that disastrous expedition which closed the progress of the Athenians towards our part of Europe,—and with those Punic Wars, which ended in bringing Africa under the yoke of Rome. We are not told whether St. Paul was permitted to go on shore at Syracuse; but from the courtesy shown him by Julius, it is probable that this permission was not refused. If he landed, he would doubtless find Jews and Jewish proselytes in abundance, in so great a mercantile emporium; and would announce to them the Glad Tidings which he was commissioned to proclaim “to the Jew first and also to the Gentile.” Hence we may without difficulty give credit to the local tradition, which regards St. Paul as the first founder of the Sicilian church.

Sailing out of that beautiful land-locked basin, and past Ortygia, once an island, but then united in one continuous town with the buildings under the ridge of *Epipolæ*,—the ship which carried St. Paul to Rome shaped her course northwards towards the straits of Messina. The weather was not favorable at first: they were compelled to take an indirect course, and they put into Rhegium, a city whose patron divinities were, by a curious coincidence, the same hero-protectors of seafaring men, “the Great Twin Brethren,” to whom the ship itself was dedicated.

Here they remained one day (ver. 13), evidently waiting for a fair wind to take them through the Faro; for the springing up of a wind from the

south is expressly mentioned in the following words. This wind would be favorable, not only for carrying the ship through the straits, but for all the remainder of the voyage. If the vessel was single masted, this wind was the best that could blow: for to such a vessel the most advantageous point of sailing is to run right before the wind; and Puteoli lies nearly due north from Rhegium. The distance is about 182 miles. If then we assume, in accordance with what has been stated above (p. 377.), that she sailed at the rate of seven knots an hour, the passage would be accomplished in about twenty-six hours, which agrees perfectly with the account of St. Luke, who says that, after leaving Rhegium, they came “the next day,” to Puteoli.

Before the close of the first day they would see on the left the volcanic cone and smoke of Stromboli, the nearest of the Liparian islands. In the course of the night they would have neared that projecting part of the mainland, which forms the southern limit of the bay of Salerno. Sailing across the wide opening of this gulf, they would, in a few hours, enter that other bay, the bay of Naples, in the northern part of which Puteoli was situated. No long description need be given of that bay, which has been made familiar, by every kind of illustration, even to those who have never seen it. Its south-eastern limit is the promontory of Minerva, with the island of Capri opposite, which is so associated with the memory of Tiberius, that its cliffs still seem to rise from the blue waters as a monument of hideous vice in the midst of the fairest scenes of nature. The opposite boundary was the promontory of Misenum, where one of the imperial fleets lay at anchor under the shelter of the islands of Ischia and Procida. In the intermediate space the Campanian coast curves round in the loveliest forms, with Vesuvius as the prominent feature of the view. But here one difference must be marked between St. Paul’s day and our own. The angry neighbor of Naples was not then an unsleeping volcano, but a green and sunny background to the bay, with its westward slope covered with

vines. No one could have suspected that the time was so near, when the admiral of the fleet at Misenum would be lost in its fiery eruption; and little did the Apostle dream, when he looked from the vessel's deck across the bay to the right, that a ruin, like that of Sodom and Gomorrah, hung over the fair cities at the base of the mountain, and that the Jewish princess, who had so lately conversed with him in his prison at Caesarea, would find her tomb in that ruin, with the child she had borne to Felix.

By this time the vessel was well within the island of Capri and the promontory of Minerva, and the idlers of Puteoli were already crowding to the pier to watch the arrival of the Alexandrian corn ship. So we may safely infer from a vivid and descriptive letter preserved among the correspondence of the philosopher Seneca. He says that all ships, on rounding into the bay within the above-mentioned island and promontory, were obliged to strike their topsail, with the exception of the Alexandrian corn-vessels, which were thus easily recognized, as soon as they hove in sight; and then he proceeds to moralize on the gathering and crowding of the people of Puteoli, to watch these vessels coming in. Thus we are furnished with new circumstances to aid our efforts to realize the arrival of the Castor and Pollux, on the coast of Italy, with St. Paul on board. And if we wish still further to associate this event with the history and the feeling of the times, we may turn to an anecdote of the Emperor Augustus, which is preserved to us by Suetonius. The Emperor had been seized with a feverish attack—it was the beginning of his last illness—and was cruising about the bay for the benefit of his health, when an Alexandrian corn-ship was coming to her moorings, and passed close by. The sailors recognized the old man, whom the civilized world obeyed as master, and was learning to worship as God: and they brought forth garlands and incense, that they might pay him divine honors, saying that it was by his providence that their voyages were made safe and that their trade was prosperous. Augustus was so gratified by this worship, that he

immediately distributed an immense sum of gold among his suite, exacting from them the promise that they would expend it all in the purchase of Alexandrian goods. Such was the interest connected in the first century with the trade between Alexandria and Puteoli. Such was the idolatrous homage paid to the Roman Emperor. The only difference, when the Apostle of Christ came, was that the vice and corruption of the Empire had increased with the growth of its trade, and that the Emperor now was not Augustus but Nero.

### Puteoli

In this wide and sunny expanse of blue waters, no part was calmer or more beautiful than the recess in the northern part of the bay, between Baiæ and Puteoli. It was naturally sheltered by the surrounding coasts, and seemed of itself to invite both the gratification of luxurious ease, and the formation of a mercantile harbor. Baiæ was devoted to the former purpose: it was to the invalids and fashionable idlers of Rome like a combination of Brighton and Cheltenham. Puteoli, on the opposite side of this inner bay, was the Liverpool of Italy. Between them was that enclosed reach of water, called the Lucrine Lake, which contained the oyster-beds for the luxurious tables of Rome, and on the surface of which the small yachts of fashionable visitors displayed their colored sails. Still further inland was that other calm basin, the Lacus Avernus, which an artificial passage connected with the former, and thus converted into a harbor. Not far beyond was Cumæ, once a flourishing Greek city, but when the Apostle visited this coast, a decayed country town, famous only for the recollections of the Sibyl.

We must return to Puteoli. We have seen above (p. 380.) how it divided with Ostia the chief commerce by sea between Rome and the provinces. Its early name, when the Campanian shore was Greek rather than Italian, was Dicæarchia. Under its new appellation (which seems to have had reference to the mineral springs of the neighborhood) it first began to have an important connection with Rome in the

second Punic war. It was the place of embarkation for armies proceeding to Spain, and the landing-place of ambassadors from Carthage. Ever afterwards it was an Italian town of the first rank. In the time of Vespasian it became the Flavian Colony, like the city in Palestine from which St. Paul had sailed: but even from an earlier period it had colonial privileges, and these had just been renewed under Nero. It was intimately associated both with this Emperor and with two others who preceded him in power and in crime. Close by Baiæ, across the bay, was Bauli, where the plot was laid for the murder of Agrippina. Across these waters Caligula built his fantastic bridge; and the remains of it were probably visible when St. Paul landed. Tiberius had a more honorable monument in a statue (of which a fragment is still seen by English travelers at Pozzuoli), erected during St. Paul's life to commemorate the restitution of the Asiatic cities overthrown by an earthquake. But the ruins which are the most interesting to us are the seventeen piers of the ancient mole, on which the lighthouse stood, and within which the merchant-men were moored. Such is the proverbial tenacity of the concrete which was used in this structure, that it is the most perfect ruin existing of any ancient Roman harbor. In the early part of this Chapter, we spoke of the close mercantile relationship which subsisted between Egypt and this city. And this remains on our minds as the prominent and significant fact of its history,—whether we look upon the ruins of the mole and think of such voyages as those of Titus and Vespasian, or wander among the broken columns of the Temple of Serapis, or read the account which Philo gives of the singular interview of the Emperor Caligula with the Jewish ambassadors from Alexandria.

Puteoli, from its trade with Alexandria and the East, must necessarily have contained a colony of Jews, and they must have had a close connection with the Jews of Rome. What was true of the Jews, would probably find its parallel in the Christians. St. Paul met with disciples here; and, as soon as he was among

them, they were in prompt communication on the subject with their brethren in Rome. The Italian Christians had long been looking for a visit from the famous Apostle, though they had not expected to see him arrive thus, a prisoner in chains, hardly saved from shipwreck. But these sufferings would only draw their hearts more closely towards him. They earnestly besought him to stay some days with them, and Julius was able to allow this request to be complied with. Even when the voyage began, we saw that he was courteous and kind towards his prisoner; and, after all the varied and impressive incidents which have been recounted in this Chapter, we should indeed be surprised if we found him unwilling to contribute to the comfort of one by whom his own life had been preserved.

## Chapter 24

### The Appian Way

The last Chapter began with a description of the facilities possessed by the ancients for travelling by sea: this must begin with a reference to their best opportunities of travelling by land. We have before spoken of some of the most important roads through the provinces of the Empire: now we are about to trace the Apostle's footsteps along that road, which was at once the oldest and most frequented in Italy, and which was called, in comparison with all others, the "Queen of Roads." We are no longer following the narrow line of compact pavement across Macedonian plains and mountains, or through the varied scenery in the interior of Asia Minor: but we are on the most crowded approach to the metropolis of the world, in the midst of prætors and proconsuls, embassies, legions, and turms of horse, "to their provinces hasting or on return," which Milton,—in his description of the City enriched with the spoils of nations,—has called us to behold "in various habits on the Appian road."

Leaving then all consideration of Puteoli, as it was related to the sea and to the various places on the coast, we proceed to consider its

communications by land with the towns of Campania and Latium. The great line of communication between Rome and the southern part of the peninsula was the Way constructed by Appius Claudius, which passed through Capua<sup>686</sup>, and thence to Brundisium on the shore of the Adriatic. Puteoli and its neighbourhood lay some miles to the westward of this main road: but communicated with it easily by well-travelled cross-roads. One of them followed the coast from Puteoli northwards, till it joined the Appian Way at Sinuessa, on the borders of Latium and Campania. It appears, however, that this road was not constructed till the reign of Domitian. Our attention, therefore, is called to the other cross-road which led directly to Capua. One branch of it left the coast at Cumæ, another at Puteoli. It was called the "Campanian Way," and also the "Consular Way." It seems to have been constructed during the Republic, and was doubtless the road which is mentioned, in an animated passage of Horace's Epistles, as communicating with the baths and villas of Baia.

The first part then of the route which Julius took with his prisoners was probably from Puteoli to Capua. All the region near the coast, however transformed in the course of ages by the volcanic forces, which are still at work, is

---

<sup>686</sup> The Via Appia, the oldest and most celebrated of Roman roads, was constructed as far as Capua, a. u. c. 442, by the censor Appius Claudius. (Liv. ix. 29.) Eight hundred years afterwards, Procopius was astonished at its appearance. He describes it as broad enough for two carriages to pass each other, and as made of stones brought from some distant quarry, and so fitted to each other, that they seemed to be thus formed by nature, rather than cemented by art. He adds that, notwithstanding the traffic of so many ages, the stones were not displaced, nor had they lost their original smoothness. (Bell. Got. i. 14.) There is great doubt as to the date of the continuation by Beneventum to Brundisium, nor is the course of it absolutely ascertained. Bergier, in his great work on Roman roads (in the tenth volume of Grævius) makes little reference to the Appian Way.

recognised as the scene of the earliest Italian mythology, and must ever be impressive from the poetic images, partly of this world and partly of the next, with which Virgil has filled it. From Cumæ to Capua, the road traverses a more prosaic district: the "Phlegræan fields" are left behind, and we pass from the scene of Italy's dim mythology to the theatre of the most exciting passages of her history. The whole line of the road can be traced at intervals, not only in the close neighbourhood of Puteoli and Capua, but through the intermediate villages, by fragments of pavement, tombs, and ancient milestones.

Capua, after a time of disgrace had expiated its friendship with Hannibal, was raised by Julius Cæsar to the rank of a colony: in the reign of Augustus it had resumed all its former splendour: and about the very time of which we are writing, it received accessions of dignity from the Emperor Nero. It was the most important city on the whole line of the Appian Way, between Rome and Brundisium. That part of the line with which we are concerned, is the northerly and most ancient portion. The distance is about 125 miles: and it may be naturally divided into two equal parts. The division is appropriate, whether in regard to the physical configuration of the country, or the modern political boundaries. The point of division is where Terracina is built at the base of those cliffs, on which the city of Anxur was of old proudly situated, and where a narrow pass, between the mountain and the sea, unites the Papal States to the kingdom of Naples.

The distance from Capua to Terracina is about seventy Roman miles. At the third mile, the road crossed the river Volturnus at Casilinum, a town then falling into decay. Fifteen miles further it crossed the river Savo, by what was then called the Campanian Bridge. Thence, after three miles, it came to Sinuessa on the sea, which in St. Paul's day was reckoned the first town in Latium. But the old rich Campania extended further to the northward, including the vine-clad hills of the famous Falernian district through which we pass, after crossing

the Savo. The last of these hills (where the vines may be seen trained on elms, as of old) is the range of Massicus, which stretches from the coast towards the Apennines, and finally shuts out from the traveller, as he descends on the farther side, all the prospect of Vesuvius and the coast near Puteoli. At that season, both vines and elms would have a winterly appearance. But the traces of spring would be visible in the willows; among which the Liris flows in many silent windings—from the birthplace of Marius in the mountains—to the city and the swamps by the sea, which the ferocity of his mature life has rendered illustrious. After leaving Minturnæ, the Appian Way passes on to another place, which has different associations with the later years of the Republic. We speak of Formiæ, with its long street by the shore of its beautiful bay, and with its villas on the sea side and above it; among which was one of Cicero's favourite retreats from the turmoil of the political world, and where at last he fell by the hand of assassins. Many a lectica, or palanquin, such as that in which he was reclining when overtaken by his murderers, may have been met by St. Paul in his progress,—with other carriages, with which the road would become more and more crowded,—the cisium, or light cabriolet, of some gay reveller, on his way to Baiæ,—or the four-wheeled rheda, full of the family of some wealthy senator quitting the town for the country. At no great distance from Formiæ the road left the sea again, and passed, where the substructions of it still remain, through the defiles of the Cæcuban hills, with their stony but productive vineyards. Thence the traveller looked down upon the plain of Fundi, which retreats like a bay into the mountains, with the low lake of Amyclæ between the town and the sea. Through the capricious care, with which time has preserved in one place what is lost in another, the pavement of the ancient way is still the street of this, the most northerly town of the Neapolitan kingdom in this direction. We have now in front of us the mountain line, which is both the frontier of the Papal states, and the natural division of the Apostle's journey from

Capua to Rome. Where it reaches the coast, in bold limestone precipices, there Anxur was situated, with its houses and temples high above the sea.

After leaving Anxur, the traveller observes the high land retreating again from the coast, and presently finds himself in a wide and remarkable plain, enclosed towards the interior by the sweep of the blue Volscian mountains, and separated by a belt of forest from the sea. Here are the Pomptine marshes,—“the only marshes ever dignified by classic celebrity.” The descriptive lines of the Roman satirist have wonderfully concurred with the continued unhealthiness of the half-drained morass, in preserving a living commentary on that fifteenth verse in the last chapter of the Acts, which exhibits to us one of the most touching passages in the Apostle's life. A few miles beyond Terracina, where a fountain, grateful to travellers, welled up near the sanctuary of Feronia, was the termination of a canal, which was formed by Augustus for the purpose of draining the marshes, and which continued for twenty miles by the side of the road. Over this distance, travellers had their choice, whether to proceed by barges dragged by mules, or on the pavement of the way itself. It is impossible to know which plan was adopted by Julius and his prisoners. If we suppose the former to have been chosen, we have the aid of Horace's Satire to enable us to imagine the incidents and the company, in the midst of which the Apostle came, unknown and unfriended, to the corrupt metropolis of the world. And yet he was not so unfriended as he may possibly have thought himself that day, in his progress from Anxur across the watery, unhealthy plain. On the arrival of the party at Appii Forum, which was a town where the mules were unfastened, at the other end of the canal, and is described by the satirist as full of low tavern-keepers and bargemen,—at that meeting-place where travellers from all parts of the Empire had often crossed one another's path,—on that day, in the motley and vulgar crowd, some of the few Christians who were then in the world,

suddenly recognised one another, and emotions of holy joy and thanksgiving sanctified the place of coarse vice and vulgar traffic. The disciples at Rome had heard of the Apostle's arrival at Puteoli, and hastened to meet him on the way; and the prisoner was startled to recognise some of those among whom he had laboured, and whom he had loved, in the distant cities of the East. Whether Aquila and Priscilla were there it is needless to speculate. Whoever might be the persons, they were brethren in Christ, and their presence would be an instantaneous source of comfort and strength. We have already seen, on other occasions of his life, how the Apostle's heart was lightened by the presence of his friends.

#### Appii Forum and the Three Taverns

About ten miles farther he received a second welcome from a similar group of Christian brethren. Two independent companies had gone to meet him; or the zeal and strength of one party had outstripped the other. At a place called the Three Taverns, where a cross road from the coast at Antium came in from the left, this second party of Christians was waiting to welcome and to honour "the ambassador in bonds." With a lighter heart, and a more cheerful countenance, he travelled the remaining seventeen miles, which brought him along the base of the Alban Hills, in the midst of places well known and famous in early Roman legends, to the town of Aricia. The Great Apostle had the sympathies of human nature; he was dejected and encouraged by the same causes which act on our spirits; he too saw all outward objects in "hues borrowed from the heart." The diminution of fatigue—the more hopeful prospect of the future—the renewed elasticity of religious trust—the sense of a brighter light on all the scenery round him—on the foliage which overshadowed the road—on the wide expanse of the plain to the left—on the high summit of the Alban Mount,—all this, and more than this, is involved in St. Luke's sentence,—“when Paul saw the brethren, he thanked God, and took courage.”

The mention of the Alban Mount reminds us that we are approaching the end of our journey. The isolated group of hills, which is called by this collective name, stands between the plain which has just been traversed and that other plain which is the Campagna of Rome. All the bases of the mountain were then (as indeed they are partially now) clustered round with the villas and gardens of wealthy citizens. The Appian Way climbs and then descends along its southern slope. After passing Lanuvium it crossed a crater-like valley on immense substructions, which still remain. Here is Aricia, an easy stage from Rome. The town was above the road; and on the hill side swarms of beggars beset travellers as they passed. On the summit of the next rise, Paul of Tarsus would obtain his first view of Rome. There is no doubt that the prospect was, in many respects, very different from the view which is now obtained from the same spot. It is true that the natural features of the scene are unaltered. The long wall of blue Sabine mountains, with Soracte in the distance, closed in the Campagna, which stretched far across to the sea and round the base of the Alban hills. But ancient Rome was not, like modern Rome, impressive from its solitude, standing alone, with its one conspicuous cupola, in the midst of a desolate though beautiful waste. St. Paul would see a vast city, covering the Campagna, and almost continuously connected by its suburbs with the villas on the hill where he stood, and with the bright towns which clustered on the sides of the mountains opposite. Over all the intermediate space were the houses and gardens, through which aqueducts and roads might be traced in converging lines towards the confused mass of edifices which formed the city of Rome. Here no conspicuous building, elevated above the rest, attracted the eye or the imagination. Ancient Rome had neither cupola nor campanile. Still less had it any of those spires, which give life to all the landscapes of Northern Christendom. It was a wide-spread aggregate of buildings, which, though separated by narrow streets and open squares, appeared, when seen from near Aricia, blended into one indiscriminate mass:

for distance concealed the contrasts which divided the crowded habitations of the poor and the dark haunts of filth and misery—from the theatres and colonnades, the baths, the temples and palaces with gilded roofs, flashing back the sun.

The road descended into the plain at Bovillæ, six miles from Aricia, and thence it proceeded in a straight line, with the sepulchres of illustrious families on either hand. One of these was the burial-place of the Julian gens, with which the centurion who had charge of the prisoners was in some way connected. As they proceeded over the old pavement, among gardens and modern houses, and approached nearer the busy metropolis—the “conflux issuing forth or entering in” in various costumes and on various errands,—vehicles, horsemen, and foot-passengers, soldiers and labourers, Romans and foreigners,—became more crowded and confusing. The houses grew closer. They were already in Rome. It was impossible to define the commencement of the city. Its populous portions extended far beyond the limits marked out by Servius. The ancient wall, with its once sacred pomœrium, was rather an object for antiquarian interest, like the walls of York or Chester, than any protection against the enemies, who were kept far aloof by the legions on the frontier.

### Entrance into Rome

Yet the Porta Capena is a spot which we can hardly leave without lingering for a moment. Under this arch—which was perpetually dripping with the water of the aqueduct that went over it—had passed all those who, since a remote period of the republic, had travelled by the Appian Way,—victorious generals with their legions, returning from foreign service,—emperors and courtiers, vagrant representatives of every form of Heathenism, Greeks and Asiatics, Jews and Christians. From this point entering within the city, Julius and his prisoners moved on, with the Aventine on their left, close round the base of the Cœlian, and through the hollow ground which lay between

this hill and the Palatine: thence over the low ridge called Velia, where afterwards was built the arch of Titus, to commemorate the destruction of Jerusalem; and then descending, by the Sacra Via, into that space which was the centre of imperial power and imperial magnificence, and associated also with the most glorious recollections of the republic. The Forum was to Rome, what the Acropolis was to Athens, the heart of all the characteristic interest of the place. Here was the Milliarium Aureum, to which the roads of all the provinces converged. All around were the stately buildings, which were raised in the closing years of the Republic, and by the earlier Emperors. In front was the Capitoline Hill, illustrious long before the invasion of the Gauls. Close on the left, covering that hill, whose name is associated in every modern European language with the notion of imperial splendour, were the vast ranges of the palace—the “house of Cæsar” (Phil. 4:22). Here were the household troops quartered in a prætorium attached to the palace. And here (unless, indeed, it was in the great Prætorian camp outside the city wall) Julius gave up his prisoner to Burrus, the Prætorian Præfect, whose official duty it was to keep in custody all accused persons who were to be tried before the Emperor.

This doubt, which of two places, somewhat distant from each other, was the scene of St. Paul’s meeting with the commander-in-chief of the Prætorian guards, gives us the occasion for entering on a general description of the different parts of the city of Rome. It would be nugatory to lay great stress, as is too often done, on its “seven hills:” for a great city at length obliterates the original features of the ground, especially where those features were naturally not very strongly marked. The description, which is easy in reference to Athens or Edinburgh, is hard in the instance of modern London or ancient Rome. Nor is it easy, in the case of one of the larger cities of the world, to draw any marked lines of distinction among the different classes of buildings. It is true, the contrasts are really great; but details

are lost in a distant view of so vast an aggregate. The two scourges to which ancient Rome was most exposed, revealed very palpably the contrast, both of the natural ground and the human structures, which by the general observer might be unnoticed or forgotten. When the Tiber was flooded, and the muddy waters converted all the streets and open places of the lower part of the city into lakes and canals, it would be seen very clearly how much lower were the Forum and the Campus Martius, than those three detached hills (the Capitoline, the Palatine, and the Aventine) which rose near the river; and those four ridges (the Cœlian, the Esquiline, the Viminal, and the Quirinal) which ascended and united together in the higher ground on which the Prætorian camp was situated. And when fires swept rapidly from roof to roof, and vast ranges of buildings were buried in the ruins of one night, that contrast between the dwellings of the poor and the palaces of the rich, which has supplied the Apostle with one of his most forcible images, would be clearly revealed,—the difference between structures of “sumptuous marbles, with silver and gold,” which abide after the fire, and the hovels of “wood, hay, stubble,” which are burnt (1 Cor. 3:10–15).

### Description of Rome

If we look at a map of modern Rome, with a desire of realising to ourselves the appearance of the city of Augustus and Nero, we must in the first place obliterate from our view that circuit of walls, which is due in various proportions, to Aurelian, Belisarius, and Pope Leo IV. The wall, through which the Porta Capena gave admission, was the old Servian enclosure, which embraced a much smaller area: though we must bear in mind, as we have remarked above, that the city had extended itself beyond this limit, and spread through various suburbs, far into the country. In the next place we must observe that the hilly part of Rome, which is now half occupied by gardens, was then the most populous, while the Campus Martius, now covered with crowded streets, was comparatively open. It was only about the close

of the Republic that many buildings were raised on the Campus Martius, and these were chiefly of a public or decorative character. One of these, the Pantheon, still remains, as a monument of the reign of Augustus. This, indeed, is the period from which we must trace the beginning of all the grandeur of Roman buildings. Till the Civil War between Pompey and Cæsar, the private houses of the citizens had been mean, and the only public structures of note were the cloacæ and the aqueducts. But in proportion as the ancient fabric of the constitution broke down, and while successful generals brought home wealth from provinces conquered and plundered on every shore of the Mediterranean, the City began to assume the appearance of a new and imperial magnificence. To leave out of view the luxurious and splendid residences which wealthy citizens raised for their own uses, Pompey erected the first theatre of stone, and Julius Cæsar surrounded the great Circus with a portico. From this time the change went on rapidly and incessantly. The increase of public business led to the erection of enormous Basilicas. The Forum was embellished on all sides. The Temple of Apollo on the Palatine, and those other temples the remains of which are still conspicuous at the base of the Capitoline, were only a small part of similar buildings raised by Augustus. The triumphal arch erected by Tiberius near the same place was only one of many structures, which rose in rapid succession to decorate that busy neighbourhood. And if we wish to take a wider view, we have only to think of the aqueducts, which were built, one by one, between the private enterprises of Agrippa in the reign of Augustus, and the recent structures of the Emperor Claudius, just before the arrival of the Apostle Paul. We may not go further in the order of chronology. We must remember that the Colosseum, the Basilica of Constantine, and the baths of other emperors, and many other buildings which are now regarded as the conspicuous features of ancient Rome, did not then exist. We are describing a period which is anterior to the time of Nero's fire. Even after the opportunity which that calamity afforded for reconstructing the city, Juvenal complains of

the narrowness of the streets. Were we to attempt to extend our description to any of these streets,—whether the old Vicus Tuscus, with its cheating shopkeepers, which led round the base of the Palatine, from the Forum to the Circus,—or the aristocratic Carinæ along the slope of the Esquiline,—or the noisy Suburra, in the hollow between the Viminal and Quirinal, which had sunk into disrepute, though once the residence of Julius Cæsar,—we should only wander into endless perplexity. And we should be equally lost, if we were to attempt to discriminate the mixed multitude, which were crowded on the various landings of those insulæ, or piles of lodging houses, which are perhaps best described by comparing them to the houses in the old town of Edinburgh.

If it is difficult to describe the outward appearances of the city, it is still more difficult to trace the distinctive features of all the parts of that colossal population which filled it. Within a circuit of little more than twelve miles more than two millions of inhabitants were crowded. It is evident that this fact is only explicable by the narrowness of the streets, with that peculiarity of the houses which has been alluded to above. In this prodigious collection of human beings, there were of course all the contrasts which are seen in a modern city,—all the painful lines of separation between luxury and squalor, wealth and want. But in Rome all these differences were on an exaggerated scale, and the institution of slavery modified further all social relations. The free citizens were more than a million: of these, the senators were so few in number, as to be hardly appreciable: the knights, who filled a great proportion of the public offices, were not more than 10,000: the troops quartered in the city may be reckoned at 15,000: the rest were the Plebs urbana. That a vast number of these would be poor, is an obvious result of the most ordinary causes. But, in ancient Rome, the luxury of the wealthier classes did not produce a general diffusion of trade, as it does in a modern city. The handicraft employments, and many of what we should call professions, were

in the hands of slaves; and the consequence was, that a vast proportion of the Plebs urbana lived on public or private charity. Yet were these pauper citizens proud of their citizenship, though many of them had no better sleeping-place for the night than the public porticos or the vestibules of temples. They cared for nothing beyond bread for the day, the games of the Circus, and the savage delight of gladiatorial shows. Manufactures and trade they regarded as the business of the slave and the foreigner. The number of the slaves was perhaps about a million. The number of the strangers or peregrini was much smaller; but it is impossible to describe their varieties. Every kind of nationality and religion found its representative in Rome. But it is needless to pursue these details. The most obvious comparison is better than an elaborate description. Rome was like London with all its miseries, vices, and follies exaggerated, and without Christianity.

#### Population of Rome

One part of Rome still remains to be described, the “Trastevere,” or district beyond the river. This portion of the city has been known in modern times for the energetic and intractable character of its population. In earlier times it was equally notorious, though not quite for the same reason. It was the residence of a low rabble, and the place of the meanest merchandise. There is, however, one reason why our attention is particularly called to it. It was the ordinary residence of the Jews—the “Ghetto” of ancient Rome: and great part of it was doubtless squalid and miserable, like the Ghetto of modern Rome, though the Jews were often less oppressed under the Cæsars than under the Popes. Here then—on the level ground, between the windings of the muddy river and the base of that hill from the brow of which Porsena looked down on early Rome, and where the French within these few years have planted their cannon—we must place the home of those Israelitish families among whom the Gospel bore its first-fruits in the metropolis of the world: and it was on these bridges,—which formed an immediate communication from the

district beyond the Tiber to the Emperor's household and the guards on the Palatine,— that those despised Jewish beggars took their stand, to whom in the place of their exile had come the hopes of a better citizenship than that which they had lost.

The Jewish community thus established in Rome, had its first beginnings in the captives brought by Pompey after his eastern campaign. Many of them were manumitted; and thus a great proportion of the Jews in Rome were freedmen. Frequent accessions to their numbers were made as years went on—chiefly from the mercantile relations which subsisted between Rome and the East. Many of them were wealthy, and large sums were sent annually for religious purposes from Italy to the mother country. Even the proselytes contributed to these sacred funds. It is difficult to estimate the amount of the religious influence exerted by the Roman Jews upon the various Heathens around them; but all our sources of information lead us to conclude that it was very considerable. So long as this influence was purely religious, we have no reason to suppose that any persecution from the civil power resulted. It was when commotions took place in consequence of expectations of a temporal Messiah, or when vague suspicions of this mysterious people were more than usually excited, that the Jews of Rome were cruelly treated, or peremptorily banished. Yet from all these cruelties they recovered with elastic force, and from all these exiles they returned; and in the early years of Nero, which were distinguished for a mild and lenient government of the Empire, the Jews in Rome seem to have enjoyed complete toleration, and to have been a numerous, wealthy, and influential community.

### The Roman Church

The Christians doubtless shared the protection which was extended to the Jews. They were hardly yet sufficiently distinguished as a self-existent community, to provoke any independent hostility. It is even possible that the Christians, so far as they were known as

separate, were more tolerated than the Jews; for, not having the same expectation of an earthly hero to deliver them, they had no political ends in view, and would not be in the same danger of exciting the suspicion of the government. Yet we should fall into a serious error, if we were to suppose that all the Christians in Rome, or the majority of them, had formerly been Jews or Proselytes; though this was doubtless true of its earliest members, who may have been of the number that were dispersed after the first Pentecost, or, possibly, disciples of our Lord Himself. It is impossible to arrive at any certain conclusion concerning the first origin and early growth of the Church in Rome; though, from the manifold links between the city and the provinces, it is easy to account for the formation of a large and flourishing community. Its history before the year 61 might be divided into three periods, separated from each other by the banishment of the Jews from Rome in the reign of Claudius, and the writing of St. Paul's letter from Corinth. Even in the first of these periods there might be points of connection between the Roman Church and St. Paul; for some of those whom he salutes (Rom. 16:7, 11) as "kinsmen," are also said to have been "Christians before him." In the second period it cannot well be doubted that a very close connection began between St. Paul and some of the conspicuous members and principal teachers of the Roman Church. The expulsion of the Jews in consequence of the edict of Claudius, brought them in large numbers to the chief towns of the Levant; and there St. Paul met them in the synagogues. We have seen what results followed from his meeting with Aquila and Priscilla at Corinth. They returned to Rome with all the stores of spiritual instruction which he had given them; and in the Epistle to the Romans we find him, as is natural, saluting them thus:—"Greet Priscilla and Aquila, my helpers in Christ Jesus: who have for my sake laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles. Likewise greet the Church that is in their house." All this reveals to us a great amount of devoted exertion on behalf

of one large congregation in Rome; and all of it distinctly connected with St. Paul. And this is perhaps only a specimen of other cases of the like kind. Thus he sends a greeting to Epænetus, whom he names “the first-fruits of Asia” (ver. 5), and who may have had the same close relation to him during his long ministration at Ephesus (Acts, 19), which Aquila and Priscilla had at Corinth. Nor must we forget those women, whom he singles out for special mention,—“Mary, who bestowed much labour on him” (ver. 6); “the beloved Persis, who laboured much in the Lord” (ver. 12); with Tryphæna and Tryphosa, and the unknown mother of Rufus (ver. 13). We cannot doubt, that, though the Church of Rome may have received its growth and instruction through various channels, many of them were connected, directly or indirectly, with St. Paul; and accordingly he writes, in the whole of the letter, as one already in intimate relation with a Church which he has never seen. And whatever bonds subsisted between this Apostle and the Roman Christians, must have been drawn still closer when the letter had been received; for from that time they were looking forward to a personal visit from him, in his projected journey to the West. Thenceforward they must have taken the deepest interest in all his movements, and received with eager anxiety the news of his imprisonment at Cæsarea, and waited (as we have already seen) for his arrival in Italy. It is indeed but too true that there were parties among the Christians in Rome, and that some had a hostile feeling against St. Paul himself; yet it is probable that the animosity of the Judaizers was less developed, than it was in those regions which he had personally visited, and to which they had actually followed him. As to the unconverted Jews, the name of St. Paul was doubtless known to them; yet were they comparatively little interested in his movements. Their proud contempt of the Christian heresy would make them indifferent. The leaven of the Gospel was working around them to an extent of which they were hardly aware. The very magnitude of the population of Rome had a tendency to neutralise the currents

of party feeling. For these reasons the hostility of the Jews was probably less violent than in any other part of the Empire.

#### Interview with the Jews

Yet St. Paul could not possibly be aware of the exact extent of their enmity against himself. Independently, therefore, of his general principle of preaching, first to the Jew and then to the Gentile, he had an additional reason for losing no time in addressing himself to his countrymen. Thus, after the mention of St. Paul’s being delivered up to Burrus, and allowed by him to be separate from the other prisoners, the next scene to which the sacred historian introduces us is among the Jews. After three days he sent for the principal men among them to his lodging, and endeavoured to conciliate their feelings towards himself and the Gospel.

It was highly probable that the prejudices of these Roman Jews were already roused against the Apostle of the Gentiles; or if they had not yet conceived an unfavourable opinion of him, there was a danger that they would now look upon him as a traitor to his country, from the mere fact that he had appealed to the Roman power. He might even have been represented to them in the odious light of one who had come to Rome as an accuser of the Sanhedrin before the Emperor. St. Paul, therefore, addressed his auditors on this point at once, and shewed that his enemies were guilty of this very appeal to the foreign power, of which he had himself been suspected. He had committed no offence against the holy nation, or the customs of their fathers; yet his enemies at Jerusalem had delivered him,—one of their brethren—of the seed of Abraham—of the tribe of Benjamin—a Hebrew of the Hebrews—into the hands of the Romans. So unfounded was the accusation, that even the Roman governor had been ready to liberate the prisoner; but his Jewish enemies opposed his liberation. They strove to keep a child of Israel in Roman chains. So that he was compelled, as his only hope of safety, to appeal unto Cæsar. He brought no accusation against his

countrymen before the tribunal of the stranger: that was the deed of his antagonists. In fact, his only crime had been his firm faith in God's deliverance of his people through the Messiah promised by the Prophets. "For the hope of Israel," he concluded, "I am bound with this chain."

Their answer to this address was reassuring. They said that they had received no written communication from Judæa concerning St. Paul, and that none of "the brethren" who had arrived from the East had spoken any evil of him. They further expressed a wish to hear from himself a statement of his religious sentiments, adding that the Christian sect was everywhere spoken against. There was perhaps something hardly honest in this answer; for it seems to imply a greater ignorance with regard to Christianity than we can suppose to have prevailed among the Roman Jews. But with regard to Paul himself, it might well be true that they had little information concerning him. Though he had been imprisoned long at Cæsarea, his appeal had been made only a short time before winter. After that time (to use the popular expression), the sea was shut; and the winter had been a stormy one; so that it was natural enough that his case should be first made known to the Jews by himself. All these circumstances gave a favourable opening for the preaching of the Gospel, and Paul hastened to take advantage of it. A day was fixed for a meeting at his own private lodging.

They came in great numbers at the appointed time. Then followed an impressive scene, like that at Troas (Acts, 21)—the Apostle pleading long and earnestly,—bearing testimony concerning the kingdom of God,—and endeavouring to persuade them by arguments drawn from their own Scriptures,—“from morning till evening.” The result was a division among the auditors—“not peace but a sword,”—the division which has resulted ever since, when the Truth of God has encountered, side by side, earnest conviction with worldly indifference, honest investigation with bigoted prejudice, trustful faith with the pride of

scepticism. After a long and stormy discussion, the unbelieving portion departed; but not until St. Paul had warned them, in one last address, that they were bringing upon themselves that awful doom of judicial blindness, which was denounced in their own Scriptures against obstinate unbelievers; that the salvation which they rejected would be withdrawn from them, and the inheritance they renounced would be given to the Gentiles. The sentence with which he gave emphasis to this warning was that passage in Isaiah, which is more often quoted in the New Testament than any other words from the Old, —which recurring thus with solemn force at the very close of the Apostolic history, seems to bring very strikingly together the Old Dispensation and the New, and to connect the ministry of Our Lord with that of His Apostles:— “Go unto this people and say: Hearing ye shall hear and shall not understand, and seeing ye shall see and shall not perceive: for the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.”

A formal separation was now made between the Apostle of the Gentiles and the Jews of Rome. They withdrew, to dispute concerning the “sect” which was making such inroads on their prejudices (ver. 29). He remained in his own hired house, where the indulgence of Burrus permitted him to reside, instead of confining him within the walls of the Prætorian barrack. We must not forget, however, that he was still a prisoner under military custody,—chained by the arm, both day and night, to one of the imperial bodyguard,—and thus subjected to the rudeness and caprice of an insolent soldiery. This severity, however, was indispensable, according to the Roman law; and he received every indulgence which it was in the power of the Præfect to grant. He was allowed to receive all who came to him (ver. 30), and was permitted, without hindrance, to

preach boldly the kingdom of God, and teach the things of the Lord Jesus Christ (ver. 31).

Thus was fulfilled his long cherished desire “to proclaim the Gospel to them that were in Rome also” (Rom. 1:15). Thus ends the Apostolic History, so far as it has been directly revealed. Here the thread of sacred narrative, which we have followed so long, is suddenly broken. Our knowledge of the incidents of his residence in Rome, and of his subsequent history, must be gathered almost exclusively from the letters of the Apostle himself.

## Chapter 25

### Delay of St. Paul’s Trial

We have seen that St. Paul’s accusers had not yet arrived from Palestine, and that their coming was not even expected by the Roman Jews. This proves that they had not left Syria before the preceding winter, and consequently that they could not have set out on their journey till the following spring, when the navigation of the Mediterranean was again open. Thus, they would not reach Rome till the summer or autumn of the year 61 AD <sup>687</sup>

Meanwhile, the progress of the trial was necessarily suspended, for the Roman courts required the personal presence of the prosecutor. It would seem that, at this time, an accused person might be thus kept in prison for an indefinite period, merely by the delay of the prosecutor to proceed with his accusation; nor need this surprise us, if we consider how

---

<sup>687</sup> About this period (as we learn from Josephus) there were two embassies sent from Jerusalem to Rome; viz., that which was charged to conduct the impeachment of Felix, and that which was sent to intercede with Nero on the subject of Agrippa’s palace, which overlooked the Temple. The former seems to have arrived in Rome in a.d. 60., the latter in a.d. 61. (See note on the Chronological table in Appendix.) It is not impossible that the latter embassy, in which was included Ishmael the High priest, may have been intrusted with the prosecution of St. Paul, in addition to their other business.

harshly the law has dealt with supposed offenders, and with what indifference it has treated the rights of the accused, even in periods whose civilization was not only more advanced than that of the Roman Empire, but also imbued with the merciful spirit of Christianity. And even when the prosecutors were present, and no ground alleged for the delay of the trial, a corrupt judge might postpone it, as Felix did, for months and years, to gratify the enemies of the prisoner. And if a provincial Governor, though responsible for such abuse of power to his master, might venture to act in this arbitrary manner, much more might the Emperor himself, who was responsible to no man. Thus, we find that Tiberius was in the habit of delaying the hearing of causes, and retaining the accused in prison unheard, merely out of procrastination. So that, even after St. Paul’s prosecutors had arrived, and though we were to suppose them anxious for the progress of the trial, it might still have been long delayed by the Emperor’s caprice. But there is no reason to think that, when they came, they would have wished to press on the cause. From what had already occurred they had every reason to expect the failure of the prosecution. In fact it had already broken down at its first stage, and Festus had strongly pronounced his opinion of the innocence of the accused. Their hope of success at Rome must have been grounded either on influencing the Emperor’s judgment by private intrigue, or on producing farther evidence in support of their accusation. For both these objects delay would be necessary. Moreover, it was quite in accordance with the regular course of Roman jurisprudence, that the Court should grant a long suspension of the cause, on the petition of the prosecutor, that he might be allowed time to procure the attendance of witnesses from a distance. The length of time thus granted would depend upon the remoteness of the place where the alleged crimes had been committed. We read of an interval of twelve months permitted during Nero’s reign, in the case of an accusation against Suilius, for misdemeanours committed

during his government of Proconsular Asia. The accusers of St. Paul might fairly demand a longer suspension; for they accused him of offences committed not only in Palestine (which was far more remote than Proconsular Asia from Rome), but also over the whole Empire. Their witnesses must be summoned from Judæa, from Syria, from Cilicia, from Pisidia, from Macedonia. In all cities from Damascus to Corinth, in all countries, from Jerusalem round about unto Illyricum, must testimony be sought to prove the seditious turbulence of the ringleader of the Nazarenes. The interval granted them for such a purpose could not be less than a year, and might well be more. Supposing it to be the shortest possible, and assuming that the prosecutors reached Rome in August a.d. 61, the first stage of the trial would be appointed to commence not before August a.d. 62. And when this period arrived, the prosecutors and the accused, with their witnesses, must have been heard on each of the charges separately (according to Nero's regulations), and sentence pronounced on the first charge before the second was entered into. Now, the charges against St. Paul were divided (as we have seen) into three separate heads of accusation. Consequently, the proceedings, which would of course be adjourned from time to time to suit the Emperor's convenience, may well have lasted till the beginning of 63, at which time St. Luke's narrative would lead us to fix their termination.

During the long delay of his trial, St. Paul was not reduced, as he had been at Cæsarea, to a forced inactivity. On the contrary, he was permitted the freest intercourse with his friends, and was allowed to reside in a house of sufficient size to accommodate the congregation which flocked together to listen to his teaching. The freest scope was given to his labours, consistent with the military custody under which he was placed. We are told, in language peculiarly emphatic, that his preaching was subjected to no restraint whatever. And that which seemed at first to impede, must really have deepened the

impression of his eloquence; for who could see without emotion that venerable form subjected by iron links to the coarse control of the soldier who stood beside him? how often must the tears of the assembly have been called forth by the upraising of that fettered hand, and the clanking of the chain which checked its energetic action!

### His Companions During Imprisonment

We shall see hereafter that these labours of the imprisoned Confessor were not fruitless; in his own words, he begot many children in his chains. Meanwhile, he had a wider sphere of action than even the metropolis of the world. Not only "the crowd which pressed upon him daily," but also "the care of all the churches," demanded his constant vigilance and exertion. Though himself tied down to a single spot, he kept up a constant intercourse, by his delegates, with his converts throughout the Empire; and not only with his own converts, but with the other Gentile Churches, who, as yet, had not seen his face in the flesh. To enable him to maintain this superintendence, he manifestly needed many faithful messengers; men who (as he says of one of them) rendered him profitable service; and by some of whom he seems to have been constantly accompanied, wheresoever he went. Accordingly, we find him, during this Roman imprisonment, surrounded by many of his oldest and most valued attendants. Luke, his fellow-traveller, remained with him during his bondage; Timotheus, his beloved son in the faith, ministered to him at Rome, as he had done in Asia, in Macedonia, and in Achaia. Tychicus, who had formerly borne him company from Corinth to Ephesus, is now at hand to carry his letters to the shores which they had visited together. But there are two names amongst his Roman companions which excite a peculiar interest, though from opposite reasons,—the names of Demas and of Mark. The latter, when last we heard of him, was the unhappy cause of the separation of Barnabas and Paul. He was rejected by Paul, as unworthy to attend him, because he had previously abandoned the work of the Gospel out of

timidity or indolence. It is delightful to find him now ministering obediently to the very Apostle who had then repudiated his services; still more, to know that he persevered in this fidelity even to the end, and was sent for by St. Paul to cheer his dying hours. Demas, on the other hand, is now a faithful "fellow-labourer" of the Apostle; but in a few years we shall find that he had "forsaken" him, "having loved this present world." Perhaps we may be allowed to hope, that, as the fault of Demas was the same with that of Mark, so the repentance of Mark may have been paralleled by that of Demas.

Amongst the rest of St. Paul's companions at this time, there were two whom he distinguishes by the honourable title of his "fellow-prisoners." One of these is Aristarchus, the other Epaphras. With regard to the former, we know that he was a Macedonian of Thessalonica, one of "Paul's companions in travel," whose life was endangered by the mob at Ephesus, and who embarked with St. Paul at Cæsarea when he set sail for Rome. The other, Epaphras, was a Colossian, who must not be identified with the Philippian Epaphroditus, another of St. Paul's fellow-labourers during this time. It is not easy to say what was the exact sense in which these two disciples were peculiarly fellow-prisoners of St. Paul. Perhaps it only implies that they dwelt in his house, which was also his prison.

But of all the disciples now ministering to St. Paul at Rome, none has for us a greater interest than the fugitive Asiatic slave Onesimus. He belonged to a Christian named Philemon, a member of the Colossian Church. But he had robbed his master, and fled from Colossæ, and at last found his way to Rome. It is difficult to imagine any portion of mankind more utterly depraved than the associates among whom a runaway pagan slave must have found himself in the capital. Profligate and unprincipled as we know even the highest and most educated society to have then been, what must have been its dregs and offal? Yet from this lowest depth Onesimus was dragged forth by the hand of Christian love. Perhaps some Asiatic Christian,

who had seen him formerly at his master's house, recognised him in the streets of Rome destitute and starving, and had compassion on him; and thus he might have been brought to hear the preaching of the illustrious prisoner. Or it is not impossible that he may have already known St. Paul at Ephesus, where his master Philemon had formerly been himself converted by the Apostle. However this may be, it is certain that Onesimus was led by the providence of God to listen to that preaching now which he had formerly despised. He was converted to the faith of Christ, and therefore to the morality of Christ. He confessed to St. Paul his sins against his master. The Apostle seems to have been peculiarly attracted by the character of Onesimus; and he perceived in him the indications of gifts which fitted him for a more important post than any which he could hold as the slave of Philemon. He wished to keep him at Rome, and employ him in the service of the Gospel. Yet he would not transgress the law, nor violate the rights of Philemon, by acting in this matter without his consent. He therefore decided that Onesimus must immediately return to his master; and, to make this duty less painful, he undertook himself to discharge the sum of which Philemon had been defrauded. An opportunity now offered itself for Onesimus to return in good company; for St. Paul was sending Tychicus to Asia Minor, charged, amongst other commissions, with an epistle to Colossæ, the home of Philemon. Under his care, therefore, he placed the penitent slave, who was now willing to surrender himself to his offended master. Nevertheless, he did not give up the hope of placing his new convert in a position wherein he might minister no longer to a private individual, but to the Church at large. He intimated his wishes on the subject to Philemon himself, with characteristic delicacy, in a letter which he charged Onesimus to deliver on his arrival at Colossæ. This letter is not only a beautiful illustration of the character of St. Paul, but also a practical commentary upon the precepts concerning the mutual relations of slaves and masters given in his cotemporary

epistles. We see here one of the earliest examples of the mode in which Christianity operated upon these relations; not by any violent disruption of the organisation of society, such as could only have produced another Servile War, but by gradually leavening and interpenetrating society with the spirit of a religion which recognised the equality of all men in the sight of God. The letter was as follows:—

### THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON.

Salutation.

**PAUL, a prisoner of Christ Jesus, and Timotheus the brother, TO PHILEMON OUR BELOVED FRIEND AND FELLOW LABOURER; AND TO APPIA OUR BELOVED SISTER, AND TO ARCHIPPUS<sup>688</sup> OUR FELLOW SOLDIER, AND TO THE CHURCH AT THY HOUSE.**

Grace be to you and peace, from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers, because I hear of thy love and faith towards the Lord Jesus, and towards all the saints; praying that thy faith may communicate itself to others, and may become workful, in causing true knowledge of all the good which is in us, for Christ's service. For I have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the hearts of the saints have been comforted by thee, brother.

Wherefore, although in the authority of Christ I might boldly enjoin upon thee that which is befitting, yet for love's sake I rather beseech thee as Paul the aged, and now also prisoner of Jesus Christ. I beseech thee for my son, whom I have begotten in my chains, Onesimus; who formerly was to thee unprofitable, but now is profitable both to thee and me. Whom I have sent back to thee; but do thou receive him as my own flesh and blood. For I would gladly retain him with

<sup>688</sup> Archippus was apparently a presbyter of the church at Colossæ, or perhaps an evangelist resident there on a special mission (compare Col. 4:17); from the present passage he seems to have lived in the house of Philemon.

**myself, that he might render service to me in thy stead, while I am a prisoner for declaring the Glad-tidings; but I am unwilling to do anything without thy decision, that thy kindness may not be constrained, but voluntary. For perhaps to this very end he was parted from thee for a time, that thou mightest possess him for ever; no longer as a bondsman, but above a bondsman, a brother beloved; very dear to me, but how much more to thee, being thine both in the flesh and in the Lord. If, then, thou count me in fellowship with thee, receive him as myself. But whatsoever he has wronged thee of, or owes thee, reckon it to my account (I, Paul, write this with my own hand); I will repay it; for I would not say to thee that thou owest me even thine own self besides. Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord; comfort my heart in Christ.**

I write to thee with full confidence in thy obedience, knowing that thou wilt do even more than I say. But, moreover, prepare to receive me as thy guest; for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given to you.

There salute thee Epaphras my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus, Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fellow-labourers.

The Grace of Our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits.

### St. Paul Writes to the Colossians

While Onesimus, on the arrival of the two companions at Colossæ<sup>689</sup>, hurried to the house

<sup>689</sup> Though we have come to the conclusion that St. Paul had not himself (at this time) visited Colossæ, yet it is hardly possible to read these Epistles without feeling an interest in the scenery and topography of its vicinity. The upper part of the valley of the Mæander, where this city, with its neighbour-cities Hierapolis and Laodicea (Col. 2:1. 4:13; Rev. 3:14), was situated, has been described by many travellers; and the illustrated works on Asia Minor contain several views, especially of the vast and singular petrifications of Hierapolis (Pambouk-Kalessi). Colossæ was older than either Laodicea or Hierapolis, and it fell into comparative insignificance as they rose into importance. Herodotus (vii. 30.) describes it as—Πόλιν μεγάλην Φρυγίης ἐν τῇ Λύκος ποταμὸς ἐς χάσμα γῆς ἐσβάλλων ἀφανίζεται;

of his master with the letter which we have just read, Tychicus proceeded to discharge his commission likewise by delivering to the Presbyters the Epistle with which he was charged, that it might be read to the whole Colossian Church at their next meeting. The letter to the Colossians itself gives us distinct information as to the cause which induced St. Paul to write it. Epaphras, the probable founder of that Church (Col. 1:7), was now at Rome, and he had communicated to the Apostle the unwelcome tidings, that the faith of the Colossians was in danger of being perverted by false teaching. It has been questioned whether several different systems of error had been introduced among them, or whether the several errors combated in the Epistle were parts of one system, and taught by the same teachers. On the one side we find that in the Epistle St. Paul warns the Colossians separately against the following different errors:—First, A combination of angel-worship and asceticism; Secondly, A self-styled philosophy or gnosis, which depreciated Christ; Thirdly, A rigid observance of Jewish festivals and Sabbaths. On the other side, First, the Epistle seems distinctly (though with an indirectness caused by obvious motives) to point to a single source, and even a single individual, as the origin of the errors introduced; and, Secondly, we know that at any rate the two first of these errors, and apparently the third also, were combined by some of the early Gnostics. The most probable

view, therefore, seems to be, that some Alexandrian Jew had appeared at Colossæ, professing a belief in Christianity, and imbued with the Greek “philosophy” of the school of Philo, but combining with it the Rabbinical theosophy and angelology which afterwards was embodied in the Cabbala, and an extravagant asceticism, which also afterwards distinguished several sects of the Gnostics. In short, one of the first heresiarchs of the incipient Gnosticism had begun to pervert the Colossians from the simplicity of their faith. We have seen in a former Chapter how great was the danger to be apprehended from this source, at the stage which the Church had now reached; especially in a church which consisted, as that at Colossæ did, principally of Gentiles (Col. 1:25–27, Col. 2:11); and that, too, in Phrygia, where the national character was so prone to a mystic fanaticism. We need not wonder, therefore, that St. Paul, acting under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, should have thought it needful to use every effort to counteract the growing evil. This he does, both by contradicting the doctrinal errors of the new system, and by inculcating, as essential to Christianity, that pure morality which these early heretics despised. Such appears to have been the main purpose of the following Epistle.

---

and Xenophon (Anab. I ii. 6.) calls it πόλιν οἰκουμένην καὶ μεγάλην. Strabo (xii .8.) reckons it among the πολίσματα, not the πόλεις, of Phrygia; and Pliny (v. 41), among its “celeberrima oppida.” In the Middle Ages it became a place of some consequence, and was the birthplace of the Byzantine writer Nicetas Choniates, who tells us that Χώναι and Κολασσαί were the same place (Χώνας, πόλιν εὐδαίμονα καὶ μεγάλην, πάλαι τὰς Κολασσάς, τὴν ἑμοῦ τοῦ συγγραφέως πατρίδα, p. 203. ed. Bonn). A village called Chonas still remains, the proximity of which to the ancient Colossæ is proved by the correspondence of the observed phenomena with what Herodotus says of the river Lycus.

---

THE EPISTLE TO THE COLOSSIANS <sup>690</sup>

## Colossians 1

**PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus the brother, TO THE HOLY AND FAITHFUL BRETHREN IN CHRIST WHO ARE AT COLOSSÆ,**

Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father.

**I give continual thanks to God the Father of Our Lord Jesus Christ, in my prayers for you (since I heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and your love to all the saints), because of the hope laid up for you in the heavens, whereof you heard the promise in the truthful Word of the Glad-tidings; which is come to you, as it is through all the world; and everywhere it bears fruit and grows, as it does also among you, since the day when first you heard it, and learned to know truly the grace of God. And thus you were taught by Epaphras my beloved fellow-bondsman <sup>691</sup>, who is a faithful servant of Christ on your behalf. And it is he who has declared to me your love for me in the Spirit.**

**Wherefore I also, since the day when first I heard it, cease not to pray for you, and to ask**

<sup>690</sup> The following are the grounds for the date assigned to this Epistle.

(1.) It was written in prison at the same time as that to Philemon, and sent by the same messenger (4:7–9).

(2.) It was not written in Cæsarea —

(A) Because while writing St. Paul was labouring for the Gospel (4:3, 4), which he did not at Cæsarea (Acts 28:31).

(B) Because he could not have expected at Cæsarea to be soon coming to Phrygia (Acts 23:11, 19:21; Rom. 1:13; Acts 20:25), whereas while writing this he expected soon to visit Phrygia (Philem. 22).

(3.) The indications above mentioned all correspond with Rome. Moreover Timotheus was with him, as we know he was at Rome, from Phil. 1:1.

<sup>691</sup> Epaphras is the same name with Epaphroditus; but this can scarcely be the same person with that Epaphroditus who brought the contribution from Philippi to Rome about this time. This was a native of Colossæ (see 4:12), the other was settled at Philippi, and held office in the Philippian Church.

**of God that you may fully attain to the knowledge of His will; that in all wisdom and spiritual understanding you may walk worthy of the Lord, to please Him in all things; that you may bear fruit in all good works, and grow continually in the knowledge of God; that you may be strengthened to the uttermost in the strength of His glorious power, to bear all sufferings with steadfastness and with joy, giving thanks to the Father who has fitted us to share the portion of the saints in the light.**

**For He has delivered us from the dominion of darkness, and transplanted us into the kingdom of his beloved Son, in whom we have our redemption, the forgiveness of our sins. Who is a visible image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation; for in Him were all things created, both in the heavens and on the earth, both visible and invisible, whether they be Thrones, or Dominations, or Principalities, or Powers <sup>692</sup>; by Him and for Him <sup>693</sup> were all created. And He is before all things, and in Him all things subsist. And He is the head of the body, the Church; whereof He is the beginning, as firstborn from the dead; that in all things His place might be the first.**

**For He willed that in Himself all the Fulness of the universe should dwell; and by Himself He willed to reconcile all things to Himself,**

<sup>692</sup> St. Paul here appears to allude to the doctrines of the Colossian heretics, who taught a system of angel-worship, based upon a systematic classification of the angelic hierarchy (probably similar to that found in the Cabbala), and who seem to have represented our Lord as only one (and perhaps not the highest) of this hierarchy. Other allusions to a hierarchy of angels (which was taught in the Rabbinical theology) may be found Rom. 8:38; Eph. 1:21, 3:10; 1 Pet. 3:22, joined with the assertion of their subjection to Christ.

<sup>693</sup> Compare Rom. 11:36, where exactly the same thing is said concerning God; from which the inference is plain. It appears evident that St. Paul insists here thus strongly on the creation by Jesus Christ, in opposition to some erroneous system which ascribed the creation to some other source; and this was the case with the early Gnosticism, which ascribed the creation of the world to a Demiurge, who was distinct from the man Jesus.

having made peace by the blood of His cross; by Himself (I say) to reconcile all things, whether on the earth, or in the heavens.

And you, likewise, who once were estranged from Him, and with your mind at war with Him, when you lived in wickedness, yet now He has reconciled in the body of His flesh through death, that He might bring you to His presence in holiness, without blemish and without reproach; if, indeed, you be stedfast in your faith, with your foundation firmly grounded and immoveably fixed, and not suffering yourselves to be shifted away from the hope of the Glad-tidings which first you heard, which has been published throughout all the earth, whereof I, Paul, was made a ministering servant.

And even now I rejoice in the afflictions which I bear for your sake, and I fill up what yet is lacking of the sufferings of Christ in my flesh, on behalf of His body, which is the Church; whereof I was made a servant, to minister in the stewardship which God gave me for you [Gentiles], that I might fulfil it by declaring the Word of God, the mystery which has been hid for ages and generations, but has now been shown openly to His saints; to whom God willed to manifest how rich, among the Gentiles, is the glory of this mystery, which is CHRIST IN YOU, THE HOPE OF GLORY.

Him, therefore, I proclaim, warning every man, and teaching every man, in all wisdom; that I may bring every man into His presence full grown in Christ. And to this end I labour in earnest conflict, according to His working which works in me with mighty power.

## Colossians 2

For I would have you know how great a conflict I sustain for you, and for those at Laodicea, and for all who have not seen my face in the flesh; that their hearts may be comforted, and that they may be knit together in love, and may gain in all its richness the full assurance of understanding; truly to know the mystery of God, wherein are all the treasures of wisdom and of knowledge hidden.

I say this, lest any man should mislead you with enticing words. For though I am absent

from you in the flesh, yet I am present with you in the spirit, rejoicing when I behold your good order, and the firmness of your faith in Christ. As, therefore, you first received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk in Him; having in Him your root, and in Him the foundation whereon you are continually built up; persevering stedfastly in your faith, as you were taught; and abounding in thanksgiving.

Beware <sup>694</sup> lest there be any man who leads you captive by his philosophy, which is a vain deceit, following the tradition of men, the outward lessons of childhood, not the teaching of Christ. For in Him dwells all the Fulness of the Godhead in bodily form, and in Him you have your fulness; for He is the head of all the Principalities and Powers. In Him, also, you were circumcised with a circumcision not made by hands, even the offcasting of the whole body of the flesh, the circumcision of Christ; for with Him you were buried in your baptism, wherein also you were made partakers of His resurrection, through the

---

<sup>694</sup> The following paraphrase of this part of the Epistle is given by Neander (Denkwürdigkeiten, p. 12.), "How can you still fear evil spirits, when the Father himself has delivered you from the kingdom of darkness, and transplanted you into the kingdom of his dear Son, who has victoriously ascended to heaven to share the divine might of his Father, with whom he now works in man; when, moreover, he by his sufferings has united you with the Father, and freed you from the dominion of all the powers of darkness, whom he exhibits (as it were) as captives in his triumphal pomp, and shows their impotence to harm his kingdom established among men? How can you still let the doubts and fears of your conscience bring you into slavery to superstition, when Christ has nailed to his cross, and blotted out the record of guilt which testified against you in your conscience, and has assured to you the forgiveness of all your sins? Again, how can you fear to be polluted by outward things, how can you suffer yourselves to be in captivity to outward ordinances, when you have died with Christ to all earthly things, and are risen with Christ, and live (according to your true, inward life) with Christ in heaven? Your faith must be fixed on things above, where Christ is, at the right hand of God. Your life is hid with Christ in God, and belongs no more to earth."

faith wrought in you by God, who raised Him from the dead; and you also, when you were dead in the transgressions and uncircumcision of your flesh, God raised to share His life. For He forgave us all our transgressions, and blotted out the Writing against us which opposed us with its decrees, having taken it out of our way, and nailed it to the cross. And He disarmed the Principalities and the Powers [which fought against Him], and put them to open shame, leading them captive in the triumph of Christ.

Therefore, suffer not any man to condemn you for what you eat or drink, nor in respect of feastdays, or new moons, or sabbaths; for these are a shadow of things to come, but the body is Christ's. Let no man succeed in his wish to defraud you of your prize, persuading you to self-humiliation, and worship of the angels, intruding rashly into things which he has not seen, puffed up by his fleshly mind, and not holding fast the Head, from whom the whole body, by the joints which bind it, draws full supplies for all its needs, and is knit together, and increases in godly growth.

### Colossians 3

If, then, when you died with Christ, you put away the childish lessons of outward things, why, as though you still lived in outward things, do you submit yourselves to decrees ("hold not, taste not, touch not" —forbidding the use of things which are all made to be consumed in the using) founded on the precepts and doctrines of men? For these precepts, though they have a show of wisdom, in a self-chosen worship, and in humiliation, and chastening of the body, are of no value to check the indulgence of fleshly passions.

If, then, you were made partakers of Christ's resurrection, seek those things which are above, where Christ abides, seated on the right hand of God. Set your heart on things above, not on things earthly; for ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, shall be made

manifest, then shall ye also be made manifest with Him in glory.<sup>695</sup>

Give, therefore, unto death your earthly members; fornication, uncleanness, shameful appetites, unnatural desires, and the lust of concupiscence, which is idolatry. For these things bring the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience; among whom you also walked in former times, when you lived therein; but now, with us, you likewise must renounce them all. Anger, passion, and malice must be cast away, evil-speaking and reviling put out of your mouth. Lie not one to another, but put off the old man with his deeds, and put on the new man, who grows continually to a more perfect knowledge and likeness of his Creator. Wherein there is not "Greek and Jew," "circumcision and uncircumcision," "barbarian," "Scythian," "bondsmen," "freemen;" but Christ is all, and in all. Therefore, as God's chosen people, holy and beloved, put on tenderness of heart, kindness, self-humiliation, gentleness, long-suffering; forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any thinks himself aggrieved by his neighbour; even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye. And over all the rest put on the robe of love, which binds together and completes the whole. Let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, to which also you were called in one body; and be thankful one to another. Let the Word of Christ dwell in you richly. Teach and admonish one another in all wisdom.

Let your singing be of psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, sung in thanksgiving, with your heart, unto God. And whatsoever you do, in word or deed, do all in the name of

<sup>695</sup> So also Rom. 8:19, the coming of Christ in glory is identified with the ἀποκάλυψις τῶν υἱῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ. St. Paul declares, that the real nature and glory of Christ's people (which is now hidden) will be manifested to all mankind when Christ shall come again, and force the world to recognise him, by an open display of his majesty. The authorised version (though so beautiful in this passage that it is impossible to deviate from it without regret), yet does not adequately represent the original; "appear" not being equivalent to θανερωθῆναι.

the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God our Father through Him.

Wives, submit yourselves to your husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

Husbands, love your wives, and deal not harshly with them.

Children, obey your parents in all things; for this is acceptable in the Lord.

Fathers, vex not your children, lest their spirit should be broken.

Bondsmen, obey in all things your earthly masters; not in eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearing the Lord. And whatsoever you do, do it heartily, as for the Lord, and not for men; knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you are the bondsmen of Christ, our Lord and Master. But he who wrongs another will be requited for the wrong which he has done, and [in that judgment] there is no respect of persons.

#### Colossians 4

Masters, deal rightly and justly with your bondsmen, knowing that you also have a Master in heaven.

Persevere in prayer, and join thanksgiving with your watchfulness therein; and pray for me likewise, that God would open to me a door of entrance for His Word, that I may declare the mystery of Christ, which is the very cause of my imprisonment; pray for me that I may declare it openly, as I ought to speak.

Conduct yourselves with wisdom towards those without the Church, and forestal opportunity. Let your speech be always gracious, with a seasoning of salt, understanding how to give to every man a fitting answer.

All that concerns me will be made known to you by Tychicus, my beloved brother and faithful servant and fellow-bondsman in the Lord, whom I have sent to you for this very end, that he might learn your state, and comfort your hearts; with Onesimus, the faithful and beloved brother, your fellow-countryman; they will tell you all which has happened here.

Aristarchus, my fellow-prisoner, salutes you, and Marcus, the cousin of Barnabas, concerning whom you received instructions (if he come to you, receive him), and Jesus surnamed Justus. Of the circumcision these only are my fellow-labourers for the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort to me.

Epaphras your fellow-countryman salutes you; a bondsman of Christ, who is ever contending on your behalf in his prayers, that in ripeness of understanding and full assurance of belief, you may abide steadfast in all the will of God; for I bear him witness that he is filled with zeal for you, and for those in Laodicea and Hierapolis.

Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, salute you.

Salute the brethren in Laodicea, and Nymphas, with the Church at his house. And when this letter has been read among you, provide that it be read also in the Church of the Laodiceans, and that you also read the letter from Laodicea. And say to Archippus, "Take heed to the ministration which thou hast received in the Lord's service, that thou fulfil it."

The salutation of me, Paul, with my own hand. Remember my chains. Grace be with you.

#### Epistle to the Ephesians

We have seen that the above epistle to the Colossians, and that to Philemon, were conveyed by Tychicus and Onesimus, who travelled together from Rome to Asia Minor. But these two were not the only letters with which Tychicus was charged. We know that he carried a third letter also; but it is not equally certain to whom it was addressed. This third letter was that which is now entitled the Epistle to the Ephesians; concerning the destination of which (disputed as it is) perhaps the least disputable fact is, that it was not addressed to the Church of Ephesus.

This point is established by strong evidence, both internal and external. To begin with the former, we remark, First, that it would be inexplicable that St. Paul, when he wrote to the

Ephesians, amongst whom he had spent so long a time, and to whom he was bound by ties of such close affection (Acts 20:17, &c.), should not have a single message of personal greeting to send. Yet none such are found in this Epistle. Secondly, He could not have described the Ephesians as a Church whose conversion he knew only by report (1:15). Thirdly, He could not speak to them, as only knowing himself (the founder of their Church) to be an Apostle by hearsay (3:2), so as to need credentials to accredit him with them (3:4). Fourthly, He could not describe the Ephesians as so exclusively Gentiles (2:11, 4:17), and so recently converted (5:8, 1:13, 2:13).

This internal evidence is confirmed by the following external evidence also.

(1.) St. Basil distinctly asserts, that the early writers whom he had consulted declared that the manuscripts of this Epistle in their time did not contain the name of Ephesus, but left out altogether the name of the Church to which the Epistle was addressed. He adds, that the most ancient manuscripts which he had himself seen gave the same testimony. This assertion of Basil's is confirmed by Jerome, Epiphanius, and Tertullian.

(2.) The most ancient manuscript now known to exist, namely, that of the Vatican Library, fully bears out Basil's words; for in its text it does not contain the words "in Ephesus" at all; and they are only added in its margin by a much later hand.

(3.) We know, from the testimony of Marcion, that this Epistle was entitled in his collection the Epistle to the Laodiceans. And his authority on this point is entitled to greater weight from the fact, that he was himself a native of the district where we should expect the earlier copies of the Epistle to exist.

The above arguments have convinced the ablest modern critics that this Epistle was not addressed to the Ephesians. But there has not been by any means the same approach to unanimity on the question, who were its intended readers. In the most ancient

manuscripts of it (as we have said) no Church is mentioned by name, except in those consulted by Marcion, according to which it was addressed to the Laodiceans. Now the internal evidence above mentioned proves that the Epistle was addressed to some particular church or churches, who were to receive intelligence of St. Paul through Tychicus, and that it was not a treatise addressed to the whole Christian world; and the form of the salutation shows that the name of some place must originally have been inserted in it. Again: the very passages in the Epistle which have been above referred to, as proving that it could not have been directed to the Ephesians, agree perfectly with the hypothesis that it was addressed to the Laodiceans. Lastly, we know from the Epistle to the Colossians, that St. Paul did write a letter to Laodicea (Col. 4:16) about the same time with that to Colossæ.<sup>696</sup> On these grounds, then, it appears the safest course to assume (with Paley, in the *Horæ Paulinæ*) that the testimony of Marcion (uncontradicted by any other positive evidence) is correct, and that Laodicea was one at least of the Churches to which this Epistle was addressed. And,

<sup>696</sup> De Wette argues that the letter to Laodicea, mentioned Col. 4:16, must have been written some time before that to Colossæ, and not sent by the same messenger, because St. Paul in the Colossian Epistle sends greetings to Laodicea (Col. 4:15), which he would have sent directly if he had written to Laodicea at the same time. But there is not much weight in this objection, for it was agreeable to St. Paul's manner to charge one part of the church to salute the other; see Rom. 16:3, where he says ἀπάσασθε not ἀπάζομαι. Moreover it seems most probable that Col. 4:16–18. was a postscript, added to the Epistle after the Epistle to Laodicea was written. It is difficult to imagine that the τὴν ἑκ Λαοδικείας (Col. 4:16) could have been received much before that to the Colossians, from the manner in which it is mentioned, and the frequent intercourse which must have occurred between such neighbouring churches. The hypothesis of Wieseler, that the Laodicean Epistle was that to Philemon, is quite arbitrary, and appears irreconcilable with the fact that Onesimus is expressly called a Colossian, and was sent to Colossæ on this very occasion.

consequently, as we know not the name of any other Church to which it was written, that of Laodicea should be inserted in the place which the most ancient manuscripts leave vacant.

Still, it must be obvious, that this does not remove all the difficulties of the question. For, first it will be asked, how came the name of Laodicea (if originally inserted) to have slipped out of these ancient manuscripts? and again, how came it that the majority of more recent manuscripts inserted the name of Ephesus? These perplexing questions are in some measure answered by the hypothesis originated by Archbishop Usher, that this Epistle was a circular letter addressed not to one only, but to several Churches, in the same way as the Epistle to the Galatians was addressed to all the Churches in Galatia, and those to Corinth were addressed to the Christians "in the whole province of Achaia." On this view, Tychicus would have carried several copies of it, differently superscribed, one for Laodicea, another, perhaps, for Hierapolis, another for Philadelphia, and so on. Hence the early copyists, perplexed by this diversity in their copies, might many of them be led to omit the words in which the variation consisted; and thus the state of the earliest known text of the Epistle would be explained. Afterwards, however, as copies of the Epistle became spread over the world, all imported from Ephesus (the commercial capital of the district where the Epistle was originally circulated), it would be called (in default of any other name) the Epistle from Ephesus; and the manuscripts of it would be so entitled; and thence the next step, of inserting the name of Ephesus into the text, in a place where some local designation was plainly wanted, would be a very easy one. And this designation of the Epistle would the more readily prevail, from the natural feeling that St. Paul must have written <sup>697</sup> some Epistle to so great a Church of his own founding as Ephesus.

<sup>697</sup> We cannot doubt that St. Paul did write many epistles which are now lost. He himself mentions one such to the Corinthians; and it is a mysterious

Thus the most plausible account of the origin of this Epistle seems to be as follows. Tychicus was about to take his departure from Rome for Asia Minor. St. Paul had already written <sup>698</sup> his Epistle to the Colossians at the request of Epaphras, who had informed him of their danger. But Tychicus was about to visit other places, which, though not requiring the same warning with Colossæ, yet abounded in Christian converts. Most of these had been Heathens, and their hearts might be cheered and strengthened by words addressed directly to themselves from the great Apostle of the Gentiles, whose face they had never seen, but whose name they had learned to reverence, and whose sufferings had endeared him to their love. These scattered Churches (one of which was Laodicea) had very much in common, and would all be benefited by the same instruction and exhortation. Since it was not necessary to meet the individual case of any one of them, as distinct from the rest, St. Paul wrote the same letter to them all, but sent to each a separate copy authenticated by the precious stamp of his own autograph benediction. And the contents of this circular epistle naturally bore a strong resemblance to those of the letter which he had just concluded to the Colossians, because the thoughts which filled his heart at the time would necessarily find utterance in similar

---

dispensation of Providence that his Epistles to the two great metropolitan churches of Antioch and Ephesus, with which he was himself so peculiarly connected, should not have been preserved to us.

<sup>698</sup> It is here assumed that the Epistle to the Colossians was written before that to the Ephesians. This appears probable from a close examination of the parallel passages in the two Epistles; the passages in Ephesians bear marks of being expanded from those in Colossians; and the passages in Colossians could not be so well explained on the converse hypothesis, that they were a condensation of those in Ephesians. We have remarked, however, in a previous note that we must assume the reference in Colossians to the other epistle (Col. 4:16), to have been added as a postscript; unless we suppose that St. Paul there refers to the τὴν ἐκ Λαοδικείας before it was actually written (as intending to write it, and send it by the same messenger), which he might very well have done.

language, and because the circumstances of these Churches were in themselves very similar to those of the Colossian Church, except that they were not infected with the peculiar errors which had crept in at Colossæ. The Epistle which he thus wrote consists of two parts: first, a doctrinal, and, secondly, a hortatory portion. The first part contains a summary, very indirectly conveyed (chiefly in the form of thanksgiving), of the Christian doctrines taught by St. Paul, and is especially remarkable for the great prominence given to the abolition of the Mosaic Law. The hortatory part, which has been so dear to Christians of every age and country, enjoins unity (especially between Jewish and Gentile Christians), the renunciation of Heathen vices, and the practice of Christian purity. It lays down rules (the same as those in the Epistle to Colossæ, only in an expanded form) for the performance of the duties of domestic life, and urges these new converts, in the midst of the perils which surrounded them, to continue steadfast in watchfulness and prayer. Such is the substance, and such was most probably the history, of the following Epistle.

## THE EPISTLE TO THE EPHESIANS

### Ephesians 1

**PAUL, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, to the saints who are in Ephesus, and who have faith in Christ Jesus.**

**Grace be to you and peace, from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Blessed be God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has given us in Christ all spiritual blessings in the heavens. Even as He chose us in Him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and spotless in his sight. For in His love He predestined us to be adopted among His children through Jesus Christ, according to the good pleasure of His will, that we might praise and glorify His grace, wherewith He favoured us in His beloved. For in Him we have our redemption through His blood, even the forgiveness of our sins, in the richness of His grace, which he bestowed upon us above measure; and He made known to us, in the fulness of wisdom and**

**understanding, the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure, which he had purposed in Himself to fulfil, that it should be dispensed in the fulness of time; to make all things one in Christ as head, yea, both things in heaven and things on earth in Him; in whom we also received the portion of our lot, having been predestined thereto according to His purpose, whose working makes all fulfil the counsel of His own will; that unto His praise and glory we might live, who have hoped in Christ before you.**

**And you, likewise, have hoped in Him, since you heard the message of the truth, the Glad-tidings of your salvation; and you believed in Him, and received His seal, the Holy Spirit of promise; who is an earnest of our inheritance, given to redeem that which He hath purchased <sup>699</sup>, to the praise of His glory.**

**Wherefore I, also, since I heard of your faith in our Lord Jesus, and your love to all the saints, give thanks for you without ceasing, and make mention of you in my prayers, beseeching the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Glory, to give you a spirit of wisdom and of insight, in the knowledge of Himself; the eyes of your understanding being filled with light, that you may know what is the hope of His calling, and how rich is the glory of His inheritance among the saints, and how surpassing is the power which He has shewn toward us who believe; [for He has dealt with us] in the strength of that might wherewith He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead; and set Him on His own right hand in the heavens, far above every Principality and Power, and Might, and Domination, and every name which is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come. And "he put all things under his feet," and gave Him to be sovereign head of the Church, which is His**

<sup>699</sup> τῆς περιποισέως, used in the same sense here as ἐκκλησία ἣν περιποιήσατο (Acts 20:28). The metaphor is that the gift of the Holy Spirit was an earnest (that is, a part payment in advance) of the price required for the full deliverance of those who had been slaves of sin, but now were purchased for the service of God.

body; the Fulness <sup>700</sup> of Him who fills all things everywhere with Himself. And you, likewise, He raised from death to life, when you were dead in transgressions and sins; wherein once you walked according to the course of this world, and obeyed the Ruler of the Powers of the Air,, even the Spirit who is now working in the children of disobedience; amongst whom we also, in times past, lived, all of us, in fleshly lusts, fulfilling the desires of our flesh and of our imagination, and were by nature children of wrath, no less than others. But God, who is rich in mercy, because of the great love wherewith He loved us, even when we were dead in sin called us to share the life of Christ—(by grace you are saved),—and in Christ Jesus, He raised us up with Him from the dead, and seated us with Him in the heavens; that, in the ages which are coming, He might manifest the surpassing riches of His grace, shewing kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. For by grace you are saved, through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not won by works, lest any man should boast. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God has prepared that we should walk therein.

## Ephesians 2

Wherefore remember that you, who once were reckoned among carnal Gentiles, who are called the Uncircumcision by that which calls itself the Circumcision (a circumcision of the flesh, made by the hands of man)—that in those times you were shut out from Christ, aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of the promise, having no hope, and without God in the world. But now, in Christ Jesus, ye,

<sup>700</sup> We see here again the same allusion to the technical use of the word *πλήρωμα* by false teachers, as in Col. 2:9, 10. St. Paul there asserts that, not the angelic hierarchy, but Christ himself is the true fulness of the Godhead; and here that the Church is the fulness of Christ, that is, the full manifestation of His being, because penetrated by His life, and living only in Him. It should be observed that the Church is here spoken of so far forth as it corresponds to its ideal.

who were once far off, have been brought near through the blood of Christ. For He is our peace, who has made both one, and has broken down the wall which parted us; for, in His flesh, He destroyed the ground of our enmity, the law of enacted ordinances; that so, making peace between us, out of both He might create in Himself one new man; and that, by His cross, He might reconcile both, in one body, unto God, having slain their enmity thereby. And when He came, He published the Glad-tidings of peace to you that were far off, and to them that were near. For through Him we both have power to approach the Father in the fellowship of one Spirit. Now, therefore, you are no more strangers and sojourners, but fellow-citizens of the saints, and members of God's household. You are built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone; in whom all the building, fitly framed together, grows into a temple hallowed by the indwelling of the Lord. And in Him, not others only, but you also, are built up together, to make a house wherein God may dwell by the presence of His Spirit.

## Ephesians 3

Wherefore I, Paul, who, for maintaining the cause of you Gentiles, am the prisoner of Jesus Christ— for I suppose that you have heard of the stewardship of God's grace, which was given me for you; and how, by revelation, was made known to me the mystery (as I have already shortly written to you; so that, when you read, you may perceive my understanding in the mystery of Christ), which, in the generations of old, was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed by the indwelling of the Spirit, to His holy Apostles and Prophets; to wit, that the Gentiles are heirs of the same inheritance, and members of the same body, and partakers of the same promise in Christ, by means of the Gladtidings.

And of this Glad-tidings I was made a ministering servant, according to the gift of the grace of God, which was given me in the full measure of His mighty working; to me, I say, who am less than the least of all the saints, this grace was given, to bear among

the Gentiles the Glad-tidings of the unsearchable riches of Christ, and to bring light to all, that they might behold what is the stewardship of the mystery which, from the ages of old, has been hid in God, the maker of all things; that now, by the Church, the manifold wisdom of God might be made known to the Principalities and Powers in the heavens, according to His eternal purpose, which He wrought in Christ Jesus our Lord; in whom we can approach without fear to God, in trustful confidence, through faith in Him.

Wherefore I pray that I may not faint under my sufferings for you, which are your glory. For this cause I bend my knees before the Father, whose children all are called in heaven and in earth, beseeching Him, that, in the richness of His glory, He would grant you strength by the entrance of His Spirit into your inner man, that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that having your root and your foundation in love, you may be enabled, with all the saints, to comprehend the breadth and length, and depth and height thereof; and to know the love of Christ which passeth knowledge, that you may be filled therewith, even to the measure of the Fulness of God. Now unto Him who is able to do exceeding abundantly, above all that we ask or think, in the power of his might which works within us,—unto Him, in Christ Jesus, be glory in the Church, even to all the generations of the age of ages. Amen.

#### Ephesians 4

I, therefore, the Lord's prisoner, exhort you to walk worthy of the calling wherewith you were called; with all lowliness, and gentleness, and long-suffering, forbearing one another in love, striving to maintain the unity of the Spirit, bound together with the bond of peace. You are one body and one spirit, even as you were called to share one common hope; you have one Lord, you have one faith, you have one baptism; you have one God and Father of all, who is over all, and works through all, and dwells in all. But each one of us received the gift of grace which he possesses according to the measure wherein it was given by Christ. Wherefore it is written: "when he went up

on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men." Now that word "he went up," what saith it, but that He first came down to the earth below? Yea, He who came down is the same who is gone up, far above all the heavens, that He might fill all things. And He gave some to be apostles, and some prophets, and some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers; for the perfecting of the saints, to labour in their appointed service, to build up the body of Christ; till we all attain the same faith and knowledge of the Son of God, and reach the stature of manhood, and be of ripe age to receive the Fulness of Christ; that we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro, and blown round by every shifting current of teaching, tricked by the sleight of men, and led astray into the snares of the cunning; but that we should live in truth and love, and should grow up in every part to the measure of His growth, who is our head, even Christ. From whom the whole body (being knit together, and compacted by all its joints) derives its continued growth in the working of His bounty, which supplies its needs, according to the measure of each several part, that it may build itself up in love.

This I say, therefore, and adjure you in the Lord, to live no longer like other Gentiles, whose minds are filled with folly, whose understanding is darkened, who are estranged from the life of God because of the ignorance which is in them, through the blindness of their hearts; who, being past feeling, have given themselves over to lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness in lust. But you have not so learned Christ; if, indeed, you have heard His voice, and been taught in Him, as the truth is in Jesus; to forsake your former life, and put off the old man, whose way is destruction, following the desires which deceive; and to be renewed in the spirit of your mind, and to put on the new man, created after God's likeness, in the righteousness and holiness of the Truth. Wherefore, putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour; for we are members one of another. "Be ye angry, and sin not." Let not the sun go down upon your wrath, nor give way to the Devil. Let the robber rob no more, but rather let him

labour, working to good purpose with his hands, that he may have somewhat to share with the needy. From your mouth let no filthy words come forth, but such as may build up the Church according to its need, and give a blessing to the hearers. And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, who was given to seal you for the day of redemption. Let all bitterness, and passion, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking be put away from you, with all malice; and be kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another, even as God in Christ has forgiven you.

### Ephesians 5

Therefore be followers of God's example, as the children of His love. And walk in love, as Christ also loved us, and gave Himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice unto God, for "An odour of sweetness."

But, as befits the saints, let not fornication or any kind of uncleanness or lust be so much as named among you; nor filthiness, nor buffoonery, nor ribald jesting, for such speech beseems you not, but rather thanksgiving. Yea, this you know; for you have learned that no fornicator, or impure or lustful man, who is nothing better than an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God. Let no man mislead you by empty words; for these are the deeds which bring the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. Be not ye, therefore, partakers with them; for you once were darkness, but now are light in the Lord. Walk as children of light; for the fruits of light are in all goodness, and righteousness, and truth. Examine well what is acceptable to the Lord, and have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, yea, rather expose their foulness. For, concerning the secret deeds of the Heathen, it is shameful even to speak; yet all these things, when exposed, are made manifest by the shining of the light; for whatsoever is made manifest becomes light. Wherefore it is written, "Awake, thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall shine upon thee."

See, then, that you walk without stumbling, not in folly but in wisdom, forestalling opportunity, because the times are evil.

Therefore, be not without understanding, but learn to know what the will of the Lord is.

Be not drunk with wine, like those who live riotously; but be filled with the indwelling of the Spirit, when you speak one to another. Let your singing be of psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, and make melody with the music of your hearts, to the Lord. And at all times, for all things which befall you, give thanks to our God and Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Submit yourselves one to another in the fear of Christ. Wives, submit yourselves to your husbands, as unto the Lord; for the husband is head of the wife, even as Christ is head of the Church, His body, which He saves. But, as the Church submits itself to Christ, so let the wives submit themselves to their husbands in all things.

Husbands, love your wives, as Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it, that having purified it by the water wherein it is washed, He might hallow it by the indwelling of the word of God; that he might Himself present unto Himself the Church in stainless glory, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and unblemished. In like manner, husbands ought to love their wives as they love their own bodies; for he that loves his wife does but love himself: and a man never hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, as Christ also the Church; for we are members of His body. "for this cause shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh." This mystery is great; but I speak of Christ and of the Church. Nevertheless, let every one of you individually so love his wife even as himself, and let the wife see that she reverence her husband.

### Ephesians 6

Children, obey your parents in the Lord; for this is right. "Honour thy father and thy mother," which is the first commandment with promise: "That it may be well with thee, and thou shalt live long upon the earth."

**And ye, fathers, vex not your children; but bring them up in such training and correction as befits the servants of the Lord.**

Duties of slaves and masters.

**Bondsmen, obey your earthly masters with anxiety and self-distrust, in singleness of heart, as unto Christ; not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but as bondsmen of Christ, doing the will of God from the soul. With good will fulfilling your service, as to the Lord our Master, and not to men. For you know that whatever good any man does, the same shall he receive from the Lord, whether he be bond or free.**

**And ye, masters, do in like manner by them, and abstain from threats; knowing that your own Master is in heaven, and that with Him is no respect of persons.**

**Finally, my brethren, let your hearts be strengthened in the Lord, and in the conquering power of His might. Put on the whole armour of God, that you may be able to stand firm against the wiles of the Devil. For the adversaries with whom we wrestle are not flesh and blood, but they are the Principalities, the Powers, and the Sovereigns of this present darkness, the spirits of evil in the heavens. Wherefore, take up with you to the battle the whole armour of God, that you may be able to withstand them in the evil day, and having overthrown them all, to stand unshaken. Stand, therefore, girt with the belt of truth, and wearing the breastplate of righteousness, and shod as ready messengers of the Glad-tidings of peace: and take up to cover you the shield of faith, wherewith you shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the Evil One. Take, likewise, the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.**

**Continue to pray at every season with all earnestness of supplication in the Spirit; and to this end be watchful with all perseverance in prayer for all the saints; and for me, that utterance may be given me, to open my mouth and make known with boldness the mystery of the Glad-tidings, for which I am an ambassador in fetters. Pray that I may declare it boldly, as I ought to speak.**

**But that you, as well as others, may be informed of my concerns, and how I fare, Tychicus, my beloved brother, and faithful servant in the Lord, will make all known to you. And I have sent him to you for this very end, that you may learn what concerns me, and that he may comfort your hearts.**

**Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Grace be with all who love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity.**

## Chapter 26

### The Praetorium

The close of the Epistle, to which our attention has just been turned, contains a remarkable example of the forcible imagery of St. Paul. Considered simply in itself, this description of the Christian's armour is one of the most striking passages in the Sacred Volume. But if we view it in connection with the circumstances with which the Apostle was surrounded, we find a new and living emphasis in his enumeration of all the parts of the heavenly panoply,—the belt of sincerity and truth, with which the loins are girded for the spiritual war,—the breastplate of that righteousness, the inseparable links whereof are faith and love,—the strong sandals, with which the feet of Christ's soldiers are made ready, not for such errands of death and despair as those on which the Prætorian soldiers were daily sent, but for the universal message of the Gospel of peace,—the large shield of confident trust, wherewith the whole man is protected, and whereon the fiery arrows of the Wicked One fall harmless and dead,—the close fitting helmet, with which the hope of salvation invests the head of the believer,—and finally the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God, which, when wielded by the Great Captain of our Salvation, turned the tempter in the wilderness to flight, while in the hands of His chosen Apostle (with whose memory the sword seems inseparably associated), it became the means of establishing Christianity on the earth.

All this imagery becomes doubly forcible, if we remember that when St. Paul wrote the words he was chained to a soldier, and in the close neighbourhood of military sights and sounds. The appearance of the Prætorian guards was daily familiar to him;—as his “chains” on the other hand (so he tells us in the succeeding Epistle) became “well known throughout the whole Prætorium.” (Phil. 1:13) A difference of opinion has existed as to the precise meaning of the word in this passage. Some have identified it, as in the Authorised Version, with the “house of Cæsar” on the Palatine: more commonly it has been supposed to mean that permanent camp of the Prætorian guards, which Tiberius established on the north of the city, outside the walls. As regards the former opinion, it is true that the word came to be used, almost as we use the word “palace,” for royal residences generally, or for any residences of a princely splendour, and that thus we read, in other parts of the New Testament, of the Prætorium of Pilate at Jerusalem, and the Prætorium of Herod at Cæsarea. Yet we never find the word employed for the Imperial house at Rome: and we believe the truer view to be that which has been recently advocated, namely, that it denotes here, not the palace itself, but the quarters of that part of the Imperial guards, which was in immediate attendance upon the Emperor. Such a military establishment is mentioned in the fullest account which we possess of the first residence of Augustus on the Palatine: and it is in harmony with the general ideas on which the monarchy was founded. The Emperor was prætor or commander-in-chief of the troops, and it was natural that his immediate guard should be in a prætorium near him. It might, indeed, be argued that this military establishment on the Palatine would cease to be necessary, when the Prætorian camp was established: but the purpose of that establishment was to concentrate near the city those cohorts, which had previously been dispersed in other parts of Italy: a local body-guard near the palace would not cease to be necessary: and Josephus, in his account of the imprisonment of Agrippa, speaks of a “camp” in

connection with the “royal house.” Such we conceive to have been the barrack immediately alluded to by St. Paul: though the connection of these smaller quarters with the general camp was such, that he would naturally become known to “all the rest” of the guards, as well as those who might for the time be connected with the Imperial household.

### The Palatine

What has just been said of the word “prætorium,” applied still more extensively to the word “palatium.” Originally denoting the hill on which the twin-brothers were left by the retreating river, it grew to be, and it still remains, the symbol of Imperial power. Augustus was born on the Palatine; and he fixed his official residence there when the civil wars were terminated. Thus, it may be truly said that “after the Capitol and the Forum, no locality in the ancient city claims so much of our interest as the Palatine hill—at once the birth-place of the infant city, and the abode of her rulers during the days of her greatest splendour,—where the reed-thatched cottage of Romulus was still preserved in the midst of the gorgeous structures of Caligula and Nero.” About the close of the Republic, this hill was the residence of many distinguished citizens, such as Crassus, Cicero, Catiline, Clodius, and Antony. Augustus himself simply bought the house of Hortensius and lived there in modest state. But the new era was begun for the Palatine, when the first Emperor, soon after the battle of Actium, raised the temple of Apollo, with its celebrated Greek and Latin libraries, on the side near the Forum. Tiberius erected a new palace, or an addition to the old one, on the opposite side of the hill, immediately above the Circus Maximus. It remained for subsequent Emperors to cover the whole area of the hill with structures connected with the palace. Caligula extended the Imperial buildings by a bridge (as fantastic as that at Baiæ), which joined the Palatine with the Capitol. Nero made a similar extension in the direction of the Esquiline: and this is the point at which we must arrest our series of historical notices; for the burning of Rome and the

erection of the Golden House intervened between the first and second imprisonments of the Apostle Paul. The fire, moreover, which is so closely associated with the first sufferings of the Church, has made it impossible to identify any of the existing ruins on the Palatine with buildings that were standing when the Apostle was among the Prætorian guards. Nor indeed is it possible to assign the ruins to their proper epochs. All is now confusion on the hill of Romulus and Augustus. Palace after palace succeeded, till the Empire was lost in the mist of the Middle Ages. As we explore the subterraneous chambers, where classical paintings are still visible on the plaster, or look out through broken arches over the Campagna and its aqueducts, the mind is filled with blending recollections, not merely of a long line of Roman Cæsars, but of Ravenna and Constantinople, Charlemagne and Rienzi. This royal part of the Western Babylon has almost shared the fate of the city of the Euphrates. The Palatine contains gardens and vineyards, and half cultivated spaces of ground, where the acanthus-weed grows in wild luxuriance: but its population has shrunk to one small convent; and the unhealthy air seems to brood like a curse over the scene of Nero's tyranny and crime.

St. Paul was at Rome precisely at that time when the Palatine was the most conspicuous spot on the earth, not merely for crime, but for splendour and power. This was the centre of all the movements of the Empire. Here were heard the causes of all Roman citizens who had appealed to Cæsar. Hence were issued the orders to the governors of provinces, and to the legions on the frontier. From the "Golden Milestone" (Milliarium Aureum) below the palace, the roads radiated in all directions to the remotest verge of civilization. The official messages of the Emperor were communicated along them by means of posts established by the government: but these roads afforded also the means of transmitting the letters of private citizens, whether sent by means of tabellarii, or by the voluntary aid of accidental travellers. To

such communications between the metropolis and the provinces others were now added of a kind hitherto unknown in the world,—not different indeed in outward appearance from common letters,—but containing commands more powerful in their effects than the dispatches of Nero,—touching more closely the private relations of life than all the correspondence of Seneca or Pliny,—and proclaiming, in the very form of their salutations, the perpetual union of the Jew, the Greek, and the Roman.

It seems probable that the three letters which we have last read were despatched from Rome when St. Paul had been resident there about a year, that is, in the spring of the year 62 a.d. After the departure of Tychicus and Onesimus, the Apostle's prison was cheered by the arrival of Epaphroditus, who bore a contribution from the Christians of Philippi. We have before seen instances of the noble liberality of that Church, and now once more we find them ministering to the necessities of their beloved teacher.

Epaphroditus, apparently a leading presbyter among the Philippians, had brought on himself, by the fatigues or perils of his journey, a dangerous illness. St. Paul speaks of him with touching affection. He calls him his "brother, and companion in labour, and fellow soldier" (2:25); declares that "his labour in the cause of Christ had brought him near to death" (2:30), and that he had "hazarded his life" in order to supply the means of communication between the Philippians and himself. And, when speaking of his recovery, he says "God had compassion on him, and not on him only, but on me also, that I might not have sorrow upon sorrow." (2:27) We must suppose, from these expressions, that Epaphroditus had exposed himself to some unusual risk in his journey. Perhaps his health was already feeble when he set out, so that he showed self-devotion in encountering fatigues which were certain to injure him.

### Political Events at Rome

Meanwhile St. Paul continued to preach, and his converts to multiply. We shall find that when he wrote to the Philippians, either towards the close of this year, or at the beginning of the next, great effects had already been produced; and that the Church of Rome was not only enlarged, but encouraged to act with greater boldness upon the surrounding masses of Heathenism, by the successful energy of the apostolic prisoner. Yet the political occurrences of the year might well have alarmed him for his safety, and counselled a more timid course. We have seen that prisoners in St. Paul's position were under the charge of the Prætorian Præfect; and in this year occurred the death of the virtuous Burrus, under whose authority his imprisonment had been so unusually mild. Upon this event the præfecture was put into commission, and bestowed on Fenius Rufus and Sofonius Tigellinus. The former was respectable, but wanting in force of character, and quite unable to cope with his colleague, who was already notorious for that energetic wickedness which has since made his name proverbial. St. Paul's Christian friends in Rome must have trembled to think of him as subject to the caprice of this most detestable of Nero's satellites. It does not seem, however, that his situation was altered for the worse; possibly he was never brought under the special notice of Tigellinus, who was too intent on court intrigues, at this period, to attend to so trifling a matter as the concerns of a Jewish prisoner.

Another circumstance occurred about the same time, which seemed to threaten still graver mischief to the cause of Paul. This was the marriage of Nero to his adulterous mistress Poppæa, who had become a proselyte to Judaism. This infamous woman, not content with inducing her paramour to divorce his young wife Octavia, had demanded and obtained the death of her rival; and had gloated over the head of the murdered victim, which was forwarded from Pandataria to Rome for her inspection. Her power seemed now to have reached its zenith, but rose still higher at the

beginning of the following year, upon the birth of a daughter, when temples were erected to her and her infant, and divine honours paid them. We know from Josephus that she exerted her influence over Nero in favour of the Jews, and that she patronised their emissaries at Rome; and assuredly no scruples of humanity would prevent her from seconding their demand for the punishment of their most detested antagonist.

These changed circumstances fully account for the anticipations of an unfavourable issue to his trial, which we shall find St. Paul now expressing; and which contrast remarkably with the confident expectation of release entertained by him when he wrote the letter to Philemon. When we come to discuss the trial of St. Paul, we shall see reason to believe that the providence of God did in fact avert this danger; but at present all things seemed to wear a most threatening aspect. Perhaps the death of Pallas (which also happened this year) may be considered, on the other hand, as removing an unfavourable influence; for, as the brother of Felix, he would have been willing to soften the Jewish accusers of that profligate governor, by co-operating with their designs against St. Paul. But his power had ceased to be formidable, either for good or evil, some time before his death.

Meanwhile Epaphroditus was fully recovered from his sickness, and able once more to travel; and he willingly prepared to comply with St. Paul's request that he would return to Philippi. We are told that he was "filled with longing" to see his friends again, and the more so when he heard that great anxiety had been caused among them by the news of his sickness. Probably he occupied an influential post in the Philippian Church, and St. Paul was unwilling to detain him any longer from his duties there. He took the occasion of his return, to send a letter of grateful acknowledgment to his Philippian converts.

### Epistle to the Philippians

It has been often remarked that this Epistle contains less of censure and more of praise than any other of St. Paul's extant letters. It gives us a very high idea of the Christian state of the Philippians, as shown by the firmness of their faith under persecution, their constant obedience and attachment to St. Paul, and the liberality which distinguished them above all other Churches. They were also free from doctrinal errors, and no schism had as yet been created among them by the Judaizing party. They are warned, however, against these active propagandists, who were probably busy in their neighbourhood, or (at least) might at any time appear among them. The only blemish recorded as existing in the Church of Philippi is, that certain of its members were deficient in lowliness of mind, and were thus led into disputes and altercations with their brethren. Two women of consideration amongst the converts, Euodia and Syntyche by name, had been especially guilty of this fault; and their variance was the more to be regretted, because they had both laboured earnestly for the propagation of the faith. St. Paul exhorts the Church, with great solemnity and earnestness, to let these disgraceful bickerings cease, and to be all "of one soul and one mind." He also gives them very full particulars about his own condition, and the spread of the Gospel at Rome. He writes in a tone of most affectionate remembrance, and, while anticipating the speedily approaching crisis of his fate, he expresses his faith, hope, and joy with peculiar fervency.

### THE EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS

#### Philippians 1

**Paul and Timotheus, bondsmen of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus who are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons.**

**Grace be to you and Peace, from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**I thank my God upon every remembrance of you (continually in all my prayers making**

**my supplication for you all with joy), for your fellowship in forwarding the Glad-tidings, from the first day until now. And I am confident accordingly, that He who has begun a good work in you will perfect it, even until the day of Jesus Christ. And it is just that I should be thus mindful of you all, because you have me in your hearts, and both in my imprisonment and in my defence and confirmation of the Glad-tidings, you all share in the grace bestowed upon me. God is my witness how I long after you all, in the tender affection of Christ Jesus.**

**And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more, in true knowledge, and in all understanding, teaching you to distinguish good from evil; that you may be pure, and may walk without stumbling until the day of Christ; being filled with the fruits of righteousness which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.**

**I would have you know, brethren, that the things which have befallen me have tended rather to the furtherance than hindrance of the Glad-tidings. So that my chains have become well-known in the name of Christ, throughout the whole Prætorium, and to all the rest. And thus most of the brethren in the Lord, rendered confident by my chains, are very much emboldened to speak the Word fearlessly. Some, indeed, proclaim Christ even out of envy and contention; but some, also, out of goodwill. These do it from love, knowing that I am appointed to defend the Glad-tidings; but those announce Christ from a spirit of intrigue, not sincerely, thinking to stir up persecution against me in my imprisonment. What then? nevertheless, every way, whether in pretence or in truth, Christ is announced; and herein I rejoice now, yea, and I shall rejoice hereafter. For I know that "these things shall fall out to my salvation," through your prayers, and through the supply of all my needs by the Spirit of Jesus Christ; according to my earnest expectation and hope, that I shall in no wise be put to shame, but that with all boldness, as at all other times, so now also, Christ will be magnified in my body, whether by my life or by my death. For to me life is Christ, and death is gain. But whether this life in the flesh shall be the fruit of my**

labour, and what I should choose, I know not. But between the two I am in perplexity; having the desire to depart and be with Christ, which is far better; yet to remain in the flesh is more needful, for your sake. And in this confidence, I know that I shall remain, and shall continue with you all, to your furtherance and joy in faith; that you may have more abundant cause for your boasting in Christ Jesus on my account, by my presence again among you.

Only live worthy of the Glad-tidings of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or be absent, I may hear concerning you, that you stand firmly in one spirit, contending together with one mind for the faith of the Glad-tidings, and nowise terrified by its enemies; for their enmity is to them an evidence of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that from God. For to you it has been given, on behalf of Christ, not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake; having the same conflict which once you saw in me, and which now you hear that I endure.

## Philippians 2

If, then, you can be entreated in Christ, if you can be persuaded by love, if you have any fellowship in the Spirit, if you have any tenderness or compassion, I pray you make my joy full, be of one accord, filled with the same love, of one soul, of one mind. Do nothing in a spirit of intrigue or vanity, but in lowliness of mind let each account others above himself. Seek not your private ends alone, but let every man seek likewise his neighbour's good.

Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus; who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but stripped Himself [of His glory] and took upon Him the form of a slave, being changed into the likeness of man. And having appeared in the guise of men, He abased Himself and shewed obedience, even unto death, yea, death upon the cross. Wherefore God also exalted Him above measure, and gave Him the name which is above every name; that in the name of Jesus "every knee should bow," of all who dwell in heaven, in earth, or under the earth, and every tongue

should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Wherefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed me, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; for it is God who works in you both will and deed. Do all things for the sake of goodwill, without murmurings and disputings, that you may be blameless and guileless, the sons of God without rebuke, in the midst of "a crooked and perverse generation," among whom ye shine like stars in the world; holding fast the Word of Life; that you may give me ground of boasting, even to the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, nor laboured in vain.

But though my blood be poured forth upon the ministration of the sacrifice of your faith, I rejoice for myself, and rejoice with you all; and do ye likewise rejoice, both for yourselves and with me. But I hope in the Lord Jesus to send Timotheus to you shortly, that I also may be cheered, by learning your state; for I have no other likeminded with me, who would care in earnest for your concerns; for all seek their own, not the things of Jesus Christ. But you know the trials which have proved his worth, and that, as a son with a father, he has shared my servitude, to proclaim the Glad-tidings. Him, then, I hope to send without delay, as soon as I see how it will go with me; but I trust in the Lord that I also myself shall come shortly.

Epaphroditus, who is my brother and companion in labour and fellow-soldier, and your messenger to minister to my wants, I have thought it needful to send to you. For he was filled with longing for you all, and with sadness, because you had heard that he was sick. And, indeed, he had a sickness which brought him almost to death, but God had compassion on him; and not on him only but on me, that I might not have sorrow upon sorrow. Therefore I have been the more anxious to send him, that you may have the joy of seeing him again, and that I may have one sorrow the less. Receive him, therefore, in the Lord, with all gladness, and hold such men in honour; because his labour in the cause of Christ brought him near to

death; for he hazarded his life that he might supply all which you could not do, in ministering to me.

Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord.

To repeat the same warnings is not wearisome to me, and it is safe for you. Beware of the Dogs, beware of the Evil Workmen, beware of the Concision. For we are the Circumcision, who worship God with the spirit, whose boasting is in Christ Jesus, and whose confidence is not in the flesh.

### Philippians 3

Although I might have confidence in the flesh also. If any other man thinks that he has ground of confidence in the flesh, I have more. Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews; As to the Law, a Pharisee; as to zeal a persecutor of the Church; as to the righteousness of the Law, unblameable. But what once was gain to me, that I have counted loss for Christ. Yea, doubtless, and I count all things but loss, because all are nothing-worth in comparison with the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord; for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and count them but as dung, that I may gain Christ, and be found in Him; not having my own righteousness of the Law, but the righteousness of faith in Christ, the righteousness which God bestows on Faith; that I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, sharing the likeness of His death; if by any means I might attain to the resurrection from the dead.

Not that I have already won, or am already perfect; but I press onward, if, indeed, I might lay hold on that, for which Christ also laid hold on me. Brethren, I count not myself to have laid hold thereon; but this one thing I do—forgetting that which is behind, and reaching forth to that which is before, I press onward towards the mark, for the prize of God's heavenly calling in Christ Jesus.

Let us all, then, who are ripe in understanding, be thus minded; and if in anything you are otherwise minded, that also shall be revealed to you by God [in due

time]. Nevertheless, let us walk according to that which we have attained.

Brethren, be imitators of me with one consent, and mark those who walk according to my example. For many walk, of whom I told you often in times past, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ; whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame; whose mind is set on earthly things. For my life abides in heaven; from whence also I look for a Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ; who shall change my vile body into the likeness of His glorious body; according to the working whereby He is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

### Philippians 4

Therefore my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

I exhort Euodia, and I exhort Syntyche, to be of one mind in the Lord. Yea, and I beseech thee also, my true yoke-fellow, to help them [to be reconciled]; for they strove earnestly in the work of the Glad-tidings with me, together with Clemens and my other fellow-labourers, whose names are in the Book of Life.

Rejoice in the Lord at all times. Again will I say, rejoice. Let your forbearance be known to all men. The Lord is at hand. Let no care trouble you, but in all things, by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God. And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus. Finally, brethren, whatsoever is true, whatsoever is venerable, whatsoever is just, whatsoever is pure, whatsoever is endearing, whatsoever is of good report,—if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise—be such your treasures. That which you were taught and learned, and which you heard and saw in me,—be that your practice. So shall the God of peace be with you.

I rejoiced in the Lord greatly when I found that now, after so long a time, your care for me had borne fruit again; though your care indeed never failed, but you lacked

**opportunity. Not that I speak as if I were in want; for I have learnt, in whatsoever state I am, to be content. I can bear either abasement or abundance. In all things, and amongst all men, I have been taught the secret, to be full or to be hungry, to want or to abound. I can do all things in Him who strengthens me. Nevertheless, you have done well, in contributing to the help of my affliction. And you know yourselves, Philippians, that, in the beginning of the Glad-tidings, after I had left Macedonia, no Church communicated with me on account of giving and receiving, but you alone. For even while I was [still] in Thessalonica, you sent once and again to relieve my need. Not that I seek your gifts, but I seek the fruit which accrues therefrom, to your account. But I have all which I require, and more than I require. I am fully supplied, having received from Epaproditus your gifts, "An odour of sweetness," an acceptable sacrifice well pleasing to God. And your own needs shall be all supplied by my God, in the fulness of His glorious riches in Christ Jesus. Now to our God and Father be glory unto the ages of ages. Amen.**

**Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren who are with me salute you.**

**All the saints here salute you, especially those who belong to the house of Cæsar.**

**The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits.**

### **Converts in the Imperial Household**

The above Epistle gives us an unusual amount of information concerning the personal situation of its writer, which we have already endeavoured to incorporate into our narrative. But nothing in it is more suggestive than St. Paul's allusion to the Prætorian guards, and to the converts he had gained in the household of Nero. He tells us (as we have just read) that throughout the Prætorian quarters he was well known as a prisoner for the cause of Christ, and he sends special salutations to the Philippian Church from the Christians in the Imperial household. These notices bring before us very vividly the moral contrasts by which the Apostle was surrounded. The soldier to whom

he was chained to-day might have been in Nero's body-guard yesterday; his comrade who next relieved guard upon the prisoner, might have been one of the executioners of Octavia, and might have carried her head to Poppæa a few weeks before. Such were the ordinary employments of the fierce and blood-stained veterans who were daily present, like wolves in the midst of sheep, at the meetings of the Christian brotherhood. If there were any of these soldiers not utterly hardened by a life of cruelty, their hearts must surely have been touched by the character of their prisoner, brought as they were into so close a contact with him. They must have been at least astonished to see a man, under such circumstances, so utterly careless of selfish interests, and devoting himself with an energy so unaccountable to the teaching of others. Strange indeed to their ears, fresh from the brutality of a Roman barrack, must have been the sound of Christian exhortation, of prayers, and of hymns; stranger still, perhaps, the tender love which bound the converts to their teacher and to one another, and showed itself in every look and tone.

But if the agents of Nero's tyranny seem out of place in such a scene, still more repugnant to the assembled worshippers must have been the instruments of his pleasures, the ministers of his lust. Yet some even among these, the depraved servants of the place, were redeemed from their degradation by the Spirit of Christ, which spoke to them in the words of Paul. How deep their degradation was, we know from authentic records. We are not left to conjecture the services required from the attendants of Nero. The ancient historians have polluted their pages with details of infamy which no writer in the languages of Christendom may dare to repeat. Thus, the very immensity of moral amelioration wrought, operates to disguise its own extent; and hides from inexperienced eyes the gulf which separates Heathenism from Christianity. Suffice it to say that the courtiers of Nero were the spectators, and the members of his household the instruments, of vices so

monstrous and so unnatural, that they shocked even the men of that generation, steeped as it was in every species of obscenity. But we must remember that many of those who took part in such abominations were involuntary agents, forced by the compulsion of slavery to do their master's bidding. And the very depth of vileness in which they were plunged, must have excited in some of them an indignant disgust and revulsion against vice. Under such feelings, if curiosity led them to visit the Apostle's prison, they were well qualified to appreciate the purity of its moral atmosphere. And there it was that some of these unhappy bondsmen first tasted of spiritual freedom; and were prepared to brave with patient heroism the tortures under which they soon were destined to expire in the gardens of the Vatican.

History has few stranger contrasts than when it shows us Paul preaching Christ under the walls of Nero's palace. Thenceforward, there were but two religions in the Roman world; the worship of the Emperor, and the worship of the Saviour. The old superstitions had been long worn out; they had lost all hold on educated minds. There remained to civilised Heathens no other worship possible but the worship of power; and the incarnation of power which they chose was, very naturally, the Sovereign of the world. This, then, was the ultimate result of the noble intuitions of Plato, the methodical reasonings of Aristotle, the pure morality of Socrates. All had failed, for want of external sanction and authority. The residuum they left was the philosophy of Epicurus, and the religion of Nerolatry. But a new doctrine was already taught in the Forum, and believed even on the Palatine. Over against the altars of Nero and Poppæa, the voice of a prisoner was daily heard, and daily woke in grovelling souls the consciousness of their divine destiny. Men listened, and knew that self-sacrifice was better than ease, humiliation more exalted than pride, to suffer nobler than to reign. They felt that the only religion which satisfied the needs of man was the religion of sorrow, the religion of self-devotion, the religion of the cross.

There are some amongst us now who think that the doctrine which Paul preached was a retrograde movement in the course of humanity; there are others who, with greater plausibility, acknowledge that it was useful in its season, but tell us that it is now worn out and obsolete. The former are far more consistent than the latter; for both schools of infidelity agree in virtually advising us to return to that effete philosophy which had been already tried and found wanting, when Christianity was winning the first triumphs of its immortal youth. This might well surprise us, did we not know that the progress of human reason in the paths of ethical discovery is merely the progress of a man in a treadmill, doomed for ever to retrace his own steps. Had it been otherwise, we might have hoped that mankind could not again be duped by an old and useless remedy, which was compounded and recompounded in every possible shape and combination, two thousand years ago, and at last utterly rejected by a nauseated world. Yet for this antiquated anodyne, disguised under a new label, many are once more bartering the only true medicine that can heal the diseases of the soul.

For such mistakes there is, indeed, no real cure, except prayer to Him who giveth sight to the blind; but a partial antidote may be supplied by the history of the Imperial Commonwealth. The true wants of the Apostolic age can best be learned from the annals of Tacitus. There men may still see the picture of that Rome to which Paul preached; and thence they may comprehend the results of civilisation without Christianity, and the impotence of a moral philosophy destitute of supernatural attestation.

## Chapter 27

### Authorities for St. Paul's Subsequent History

We have already remarked that the light concentrated upon that portion of St. Paul's life which is related in the latter chapters of the Acts, makes darker by contrast the obscurity which rests upon the remainder of his course.

The progress of the historian who attempts to trace the footsteps of the Apostles beyond the limits of the Scriptural narrative must, at best, be hesitating and uncertain. It has been compared to the descent of one who passes from the clear sunshine which rests upon a mountain's top into the mist which wraps its side. But this is an inadequate comparison; for such a wayfarer loses the daylight gradually, and experiences no abrupt transition, from the bright prospect and the distinctness of the onward path, into darkness and bewilderment. Our case should rather be compared with that of the traveller on the Chinese frontier, who has just reached a turn in the valley along which his course has led him, and has come to a point whence he expected to enjoy the view of a new and brilliant landscape; when he suddenly finds all farther prospect cut off by an enormous wall, filling up all the space between precipices on either hand, and opposing a blank and insuperable barrier to his onward progress. And if a chink here and there should allow some glimpses of the rich territory beyond, they are only enough to tantalise, without gratifying his curiosity.

Doubtless, however, it was a Providential design which has thus limited our knowledge. The wall of separation, which for ever cuts off the Apostolic age from that which followed it, was built by the hand of God. That age of miracles was not to be revealed to us as passing by any gradual transition into the common life of the Church; it was intentionally isolated from all succeeding time, that we might learn to appreciate more fully its extraordinary character, and see, by the sharpness of the abruptest contrast, the difference between the human and the divine.

A few faint rays of light, however, have been permitted to penetrate beyond the dividing barrier, and of these we must make the best use we can: for it is now our task to trace the history of St. Paul beyond the period where the narrative of his fellow-traveller so suddenly terminates. The only cotemporary materials for this purpose are his own letters to Titus and

Timotheus, and a single sentence of his disciple, Clement of Rome; and during the three centuries which followed we can gather but a few scattered and unsatisfactory notices from the writers who have handed down to us the traditions of the Church.

### Evidence for St. Paul's Liberation

The great question which we have to answer concerns the termination of that long imprisonment whose history has occupied the preceding Chapters. St. Luke tells us that Paul remained under military custody in Rome for "two whole years" (Acts 28:16. and 30); but he does not say what followed, at the close of that period. Was it ended, we are left to ask, by the Apostle's condemnation and death, or by his acquittal and liberation? Although the answer to this question has been a subject of dispute in modern times, no doubt was entertained about it by the ancient Church. It was universally believed that St. Paul's appeal to Cæsar terminated successfully; that he was acquitted of the charges laid against him; and that he spent some years in freedom before he was again imprisoned and condemned. The evidence on this subject, though (as we have said) not copious, is yet conclusive so far as it goes, and it is all one way.

The most important portion of it is supplied by Clement, the disciple of St. Paul, mentioned Phil. 4:3., who was afterwards Bishop of Rome. This author, writing from Rome to Corinth, expressly asserts that Paul had preached the Gospel "in the east and in the west;" that "he had instructed the whole world [i. e. the Roman Empire, which was commonly so called] in righteousness;" and that he "had gone to the extremity of the west" before his martyrdom.

Now, in a Roman author, the extremity of the West could mean nothing short of Spain, and the expression is often used by Roman writers to denote Spain. Here, then, we have the express testimony of St. Paul's own disciple that he fulfilled his original intention (mentioned Rom. 15:24-28) of visiting the Spanish

peninsula; and consequently that he was liberated from his first imprisonment at Rome.

The next piece of evidence which we possess on the subject is contained in the canon of the New Testament, compiled by an unknown Christian about the year a.d. 170, which is commonly called "Muratori's Canon." In this document it is said, in the account of the Acts of the Apostles, that "Luke relates to Theophilus events of which he was an eye-witness, as also, in a separate place (semote) [viz. Luke 22:31-33.], he evidently declares the martyrdom of Peter, but [omits] the journey of Paul from Rome to Spain."

In the next place, Eusebius tells us, "after defending himself successfully it is currently reported that the Apostle again went forth to proclaim the Gospel, and afterwards came to Rome a second time, and was martyred under Nero."

Next we have the statement of Chrysostom, who mentions it as an undoubted historical fact, that "St Paul after his residence in Rome departed to Spain."

About the same time St. Jerome bears the same testimony, saying that "Paul was dismissed by Nero, that he might preach Christ's Gospel in the West."

Against this unanimous testimony of the primitive Church there is no external evidence whatever to oppose. Those who doubt the liberation of St. Paul from his imprisonment are obliged to resort to a gratuitous hypothesis, or to inconclusive arguments from probability. Thus they try to account for the tradition of the Spanish journey, by the arbitrary supposition that it arose from a wish to represent St. Paul as having fulfilled his expressed intentions (Rom. 15:19) of visiting Spain. Or they say that it is improbable Nero would have liberated St. Paul after he had fallen under the influence of Poppaea, the Jewish proselyte. Or, lastly, they urge, that, if St. Paul had really been liberated, we must have had some account of his subsequent labours. The first argument needs no answer, being a mere hypothesis. The

second, as to the probability of the matter, may be met by the remark that we know far too little of the circumstances, and of the motives which weighed with Nero, to judge how he would have been likely to act in the case. To the third argument we may oppose the fact, that we have no account whatever of St. Paul's labours, toils, and sufferings, during several of the most active years of his life, and only learn their existence by a casual allusion in a letter to the Corinthians (2 Cor. 11:24, 25). Moreover, if this argument be worth any thing, it would prove that none of the Apostles except St. Paul took any part whatever in the propagation of the Gospel after the first few years; since we have no testimony to their subsequent labours at all more definite than that which we have above quoted concerning the work of St. Paul after his liberation.

But farther, unless we are prepared to dispute the genuineness of the Pastoral Epistles, we must admit not only that St. Paul was liberated from his Roman imprisonment, but also that he continued his Apostolic labours for at least some years afterwards. For it is now admitted, by nearly all those who are competent to decide on such a question, first, that the historical facts mentioned in the Epistles to Timothy and Titus, cannot be placed in any portion of St. Paul's life before or during his first imprisonment in Rome; and, secondly, that the style in which those Epistles are written, and the condition of the Church described in them, forbids the supposition of such a date. Consequently, we must acknowledge (unless we deny the authenticity of the Pastoral Epistles) that after St. Paul's Roman imprisonment he was travelling at liberty in Ephesus, Crete, Macedonia, Miletus, and Nicopolis, and that he was afterwards a second time in prison at Rome.

But, when we have said this, we have told nearly all that we know of the Apostle's personal history, from his liberation to his death. We cannot fix with certainty the length of the time which intervened, nor the order in which he visited the different places where he

is recorded to have laboured. The following data, however, we have. In the first place, his martyrdom is universally said to have occurred in the reign of Nero. Secondly, Timotheus was still a young man (i. e. young for the charge committed to him) at the time of Paul's second imprisonment at Rome. Thirdly, the three Pastoral Epistles were written within a few months of one another. Fourthly, their style differs so much from the style of the earlier Epistles, that we must suppose as long an interval between their date and that of the Epistle to Philippi as is consistent with the preceding conditions.

These reasons concur in leading us to fix the last year of Nero as that of St. Paul's martyrdom. And this is the very year assigned to it by Jerome, and the next to that assigned by Eusebius; the two earliest writers who mention the date of St. Paul's death at all. We have already seen that St. Paul first arrived in Rome in the Spring of a.d. 61: we therefore have, on our hypothesis, an interval of five years, between the period with which St. Luke concludes (a.d. 63), and the Apostle's martyrdom. And the grounds above mentioned lead us to the conclusion that this interval was occupied in the following manner.

### Hearing of the Appeal

In the first place, after the long delay, which we have before endeavoured to explain, St. Paul's appeal came on for hearing before the Emperor. The appeals from the provinces in civil causes were heard, not by the Emperor himself, but by his delegates, who were persons of consular rank: Augustus had appointed one such delegate to hear appeals from each province respectively. But criminal appeals appear generally to have been heard by the Emperor in person, assisted by his council of Assessors. Tiberius and Claudius had usually sat for this purpose in the Forum; but Nero, after the example of Augustus, heard these causes in the Imperial Palace, whose ruins still crown the Palatine. Here, at one end of a splendid hall, lined with the precious marbles of Egypt and of

Lybia, we must imagine the Cæsar seated, in the midst of his Assessors. These councillors, twenty in number, were men of the highest rank and greatest influence. Among them were the two Consuls, and selected representatives of each of the other great magistracies of Rome. The remainder consisted of Senators chosen by lot. Over this distinguished bench of judges presided the representative of the most powerful monarchy which has ever existed,—the absolute ruler of the whole civilized world. But the reverential awe which his position naturally suggested, was changed into contempt and loathing by the character of the Sovereign who now presided over that supreme tribunal. For Nero was a man whom even the awful attribute of "power equal to the gods" could not render august, except in title. The fear and horror excited by his omnipotence and his cruelty, was blended with contempt for his ignoble lust of praise, and his shameless licentiousness. He had not as yet plunged into that extravagance of tyranny which, at a later period, exhausted the patience of his subjects, and brought him to destruction. Hitherto his public measures had been guided by sage advisers, and his cruelty had injured his own family rather than the state. But already, at the age of twenty-five, he had murdered his innocent wife and his adopted brother, and had dyed his hands in the blood of his mother. Yet even these enormities seem to have disgusted the Romans less than his prostitution of the Imperial purple, by publicly performing as a musician on the stage and a charioteer in the circus. His degrading want of dignity and insatiable appetite for vulgar applause, drew tears from the councillors and servants of his house, who could see him slaughter his nearest relatives without remonstrance.

### His Trial

Before the tribunal of this blood-stained adulterer, Paul the Apostle was now brought in fetters, under the custody of his military guard. We may be sure that he, who had so often stood undaunted before the delegates of the Imperial throne, did not quail when he was at last

confronted with their master. His life was not in the hands of Nero; he knew that while his Lord had work for him on earth, He would shield him from the tyrant's sword; and if his work was over, how gladly would he "depart and be with Christ, which was far better." To him all the majesty of Roman despotism was nothing more than an empty pageant; the Imperial demigod himself was but one of "the princes of this world, that come to nought." Thus he stood, calm and collected, ready to answer the charges of his accusers, and knowing that in the hour of his need it should be given him what to speak.

The prosecutors and their witnesses were now called forward, to support their accusation; for although the subject-matter for decision was contained in the written depositions forwarded from Judæa by Festus, yet the Roman law required the personal presence of the accusers and the witnesses, whenever it could be obtained. We already know the charges brought against the Apostle. He was accused of disturbing the Jews in the exercise of their worship, which was secured to them by law; of desecrating their Temple; and, above all, of violating the public peace of the Empire by perpetual agitation, as the ringleader of a new and factious sect. This charge was the most serious in the view of a Roman statesman; for the crime alleged amounted to majestas, or treason against the Commonwealth, and was punishable with death.

These accusations were supported by the emissaries of the Sanhedrin, and probably by the testimony of witnesses from Judæa, Ephesus, Corinth, and the other scenes of Paul's activity. The foreign accusers, however, did not rely on the support of their own unaided eloquence. They doubtless hired the rhetoric of some accomplished Roman pleader (as they had done even before the provincial tribunal of Felix) to set off their cause to the best advantage, and paint the dangerous character of their antagonist in the darkest colours. Nor would it have been difficult to represent the missionary labours of Paul as dangerous to the security of the Roman state, when we

remember how ill informed the Roman magistrates, who listened, must have been concerning the questions really at issue between Paul and his opponents; and when we consider how easily the Jews were excited against the government by any fanatical leader who appealed to their nationality, and how readily the kingdom of the Messiah, which Paul proclaimed, might be misrepresented as a temporal monarchy, set up in opposition to the foreign domination of Rome.

We cannot suppose that St. Paul had secured the services of any professional advocate to repel such false accusations, and put the truth clearly before his Roman judges. We know that he resorted to no such method on former occasions of a similar kind. And it seems more consistent with his character, and his unwavering reliance on his Master's promised aid, to suppose that he answered the elaborate harangue of the hostile pleader by a plain and simple statement of facts, like that which he addressed to Felix, Festus, and Agrippa. He could easily prove the falsehood of the charge of sacrilege, by the testimony of those who were present in the Temple; and perhaps the refutation of this more definite accusation might incline his judges more readily to attribute the vaguer charges to the malice of his opponents. He would then proceed to show that, far from disturbing the exercise of the religio licita of Judaism, he himself adhered to that religion, rightly understood. He would show that far from being a seditious agitator against the state, he taught his converts everywhere to honour the Imperial Government, and submit to the ordinances of the magistrate for conscience' sake. And, though he would admit the charge of belonging to the sect of the Nazarenes, yet he would remind his opponents that they themselves acknowledged the division of their nation into various sects, which were equally entitled to the protection of the law; and that the sect of the Nazarenes had a right to the same toleration which was extended to those of the Pharisees and the Sadducees.

We know not whether he entered on this occasion into the peculiar doctrines of that "sect" to which he belonged; basing them, as he ever did, on the resurrection of the dead; and reasoning of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come. If so, he had one auditor at least who had more need to tremble than even Felix. But doubtless a seared conscience, and a universal frivolity of character, rendered Nero proof against emotions which for a moment shook the nerves of a less audacious criminal.

When the parties on both sides had been heard, and the witnesses all examined and cross-examined (a process which perhaps occupied several days), the judgment of the court was taken. Each of the assessors gave his opinion in writing to the Emperor, who never discussed the judgment with his assessors, as had been the practice of better emperors, but after reading their opinions gave sentence according to his own pleasure, without reference to the judgment of the majority. On this occasion, it might have been expected that he would have pronounced the condemnation of the accused; for the influence of Poppæa had now reached its culminating point, and she was, as we have said, a Jewish proselyte. We can scarcely doubt that the emissaries from Palestine would have sought access to so powerful a protectress, and demanded her aid for the destruction of a traitor to the Jewish faith; nor would any scruples have prevented her from listening to their request, backed as it probably was, according to the Roman usage, by a bribe. If such influence was exerted upon Nero, it might have been expected easily to prevail. But we know not all the complicated intrigues of the Imperial Court. Perhaps some Christian freedman of Narcissus may have counteracted, through the interest of that powerful favourite, the devices of St. Paul's antagonists; or possibly Nero may have been capriciously inclined to act upon his own independent view of the law and justice of the case, or to show his contempt for what he regarded as the petty squabbles of a superstitious people, by "driving the accusers

from his judgment seat" with the same feelings which Gallio had shown on a similar occasion.

### His Acquittal

However this may be, the trial resulted in the acquittal of St. Paul. He was pronounced guiltless of the charges brought against him, his fetters were struck off, and he was liberated from his lengthened captivity. And now at last he was free to realise his long cherished purpose of evangelising the West. But the immediate execution of this design was for the present postponed, in order that he might first revisit some of his earlier converts, who again needed his presence.

Immediately on his liberation it may reasonably be supposed that he fulfilled the intention which he had lately expressed (Philem. 22. and Phil. 2:24) of travelling eastward through Macedonia, and seeking the churches of Asia Minor, some of which, as yet, had not seen his face in the flesh. We have already learnt, from the Epistle to the Colossians, how much his influence and authority were required among those Asiatic Churches. We must suppose him, therefore, to have gone from Rome by the usual route, crossing the Adriatic from Brundisium to Apollonia, or Dyrrhachium, and proceeding by the great Egnatian road through Macedonia; and we can imagine the joy wherewith he was welcomed by his beloved children at Philippi, when he thus gratified the expectation which he had encouraged them to form. There is no reason to suppose, however, that he lingered in Macedonia. It is more likely that he hastened on to Ephesus, and made that city once more his centre of operations. If he effected his purpose, he now for the first time visited Colossæ, Laodicea, and other churches in that region.

Having accomplished the objects of his visit to Asia Minor, he was at length enabled (perhaps in the year following that of his liberation) to undertake his long meditated journey to Spain. By what route he went, we know not; he may either have travelled by way of Rome, which had been his original intention, or, more probably, avoiding the dangers which at this

period (in the height of the Neronian persecution) would have beset him there, he may have gone by sea. There was constant commercial intercourse between the East and Massilia (the modern Marseilles); and Massilia was in daily communication with the Peninsula. We may suppose him to have reached Spain in the year 64, and to have remained there about two years; which would allow him time to establish the germs of Christian Churches among the Jewish proselytes who were to be found in all the great cities, from Tarraco to Gades, along the Spanish coast.

### He Visits Various Churches in Asia

From Spain St. Paul seems to have returned, in a.d. 66, to Ephesus; and here he found that the predictions which he had long ago uttered to the Ephesian presbyters were already receiving their fulfilment. Heretical teachers had arisen in the very bosom of the Church, and were leading away the believers after themselves. Hymenæus and Philetus were sowing, in a congenial soil, the seed which was destined in another century to bear so ripe a crop of error. The East and West were infusing their several elements of poison into the pure cup of Gospel truth. In Asia Minor, as at Alexandria, Hellenic philosophism did not refuse to blend with Oriental theosophy; the Jewish superstitions of the Cabbala, and the wild speculations of the Persian magi, were combined with the Greek craving for an enlightened and esoteric religion. The outward forms of superstition were ready for the vulgar multitude; the interpretation was confined to the aristocracy of knowledge, the self-styled Gnostics (1 Tim. 6:20); and we see the tendencies at work among the latter, when we learn that, like their prototypes at Corinth, they denied the future resurrection of the dead, and taught that the only true resurrection was that which took place when the soul awoke from the death of ignorance to the life of knowledge. We recognise already the germ of those heresies which convulsed the Church in the succeeding century; and we may imagine the grief and indignation aroused in the breast of St. Paul, when he found the extent of the evil, and the

number of Christian converts already infected by the spreading plague.

Nevertheless, it is evident from the Epistles to Timotheus and Titus, written about this time, that he was prevented by other duties from staying in this oriental region so long as his presence was required. He left his disciples to do that which, had circumstances permitted, he would have done himself. He was plainly hurried from one point to another. Perhaps also he had lost some of his former energy. This might well be the case, if we consider all he had endured during thirty years of labour. The physical hardships which he had undergone were of themselves sufficient to wear out the most robust constitution; and we know that his health was already broken many years before. But in addition to these bodily trials, the moral conflicts which he continually encountered could not fail to tire down the elasticity of his spirit. The hatred manifested by so large and powerful a section even of the Christian Church; the destruction of so many early friendships; the faithless desertion of followers; the crowd of anxieties which pressed upon him daily, and "the care of all the Churches;" must needs have preyed upon the mental energy of any man, but especially of one whose temperament was so ardent and impetuous. When approaching the age of seventy, he might well be worn out both in body and mind. And this will account for the comparative want of vigour and energy which has been attributed to the Pastoral Epistles, if there be any such deficiency; and may perhaps also be in part the cause of his opposing those errors by deputy, which we might rather have expected him to uproot by his own personal exertions.

However this may be, he seems not to have remained for any long time together at Ephesus, but to have been called away from thence, first to Macedonia, and afterwards to Crete; and immediately on his return from thence, he appears finally to have left Ephesus for Rome, by way of Corinth. But here we are anticipating our narrative: we must return to the first of these hurried journeys, when he departed from

Ephesus to Macedonia, leaving the care of the Ephesian Church to Timotheus, and charging him especially with the duty of counteracting the efforts of those heretical teachers whose dangerous character we have described.

When he arrived in Macedonia, he found that his absence might possibly be prolonged beyond what he had expected; and he probably felt that Timotheus might need some more explicit credential from himself than a mere verbal commission, to enable him for a longer period to exercise that Apostolic authority over the Ephesian Church, wherewith he had invested him. It would also be desirable that Timotheus should be able, in his struggle with the heretical teachers, to exhibit documentary proof of St. Paul's agreement with himself, and condemnation of the opposing doctrines. Such seem to have been the principal motives which led St. Paul to despatch from Macedonia that which is known as "the First Epistle to Timothy;" in which are contained various rules for the government of the Ephesian Church, such as would be received with submission when thus seen to proceed directly from its Apostolic founder, while they would perhaps have been less readily obeyed, if seeming to be the spontaneous injunctions of the youthful Timotheus. In the same manner it abounds with impressive denunciations against the false teachers at Ephesus, which might command the assent of some who turned a deaf ear to the remonstrances of the Apostolic deputy. There are also exhortations to Timotheus himself, some of which perhaps were rather meant to bear an indirect application to others, at the time, as they have ever since furnished a treasury of practical precepts for the Christian Church.

## **THE FIRST EPISTLE TO TIMOTHY**

### **I Timothy 1**

**Paul, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by command of God our Saviour and Christ Jesus our hope, to Timotheus my true son in faith.**

**Grace, Mercy, and Peace, from God our Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.**

**As I desired thee to remain in Ephesus, when I was setting out for Macedonia, that thou mightest command certain persons not to teach falsely, nor to regard fables and endless genealogies, which furnish ground for disputation, rather than for the exercising of the stewardship of God in faith.**

**Now the end of the commandment is love, proceeding from a pure heart, and good conscience, and undissembled faith. Which some have missed, and have turned aside to vain babbling, desiring to be teachers of the Law, understanding neither what they say nor whereof they affirm. But we know that the Law is good, if a man use it lawfully; knowing this, that the Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the impious and sinful, for the unholy and profane, for parricides and murderers, for fornicators, sodomites, slave-dealers, liars, perjurers, and whatsoever else is contrary to sound doctrine. Such is the glorious Glad-tidings of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.**

**And I thank Him who has given me strength, Christ Jesus our Lord, that He accounted me faithful, and appointed me to minister unto His service, who was before a blasphemmer and persecutor, and doer of outrage; but I received mercy, because I acted ignorantly, in unbelief. And the grace of our Lord abounded beyond measure, with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. Faithful is the saying, and worthy of all acceptance, "Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners;" of whom I am first. But for this cause I received mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all His long suffering, for a pattern of those who should hereafter believe on Him unto life everlasting. Now to the king eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honour and glory unto the ages of ages. Amen.**

**This charge I commit unto thee, son Timotheus, according to the former prophecies concerning thee; that in the strength thereof thou mayest fight the good fight, holding faith and a good conscience, which some have cast away, and made shipwreck concerning the faith. Among whom are Hymenæus and Alexander, whom**

**I delivered over unto Satan that they might be taught by punishment not to blaspheme.**

### 1 Timothy 2

I exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings be made for all men; for kings and all that are in authority, that we may lead a **quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and gravity. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour, who wills that all men should be saved, and should come to the knowledge of the truth. For [over all] there is but one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave Himself a ransom for all men, to be testified in due time. And of this testimony I was appointed herald and apostle (I speak the truth in Christ, I lie not), a teacher of the Gentiles, in faith and truth. I desire, then, that in every place the men should offer up prayers, lifting up their hands in holiness, putting away anger and disputation. Likewise, also, that the women should come in seemly apparel, and adorn themselves with modesty and self-restraint; not in braided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly garments, but (as befits women professing godliness) with the ornament of good works. Let women learn in silence, with entire submission. But I permit not a woman to teach, nor to claim authority over the man, but to keep silence. (For Adam was first formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived; but the woman was deceived, and became a transgressor.) But women will be saved by the bearing of children; if they continue in faith and love and holiness, with self-restraint.**

### 1 Timothy 3

Faithful is the saying, "if a man seeks the office of a Bishop he desires a good work." A Bishop, then, must be free from reproach, the husband of one wife, sober, self-restrained, orderly, hospitable, skilled in

teaching; not given to wine or brawls, but gentle, peaceable, and liberal; ruling his own household well, keeping his children in subjection with all gravity—(but if a man knows not how to rule his own household, how can he take charge of the Church of God?)— not a novice, lest he be blinded with pride and fall into the condemnation of the Devil. Moreover, he ought to have a good reputation among those who are without the Church; lest he fall into reproach, and into a snare of the Devil.

Likewise, the Deacons must be men of gravity, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of gain, holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these also be first tried, and after trial be made Deacons, if they are found irreproachable. Their wives, likewise, must be women of gravity, not slanderers, sober and faithful, in all things. Let the Deacons be husbands of one wife, fitly ruling their children and their own households. For those who have well performed the office of a Deacon, gain for themselves a good position, and great boldness in the faith of Christ Jesus.

These things I write to thee, although I hope to come to thee shortly; but in order that (if I should be delayed) thou mayest know how to conduct thyself in the house of God (for such is the Church of the living God) as a pillar and main-stay of the truth. And, without contradiction, great is the mystery of godliness—"God was manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit; beheld by angels, preached among the Gentiles; believed on in the world, received up in Glory."

### 1 Timothy 4

Now the Spirit declares expressly, that in after times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and teachings of dæmons, speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared; hindering marriage, enjoining abstinence from meats, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and have knowledge of the truth. For all things created by God are good, and nothing is to be rejected, if it be received

with thanksgiving. For it is sanctified by the Word of God and prayer.

In thus instructing the brethren, thou wilt be a good servant of Jesus Christ, nourishing thyself with the words of the faith and good doctrine which thou hast followed. Reject the fables of profane and doting teachers, but train thyself for the contests of godliness. For the training of the body is profitable for a little; but godliness is profitable for all things, having promise of the present life, and of the life to come. Faithful is the saying, and worthy of all acceptance,—“For to this end we endure labour and reproach, because we have set our hope on the living God, who is the saviour of all mankind, specially of the faithful.”

These things enjoin and teach; let no man despise thy youth, but make thyself a pattern of the faithful, in word, in life, in love, in faith, in purity. Until I come, apply thyself to public reading, exhortation, and teaching. Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy with the laying on of the hands of the Presbytery. Let these things be thy care; give thyself wholly to them; that thy improvement may be manifest to all men. Give heed to thyself and to thy teaching; continue stedfast therein. For in so doing, thou shalt save both thyself and thy hearers.

### 1 Timothy 5

Rebuke not an aged man, but exhort him as thou wouldest a father; treat young men as brothers; the aged women as mothers; the young as sisters, in all purity.

Pay due regard to the widows who are friendless in their widowhood. But if any widow has children or grandchildren, let them learn to shew their godliness first towards their own household, and to requite their parents; for this is acceptable in the sight of God. The widow who is friendless and desolate in her widowhood, sets her hope on God, and continues in supplications and prayers night and day; but she who lives in wantonness is dead while she lives; and hereof do thou admonish them, that they may be irreproachable. But if any man

provide not for his own, and especially for his kindred, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an unbeliever.

Qualification of widows on the list.

A widow, to be placed upon the list, must be not less than sixty years of age, having been the wife of one husband; she must be well reported of for good deeds, as one who has brought up children, received strangers with hospitality, washed the feet of the saints, relieved the distressed, and diligently followed every good work. But younger widows reject; for when they have become wanton against Christ, they desire to marry; and thereby incur condemnation, because they have broken their former promise. Moreover, they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busy-bodies, speaking things which ought not to be spoken. I wish therefore that younger widows should marry, bear children, rule their households, and give no occasion to the adversary for reproach. For already some of them have gone astray after Satan.

If there are widows dependent on any believer (whether man or woman), let those on whom they depend relieve them, and let not the Church be burdened with them; that it may relieve the widows who are destitute.

Government of the Presbyters.

Let the Presbyters who perform their office well be counted worthy of a twofold honour, especially those who labour in speaking and teaching. For the Scripture saith, “Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn;” and “the labourer is worthy of his hire.”

Against a Presbyter receive no accusation except on the testimony of two or three witnesses. Rebuke the offenders in the presence of all, that others also may fear. I adjure thee, before God and Christ Jesus and the chosen angels, that thou observe these things without prejudice against any man, and do nothing out of partiality.

Ordination.

**Lay hands hastily on no man, nor make thyself a partaker in the sins committed by another. Keep thyself pure.**

Particular and general cautions.

**Drink no longer water only, but use a little wine, for the sake of thy stomach, and thy frequent maladies.**

**[In thy decisions remember that] the sins of some men are manifest before-hand, and lead the way to their condemnation; but the sins of others are not seen till afterwards. Likewise, also, the good deeds of some men are conspicuous; and those which they conceal cannot be kept hidden.**

### 1 Timothy 6

Duties of slaves.

**Let those who are under the yoke as bondsmen, esteem their masters worthy of all honour, lest reproach be brought upon the name of God and His doctrine. And let those whose masters are believers not despise them because they are brethren, but serve them with the more subjection, because they who claim the benefit are believing and beloved. Thus teach thou, and exhort.**

False teachers rebuked; their covetousness.

**If any man teach falsely, and consent not to the sound words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the godly doctrine, he is blinded with pride, and understands nothing, but is filled with a sickly appetite for disputations and contentions about words, whence arise envy, strife, reproaches, evil suspicions, violent collisions of men whose mind is corrupted, and who are destitute of the truth; who think that godliness is a gainful trade. But godliness with contentment is truly gainful; for we brought nothing into the world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out; but having food and shelter, let us be therewith content. They who seek for riches fall into temptations and snares, and many foolish and hurtful desires, which drown men in ruin and destruction. For the love of money is the root of all evils; and some, coveting it, have been led astray from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.**

Exhortations of Timotheus.

**But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, stedfastness, meekness. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, to which thou wast called, and didst confess the good confession before many witnesses. I charge thee in the presence of God who gives life to all things, and Christ Jesus who bore testimony under Pontius Pilate to the good confession, that thou keep that which thou art commanded, spotlessly and irreproachably, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ; which shall in due time be made manifest by the blessed and only potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; who only hath immortality, dwelling in light unapproachable; whom no man hath seen, nor can see; to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.**

Duties of the rich.

**Charge those who are rich in this present world, not to be high-minded, nor to trust in uncertain riches, but in God, who provides all things richly for our use. Charge them to practise benevolence, to be rich in good works, to be bountiful and generous, storing up for themselves a good foundation for the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.**

Timotheus again reminded of his commission.

**O Timotheus, guard the treasure which is committed to thy trust, and avoid the profane babblings and antitheses of the falsely-named "Knowledge;" which some professing, have erred concerning the faith.**

Concluding benediction.

**Grace be with thee.**

### St. Paul Visits Crete

The expectations which St. Paul expressed in the above letter of a more prolonged absence from Ephesus, could scarcely have been fulfilled; for soon after we find that he had been in Crete (which seems to imply that, on his way thither, he had passed through Ephesus), and was now again on his way westwards. We must suppose, then, that he returned shortly from Macedonia to Ephesus, as he hoped, though

doubtfully, to be able to do when he wrote to Timotheus. From Ephesus, as we have just said, he soon afterwards made an expedition to Crete. It can scarcely be supposed that the Christian Churches of Crete were first founded during this visit of St. Paul; on the contrary, many indications in the Epistle to Titus show that they had already lasted for a considerable time. But they were troubled by false teachers, and probably had never yet been properly organised, having originated, perhaps, in the private efforts of individual Christians, who would have been supplied with a centre of operations and nucleus of Churches by the numerous colonies of Jews established in the island. St. Paul now visited them in company with Titus, whom he left in Crete as his representative on his departure. He himself was unable to remain long enough to do what was needful, either in silencing error, or in selecting fit persons as presbyters of the numerous scattered Churches, which would manifestly be a work of time. Probably he confined his efforts to a few of the principal places, and empowered Titus to do the rest. Thus, Titus was left at Crete in the same position which Timotheus had occupied at Ephesus during St. Paul's recent absence; and there would, consequently, be the same advantage in his receiving written directions from St. Paul concerning the government and organisation of the Church, which we have before mentioned in the case of Timotheus. Accordingly, shortly after leaving Crete, St. Paul sent a letter to Titus, the outline of which would equally serve for that of the preceding Epistle. But St. Paul's letter to Titus seems to have been still further called for, to meet some strong opposition which that disciple had encountered while attempting to carry out his master's directions. This may be inferred from the very severe remarks against the Cretans which occur in the Epistle, and from the statement, at its commencement, that the very object which its writer had in view, in leaving Titus in Crete, was that he might appoint Presbyters in the Cretan Churches; an indication that his claim to exercise this authority had been disputed. This Epistle seems

to have been despatched from Ephesus at the moment when St. Paul was on the eve of departure on a westward journey, which was to take him as far as Nicopolis (in Epirus) before the winter. The following is a translation of this Epistle.

## THE EPISTLE TO TITUS

### Titus 1

Salutation.

**Paul, a bondsman of God, and an Apostle of Jesus Christ—sent forth to bring God's chosen to faith, and to the knowledge of the truth which is according to godliness, with hope of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, promised before eternal times; (but He made known His word in due season, in the message committed to my trust by the command of God our Saviour),—to Titus, my true son in our common faith.**

**Grace and Peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.**

Commission of Titus to regulate the Cretan Churches. Qualifications of Presbyters.

**This was the [very] cause why I left thee in Crete, that thou mightest farther correct what is deficient, and appoint Presbyters in every city, as I gave thee commission. No man must be appointed a Presbyter but he who is without reproach, the husband of one wife, having believing children, who are not accused of riotous living, nor disobedient; for a Bishop must be free from reproach, as being a steward of God; not self-willed, not easily provoked, not a lover of wine, not given to brawls, not greedy of gain; but hospitable to strangers, a lover of good men, self-restrained, just, holy, continent; holding fast the words which are faithful to our teaching, that he may be able both to exhort others in the sound doctrine, and to rebuke the gain-sayers.**

Titus must oppose the false teachers.

**For there are many disobedient babblers and deceivers, specially they of the circumcision, whose mouths need bit and bridle; for they subvert whole houses, by teaching evil, for the love of shameful gain. It**

was said by one of themselves, a prophet of their own,—

“Always liars and beasts are the Cretans, and inwardly sluggish.”

This testimony is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in faith, and may no more give heed to Jewish fables, and precepts of men who turn away from the truth. To the pure all things are pure; but to the polluted and unbelieving nothing is pure, but both their understanding and their conscience is polluted. They profess to know God, but by their works they deny Him, being abominable and disobedient, and worthless for any good work.

### Titus 2

Directions to Titus how he is to instruct those of different ages and sexes. His own conduct. Duties of slaves. General motives of Christianity

But do thou speak conformably to the sound doctrine. Exhort the aged men to be sober, grave, self-restrained, sound in faith, in love, in stedfastness. Exhort the aged women, likewise, to let their deportment testify of holiness, not to be slanderers, not to be enslaved by drunkenness, but to give good instruction; that they may teach discretion to the younger women, leading them to be loving wives and loving mothers, self-restrained, chaste, keepers at home, amiable and obedient to their husbands, lest reproach be brought upon the Word of God. In like manner, do thou exhort the young men to self-restraint. And show thyself in all things a pattern of good works; manifesting in thy teaching uncorruptness, gravity, soundness of doctrine not to be condemned, that our adversaries may be shamed, having no evil to say against us. Exhort bondsmen to obey their masters, and to strive to please them in all things, without gain-saying; not purloining, but showing all good fidelity, that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things. For the grace of God has been made manifest, bringing salvation to all mankind; teaching us to deny ungodliness and earthly lusts, and to live temperately, justly, and godly in this present world; looking for that blessed hope, the appearing

of the glory of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ; who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify us unto Himself, as “a peculiar people,” zealous of good works. These things speak, and exhort and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

### Titus 3

Duty towards Government and towards unbelievers generally. Titus must enforce good works and resist the false teachers.

Remind them to render submission to magistrates and authorities, to obey the Government, to be ready for every good work, to speak evil of no man, to avoid strife, to act with forbearance, and to shew all meekness to all men. For we ourselves also were formerly without understanding, disobedient and led astray, enslaved to all kinds of lusts and pleasures, living in malice and in envy, hateful and hating one another. But when God our Saviour made manifest His kindness and love of men, He saved us, not through the works of righteousness which we had done, but according to His own mercy, by the laver of regeneration, and the renewing of the Holy Spirit, which He richly poured forth upon us, by Jesus Christ our Saviour; that, being justified by His grace, we might become heirs, through hope, of life eternal. Faithful is the saying, and these things I desire thee to affirm. “let them that have believed in God be careful to practise good works.” These things are good and profitable to men: but avoid foolish disputations, and genealogies, and strifes and contentions concerning the Law, for they are profitless and vain. A sectarian, after two admonitions, reject, knowing that such a man is perverted, and by his sins is self-condemned.

Special directions for Titus’s journey to Nicopolis.

When I send Artemas or Tychicus to thee, endeavour to come to me to Nicopolis; for there I have determined to winter. Forward Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their journey zealously, that they may want for nothing. And let our people also learn to practise good works, ministering to the

**necessities of others, that they may not be unfruitful.**

Salutations.

**All that are with me salute thee. Salute those who love us in faith.**

**Grace be with you all.**

### Winter at Nicopolis

We see from the above letter that Titus was desired to join St. Paul at Nicopolis, where the Apostle designed to winter. We learn, from an incidental notice elsewhere, that the route he pursued was from Ephesus to Miletus, where his old companion Trophimus remained behind from sickness, and thence to Corinth, where he left Erastus, the former Treasurer of that city, whom, perhaps, he had expected, or wished, to accompany him in his farther progress. The position of Nicopolis would render it a good centre for operating upon the surrounding province; and thence St. Paul might make excursions to those Churches of Illyricum which he perhaps founded himself at an earlier period. The city which was thus chosen as the last scene of the Apostle's labours, before his final imprisonment, is more celebrated for its origin than for its subsequent history. It was founded by Augustus, as a permanent memorial of the victory or Actium, and stood upon the site of the camp occupied by his land forces before that battle. We learn, from the accounts of modern travellers, that the remains upon the spot still attest the extent and importance of the "City of Victory." "A long lofty wall spans a desolate plain; to the north of it rises, on a distant hill, the shattered scena of a theatre; and, to the west, the extended though broken line of an aqueduct connects the distant mountains, from which it tends, with the main subject of the picture, the city itself." To people this city, Augustus uprooted the neighbouring mountaineers from their native homes, dragging them by his arbitrary compulsion "from their healthy hills to this low and swampy plain." It is satisfactory to think (with the accomplished traveller from whom the above description is borrowed) that, "in lieu of

the blessings of which they were deprived, the Greek colonists of Nicopolis were consoled with one greater than all, when they saw, heard, and talked with the Apostle who was debtor to the Greeks."

### Second Roman Imprisonment

It seems most probable, however, that St. Paul was not permitted to spend the whole of this winter in security at Nicopolis. The Christians were now far more obnoxious to the Roman authorities than formerly. They were already distinguished from the Jews, and could no longer shelter themselves under the toleration extended to the Mosaic religion. So eminent a leader of the proscribed sect was sure to find enemies everywhere, especially among his fellow countrymen; and there is nothing improbable in supposing that, upon the testimony of some informer, he was arrested by the Magistrates of Nicopolis, and forwarded to Rome for trial. The indications which we gather from the Second Epistle to Timotheus render it probable that this arrest took place not later than mid-winter, and the authorities may have thought to gratify the Emperor by forwarding so important a criminal immediately to Rome. It is true that the navigation of the Mediterranean was in those times suspended during the winter; but this rule would apply only to longer voyages, and not to the short passage from Apollonia to Brundisium. Hence, it is not unlikely that St. Paul may have arrived at Rome some time before spring.

In this melancholy journey he had but few friends to cheer him. Titus had reached Nicopolis, in obedience to his summons; and there were others, also, it would seem, in attendance on him; but they were scattered by the terror of his arrest. Demas forsook him, "for love of this present world," and departed to Thessalonica; Crescens went to Galatia on the same occasion. We are unwilling to suppose that Titus could have yielded to such unworthy fears, and may be allowed to hope that his journey to the neighbouring Dalmatia was undertaken by the desire of St. Paul. Luke, at

any rate, remained faithful, accompanied his master once more over the wintry sea, and shared the dangers of his imprisonment at Rome.

This imprisonment was evidently more severe than it had been five years before. Then, though necessarily fettered to his military guard, he had been allowed to live in his own lodgings, and had been suffered to preach the Gospel to a numerous company who came to hear him. Now, he is not only chained, but treated "as a male-factor." His friends, indeed, are still suffered to visit him in his confinement, but we hear nothing of his preaching. It is dangerous and difficult to seek his prison; so perilous to show any public sympathy with him, that no Christian ventures to stand by him in the court of justice. And as the final stage of his trial approaches, he looks forward to death as his certain sentence.

This alteration in the treatment of St. Paul exactly corresponds with that which the history of the times would have led us to expect. We have concluded that his liberation took place early in a.d. 63; he was therefore far distant from Rome when the first Imperial persecution of Christianity broke out, in consequence of the great fire in the summer of the following year. Then first, as it appears, Christians were recognised as a distinct body, separate both from Jews and heathens; and their number must have been already very great at Rome, to account for the public notice attracted towards a sect whose members were, most of them, individually so obscure in social position. When the alarm and indignation of the people was excited by the tremendous ruin of a conflagration, which burnt down almost half the city, it answered the purpose of Nero (who was accused of causing the fire) to avert the rage of the populace from himself to the already hated votaries of a new religion. Tacitus describes the success of this expedient, and relates the sufferings of the Christian martyrs, who were put to death with circumstances of the most aggravated cruelty. Some were crucified; some disguised in the skins of beasts,

and hunted to death with dogs; some were wrapped in robes impregnated with inflammable materials, and set on fire at night, that they might serve to illuminate the circus of the Vatican and the gardens of Nero, where this diabolical monster exhibited the agonies of his victims to the public, and gloated over them himself, mixing among the spectators in the costume of a charioteer. Brutalised as the Romans were, by the perpetual spectacle of human combats in the amphitheatre, and hardened by popular prejudice against the "atheistical" sect, yet the tortures of the victims excited even their compassion. "A very great multitude," as Tacitus informs us, perished in this manner; and it appears from his statement that the mere fact of professing Christianity was accounted sufficient to justify their execution; the whole body of Christians being considered as involved in the crime of firing the city. This, however, was in the first excitement which followed the fire, and even then, probably, but few among those who perished were Roman citizens. Since that time some years had passed, and now a decent respect would be paid to the forms of law, in dealing with one who, like St. Paul, possessed the privilege of citizenship. Yet we can quite understand that a leader of so abhorred a sect would be subjected to a severe imprisonment.

We have no means of knowing the precise charge now made against the Apostle. He might certainly be regarded as an offender against the law which prohibited the propagation of a new and illicit religion (*religio nova et illicita*) among the citizens of Rome. But, at this period, one article of accusation against him must have been the more serious charge, of having instigated the Roman Christians to their supposed act of incendiarism, before his last departure from the capital. It appears that "Alexander the brasfounder" (2 Tim. 4:14) was either one of his accusers, or, at least, a witness against him. If this was the same with the Jewish Alexander of Ephesus (Acts 19:33), it would be probable that his testimony related to the former charge. But there is no proof that

these two Alexanders were identical. We may add, that the employment of Informer (delator) was now become quite a profession at Rome, and that there would be no lack of accusations against an unpopular prisoner as soon as his arrest became known.

Probably no long time elapsed, after St. Paul's arrival, before his cause came on for hearing. The accusers, with their witnesses, would be already on the spot; and on this occasion he was not to be tried by the Emperor in person, so that another cause of delay, which was often interposed by the carelessness or indolence of the Emperor, would be removed. The charge now alleged against him, probably fell under the cognisance of the City Præfect (Præfectus Urbi), whose jurisdiction daily encroached, at this period, on that of the ancient magistracies. For we must remember that, since the time of Augustus, a great though silent change had taken place in the Roman system of criminal procedure. The ancient method, though still the regular and legal system, was rapidly becoming obsolete in practice. Under the Republic, a Roman citizen could theoretically be tried on a criminal charge only by the Sovereign People; but the judicial power of the people was delegated, by special laws, to certain bodies of Judges, superintended by the several Prætors. Thus one Prætor presided at trials for homicide, another at trials for treason, and so on. But the presiding magistrate did not give the sentence; his function was merely to secure the legal formality of the proceedings. The judgment was pronounced by the Judices, a large body of judges (or rather jurors), chosen (generally by lot) from amongst the senators or knights, who gave their vote, by ballot, for acquittal or condemnation. But under the Empire this ancient system, though not formally abolished, was gradually superseded. The Emperors from the first claimed supreme judicial authority, both civil and criminal. And this jurisdiction was exercised not only by themselves, but by the delegates whom they appointed. It was at first delegated chiefly to the Præfect of the city; and though causes might, up to the beginning of

the second century, be tried by the Prætors in the old way, yet this became more and more unusual. In the reign of Nero it was even dangerous for an accuser to prosecute an offender in the Prætor's instead of the Præfect's court. Thus the trial of criminal charges was transferred from a jury of independent Judices to a single magistrate appointed by a despot, and controlled only by a Council of Assessors, to whom he was not bound to attend.

### First Stage of his Final Trial

Such was the court before which St. Paul was now cited. We have an account of the first hearing of the cause from his own pen. He writes thus to Timotheus immediately after:—"When I was first heard in my defence, no man stood by me, but all forsook me,—I pray that it be not laid to their charge.—Nevertheless the Lord Jesus stood by me, and strengthened my heart; that by me the proclamation of the Glad-tidings might be accomplished in full measure, and that all the Gentiles might hear; and I was delivered out of the lion's mouth." We see, from this statement, that it was dangerous even to appear in public as the friend or adviser of the Apostle. No advocate would venture to plead his cause, no procurator to aid him in arranging the evidence, no patronus (such as he might have found, perhaps, in the powerful Æmilian house) to appear as his supporter, and to deprecate, according to ancient usage, the severity of the sentence. But he had a more powerful intercessor, and a wiser advocate, who could never leave him nor forsake him. The Lord Jesus was always near him, but now was felt almost visibly present in the hour of his need.

From the above description we can realise in some measure the external features of his last trial. He evidently intimates that he spoke before a crowded audience, so that "all the Gentiles might hear;" and this corresponds with the supposition, which historically we should be led to make, that he was tried in one of those great basilicas which stood in the Forum. Two of the most celebrated of these edifices were

called the Pauline Basilicas, from the well-known Lucius Æmilius Paulus, who had built one of them and restored the other. It is not improbable that the greatest man who ever bore the Pauline name was tried in one of these. From specimens which still exist, as well as from the descriptions of Vitruvius, we have an accurate knowledge of the character of these halls of justice. They were rectangular buildings, consisting of a central nave and two aisles, separated from the nave by rows of columns. At one end of the nave was the tribune, in the centre of which was placed the magistrate's curule chair of ivory, elevated on a platform called the tribunal. Here also sat the Council of Assessors, who advised the Præfect upon the law, though they had no voice in the judgment. On the sides of the tribune were seats for distinguished persons, as well as for parties engaged in the proceedings. Fronting the presiding magistrate stood the prisoner, with his accusers and his advocates. The public was admitted into the remainder of the nave and aisles (which was railed off from the portion devoted to the judicial proceedings); and there were also galleries along the whole length of the aisles, one for men, the other for women. The aisles were roofed over; as was the tribune. The nave was originally left open to the sky. The basilicas were buildings of great size, so that a vast multitude of spectators was always present at any trial which excited public interest.

Before such an audience it was, that Paul was now called to speak in his defence. His earthly friends had deserted him, but his Heavenly Friend stood by him. He was strengthened by the power of Christ's Spirit, and pleaded the cause not of himself only, but of the Gospel. He spoke of Jesus, of His death and His resurrection, so that all the Heathen multitude might hear. At the same time, he successfully defended himself from the first of the charges brought against him, which perhaps accused him of conspiring with the incendiaries of Rome. He was delivered from the immediate peril, and saved from the ignominious and

painful death which might have been his doom had he been convicted on such a charge.

### He is Remanded to Prison

He was now remanded to prison to wait for the second stage of his trial. It seems that he himself expected this not to come on so soon as it really did; or, at any rate, he did not think the final decision would be given till the following winter, whereas it actually took place about midsummer. Perhaps he judged from the long delay of his former trial; or he may have expected (from the issue of his first hearing) to be again acquitted on a second charge, and to be convicted on a third. He certainly did not expect a final acquittal, but felt no doubt that the cause would ultimately result in his condemnation. We are not left to conjecture the feelings with which he awaited this consummation; for he has himself expressed them in that sublime strain of triumphant hope which is familiar to the memory of every Christian, and which has nerved the hearts of a thousand martyrs. "I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought the good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith. Henceforth is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me in that day." He saw before him, at a little distance, the doom of an unrighteous magistrate, and the sword of a bloodstained executioner; but he appealed to the sentence of a juster Judge, who would soon change the fetters of the criminal into the wreath of the conqueror; he looked beyond the transitory present; the tribunal of Nero faded from his sight; and the vista was closed by the judgment-seat of Christ.

Sustained by such a blessed and glorious hope—knowing, as he did, that nothing in heaven or in earth could separate him from the love of Christ—it mattered to him but little, if he was destitute of earthly sympathy. Yet still, even in these last hours, he clung to the friendships of early years; still the faithful companionship of Luke consoled him, in the weary hours of constrained inactivity, which, to

a temper like his, must have made the most painful part of imprisonment. Luke was the only one of his habitual attendants who now remained to minister to him; his other companions had left him, probably before his arrival at Rome. But one friend from Asia, Onesiphorus, had diligently sought him out, and visited him in his prison, undeterred by the fear of danger or of shame. And there were others, some of them high in station, who came to receive from the chained malefactor blessings infinitely greater than all the favours of the Emperor of the world. Among these were Linus, afterwards a bishop of the Roman Church; Pudens, the son of a senator; and Claudia, his bride, perhaps the daughter of a British king. But however he may have valued these more recent friends, their society could not console him for the absence of one far dearer to him: he longed with a paternal longing to see once more the face of Timotheus, his beloved son. The disciple who had so long ministered to him with filial affection might still (he hoped) arrive in time to receive his parting words, and be with him in his dying hour. But Timotheus was far distant, in Asia Minor, exercising apparently the same function with which he had before been temporarily invested. Thither then he wrote to him, desiring him to come with all speed to Rome, yet feeling how uncertain it was whether he might not arrive too late. He was haunted also by another fear, far more distressing. Either from his experience of the desertion of other friends, or from some signs of timidity which Timotheus himself had shown, he doubted whether he might not shrink from the perils which would surround him in the city of Nero. He therefore urges on him very emphatically the duty of boldness in Christ's cause, of steadfastness under persecution, and of taking his share in the sufferings of the Saints. And, lest he should be prevented from giving him his last instructions face to face, he impresses on him, with the earnestness of a dying man, the various duties of his Ecclesiastical office, and especially that of opposing the heresies which now threatened to destroy the very essence of Christianity. But no

summary of its contents can give any notion of the pathetic tenderness and deep solemnity of this Epistle.

## SECOND EPISTLE TO TIMOTHY

### 2 Timothy 1

Salutation.

**Paul, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God—sent forth to proclaim the promise of the life which is in Christ Jesus—to Timotheus my beloved Son.**

**Grace, Mercy, and Peace from God our Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.**

Timotheus is reminded of his past history, and exhorted to perseverance and courage by the hope of immortality.

**I thank God (whom I worship, as did my forefathers, with a pure conscience) whenever I make mention of thee, as I do continually, in my prayers night and day. And I long to see thee, remembering thy [parting] tears, that I may be filled with joy. For I have been reminded of thy undissembled faith, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois and thy mother Eunice, and (I am persuaded) dwells in thee also. Wherefore I call thee to remembrance, that thou mayest stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the laying on of my hands. For God gave us not a spirit of cowardice, but a spirit of power and love and self-restraint. Be not therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner; but share the affliction of them who publish the Glad-tidings, according to the power of God. For He saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not dealing with us according to our own works, but according to His own purpose and grace, which was bestowed upon us in Christ Jesus before eternal times, but is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who has put an end to death, and brought life and immortality from darkness into light; by the Glad-tidings, whereunto I was appointed herald and apostle, and teacher of the Gentiles. Which also is the cause of these sufferings that I now endure; nevertheless I am not ashamed; for I know in whom I have trusted, and I am persuaded that He is able**

to guard the treasure which I have committed to Him, even unto that day.

Exhortation to fulfil his commission faithfully.

Hold fast the pattern of sound words which thou hast heard from me, in the faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. That goodly treasure which is committed to thy charge, guard by the Holy Spirit who dwelleth in us.

Conduct of certain Asiatic Christians at Rome.

Thou already knowest that I was abandoned by all the Asiatics, among whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes. The Lord give mercy to the house of Onesiphorus; for he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain; but when he was in Rome, sought me out very diligently and found me. The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy from the Lord in that day. And all his services at Ephesus, thou knowest better than I.

## 2 Timothy 2

Duty of Timotheus in Church government.

Thou, therefore, my son, strengthen thy heart with the grace that is in Christ Jesus. And those things which thou hast heard from me attested by many witnesses, deliver into the keeping of faithful men, who shall be able to teach others in their turn.

He is exhorted not to shrink from suffering.

Take thy share in suffering, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. The soldier when on service abstains from entangling himself in the business of life, that he may please his commander. And again, the wrestler does not win the crown, unless he wrestles lawfully. The husbandman who toils must share the fruits of the ground before the idler. Consider what I say; for the Lord will give thee understanding in all things. Remember that Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, is raised from the dead, according to the Glad-tidings which I proclaim. Wherein I suffer even unto chains, as a malefactor; nevertheless the Word of God is bound by no chains. Wherefore I endure all for the sake of the chosen, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus, with glory everlasting. Faithful is the saying, "For if we have died with Him, we shall also live with

Him; if we suffer, we shall also reign with Him; if we deny Him, He also will deny us; if we be faithless, yet He abideth faithful; He cannot deny Himself."

He must oppose the false teachers and their immoralities, and carefully preserve his own purity.

Call men to remembrance of these things, and adjure them before the Lord not to contend about words, with no profitable end, but for the subversion of their hearers. Be diligent to present thyself unto God as one proved trustworthy by trial, a workman not to be ashamed, declaring the word of truth without distortion. But avoid the discussions of profane babblers; for they will go farther and farther in ungodliness, and their word will eat like a cancer. Among whom are Hymenæus and Philetus; who concerning the truth have erred, for they say that the resurrection is past already, and overthrow the faith of some.

Nevertheless the firm foundation of God stands unshaken, having this seal, "The Lord knew them that were his" and "Let every one that nameth the name of the Lord depart from iniquity." But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay; and some for honour, others for dishonour. If a man therefore purify himself from these, he shall be a vessel for honour, sanctified, and fitted for the master's use, being prepared for every good work.

Flee the lusts of youth; and follow righteousness, faith, love, and peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart; but shun the disputations of the foolish and ignorant, knowing that they breed strife; and the bondsman of the Lord ought not to strive, but to be gentle towards all, skilful in teaching, patient of wrong, instructing opponents with meekness; if God perchance may give them repentance, that they may attain the knowledge of the truth, and may escape, restored to soberness, out of the snare of the Devil, by whom they have been taken captive to do his will.

## 2 Timothy 3

Dangerous errors of the "last days."

Know this, that in the last days evil times shall come. For men shall be selfish, covetous, false boasters, haughty, blasphemous, disobedient to parents, ungrateful, unholy, without natural affection, ruthless, calumnious, incontinent, merciless, haters of the good, treacherous, head-long with passion, blinded with pride, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God; having an outward form of godliness, but renouncing its power. From such turn away. Of these are they who creep into houses, and lead captive silly women, laden with sins, led away by lusts of all kinds, perpetually learning, yet never able to attain the knowledge of the truth. And as Iannes and Iambres resisted Moses, so do these men resist the truth, being corrupt in mind, and worthless in all that concerns the faith. But they shall not advance farther, for their folly shall be made openly manifest to all, as was that of Iannes and Iambres.

Exhortation to be steadfast in Paul's doctrine.

But thou hast been the follower of my teaching and behaviour, my resolution, faith, patience, love, and steadfastness; my persecutions and sufferings, such as befel me at Antioch, Iconium, and Lystra. [Thou hast seen] what persecutions I endured; and out of them all the Lord delivered me. Yea, and all who determine to live a godly life in Christ Jesus, will suffer persecution. But wicked men and impostors will advance from bad to worse, deceiving and being deceived. But do thou continue in that which was taught thee, and whereof thou wast persuaded; knowing who were thy teachers, and remembering that from a child thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, by the faith which is in Christ Jesus. All Scripture is inspired by God, and may profitably be used for teaching, for confutation, for correction, and for righteous discipline; that the man of God may be fully prepared, and thoroughly furnished for every good work.

## 2 Timothy 4

Solemn charge to perform his commission faithfully, in expectation of evil times, and of Paul's death.

I adjure thee before God and Jesus Christ, who is about to judge the living and the dead—I adjure thee by His appearing and His kingdom—proclaim the tidings, be urgent in season and out of season, convince, rebuke, exhort, with all forbearance and perseverance in teaching. For a time will come when they will not endure the sound doctrine, but according to their own inclinations they will heap up for themselves teachers upon teachers, to please their itching ears. And they will turn away their ears from the truth, and turn aside to fables.

But thou in all things be sober, endure affliction, do the work of an Evangelist, accomplish thy ministration in full measure. For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought the good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith. Henceforth is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me in that day; and not to me only, but to all who love His appearing.

Timothy is required to come to Rome speedily.

Do thy utmost to come to me speedily; for Demas has forsaken me, for love of this present world, and has departed to Thessalonica; Crescens is gone to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia; Luke alone is with me. Take Mark and bring him with thee, for his services are profitable to me; But Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus.

When thou comest, bring with thee the case which I left at Troas with Carpus, and the books, but especially the parchments.

Intelligence of the progress of Paul's trial.

Alexander, the brass-founder charged me with much evil in his declaration; the Lord shall reward him according to his works. Be thou also on thy guard against him, for he has been a great opponent of my arguments. When I was first heard in my defence no man stood by me, but all forsook me; (I pray that it be not laid to their charge). Nevertheless the Lord Jesus stood by me, and strengthened my heart, that by me the proclamation of the Glad-tidings might be accomplished in full measure, and that all the Gentiles might hear; and I was delivered

**out of the lion's mouth. And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil, and shall preserve me unto His heavenly kingdom. To Him be glory unto the ages of ages. Amen.**

Salutations and personal intelligence.

**Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.**

**Erastus remained at Corinth; but Trophimus I left sick at Miletus.**

**Do thy utmost to come before winter.**

**There salute thee, Eubulus, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.**

**The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you all.**

### Condemnation of St. Paul

We know not whether Timothy was able to fulfil these last requests of the dying Apostle; it is doubtful whether he reached Rome in time to receive his parting commands, and cheer his latest earthly sufferings. The only intimation which seems to throw any light on the question, is the statement in the Epistle to the Hebrews, that Timotheus had been liberated from imprisonment in Italy. If, as appears not improbable, that Epistle was written shortly after St. Paul's death, it would be proved not only that the disciple fearlessly obeyed his master's summons, but that he actually shared his chains, though he escaped his fate. This, also, would lead us to think that he must have arrived before the execution of St. Paul, for otherwise there would be no reason to account for his being himself arrested in Rome; since, had he come too late, he would naturally have returned to Asia at once, without attracting the notice of the authorities.

We may, therefore, hope that Paul's last earthly wish was fulfilled. Yet if Timotheus did indeed arrive before the closing scene, there could have been but a very brief interval between his coming and his master's death. For the letter which summoned him could not have been despatched from Rome till the end of winter, and St. Paul's martyrdom took place in the middle of summer. We have seen that this was sooner than he had expected; but we have no

record of the final stage of his trial, and cannot tell the cause of its speedy conclusion. We only know that it resulted in a sentence of capital punishment.

The privileges of Roman citizenship exempted St. Paul from the ignominious death of lingering torture, which had been lately inflicted on so many of his brethren. He was to die by decapitation: and he was led out to execution beyond the city walls, upon the road to Ostia, the port of Rome. As he issued forth from the gate, his eyes must have rested for a moment on that sepulchral pyramid which stood beside the road, and still stands unshattered, amid the wreck of so many centuries, upon the same spot. That spot was then only the burial-place of a single Roman; it is now the burial-place of many Britons. The mausoleum of Caius Cestius rises conspicuously amongst humbler graves, and marks the site where Papal Rome suffers her Protestant sojourners to bury their dead. In England and in Germany, in Scandinavia and in America, there are hearts which turn to that lofty cenotaph as the Sacred Point of their whole horizon; even as the English villager turns to the gray church tower, which overlooks the grave-stones of his kindred. Among the works of man, that pyramid is the only surviving witness of the martyrdom of St. Paul; and we may thus regard it with yet deeper interest, as a monument unconsciously erected by a pagan to the memory of a martyr. Nor let us think that they who lie beneath its shadow are indeed resting (as degenerate Italians fancy) in unconsecrated ground. Rather let us say, that a spot where the disciples of Paul's faith now sleep in Christ, so near the soil once watered by his blood, is doubly hallowed; and that their resting-place is most fitly identified with the last earthly journey and the dying glance of their own Patron Saint, the Apostle of the Gentiles.

### Death of St. Paul

As the martyr and his executioners passed on, their way was crowded with a motley multitude of goers and comers between the metropolis

and its harbour—merchants hastening to superintend the unloading of their cargoes—sailors eager to squander the profits of their last voyage in the dissipations of the capital—officials of the government, charged with the administration of the Provinces, or the command of the legions on the Euphrates or the Rhine—Chaldean astrologers—Phrygian eunuchs—dancing-girls from Syria with their painted turbans—mendicant priests from Egypt howling for Osiris—Greek adventurers, eager to coin their national cunning into Roman gold—representatives of the avarice and ambition, the fraud and lust, the superstition and intelligence, of the Imperial world. Through the dust and tumult of that busy throng, the small troop of soldiers threaded their way silently, under the bright sky of an Italian midsummer. They were marching, though they knew it not, in a procession more truly triumphal than any they had ever followed, in the train of General or Emperor, along the Sacred Way. Their prisoner, now at last and for ever delivered from his captivity, rejoiced to follow his Lord “without the gate.” The place of execution was not far distant; and there the sword of the headsman ended his long course of sufferings, and released that heroic soul from that feeble body. Weeping friends took up his corpse, and carried it for burial to those subterranean labyrinths, where, through many ages of oppression, the persecuted Church found refuge for the living, and sepulchres for the dead.

Thus died the Apostle, the Prophet, and the Martyr; bequeathing to the Church, in her government and her discipline, the legacy of his Apostolic labours; leaving his Prophetic words to be her living oracles; pouring forth his blood to be the seed of a thousand Martyrdoms. Thenceforth, among the glorious company of the Apostles, among the goodly fellowship of the Prophets, among the noble army of Martyrs, his name has stood pre-eminent. And wheresoever the holy Church throughout all the world doth acknowledge God, there Paul of Tarsus is revered, as the great teacher of a

universal redemption and a catholic religion—the herald of glad tidings to all mankind.

## Chapter 28

### Readers of the Epistle to the Hebrews

The origin and history of the Epistle to the Hebrews was a subject of controversy even in the second century. There is no portion of the New Testament whose authorship is so disputed; nor any of which the inspiration is more indisputable. The early Church could not determine whether it was written by Barnabas, by Luke, by Clement, or by Paul. Since the Reformation still greater diversity of opinion has prevailed. Luther assigned it to Apollos, Calvin to a disciple of the Apostles. The Church of Rome now maintains by its infallibility the Pauline authorship of the Epistle, which in the second, third, and fourth centuries, the same Church, with the same infallibility, denied. But notwithstanding these doubts concerning the origin of this canonical book, its inspired authority is beyond all doubt. It is certain, from internal evidence, that it was written by a cotemporary of the Apostles, and before the destruction of Jerusalem; that its writer was the friend of Timotheus; and that he was the teacher of one of the Apostolic Churches. Moreover the Epistle was received by the Oriental Church as canonical from the first. Every sound reasoner must agree with St. Jerome, that it matters nothing whether it were written by Luke, by Barnabas, or by Paul, since it is allowed to be the production of the Apostolic age, and has been read in the public service of the Church from the earliest times. Those, therefore, who conclude with Calvin, that it was not written by St. Paul, must also join with him in thinking the question of its authorship a question of little moment, and in “embracing it without controversy as one of the Apostolical Epistles.”

But when we call it an Epistle, we must observe that it is distinguished, by one remarkable peculiarity, from other compositions which bear that name. In ancient no less than in modern times, it was an essential feature of an

epistle, that it should be distinctly addressed, by the writer, to some definite individual, or body of individuals; and a composition which bore on its surface neither the name of its writer, nor an address to any particular readers, would then, as now, have been called rather a treatise than a letter. It was this peculiarity in the portion of Scripture now before us, which led to some of the doubts and perplexities concerning it which existed in the earliest times. Yet, on the other hand, we cannot consider it merely as a treatise or discourse; because we find certain indications of an epistolary nature, which show that it was originally addressed not to the world in general, nor to all Christians, nor even to all Jewish Christians, but to certain individual readers closely and personally connected with the writer.

Let us first examine these indications, and consider how far they tend to ascertain the readers for whom this Epistle was originally designed.

In the first place, it may be held as certain that the Epistle was addressed to Hebrew Christians. Throughout its pages there is not a single reference to any other class of converts. Its readers are assumed to be familiar with the Levitical worship, the Temple services, and all the institutions of the Mosaic ritual. They are in danger of apostasy to Judaism, yet are not warned (like the Galatians and others) against circumcision; plainly because they were already circumcised. They are called to view in Christianity the completion and perfect consummation of Judaism. They are called to behold in Christ the fulfilment of the Law, in His person the antitype of the priesthood, in His offices the eternal realisation of the sacrificial and mediatorial functions of the Jewish hierarchy.

Yet, as we have said above, this work is not a treatise addressed to all Jewish Christians throughout the world, but to one particular Church, concerning which we learn the following facts:—First, its members had steadfastly endured persecution and the loss of

property; secondly, they had shewn sympathy to their imprisoned brethren and to Christians generally (10:32–34. and 6:10); thirdly, they were now in danger of apostasy, and had not yet resisted unto blood (12:3–4; see also v. 11, &c., 6:9, &c.); fourthly, their Church had existed for a considerable length of time (v. 12), and some of its chief pastors were dead (13:7); fifthly, their prayers are demanded for the restoration to them of the writer of the Epistle, who was therefore personally connected with them (13:19); sixthly, they were acquainted with Timotheus, who was about to visit them (13:23); seventhly, the arguments addressed to them presuppose a power on their part of appreciating that spiritualising and allegorical interpretation of the Old Testament which distinguished the Alexandrian School of Jewish Theology; eighthly, they must have been familiar with the Scriptures in the Septuagint version, because every one of the numerous quotations is taken from that version, even where it differs materially from the Hebrew; ninthly, the language in which they are addressed is Hellenistic Greek, and not Aramaic.

It has been concluded by the majority, both of ancient and modern critics, that the church addressed was that of Jerusalem, or at least was situate in Palestine. In favour of this view it is urged, first that no church out of Palestine could have consisted so exclusively of Jewish converts. To this it may be replied that the Epistle, though addressed only to Jewish converts, and contemplating their position and their dangers exclusively, might still have been sent to a church which contained Gentile converts also. In fact, even in the church of Jerusalem itself there must have been some converts from among the Gentile sojourners who lived in that city; so that the argument proves too much. Moreover, it is not necessary that every discourse addressed to a mixed congregation should discuss the position of every individual member. If an overwhelming majority belong to a particular class, the minority is often passed over in addresses

directed to the whole body. Again, the Epistle may have been intended for the Hebrew members only of some particular church, which contained also Gentile members; and this would perhaps explain the absence of the usual address and salutation at the commencement. Secondly, it is urged that none but Palestinian Jews would have felt the attachment to the Levitical ritual implied in the readers of this Epistle. But we do not see why the same attachment may not have been felt in every great community of Hebrews; nay, we know historically that no Jews were more devotedly attached to the Temple worship than those of the dispersion, who were only able to visit the Temple itself at distant intervals, but who still looked to it as the central point of their religious unity and of their national existence. Thirdly, it is alleged that many passages seem to imply readers who had the Temple services going on continually under their eyes. The whole of the ninth and tenth chapters speak of the Levitical ritual in a manner which naturally suggests this idea. On the other hand it may be argued, that such passages imply no more than that amount of familiarity which might be presupposed, in those who were often in the habit of going up to the great feasts at Jerusalem.

Thus, then, we cannot see that the Epistle must necessarily have been addressed to Jews of Palestine, because addressed to Hebrews. And, moreover, if we examine the preceding nine conditions which must be satisfied by its readers, we shall find some of them which could scarcely apply to the church of Jerusalem, or any other church in Palestine. Thus the Palestinian Church was remarkable for its poverty, and was the recipient of the bounty of other churches; whereas those addressed here are themselves the liberal benefactors of others. Again, those here addressed have not yet resisted unto blood; whereas the Palestinian Church had produced many martyrs, in several persecutions. Moreover, the Palestinian Jews would hardly be addressed in a style of reasoning adapted to minds imbued with

Alexandrian culture. Finally, a letter to the church of Palestine would surely have been written in the language of Palestine; or, at least, when the Scriptures of Hebraism were appealed to, they would not have been quoted from the Septuagint version, where it differs from the Hebrew.

These considerations (above all, the last) seem to negative the hypothesis that this Epistle was addressed to a church situate in the Holy Land; and the latter portion of them point to another church, for which we may more plausibly conceive it to have been intended, namely, that of Alexandria. Such a supposition would at once account for the Alexandrian tone of thought and reasoning, and for the quotations from the Septuagint; while the wealth of the Alexandrian Jews would explain the liberality here commended; and the immense Hebrew population of Alexandria would render it natural that the Epistle should contemplate the Hebrew Christians alone in that church, wherein there may perhaps at first have been as few Gentile converts as in Jerusalem itself. It must be remembered, however, that this is only an hypothesis, offered as being embarrassed with fewer difficulties than any other which has been proposed.

Such then being the utmost which can we ascertain concerning the readers of the Epistle, what can we learn of its writer? Let us first examine the testimony of the Primitive Church on this question. It is well summed up by St. Jerome in the following passage:—"That which is called the Epistle to the Hebrews is thought not to be Paul's, because of the difference of style and language, but is ascribed either to Barnabas (according to Tertullian); or to Luke the Evangelist (according to some authorities); or to Clement (afterwards Bishop of Rome), who is said to have arranged and adorned Paul's sentiments in his own language; or at least it is thought that Paul abstained from the inscription of his name at its commencement, because it was addressed to the Hebrews, among whom he was unpopular." Here then we find that the Epistle was ascribed to four

different writers—St. Barnabas, St. Luke, St. Clement, or St. Paul. With regard to the first, Tertullian expressly says that copies of the Epistle in his day bore the inscription, “the Epistle of Barnabas to the Hebrews.” The same tradition is mentioned by Philastrius. The opinion that either Luke or Clement was the writer is mentioned by Clement of Alexandria, Origen, and others; but they seem not to have considered Luke or Clement as the independent authors of the Epistle, but only as editors of the sentiments of Paul. Some held that Luke had only translated the Pauline original; others that he or Clement had systematised the teaching of their master with a commentary of their own. Fourthly, St. Paul was held to be, in some sense, the author of the Epistle, by the Greek ecclesiastical writers generally; though no one, so far as we know, maintained that he had written it in its present form. On the other hand, the Latin Church, till the fourth century, refused to acknowledge the Epistle as Paul’s in any sense.

#### Writer of the Epistle to the Hebrews

Thus there were, in fact, only two persons whose claim to the independent authorship of the Epistle was maintained in the Primitive Church, viz. St. Barnabas and St. Paul. Those who contend that Barnabas was the author, confirm the testimony of Tertullian by the following arguments from internal evidence. First, Barnabas was a Levite, and therefore would naturally dwell on the Levitical worship which forms so prominent a topic of this Epistle. Secondly, Barnabas was a native of Cyprus, and Cyprus was peculiarly connected with Alexandria; so that a Cyprian Levite would most probably receive his theological education at Alexandria. This would agree with the Alexandrian character of the argumentation of this Epistle. Thirdly, this is further confirmed by the ancient tradition which connects Barnabas and his kinsman Mark with the church of Alexandria. Fourthly, the writer of the Epistle was a friend of Timotheus (see above); so was Barnabas (cf. Acts 13. and 14. with 2 Tim. 3:11). Fifthly, the Hebraic appellation which Barnabas

received from the Apostles—“Son of Exhortation”—shews that he possessed the gift necessary for writing a composition distinguished for the power of its hortatory admonitions.

The advocates of the Pauline authorship urge, in addition to the external testimony which we have before mentioned, the following arguments from internal evidence. First, that the general plan of the Epistle is similar to that of Paul’s other writings; secondly, that its doctrinal statements are identical with Paul’s; thirdly, that there are many points of similarity between its phraseology and diction and those of Paul. On the other hand, the opponents of the Pauline origin argue, first, that the rhetorical character of the composition is altogether unlike Paul’s other writings; secondly, that there are many points of difference in the phraseology and diction; thirdly, that the quotations of the Old Testament are not made in the same form as Paul’s; fourthly, that the writer includes himself among those who had received the Gospel from the original disciples of the Lord Jesus (2:3), whereas St. Paul declares that the Gospel was not taught him by man, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ (Gal. 1:11, 12); fifthly, that St. Paul’s Epistles always begin with his name, and always specify in the salutation the persons to whom they are addressed.

Several very able modern critics have agreed with Luther in assigning the authorship of this Epistle to Apollos, chiefly because we know him to have been a learned Alexandrian Jew, and because he fulfils the other conditions mentioned above, as required by the internal evidence. But we need not dwell on this opinion, since it is not based on external testimony, and since Barnabas fulfils the requisite conditions almost equally well.

Finally, we may observe that, notwithstanding the doubts which we have recorded, we need not scruple to speak of this portion of Scripture by its canonical designation, as “the Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Hebrews.” We have seen that Jerome expresses the greatest doubts

concerning its authorship; and that Origen says, "the writer is known to God alone:" the same doubts are expressed by Eusebius and by Augustine: yet all these great writers refer to the words of the Epistle as the words of Paul. In fact, whether written by Barnabas, by Luke, by Clement, or by Apollos, it represented the views, and was impregnated by the influence, of the great Apostle, whose disciples even the chief of these apostolic men might well be called. By their writings, no less than by his own, he being dead yet spake.

We have seen that the Epistle to the Hebrews was addressed to Jewish converts, who were tempted to apostatise from Christianity, and return to Judaism. Its primary object was to check this apostasy, by shewing them the true end and meaning of the Mosaic system, and its symbolical and transitory character. They are taught to look through the shadow to the substance, through the type to the antitype. But the treatise, though first called forth to meet the needs of Hebrew converts, was not designed for their instruction only. The Spirit of God has chosen this occasion to enlighten the Universal Church concerning the design of the ancient covenant, and the interpretation of the Jewish Scriptures. Nor could the memory of St. Paul be enshrined in a nobler monument, nor his mission on earth be more fitly closed, than by this inspired record of the true subordination of Judaism to Christianity.

## THE EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS.

### Herews 1

God has revealed Himself finally to man, in the person of His Son,

**God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake of old to our fathers by the prophets, hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the universe; who being an emanation of His glory, and an express image of His substance, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself made purification for our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; being**

**made so much greater than the angels, as He hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.**

Who is higher than the Angels.

**For to which of the Angels said He at any time, "Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee;" and again, "I will be to him a father, and he shall be to me a son." But when He bringeth back the First-begotten into the world, He saith, "And let all the angels of God worship him." And of the angels He saith, "Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers flames of fire." But unto the Son He saith, "Thy throne, I God, is for ever and ever; a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of the kingdom. Thou hast loved righteousness and hated iniquity. Therefore God, then thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows." And "Thou, Lord, in the beginning didst lay the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of thine hands. They shall perish, but thou remainest; and they all shall wear out as both a garment, and as a besture shalt thou fold them up and they shall be changed; but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail."**

**But to which of the angels hath He said at any time, "Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool." Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to execute [His] service, for the sake of those who shall inherit salvation?**

**Therefore, we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip. For if the word declared by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a due requital; how shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation? which was declared at first by the Lord, and was established unto us on firm foundations by those who heard Him, God also bearing them witness both with signs and wonders and divers miracles, and with gifts of the Holy Spirit, which He distributed according to His own will.**

**For not unto angels hath He subjected the world to come, whereof we speak. But one in a certain place testified, saying, "What is man that thou art mindful of him, or the son**

of man that thou regardest him? For a little while thou hast made him lower than the angels; thou hast crowned him with glory and honour, thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet." For in that He "put all things in subjection" under Him, He left nothing that should not be put under Him.

### Hebrews 2

The humiliation of Jesus was needful, that He might be consecrated by suffering as High Priest for man.

But now we see not yet all things in subjection under Him. But we behold Jesus, who was "for a little while made lower than the angels," crowned through the suffering of death with glory and honour; that by the free gift of God He might taste death for all men. For it became Him, through whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to consecrate by sufferings the captain of their salvation.

For both He that sanctifieth, and they that are sanctified, have all one Father; wherefore, He is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying, "I will declare thy name to my brethren, in the midst of the congregation will I sing praises unto thee." And again, "I will put my trust in him; lo, I and the children which God hath given me." Forasmuch then as "the children" are partakers of flesh and blood, He also himself likewise took part of the same, that by death He might destroy the lord of death, that is, the Devil; and might deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. For truly, He giveth His aid, not unto angels, but unto the seed of Abraham. Wherefore, it behoved Him in all things to be made like unto His brethren, that He might become a merciful and faithful High Priest in the things of God, to make expiation for the sins of the people. For whereas He hath himself been tried by suffering, He is able to succour them that are in trial.

### Hebrews 3

Christ is higher than Moses.

Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of a heavenly calling, consider the apostle and High Priest of our Confession, Christ Jesus; who was faithful to Him that appointed Him, as Moses also was "faithful in all the household of God." For greater glory is due to Him than unto Moses, inasmuch as the founder of the household is honoured above the household. For every household hath some founder; but he that hath founded all things is God. And Moses indeed was "faithful in all the household of God" as "a Servant" appointed to testify the words that should be spoken [unto him]: but Christ as "a Son" over His own household.

Warning against apostasy, for God's judgment cannot be evaded.

And His household are we, if we hold fast our confidence, and the rejoicing of our hope, firmly unto the end. Wherefore, as the Holy Spirit saith, "To-day if ye hear his voice, harden not your hearts as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness; when your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years. Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway err in their hearts, and they have not known my ways. So I swear in my wrath, they shall not enter into my rest." Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God. But exhort one another daily while it is called To-day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold our first foundation firmly unto the end.

When it is said, To-day, if ye hear his voice, harden not your hearts as in the provocation,"— who were they that, though they had heard, did provoke? Were they not all whom Moses brought forth out of Egypt? And with whom was He grieved forty years? Was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness? And to whom swore He that they should not enter into His rest, but to them that were disobedient? And we see that they could not enter, because of unbelief.

**Hebrews 4**

Therefore let us fear, since a promise still remaineth of entering into His rest, lest any of you should be found to come short of it. For we have received glad tidings as well as they; but the report which they heard did not profit them, because it met no belief in the hearers. For we, that have believed, are entering into the [promised] rest. And thus He hath said, "So I swear in my wrath, they shall NDT enter into my rest." Although His works were finished, ever since the foundation of the world; for He hath spoken in a certain place of the seventh day in this wise, "And God did REST on the seventh day from all his works;" and in this place again "they shall NDT enter into my rest." Since therefore it still remaineth that some must enter therein, and they who first received the glad tidings thereof entered not, because of disobedience, He again fixeth a certain day, —"To-day"—declaring in David, after so long a time (as hath been said), "to-day, if ye hear his voice, harden not your hearts." For if Joshua had given them rest, God would not speak afterwards of another day. Therefore there still remaineth a Sabbath-rest for the people of God. For he that is entered into God's rest, must himself also rest from his labours, as God did from His. Let us therefore strive to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of disobedience.

For the word of God liveth and worketh, and is sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, yea, to the inmost parts thereof, and judging the thoughts and imaginations of the heart. Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in His sight. But all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him with whom we have to do.

Christ is a High Priest who can be touched with a feeling of our infirmities.

Seeing, then, that we have a great High Priest, who hath passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our Confession. For we have not an High Priest that cannot be touched with a feeling of our infirmities, but who bore in all things the likeness of our trials, yet without sin. Let

us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

**Hebrews 5**

For every High Priest taken from among men, is ordained to act on behalf of men in the things of God, that he may offer gifts and sacrifices for sins; and is able to bear with the ignorant and erring, being himself also encompassed with infirmity. And by reason thereof, he is bound, as for the people, so also for himself, to make offering for sins. And no man taketh this honour on himself, but he that is called by God, as was Aaron. So also Christ glorified not Himself, to be made an High Priest; but He that said unto Him "Thou art my son, to-day have I begotten thee." As He saith also in another place, "Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec." Who in the days of His flesh offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears, unto Him that could save Him from death, and was heard because He feared God; and though He was a Son, yet learned He obedience by suffering. And when his consecration was accomplished, He became the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey Him; having been named by God an High Priest "after the order of Melchisedec."

The readers are reproached for their decline in spiritual understanding,

Of whom I have many things to say, and hard of interpretation, since ye have grown dull in understanding. For when ye ought, after so long a time, to be teachers, ye need again to be taught yourselves, what are the first principles of the oracles of God; and ye have come to need milk, instead of meat. For every one that feeds on milk is ignorant of the doctrine of righteousness, for he is a babe; but meat is for men full grown, who, through habit, have their senses exercised to know good from evil.

**Hebrews 6**

Therefore let me leave the rudiments of the doctrine of Christ, and go on to its maturity; not laying again the foundation,— of Repentance from dead works, and Faith towards God;— Baptism, Instruction and

**Laying on of hands;—and Resurrection of the dead, and Judgment everlasting.**

Warned of the danger of apostasy, and reminded of their motives to perseverance.

**And this I will do if God permit. For it is impossible again to renew unto repentance those who have been once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and been made partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the goodness of the word of God, and the powers of the world to come, and afterwards have fallen away; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame. For the earth when it hath drunk in the rain that falleth oft upon it, if it bear herbs profitable to those for whom it is tilled, partaketh of God's blessing; but if it bear thorns and thistles, it is counted worthless and is nigh unto cursing, and its end is to be burned. But, beloved, I am persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though I thus speak. For God is not unrighteous to forget your labour, and the love which ye have shown to His name, in the services ye have rendered and still render to the saints. But I desire earnestly that every one of you might show the same zeal, to secure the full possession of your hope unto the end; that ye be not slothful, but follow the example of them who through faith and stedfastness inherit the promises. For God when He made promise to Abraham, because He could swear by no greater, sware by Himself, saying, "Verily, blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee;" and so, having stedfastly endured, he obtained the promise. For men, indeed, swear by the greater; and their oath establisheth their word, so that they cannot gainsay it. Wherefore God, willing more abundantly to show unto the heirs of the promise the immutability of His counsel, set an oath between Himself and them; that by two immutable things, wherein it is impossible for God to lie, we that have fled [to Him] for refuge might have a strong encouragement to hold fast the hope set before us. Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and entering within the veil; whither Jesus, our forerunner, is for us entered, being made "an**

**high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."**

**Hebrews 7**

The Priesthood of Christ (typified by the Priesthood of Melchisedec) is distinguished from the Levitical Priesthood by its eternal duration and efficacy.

**For this Melchisedec, "king of Salem," "priest of the most high God," who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him, to whom also Abraham gave "a tenth part of all,"—who is first, by interpretation, King of Righteousness, and secondly king of Salem, which is King of Peace—without father, without mother, without table of descent—having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like unto the Son of God—remaineth a priest for ever.**

Now consider how great this man was, to whom even Abraham the patriarch gave a tenth of the choicest spoil. And truly those among the sons of Levi who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes according to the Law from the People, that is, from their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham. But he, whose descent is not counted from them, taketh tithes from Abraham, and blesseth the possessor of the promises. Now without all contradiction, the less is blessed by the greater. And here, tithes are received by men that die; but there, by him of whom it is testified that he liveth. And Levi also, the receiver of tithes, hath paid tithes (so to speak) by Abraham; for he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him.

Now if all things were perfected by the Levitical priesthood (since under it the people hath received the Law), what further need was there that another priest should rise "after the order of Melchisedec" and not be called "after the order of Aaron." For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the Law. For He of whom these things are spoken belongeth to another tribe, of which no man giveth attendance at the altar; it being evident that our Lord hath arisen out of Judah, of which

tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood. And this is far more evident when another priest ariseth after the likeness of Melchisedec; who is made not under the law of a carnal commandment, but with the power of an imperishable life; for it is testified of him, "Thou art a priest FOR EVER after the order of Melchisedec." On the one hand, an old commandment is annulled, because it was weak and profitless (for the Law perfected nothing); and on the other hand, a better hope is brought in, whereby we draw near unto God.

And inasmuch as this Priesthood hath the confirmation of an oath—(for Those priests are made without an oath, but He with an oath, by Him that said unto Him, "The Lord swear and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever")—insomuch Jesus is surety of a better covenant.

And They, indeed, are many priests [one succeeding to another's office], because death hindereth their continuance. But He, because He remaineth for ever, hath no successor in His priesthood. Wherefore also He is able to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them.

For such an High Priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and ascended above the heavens. Who needeth not daily, as those High Priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for His own sins and then for the People's; for this He did once, when He offered up Himself. For the Law maketh men High Priests, who have infirmity; but the word of the oath which was since the Law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

### Hebrews 8

The Mosaic Law, with its Temple, hierarchy, and sacrifices, was an imperfect shadow of the better covenant, and the availing atonement, of Christ.

Now this is the sum of our words. We have such an High Priest, who hath sat down on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; a minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man. For every High Priest

is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices; wherefore this High Priest also must have somewhat to offer. Now if He were on earth, He would not be a Priest at all, since the Priests are they that make the offerings according to the Law; who minister to that which is a figure and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses is admonished by God, when he is about to make the tabernacle; for "See," saith He, "that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed thee in the mount." But now He hath obtained a higher ministry, by so much as He is the mediator of a better covenant, which is enacted under better promises.

For if that first covenant were faultless, no place would be sought for a second; whereas He findeth fault, and saith unto them, "Behold the days come, saith the Lord, when I will accomplish for the house of Israel and for the house of Judah a new covenant. Not according to the covenant which I gave unto their fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I also turned my face from them, saith the Lord. For this is the covenant which I will make unto the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord: I will give my laws unto their mind, and write them upon their hearts; and I will be to them a God, and then shall be to me a people. And then shall not teach every man his neighbour and every man his brother, saying know the Lord; for all shall know me, from the least unto the greatest. For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more." In that He saith "A new covenant," He hath made the first old; and that which is old and stricken in years, is ready to vanish away.

### Hebrews 9

Now the first covenant also had ordinances of worship, and its Holy Place was in this world. For a tabernacle was made [in two portions]; the first (wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread), which is called the sanctuary; and, behind the second veil, the tabernacle called the Holy of Holies, having the golden

altar of incense, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had the manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant; and over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the Mercy seat. Whereof we cannot now speak particularly. Now these things being thus ordered, unto the first tabernacle the priests go in continually, accomplishing the offices of their worship. But into the second goeth the High Priest alone, once a year, not without blood, which he offereth for himself and for the errors of the people. Whereby the Holy Spirit signifieth that the way into the Holy Place is not yet made fully manifest, while still the outer tabernacle standeth. But it is a figure for the present time, under which gifts and sacrifices are offered that cannot perfect the purpose of the worshipper, according to the conscience; being carnal ordinances, commanding meats and drinks, and diverse washings, imposed until a time of reformation.

But when Christ appeared, as High Priest of the good things to come, He passed through the greater and more perfect tabernacle not made with hands (that is, not of man's building), and entered, not by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood, once for all into the Holy Place, having obtained an everlasting redemption. For if the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purification of the flesh; how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purify our conscience from dead works, that we may worship the living God.

And for this cause He is the mediator of a new testament; that when death had made redemption for the transgressions under the first testament, they that are called might receive the promise of the eternal inheritance. For where a testament is, the death of the testator must be declared; because a testament is made valid by death, for it hath no force at all during the lifetime of the testator.

Wherefore the first testament also hath its dedication not without blood. For when

Moses had spoken to all the people every precept according to the Law, he took the blood of the calves and goats, with water and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book itself and all the people, saying, "This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined unto you." Moreover he sprinkled with blood the tabernacle also, and all the vessels of the ministry, in like manner. And according to the Law, almost all things are purified with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission. It was, therefore, necessary that the patterns of heavenly things should thus be purified, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these. For Christ entered not into the sanctuary made with hands, which is a figure of the true, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us. Nor yet that He should offer Himself often, as the High Priest entereth the sanctuary every year with blood of others; for then must He often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once, in the end of the ages, hath He appeared, to do away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment, so Christ was once offered "to bear the sins of many," and unto them that look for Him shall He appear a second time, without sin, unto salvation.

#### Hebrews 10

For the Law having a shadow of the good things to come, and not the very image of the reality, by the unchanging sacrifices which year by year they offer continually, can never perfect the purpose of the offerers. For then, would they not have ceased to be offered? because the worshippers, once purified, would have had no more conscience of sins. But in these sacrifices there is a remembrance of sins made every year. For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sins. Wherefore, when He cometh into the world, He saith "Sacrifice and offering thou mouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me. In burnt-offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure. Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God." When He had

said before, "Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou mouldedest not, neither hadst pleasure therein" (which are offered under the law); "Then" (saith He), "Lo, I come to do thy will, O God." He taketh away the first, that He may establish the second. And in that "will" we are sanctified, by the offering of the "body" of Jesus Christ, once for all.

And every priest standeth daily ministering, and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices which can never take away sins. But HE, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins, for ever sat down on the right hand of God; from henceforth expecting "till his enemies be made his footstool." For by one offering He hath perfected for ever the purification of them whom He sanctifieth. Whereof the Holy Spirit also is a witness to us. For after He had said before, "This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord; I will give my Laws upon their hearts, and write them upon their minds," He saith also "Their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more." Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

Renewed warning against apostasy, and exhortation not to let faith be conquered by fear.

Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter the holy place through the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way which He hath opened for us, through the veil (that is to say, His flesh); and having an High Priest over the house of God; let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith; as our hearts have been "sprinkled" from the stain of an evil conscience, and our bodies have been washed with pure water. Let us hold fast the confession of our hope, without wavering, for faithful is He that gave the promise. And let us consider the example one of another, that we may be provoked unto love and to good works. Let us not forsake the assembling of ourselves together, as the custom of some is, but let us exhort one another; and so much the more, as ye see The Day approaching. For if we sin wilfully, after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful

looking for of judgment, and "a wrathful fire that shall devour the adversaries." He that hath despised the Law of Moses dieth without mercy, upon the testimony of two or three witnesses. Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of Grace. For we know Him that hath said, "Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord;" and again, "The Lord shall judge his people." It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions; for not only were ye made a gazing-stock by reproaches and tribulations, but ye took part also in the sufferings of others who bore the like. For ye showed compassion to the prisoners, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance. Cast not away, therefore, your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward. For ye have need of steadfastness, that after ye have done the will of God, ye may receive the promise. For yet a little while and "he that cometh shall be come, and shall not tarry." Now "By faith shall the righteous live;" and "If he draw back through fear, my soul hath no pleasure in him." But we are not men of fear unto perdition, but of faith unto salvation.

### Hebrews 11

Faith defined as that principle which enables men to prefer things invisible to things visible.

Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For therein the elders obtained a good report.

By faith we understand that the universe is framed by the word of God, so that the world which we behold springs not from things that can be seen.

Its operation historically exemplified.

By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, whereby he obtained testimony that he was righteous,

for God testified unto his gifts; and by it he being dead yet speaketh.

By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death, and "he was not found, because God translated him." For before his translation he had this testimony, that "he pleased God;" but without faith it is impossible to please Him; for whosoever cometh unto God must have faith that God is, and that He rewardeth them that diligently seek Him.

By faith Noah, being warned by God concerning things not seen as yet, through fear of God prepared an ark, to the saving of his house. Whereby he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness of faith.

By faith Abraham, when he was called, obeyed the command to go forth into a place which he should afterward receive for an inheritance; and he went forth, not knowing whither he went. By faith he sojourned in the land of promise as in a strange country, dwelling in tents, with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise. For he looked for the city which hath sure foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

By faith also Sarah herself received power to conceive seed, even when she was past age, because she judged Him faithful who had promised. Therefore sprang there of one, and him as good as dead, "so many as the stars of the sky in multitude," and as the sand which is by the sea-shore innumerable.

These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims upon earth. For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country. And truly if they speak of that country from whence they came forth, they might have opportunity to return; but now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly. Wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God; for He hath prepared for them a city.

By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac, and he that had believed the promises offered up his only begotten

son, though it was said unto him, "In Isaac shall thy seed be called;" accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also (in a figure) he received him.

By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau, concerning things to come.

By faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and "He worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff."

By faith Joseph, in the hour of his death, spake of the departing of the sons of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones.

By faith Moses when he was born was hid three months by his parents, because "they saw that the child was goodly;" and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.

By faith Moses, "when he was come to years," refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the People of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt; for he looked beyond unto the reward. By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured, as seeing Him who is invisible. By faith he hath established the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, that the destroyer of the first-born might not touch the children of Israel.

By faith they passed through the Red Sea as through dry land; which the Egyptians tried to pass, and were swallowed up.

By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about for seven days.

By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with the disobedient, because she had received the spies with peace.

And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, of Sampson and of Jephthae, of David, and Samuel, and the prophets; who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were

made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. Women received their dead raised to life again; and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection. Others also had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, with chains also and imprisonment. They were stoned, were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword. They wandered about in sheep skins and goat skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented. They wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth; of whom the world was not worthy.

And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise. God having provided some better thing for us, that they, without us, should not be made perfect.

## Hebrews 12

Exhortation to imitate such examples, and to follow Jesus in stedfast endurance of suffering.

Wherefore, seeing we are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us also lay aside every weight, and the sin which clingeth closely round us, and run with courage the race that is set before us; looking onward unto Jesus, the forerunner and the finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before Him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. Yea, consider Him that endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, in your conflict against sin; and ye have forgotten the exhortation which reasoneth with you as with sons, saying, "My Son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him. For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth." If ye endure chastisement, God dealeth with you as with sons; for where is the son that is not chastened by his father? but if ye be without chastisement, whereof all [God's children] have been partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons. Moreover, we were chastened by the fathers of our flesh, and gave them

reverence; shall we not much rather submit ourselves to the Father of our spirits, and live. For they, indeed, for a few days chastened us, after their own pleasure; but He for our profit, that we might be partakers of His holiness. Now no chastisement for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous; nevertheless afterward, unto them that are exercised thereby, it yieldeth the fruit of righteousness in peace.

Wherefore "Lift up the hands which hang down and the feeble knees," and "make even paths for your feet;" that the halting limb be not lamed, but rather healed.

Warning against sensuality.

Follow peace with all men, and holiness without which no man shall see the Lord. And look diligently lest any man fall short of the grace of God; "lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you," and thereby many be defiled; lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for a single meal sold his birthright; for ye know that afterward, when he desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected; finding no room for repentance, though he sought it earnestly with tears.

In proportion to the superiority of the Gospel over the Law, will be the danger of despising it.

For ye are not come to a mountain that may be touched and that burneth with fire, nor to "blackness and darkness and tempest," and "sound of trumpet," and "voice of words"—the hearers whereof entreated that no more might be spoken unto them; for they could not bear that which was commanded. ("And if so much as a beast touch the mountain it shall be stoned;" and so terrible was the sight that Moses said "I exceedingly fear and quake.")— But ye are come unto Mount Sion, and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to myriads of angels in full assembly, and to the congregation of the first-born whose names are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, and to Jesus the mediator of a new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, which speaketh better things than that of Abel.

See that ye reject not Him that speaketh. For if they escaped not, who rejected Him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from Him that speaketh from heaven. Whose voice then shook the earth, but now He hath promised, saying, "Yet once more only will I shake not the earth alone but also heaven." And this "Yet once more only" signifieth the removal of those things that are shaken, as being perishable, that the things unshaken may remain immoveable. Wherefore, since we receive a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us be filled with thankfulness; whereby we may offer acceptable worship unto God, with reverence and godly fear. For "our God is a consuming fire."

### Hebrews 13

Exhortation to several moral duties, especially to courageous profession of the faith, and obedience to the leaders of the Church.

**Let brotherly love continue. Be not forgetful to entertain strangers, for thereby some have entertained angels unawares. Remember the prisoners as though ye shared their prison; and the afflicted, as being yourselves also in the body. Let marriage be held honourable in all things, and let the marriage-bed be undefiled; for whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. Let your conduct be free from covetousness, and be content with what ye have; for HE hath said, "I will never leave thee nor forsake thee." So that we may boldly say, "The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear. What can man do unto me?"**

**Remember them that were your leaders, who spoke to you the Word of God; look upon the end of their life, and follow the example of their faith.**

**Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and to-day and for ever. Be not carried away with manifold and strange doctrines. For it is good that the heart be established by grace; not by meats, which profited not them that were occupied therein. We have an altar whereof they that minister unto the tabernacle have no right to eat. For the bodies of those beasts whose blood the High Priest bringeth into the Holy Place, are**

**burned "without the camp." Wherefore Jesus also, that He might sanctify the People by His own blood, suffered without the gate.**

**Therefore let us go forth unto Him "without the camp," bearing His reproach. For here we have no continuing city, but we seek one to come.**

**By Him therefore let us offer unto God continually a sacrifice of praise, that is, "the fruit of our lips," making confession unto His name. And be not unmindful of benevolence and liberality; for such are the sacrifices which are acceptable unto God.**

**Render unto them that are your leaders obedience and submission; for they on their part watch for the good of your souls, as those that must give account; that they may keep their watch with joy and not with lamentation; for that would be unprofitable for you.**

The writer asks their prayers, gives them his own, and communicates information from Italy.

**Pray for me; for I trust that I have a good conscience, desiring in all my conduct to live rightly. But I the rather beseech you to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.**

**Now the God of peace, who raised up from the dead the great "shepherd of the sheep" even our Lord Jesus, through the blood of an everlasting covenant,—make you perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is wellpleasing in His sight, by Jesus Christ. To whom be glory for ever. Amen.**

**I beseech you, brethren, to bear with these words of exhortation; for I have written shortly.**

**Know that our brother Timotheus is set at liberty; and with him, if he come speedily, I will see you.**

**Salute all them that are your leaders, and all the saints.**

**They of Italy salute you. Grace be with you all. Amen.**